# CINEMA STUDIES

## The Key Concepts

Third Edition

*Susan Hayward*

Routledge
Taylor & Francis Group
LONDON AND NEW YORK

**Also available as a printed book**
**see title verso for ISBN details**

# CINEMA STUDIES

Ranging from Bollywood superstar Amitabh Bachchan to Quentin Tarantino, from auteur theory to the Hollywood blockbuster, *Cinema Studies: The Key Concepts* has firmly established itself as the essential guide for anyone interested in film.

Now fully revised and updated for its third edition, the book includes new topical entries such as:

- Action movies
- Art direction
- Blockbusters
- Bollywood
- Exploitation cinema
- Female masquerade

Providing accessible and authoritative coverage of a comprehensive range of genres, movements, theories and production terms, *Cinema Studies: The Key Concepts* is a must-have guide to a fascinating area of study and arguably the greatest art form of modern times.

**Susan Hayward** is Professor of Cinema Studies at the University of Exeter. Her recent publications include *French National Cinema* (second edition, Routledge, 2005), *Simone Signoret: The Star as Cultural Sign* (2004) and *Les Diaboliques* (2005).

YOU MAY ALSO BE INTERESTED IN THE FOLLOWING ROUTLEDGE STUDENT REFERENCE TITLES:

Fifty Contemporary Filmmakers
*Edited by Yvonne Tasker*
0–415–18974–8

Television Studies: the Key Concepts
*Neil Casey, Bernadette Casey, Justin Lewis, Ben Calvert and Liam French*
0–415–17237–3

Communication, Cultural and Media Studies: the Key Concepts (Third Edition)
*John Hartley*
0–415–26889–3

# CINEMA STUDIES

## The Key Concepts

Third Edition

*Susan Hayward*

Routledge
Taylor & Francis Group
LONDON AND NEW YORK

Originally published 1996
by Routledge
Second edition published 2000
Third edition published 2006
by Routledge
2 Park Square, Milton Park, Abingdon, Oxon OX14 4RN

Simultaneously published in the USA and Canada
by Routledge
270 Madison Ave, New York, NY 10016

*Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group*

© 1996, 2000, 2006 Susan Hayward

This edition published in the Taylor & Francis e-Library, 2006.

"To purchase your own copy of this or any of Taylor & Francis or Routledge's collection of thousands of eBooks please go to www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk."

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilised in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publishers.

*British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data*
A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

*Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data*
Hayward, Susan.
Cinema studies : the key concepts / Susan Hayward.– 3rd ed.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and indexes.
ISBN 0-415-36781-6 (hardback) – ISBN 0-415-36782-4 (pbk.) 1. Motion pictures–Encyclopedias. 2. Cinematography–Encyclopedias. I. Title.

PN1993.45H36 2006
791.43'03–dc22

2005020302

ISBN10 0–415–36781–6 ISBN13 9–780–415–36781–3 (hbk)
ISBN10 0–415–36782–4 ISBN13 9–780–415–36782–0 (pbk)

T&F informa

*Taylor & Francis Group is the Academic Division of T&F Informa plc.*

For my students

# CONTENTS

*Preface to the first edition* viii
*Acknowledgements* ix
*List of Key Concepts* xi

KEY CONCEPTS 1

*Bibliography* 511
*Index of Films* 534
*Name Index* 548
*Subject Index* 564

# PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION

*Key Concepts in Cinema Studies* is intentionally an in-depth glossary which, it is hoped, will provide students and teachers of film studies and other persons interested in cinema with a useful reference book on key theoretical terms and, where appropriate, the various debates surrounding them. The glossary also gives historical overviews of key genres, film theory and film movements. Naturally, not 'everything' is covered by these entries. In later editions further entries will be included, and I would welcome suggestions of further entries from readers. The present book is based on my perception of students' needs when embarking on film studies; its intention is also to give teachers synopses for rapid reference purposes. Entries have been written as lucidly and as succinctly as possible, but doubtless there will be some 'dense' areas; again I welcome feedback. My own students have been very helpful in this area.

All cross-references are in bold. Sometimes the actual concept cross-referred may not be the precise form in the entry (for example, *ideological* in bold actually refers to an entry on ideology). Bibliographical citations at the end of certain entries refer to the bibliography at the end of the book. Wherever it is useful to explain the particular relevance or direction of a suggested text, this has been done.

Finally, instead of a table of contents in traditional style I have supplied a list of all concepts dealt with in this book. Where a concept is part of a larger issue, the entry is a cross-reference to the main entry where it is discussed; thus '*jouissance*' is entered under the J entries but as a cross-reference to 'psychoanalysis' where it is explained. At the beginning of most entries there is a parenthesis suggesting that you consult other entries – I believe you will find this dipping across useful and that it will help widen the issue at hand.

# ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

My thanks for the Third Edition go to my students and to others who have communicated to me the usefulness of this book (and pointed out other areas to write about). My thanks for the Second Edition extend to Jacqueline Maingard for her help on certain entries (specifically Postcolonial Theory, Third Cinema, Third World Cinemas), and to my mother Kathleen Hayward for her assistance on the Bibliography. All other thanks remain the same. Thus, I would like to thank various people who have helped this project along. First, Rebecca Barden, my editor, whose unfailing enthusiasm for the project made it such an enjoyable book to write. Second, colleagues, students and Routledge readers who put a lot of effort into giving me feedback on the different entries. Third, I must express my thanks to the British Film Institute for its existence and the extremely helpful librarians who made my task that much easier. My thanks for the First Edition also go to Professor Jennifer Birkett for making time available to complete the project.

# LIST OF KEY CONCEPTS

absence/presence
action movies
adaptation
agency
ambiguity
anamorphic lens
animation
apparatus
art cinema
art direction
aspect ratio
asynchronization/asynchronous sound
audience
auteur/auteur theory/politique des auteurs/*Cahiers du cinéma*
avant-garde

backstage musical *see* musical
Black cinema – UK
Black cinema/Blaxploitation movies – USA
blockbusters
B-movies
body horror films *see* horror films
Bollywood
British New Wave
buddy films

*Cahiers du cinéma* group *see* auteur/auteur theory, French New Wave
castration/decapitation *see* psychoanalysis
censorship
cinema nôvo
cinemascope
cinematographer/director of photography/cameraman
cinéma-vérité
class
classic canons *see* codes and conventions
classical Hollywood cinema/classical narrative cinema
codes and conventions/classic canons
colour
comedy
connotation *see* denotation/connotation
content *see* form/content
continuity editing

costume dramas
counter-cinema/oppositional cinema
crime thriller, criminal films *see* film noir, gangster/criminal detective thriller, private-eye films, thriller
cross-cutting
cut

day for night
decapitation *see* castration/decapitation
deconstruction
deep focus/depth of field
denotation/connotation
depth of field *see* deep focus
desire *see* fantasy, flashbacks, narrative, spectator, stars, subjectivity
detective thriller *see* gangster films
diachronic/synchronic
diegesis/diegetic/non-diegetic/extra- and intra-diegetic
director
director of photography
discourse
disruption/resolution *see* classical narrative cinema
dissolve/lap-dissolve
distanciation
documentary
dollying shot *see* tracking shot
dominant/mainstream cinema

editing/Soviet montage
ellipsis
emblematic shot
enunciation
epics
ethnographic film/gaze
European cinema
eyeline matching
excess
expressionism *see* German expressionism
exploitation movies

fade
fantasy/fantasy films
female masquerade
female spectator *see* spectator
feminist film theory
fetishism *see* film noir, voyeurism/fetishism
film industry *see* Hollywood, studio system
film noir
film theory *see* theory
flashback
foregrounding
framing
Free Cinema [Britain]
French New Wave/*Nouvelle Vague*
French poetic realism
futurism

gangster films
gaze/look
gender
genre/sub-genre
German expressionism
Germany/New German cinema
gesturality
gothic horror *see* horror

Hammer horror *see* horror
Hays code
hegemony
historical films/reconstructions
Hollywood

Hollywood blacklist
Hollywood majors *see* classic Hollywood cinema, studio system
horror/gothic horror/Hammer horror/horror thriller/body horror/vampire movies

iconography
identification *see* distanciation, spectator-identification
identity *see* psychoanalysis, spectator-identification, subjectivity
ideology
image
Imaginary/Symbolic
independent American cinema
independent cinema
intertextuality
Italian neo-realism

*jouissance see* psychoanalysis
jump cut

lap-dissolve *see* dissolve
lighting
look *see* gaze/look, Imaginary/Symbolic, scopophilia, suture

mainstream cinema *see* dominant/mainstream cinema
matchcutting *see* cut
mediation
melodrama and women's films
metalanguage
metaphor *see* metonymy/metaphor
method acting
metonymy/metaphor
mise-en-abîme
mise-en-scène
misrecognition *see* psychoanalysis, suture
modernism
montage *see* editing, Soviet cinema
motivation
music
musical
myth

narrative/narration
naturalism
naturalizing
neo-realism *see* Italian neo-realism
New German cinema *see* Germany/New German cinema
New Wave/*Nouvelle Vague see* French New Wave

Oedipal trajectory
180-degree rule
opposition *see* narrative, sequencing
oppositional cinema *see* counter-cinema

paradigmatic/syntagmatic *see* structuralism/post-structuralism
parallel sequencing *see* editing
patriarchy *see* Imaginary/Symbolic, Oedipal trajectory, psychoanalysis
performance *see* gesturality, star system
plot/story *see* classical Hollywood cinema, discourse, narrative point of view/subjectivity *see* subjective camera, subjectivity

*politique des auteurs see* auteur, French New Wave, mise-en-scène
pornography
postcolonial theory
postmodernism
post-structuralism see structuralism/post-structuralism
preferred reading
presence *see* absence/presence
private-eye films *see* gangster films
producer
projection *see* apparatus, psychoanalysis
projector *see* apparatus
psychoanalysis
psychological thriller *see* thriller

Queer cinema

realism
reconstructions *see* historical films
repetition/variation/opposition *see* narration, sequencing
representation *see* feminist film theory, gender, sexuality, stereotypes, subjectivity
resistances *see* avant-garde, counter-cinema
reverse-angle shot *see* shot/reverse-angle
road movie
rules and rule-breaking *see* counter-cinema, jump cut

science-fiction films
scopophilia/scopic drive/visual pleasure
seamlessness *see* editing
semiology/semiotics/sign and signification
sequencing/sequence
setting
sexuality
shot/reverse-angle shot
shots
sign/signification *see* semiology/semiotics
social realism
sound/soundtrack
Soviet cinema/school
Soviet montage *see* editing, Soviet cinema
space and time/spatial and temporal contiguity
spectator/spectator-identification/female spectator
stars/star system/star as capital value/star as construct/star as deviant/star as cultural value: sign and fetish/stargazing and performance
stereotype
structuralism/post-structuralism
studio system
subject/object
subject/subjectivity
subjective camera
surrealism
suture
syntagmatic *see* paradigmatic

theory
Third Cinema
Third World Cinemas
30-degree rule
thriller/psychological thriller
time and space *see* spatial/temporal contiguity

tracking shot/travelling shot/ dollying shot
transitions *see* cut, dissolves, fade, jump cut, unmatched shots, wipe
transparency/transparence
travelling shot *see* tracking shot

underground cinema
unmatched shots

vampire movies *see* horror movies
variation *see* repetition
vertical integration
violence *see* censorship, voyeurism/fetishism
visual pleasure *see* scopophilia
voyeurism/fetishism

war films
Westerns
widescreen
wipe
women's films *see* melodrama and women's films

zoom

# CINEMA STUDIES

## The Key Concepts

# ABSENCE/PRESENCE

### *A first definition*

Cinema makes absence presence; what is absent is made present. Thus, cinema is about illusion. It is also about temporal illusion in that the film's **narrative** unfolds in the present even though the entire filmic text is pre-fabricated (the past is made present). Cinema constructs a 'reality' out of selected images and sounds.

This notion of absence/presence applies to character and **gender** representation within the filmic text and confers a reading on the narrative. For example, an ongoing **discourse** in a film on a central character who is actually off-screen implies either a reification (making her or him into an object) or a heroization of that character. Thus, discourses around absent characters played by the young Marlon Brando, in his 1950s films, position him as object of desire, those around John Wayne as the all-time great American hero. On the question of gender-presence, certain **genres** appear to be gender-identified. In the **Western**, women are, to all intents and purposes, absent. We 'naturally' accept this narrative convention of an exclusively male point of view. But what happens when a Western is centred on a woman, for example Mae West in *Klondike Annie* (Raoul Walsh, 1936) and Joan Crawford in *Johnny Guitar* (Nicholas Ray, 1954)? Masquerade, mimicry, cross-dressing and gender-bending maybe, but also a transgressive (because it is a female) point of view – absence made presence.

Absence/presence also feeds into nostalgia for former times. This is most clearly exemplified in the viewing of films where the **stars** are now dead. Obviously, the nostalgia evoked is for different types of 'realities' depending on the star yearned after. For example, Marilyn Monroe and James Dean elicit different nostalgia responses from those of Cary Grant and Deborah Kerr.

*see also*: **apparatus**

### *A second definition*

Film theorists Baudry, Bellour, Metz, Mulvey (all 1975) making psychoanalytic readings of the dynamic between screen and **spectator** have drawn on Sigmund Freud's discussions of the libido drives and Jacques Lacan's of the mirror stage to explain how film works at the

unconscious level. The mirror stage is the moment when the mother holds the child up to the mirror and the child imagines an illusory unity with the mother. This is a first moment of identification, with the mother as object. This moment is short-lived, for the child subsequently perceives either his difference from or her similarity with the mother. At this point the child imagines an illusory identification with the self in the mirror but then senses the loss of the mother. In Lacanian psychoanalytic terms this part of the mirror stage is termed the Imaginary. The next phase of the mirror stage is termed the Symbolic and can be explained as follows. The child, having sensed the loss of the mother, now desires reunification with her. But this desire is sexualized and so the father intervenes. He enters as the third term into the mirror/reflection, forming a triangle of relationships. He prohibits access to the mother by saying 'No'. In this way language functions as the Symbolic order. For the child to become a fully socialized being/**subject**, she or he must obey the father's 'No': that is, the 'Law of the Father'. In so doing, the child enters the realm of language (enters the Symbolic Order): she or he conforms to the Law of the Father which is based in language (the uttered 'No'). The process of socialization for the male child is complete, supposedly, when he finds eventual fulfilment in a female other; the female child, for her part, turns first to her father as object of desire and later transfers that desire onto a male other. (For further clarification see **Imaginary/Symbolic** and **Oedipal trajectory**; and for a full discussion see Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 80–90.)

By analogy with this psychoanalytic description of the mirror stage, the screen is defined as the site of the Imaginary: making absence presence (bringing into the spectator's field of vision images of people or stars who are not in real life present). The screen also functions to make presence absence: the spectator is absent from the screen upon which she or he gazes. However, the interplay between absence and presence does not end here; if it did it would end in spectator alienation. Although the spectator is absent from the screen, she or he becomes presence as the hearing, seeing subject: without that presence the film would have no meaning. In this respect the screen is seen as having analogies with the mirror stage. The screen becomes the mirror into which the spectator peers. At first the spectator has a momentary identification with that image and sees herself or himself as a unified being. She or he then perceives her or his difference and becomes aware of the lack, the absence or loss of the mother. Finally, she or he recognizes herself or himself as perceiving subject. According to this line of analysis, at each film viewing there occurs a

re-enactment of the unconscious processes involved in the acquisition of sexual difference (the mirror stage), of language (entry *of* the Symbolic) and of autonomous selfhood or subjectivity (entry *into* the Symbolic order and rupture with the mother as object of identification). It is through this interplay of absence/presence that cinema constructs the spectator as subject of the look and establishes the desire to look with all that it connotes in terms of visual pleasure for the spectator (see **gaze**). But this visual pleasure is also associated with its opposite: the shame of looking. Absence/presence now functions so as to position the spectator as 'she or he who is seeing without being seen'. In this regard, cinema makes possible the re-enactment of the primal scene – that is, according to Freud, the moment in a child's psychological development when it, unseen, watches its mother and father copulating (see **scopophilia**, **voyeurism/fetishism**).

*see also*: **apparatus**, **Imaginary/Symbolic**, **psychoanalysis**, **suture**

### *A third definition*

Woman as absence (as object of male desire), man as presence (as perceiving subject). The woman is eternally fixed as feminine, but not as subject of her own desire. She is eternally fixed and, therefore, mute.

For further discussion, see **feminist film theory**, **gaze**, **scopophilia**, **spectator-identification**.

## ACTION MOVIES

Action movie is a rather broad and all-encompassing term for a film that, generally speaking, will cost a great deal of money to produce, and whose primary aim is to offer the spectator an endless roller-coaster of violent, action-packed images. As Marshall Julius (1996: 5) puts it so well, action films are 'vengeful cops and car chases, lunatic villains and martial arts masters, male-bonding, gun fights and super secret agents, swords and sorcerers, wartime Nazi-bashing, boys' own adventures, casual destruction and general death-defiance'. In a word the motivation behind action films is pure escapism. 'Forget the plot . . . focus on the mayhem' (1996: 13). Shoot-outs, car chases and crashes galore pack fast action thrillers; climaxes of fireball explosions

and destroyed buildings (even worlds) are the very essence of science-fiction films, disaster and hijack movies; explosive conventions of all sorts, flying bodies, tanks and planes on fire, torpedo point of view shots are all the familiar grist of war films. What a feast for the eyes. We thrive on the vicarious fear, enjoy being physically stimulated. Why else would we enjoy a paranoid terrorist action movie like *Rock* (Michael Bay, 1996) with its threat of spreading the lethal Sarin nerve gas? As King argues (2000: 103), any sense of guilty pleasure we derive from the thrill of it all is compensated for by the fact that we go to these films to escape everyday ordinariness and, moreover, to experience plenitude as a way of making up for the scarcity in our own lives.

Although the action movie is primarily identified with Hollywood, it is worth making a couple of important points in this context. First, that the *nec plus ultra* of the action movie, the Bond movie, is first and foremost a British product (with seventeen Bond movies carrying the GB label from the early 1960s until the early 1990s – albeit with considerable financing from the American producer Albert 'Cubby' Broccoli and later his wife Barbara). Bond movies – with their awe-some sets by Ken Adam, breathtaking stunts, lavish visuals, extra-vagant fantasy, to say nothing of Bond's gadgets doing battle against the monster machines of the evil enemy – bespeak an almost over-zealous love-affair with technology and design. Indeed we are invited to sit back and admire the spectacle 'based on lavish plenitude' (2000: 96). Each Bond movie boasts bigger production values than the pre-vious one. As such the Bond movie has set the tone for many of the subsequent action series or action franchise movies as they are also known (e.g. the *Die Hards*, begun 1987; or the *Lethal Weapons*, begun 1988 – the two biggest grossing of Hollywood's action spectacular series). However, whereas with Bond we are allowed to get the full picture show of the action in a big frame (almost in the Bazinian sense of deep focus **editing**), including the special futuristic design of the sets and exotic spaces visited by Bond, the new action specta-culars offer us a curtailed sense of space in that they are full of rapid editing and discontinuity (a sort of **montage**-style but without the montage-effect). There is an 'unremitting battery of impact effects' (2000: 96). In the end, the speedy cross-cutting editing can destroy any sense of reality because, literally, we get lost. The frenetic editing in the shoot-out in the Korean nightclub in *Collateral* (Michael Mann, 2004) is a good example of this, but so too are the battle scenes in *Troy* (Wolfgang Petersen, 2004) and *King Arthur* (Antoine Fuqua, 2004).

There are other ways in which these new action spectaculars do not match up to the Bond aesthetic. It was the Bond movie that first gave us the humorous one-liner coming on the back of some particularly daring deed. But this has now sadly been transformed into wise-cracking one-liners coming at the end of a spectacularly violent sequence. These often fall flat and certainly pale when set against Bond's dry wit. Recent examples in the **epics** *Troy* or *King Arthur* really do not work and are rather silly, as are Cruise's attempts in the violent action-thriller *Collateral*. As for Bond, Britain still has not let go of its favourite action hero, as can be seen with its co-production with the USA of *To Die Another Day* (2002), directed by New Zealand film-maker Lee Tamahori of *Once Were Warriors* (1994) fame.

The second important point worth making is that the martial arts action films from Hong Kong, China, Japan, Taiwan and South Korea constitute a very important part of the action-movie heritage – dating back, as it does to the early 1970s, with the Hong Kong movies by Lo Wei (*The Big Boss*, 1971, *Fist of Fury*, 1972, starring Bruce Lee); followed by Jackie Chan's *Police Story* series (begun 1985) in which Chan also starred; and John Woo's films of the mid-1980s (*A Better Tomorrow*, 1986, starring the Chinese actor Chow Yun-Fat, and one of Hong Kong's top-grossing films ever). Interestingly, there has been a similar shift in film aesthetics to the one described above. According to King (2000: 97), whereas earlier films (of the 1970s and 1980s) favoured the single-shot perspective of a fight sequence allowing us to see the 'real capabilities of the star Bruce Lee' (see *The Big Boss*), now these martial arts/action films have come to rely increasingly on a 'panoply of montage effects'. The integrity of performance shooting (in the dual sense of the word: the wholeness and authenticity of the performance) has been replaced in some instances by the flashing tempo of hyper-violence (as in *Full Contact*, Ringo Lam, 1992, or *Bangkok Dangerous*, Pang brothers, 2001). Alternatively the special effects of wire-fu action have moved martial arts films into a new realm of the fantastic (see *Crouching Tiger, Hidden Dragon*, Ang Lee, 2000, or *Hero*, Zhang Yimou, 2002). Not all films have succumbed to this speed or fantasy effect. Takeshi Kitano has taken this genre somewhere else in his almost poetic rendition of the action thriller (see *Sonatine* 1993).

More recently, since the end of dictatorship and the lifting of censorship in 1992, South Korea is making it big in the action-movie arena with film-makers such as Lee Chang-Dong (*Peppermint Candy*, 2000) and Park Chan-Wook (*Old Boy*, 2004, a hyper-violent film about the metaphysics of revenge). This is one of the few countries

where indigenous action movies outsell Hollywood products, Hong Kong being another example. Small wonder that Hollywood has stepped in and succeeded in tempting a handful of film-makers from the East to cross over to the USA by offering them conditions where the industry is more stable and better able to finance big action projects (see especially Hong Kong film-maker John Woo, *Face/Off*, 1997, and *Mission Impossible II*, 2000).

Action movies are not new to Hollywood and can be dated back to as early as the 1930s, at least, and the swashbuckler film, with Douglas Fairbanks Junior and Errol Flynn being some of the first action heroes as they fought their way out of numerous tight spots. But even then studio rivalries ran high as Hollywood action movies fought to get the punters in. Two Warner Brothers productions starring Errol Flynn, *Captain Blood* (Michael Curtiz, 1935) and *The Adventures of Robin Hood* (Curtiz, 1938), were made as a deliberate ploy to challenge *the* studio major with a reputation for hugely lavish products, MGM (for example, *Mutiny on the Bounty*, Frank Lloyd, 1935, starring Clarke Gable opposite Charles Laughton). Since then this category of movie has moved on technologically and, moreover, come to embrace a broad set of genres – **thrillers**, **sci-fi** and **war** films being but the most common. By the 1970s, the levels of violence and destruction on screen had escalated massively. Lightweight cameras and new special-effects systems were part of the equation. But so too, arguably, were the effects that war technology – as used in the Vietnam war – were having on the Americans in general and film audiences in particular. That war, as indeed subsequent wars (such as the Gulf/Iraq wars), demonstrated that there were seemingly no limits to which war technology could go to root out its enemy (napalm, smart bombs and so on). So too it seemed as if there was literally no possible end to the types of explosions that could be created in the cinema world, especially with digital technology increasingly entering the frame of action fantasy.

Speaking of war and reality, post-September eleventh 2001 (9/11) one could have expected a crisis in representation where action movies were concerned. The recent spate of epic movies (like *Troy*) could signify a displacement of the action thriller into safer long-ago times where good and evil can fight it out more clearly. Indeed, for a very brief while the terrorist and disaster movie did disappear from American cinema. But not for long. After all they bring in millions of dollars. And just as a sign of the way in which discourses and technologies of war cross boundaries with ease let us consider the Arnie Schwarzenegger vehicle *Collateral Damage* (Andrew Davis,

2001). This film was due to come out in October 2001 but was withheld post-9/11 because it was felt it ran too close to reality. It was finally released in 2002. In it Arnie plays a firefighter. In the aftermath of 9/11 firefighters had reached an iconic status of courage and bravery, so Arnie's association with this function would, it was feared, be read as exploitative. A first reason to hold back. A second reason was the narrative line: a terrorist bombing. In blowing up the local Colombian consulate, a Colombian terrorist also blows up Arnie's family and this drives him to attempt to exact revenge. Later, the terrorist tells Arnie these deaths were collateral damage. No wonder Arnie is outraged. However, we should pause here. Terrorist bombing and the fact that it causes collateral damage – which here is represented as a very evil thing – should not hide the fact that this term was first coined by the Americans when bombing Baghdad in the first Gulf war in 1991. At that time smart bombs (so-called because they could hit their target and send video proof of this from a camera positioned in the bomb's cone) caused thousands of civilian deaths. In the American case collateral damage was an inevitability of war; in the case of Arnie's family it is the outcome of the actions of an evil and unprincipled terrorist. Despite the similarities with 9/11 and despite a disturbing re-appropriation of war discourses, nonetheless, the film was a success and brought Arnie back into favour once more as an action hero.

To talk of codes and conventions is almost pointless where action movies are concerned. What we can say is that narrative incoherence is a given almost. Excess is key and there is a great deal of 'male swagger' about (Jones, 2001: 28). Flag-waving can be part of this excess (in war and sci-fi movies especially). Explosions abound as the action hero more often than not stands poised between danger and the dark abyss of comedy – or, rather, sad attempts at it (perhaps the comic element is intended to stress the unreality of this type of film). But, whatever the threat, the whole point is that death is defied by the hero – no matter how implausible that may be. Perhaps that is the only convention, with the cruel exception of Brandon Lee who was shot in the making of *The Crow* (Alex Proyas, 1994) – although digital effects were used to 'bring him back to life'. Spatial and temporal incoherence are also a big part of this action cinema. The audience is engulfed in a flurry of images and sounds, and yet – paradoxically – has no sense of direction. The camera zooms around, fireballs come rushing out filling the screen, and deafening noises come from every which way. We are so disoriented, we never feel time or space passing as we hurtle from one action to the next. So,

ultimately, there is neither spatial nor temporal freedom for us to know where we are or where we might be going. As Kent Jones (2001: 27) states, in his very good study of Michael Bay's films (*Armageddon*, 1998, and *Pearl Harbor*, 2001), despite the fact that these $100 million-plus film extravaganzas are supposedly about speed, bizarrely they are the very opposite of fast and far more about 'hallucinatory confusion and stasis'. In order to feel the speed, he argues, 'you need to know where you are going'. And even if there is no real sense of spatial and temporal dislocation, nonetheless, often there still can be a feeling of stasis. Take as another example Michael Mann's *Collateral* where, although the director gives us a sense of a certain Los Angeles, it is a very selective and moody sense, shot as it is by night and in a specific set of districts. We either know these areas or we don't. What we are mostly left with is, first, a dark impenetrable city which we scoot around at speed in a beaten-up taxi; second, a series of violent shoot-outs which are little more than a set of assemblages from Mann's earlier films (furthermore, the film is full of all the old clichés of a hit-man); and, finally, even more dispiriting, silly attempts at humour.

Let us pause on 'male swagger' for a moment. For, in this context, our action hero embodies the tradition of its earliest courtly meaning whereby it referred to the swank of knights and nobles who would carry this swagger into battle (jousting, swordsmanship, etc.). For some of our modern action heroes the swagger begins in the verbal and ends in supremely cool action. Sean Connery as Bond is exemplary. Clint Eastwood, although he is nearly non-verbal, also comes into this category. We are not too perturbed by Connery's violence because the aesthetic value of Ken Adam's fantasy sets and the exotic settings in which much of the action is located function in their coolness as perfect foils to Bond's swagger – and the overall effect is hyper-real. Conversely, Eastwood's violence can be very disconcerting because it emanates from such a plausible space. Other heroes can only swank physically – and so are less cool. Charles Bronson of earlier action-movie years (the *Death Wish* series, begun 1974) comes to mind. In more contemporary times, Sylvester Stallone, and Arnie Schwarzenegger are at one extreme of the swaggering hulk, whereas Mel Gibson and Bruce Willis, with their lighter frames, are at the other end (and have a few amusing one-liners to offer). Tom Cruise – who noteworthily does most of his own stunts – and Harrison Ford fall somewhere between the two sets of male swagger. They have the physical strength and display it; but there is that added element that theirs is also a

cerebral swagger (as distinct from the wit of Connery and silence of Eastwood). African-American action heroes are also in the frame, especially since the **blaxploitation** cinema of the 1970s. Wesley Snipes (though by no means confined to this type of film) is a major name (see *New Jack City*, Mario Van Peebles, 1991; *Demolition Man*, Marco Brambilla, 1993; *Drop Zone*, John Badham, 1994); Mario Van Peebles has starred in several (*Posse*, Van Peebles, 1993); and Denzel Washington has also put in a performance or two (*Ricochet*, Russell Mulcahy, 1991). Often, however, the African-American is less the action hero and more the side-kick to the front-running (white) action hero – see for example Danny Glover in the *Die Hard* series where he is paired with Mel Gibson. Gibson is the all-risk-taking-cop to Glover's more ponderous and careful type. In this role as side-kick the African-American is contained as safe. By dint of being the voice of reason, he is unlikely to go on the rampage. Casting then is a code to watch for when studying these films.

Although action movies are clearly an intensely male category of film, nonetheless, they have spawned a few female action heroes – and they deserve a mention here. Perhaps the only female action hero to become a star is Sigourney Weaver with her *Alien* series (begun 1986). She is the one who daringly stripped off her femininity and allowed a wiry 'musculinity' to emerge in its place. She embodies a certain kind of machisma that few other female action heroes have dared to personify. Nor is this a simple representation since she also comes to have a very complex relationship with motherhood and reproduction – as one capable of spawning 'monsters'. Other types, however, tend to be both strong and very eroticized (through having big breasts for example). The girlie-women in *Charlie's Angels* (McG, 2000 and 2003) are but one instance of this endeavour to contain the threat of a 'musculinized' female body. Or the female action hero's dress coding can mark her out in a different way as an identifiably safe and fetishized body, such as the dominatrix clothing sported by Pamela Anderson in *Barb Wire* (David Hogan, 1996). One final type is the completely androginized body – less common in American films arguably – as found in Luc Besson's *Nikita* (1990) or the crossover film *Lara Croft: Tomb Raider* (Simon West, 2001).

*see also*: **blockbusters**

For further reading see Julius, 1996; King, 2000.

## ADAPTATION

Literary adaptation to film is a long-established tradition in cinema starting, for example, with early cinema adaptations of the Bible (e.g. the Lumière brothers' thirteen-scene production of *La Vie et passion de Jésus Christ*, 1897, and Alice Guy's *La Vie de Christ*, 1899). By the 1910s, adaptations of the established literary canon had become a marketing ploy by which producers and exhibitors could legitimize cinema-going as a venue of 'taste' and thus attract the middle-classes to their theatres. Literary adaptations gave cinema the respectable cachet of entertainment-as-art. In a related way, it is noteworthy that literary adaptations have consistently been seen to have pedagogical value, that is teaching a nation (through cinema) about its classics, its literary heritage. Note how in the UK the BBC releases a film, made for screen and subsequently television viewing, and then issues a teaching package (video plus a teacher and student textbook). The choice of novels adapted has to some extent, therefore, to be seen in the light of nationalistic 'value'.

A literary adaptation creates a new story; it is not the same as the original, but takes on a new life, as indeed do the characters. Narrative and characters become independent of the original even though both are based – in terms of genesis – on the original. The adaptation can create stars (in the contemporary UK context, Colin Firth, *Pride and Prejudice*, 1995; Ewan McGregor and Robert Carlyle, *Trainspotting*, 1995), or stars become associated with that 'type' of role (Emma Thompson, Helena Bonham-Carter, Nicole Kidman, Holly Hunter), whereas the novel creates above all characters we remember and associate with a particular type of behaviour (e.g. Mrs Bennet, Darcy in *Pride and Prejudice*). As André Bazin says (1967: 56), film characterization creates a whole new mythology existing outside of the original text.

Essentially there appear to be three types of literary adaptation: first, the more traditionally connoted notion of adaptation, the literary classic; second, adaptations of plays to screen; and, finally, the adaptation of contemporary texts not yet determined as classics and possibly bound to remain within the canon of popular fiction. Of these three, arguably, it is the second that remains most faithful to the original, although contextually it may be updated into contemporary times, as with several Shakespeare adaptations (for example, Baz Lurhmann's *Romeo and Juliet*, 1996, which is recast into contemporary Los Angeles). The focus of this entry is primarily on the first type of adaptation, although mention will be made of the third type.

Literary adaptations are, within the Western context, perceived as mostly a European product – almost as if Europe has the established literary canon and northern America has not. It should be pointed out, however, that, while this European heritage cinema is the one that predominates and while it represents a deliberate marketing ploy for exports (Europe *sells* its culture to the 'rest of the world'), the United States does have its own literary classics that get adapted – the novels and short stories of Henry James and those of Edith Wharton spring to mind (e.g. *Portrait of a Lady*, Jane Campion, 1996; *The Age of Innocence*, Martin Scorsese, 1993). Jack Clayton's 1974 version of Scott Fitzgerald's *The Great Gatsby* is arguably *the* benchmark movie of lavish literary adaptation Hollywood-style. Modern classics, written by African-American novelists, also rank quite highly (e.g. Alice Walker's *The Color Purple*, Steven Spielberg, 1985, and Toni Morrison's *Beloved*, Jonathan Demme, 1998). Otherwise, Hollywood is more commonly associated with popular fiction adaptations (especially detective fiction).

In relation to other generic types, critical literature on literary adaptations is somewhat thin. There appears to have been a surge of interest during the 1970s (e.g. Bluestone, 1971; Marcus, 1971; Wagner, 1975; Horton and Magretta, 1981) and then again in the mid-1980s through to the 1990s (e.g. Morrissette, 1985; Friedman, 1993; Marcus 1993; McFarlane 1996; Griffith, 1997): While literary adaptations have not attracted much analytical attention in the field of film studies per se, one could speculate that the first manifestation of critical writing in the 1970s is linked to the introduction of film courses into English and foreign languages departments. The fact that the focus of these studies was on questions of fidelity to the original text would tend to support this argument. Furthermore, this interest in literary adaptations could be read as a reaction to the more difficult branch of film theory being practised at that time, namely **structuralism** and a bit later **post-structuralism**. The more recent interest appears to correspond to a time when literary adaptations are at their most popular on screen (particularly in Britain and France).

Fidelity criticism, which makes up a great deal of literary adaptation criticism, focuses on the notion of equivalence. This is a fairly limited approach, however, since it fails to take into account other levels of meaning. More recently (Andrew, 1984; Marcus, 1993) have stressed the importance of examining the 'value' of the alterations from text to text. For example, films are more marked by economic considerations than the novel and this constitutes a major reason why the adaptation is not like the novel. Furthermore, it is clear that the

choice of stars will impact on the way the original text is interpreted; adaptations will cut sections of the novel that are deemed uncinematographic or of no interest to the viewers. In other words, there is always a **motivation** behind the choices made. Marcus (ibid.) and Monk (1996: 50–1) have pointed to the need for a third-level criticism: that is, to see the adaptation within a historical and semiotic context. Thus, it is not sufficient to show, through fidelity criticism, the difference between the texts, nor does it suffice to do a textual analysis based on a demonstration of how the film renders (or not) the language and style of the original through **mise-en-scène**, **editing** techniques, the symbolic use of images and, finally, the sound-track and music. We need to understand the meaning of these differences within a socio-political, economic and historical context. We need to understand the signs of difference. Adaptations are a synergy between the desire for sameness and reproduction on the one hand, and, on the other, the acknowledgement of difference. To a degree they are based on elision and deliberate lack and at the same time in the privileging, even to excess, of certain **narrative** elements or strategies over others.

Film adaptations are both more and less than the original. More not just because they are in excess of the written word (through having both image and sound). But more also because they are a **mise-en-abîme** of authorial texts and therefore of productions of meaning. To explain: there is the original text ($T^{1}$), the adapted text ($T^{2}$), the film text ($T^{3}$), the director texts ($T^{4n}$), the star texts ($T^{5n}$), the production (con)texts ($T^{6n}$) and finally the various texts' own intertexts ($T^{7n}$). Such a chain of signifiers makes it clear that the notion of authorship becomes very dispersed. Thus, quite evidentially, the film is less because the original author is only one among many (we hear complaints from the **audience**: 'it's not what the author wrote'). But it is also more because of the density of new texts (and textual meanings, purposes and motivations) clustered around the original (again audiences complain: 'it's not at all like the book'). Imagine, finally within this context, the effects of modernizing a classic literary text.

Audiences might complain. And yet they go in their droves to see the classics on screen. Higson (1993: 120) is right to say that the replaying or downplaying of the original material is at least matched by if not superseded by the 'pleasures of pictorialism'. Our pleasure is deeper than our pained expressions at the end of the film. Strong (1999: 61) usefully invokes the term 'neutering'. Although he uses it in a somewhat more specific context – namely, when the adaptive

process alters the original's rendering of their own time – essentially this effect of neutering and appropriation of a text is a basic practice of adaptation. To a greater or lesser degree, the adaptation neuters the original interest (or a part of the novelist's intention), thereby appropriating it so that it 'makes sense' within the present context (for example, Emma Thompson's script for Ang Lee's *Sense and Sensibility*, 1995, provides a feminist re-inscription of the original Austen novel).

Classic adaptations are less than transparent. They materialize the novel into something else and the result is a hybrid affair, a mixture of genres. More crucially, a temporal sleight of hand and thus intention occurs. By way of illustration of this point let's take the Austen, Forster and Pagnol novels and their subsequent adaptations. These novels were modern texts of their day and set in their time yet they were deeply nostalgic for a lost time in the past (be it for social, economic values or traditions). A major motivation of the narrative, then, is a nostalgia for what is no more. A sense of lack, of loss is redolent within the novel. Over time, however, these once modern texts become classic texts entering the literary canon. By the time they get to the stage of film adaptation they are no longer of the present time and so become transformed into what we know as costume or heritage films. What was present is now of the past. A further shift occurs, however, in our reception of the film. It is nostalgic pleasure we are after, not understanding. Thus our focus shifts from a desire to *know* the times the novel is referring to in socio-economic or political terms, to a desire to *see* the times (in terms of costume and décor). Thus the earlier intention of the narrative – a nostalgia for a past – is neutered. What drives us, the audience, is a nostalgia for the present times of the novel, the lived moment of Austen's heroines, or Pagnol's and Forster's characters – our 'imagined' past, not that of the original text for which that present time represents unwanted change. Both the novel and the film are looking backwards nostalgically, but not at the same past.

Production values tend to match the perceived value of the original text. Thus, literary classics have high production values and the aim is for an authentic re-creation of the past through appropriate **setting**, quality mise-en-scène, minute attention to décor and costume, and for star vehicles to embody the main roles. Audience expectation is such that demand for authenticity and taste is carefully respected. Popular-fiction adaptations make no such demands of taste. Sets can be flimsy, actors unknown; the whole purpose here is for cost-effectiveness. A small budget therefore means low production values. It does not necessarily mean, however, a loss of value. Indeed,

many of the 1930s' and 1940s' Hollywood **B-movies** have gained such value that they have entered the Western cinematic canon. Nor have contemporary literary adaptations, while inexpensively produced, been without impact in the evolution of film history. The **British New Wave** of the 1960s, for example, relied heavily on contemporary texts for their source of inspiration and produced a grainy socio-realism (closely aligned with kitchen-sink drama) which mainly focused on the socio-economic crises of young working-class males. The so-called New Scottish cinema also draws on modern literary sources and provides low-budget movies with a raw realism of economic deprivation that mostly, but not exclusively, concerns the young male in crisis and the drug culture of Scottish urban youth (particularly male youth). The adaptation of Irvine Welsh's novel *Trainspotting* (Danny Boyle, 1996) is the benchmark movie in this context.

Modern adaptations of contemporary novels have national value to the degree that they tell us something of the current political culture that surrounds us; the adaptation of classics have nationalistic value in that they mirror a desire to be identified with values of tradition, culture and taste to which certain elites, especially political elites, and generations aspire. They only indirectly refer to the current climate in so far as they disguise, through the past, a present that is not always without provoking anxiety and fear. But the traces are there. As Strong (1999: 286–91) points out, the gay subtext of Forster's *Room with a View* (James Ivory, 1986) comes seeping through even if it does not threaten or challenge the particularly homophobic political culture and legislation of the Thatcher government in Britain at that time. Strong (1999: 63) makes a particularly interesting point about the distinction between contemporary and classical adaptations – one that comes down to gender. Classic literary adaptations with their almost obsessive focus on detail – an effect of miniaturizing – lead to an increased feminization of the original text. If we take this idea further, it is as if the film clothes its male protagonists in such a way as to make them safe, contain them as an ideal male who mirrors in the fanciness and detail of his own costume that of his female counterpart. We may forget the very real power wielded by men as we stand in awe of their prettiness. Viewed in this light, this feminization comes to represent a containment and displacement of our contemporary myth of sexual equality and even unisexuality. The contemporary adaptations such as those of the British New Wave, argues Strong (1999: 62), and to which we could add the Scottish New Wave, are ones which masculinize the original text in their over-investment in

the individual youthful male protagonist. These films that focus on the male represent him as unruly, potentially threatening, powerful, wild. But given the process of masculinization inscribed into the filmic text, the vicious twist at the end that he is doomed to fail, die or remain the same should give us pause for thought.

For further reading consult authors mentioned in the text. See also Barefoot, 2001; Cartmell and Whelehan, 1999; Washburn, 2001; Wilson, 2002.

## AGENCY

Refers essentially to issues of control and operates both within and outside the film. Within the film, agency is often applied to a character in relation to desire. If that character has agency over desire it means that she or he (though predominantly in **classical narrative cinema** it is 'he') is able to act upon that desire and fulfil it (a classic example is: boy meets girl, boy wants girl, boy gets girl). Agency also functions at the level of the **narrative** inside and outside the film. Whose narration is it? A character in the film? A character outside the film? The director's? **Hollywood**'s? And finally, agency also applies to the **spectator**. In viewing the film, the spectator has agency over the text in that she or he produces a meaning and a reading of the filmic text.

*see also*: **subjectivity**

## AMBIGUITY

'Double meaning', a term that has been incorporated into film analysis. Ambiguity can occur at all levels of a film: characterization, **narrative**, type of **shot**, **space and time**. Often the **mise-en-scène** and **lighting** function to signal ambiguity. For example, mirrors offering reflections of a character point not just to the **myth** of Narcissus but also to the idea of duplicity. The use of highlighting through side-lighting of a character's face when all else is in shadow and the use of contrasting light and dark within one **shot**, are two lighting effects that signal character ambiguity. These particular **codes** are common to **film noir** and are employed to point to the moral ambiguity of the central protagonist. But ambiguity is not exclusive to this **genre** and can be found in both mainstream and art cinema.

In the former case, Clint Eastwood's later **Westerns** are exemplary because he uses character ambiguity to question the genre itself (as in *Pale Rider*, 1985, and *Unforgiven*, 1992, both directed by and starring Eastwood). The hero's own self-doubt or questioning leads to the genre itself being ambiguously positioned. The genre itself now questions what its codes and conventions serve to normalize (the opposition of 'good' and 'bad', the 'civilized' White man and the 'natural' Indian, and so on). In art cinema where film-makers are seeking to question film-making practices and the standardization of genres, ambiguity is one of the means used to achieve that effect. For example, lack of **diegetic**/narrative continuity creates a sense of ambiguity and has a destabilizing effect on both the film itself and the **spectator**. Codes of time and space are deconstructed through the use of **jump cuts** and **asynchronism** between image and sound, causing the spectator to feel disorientated. Often the central characters will appear to reflect a similar disorientation or confusion, revelatory of states of mind that cannot easily be read by the spectator.

Ambiguity, then, can come about as a result of more than one focused reading: that is, there is not a single **preferred reading**. The above are some examples of how this is achieved, but mention should also be made of the effect of the **depth of field** shot and multi-track **sound**. In both cases it is the closeness of these effects to 'reality' that paradoxically signifies their ambiguity. Bazin (1967: 23ff.) qualifies depth of field filming as objective **realism**. He makes the point that it is an open shot that allows the spectator greater reading potential because its meaning is not as strongly encoded as is the case with **montage**. Although it constitutes a unity of image in time and space and as such is a realistic structure, none the less because it is open to wider interpretation it does not lose its potential for ambiguity. Similarly, the greater fidelity and range of multi-track **sound**, if there is no foregrounding of one sound over another, can lead to a greater realism and a less encoded meaning. One sound is not artificially privileged over another; rather, the spectator hears the sounds in their 'true' relation and can evaluate the significance of that relation.

*see also*: **film noir** and **naturalizing**

## ANAMORPHIC LENS

A French invention devised by Henri Chrétien for military use during the First World War, this is a wide-angle lens that permits

180-degree vision (see **180-degree rule**). It was not introduced into cinema until 1928 when it was used experimentally by the French film-maker Claude Autant-Lara. Characteristically, the French film industry did not invest in this new technology which could have done much to aid its ailing fortunes, and it was the United States who bought the rights to the system in 1952. The following year Fox **studios** was the first to release what was termed a **cinemascope** film, *The Robe* (Henry Koster). The widescreen effect of cinemascope is achieved by a twofold process using the anamorphic lens. First, the lens on the camera squeezes the width of the image down to half its size so that it will fit on to the existing width of the film (traditionally 35mm). Then the film is projected through a projector supplied with an anamorphic lens which produces a widescreen effect with an **aspect ratio** of 2.35:1. Without the anamorphic lens on the projector the image would be virtually square and its contents hugely distorted – horizontally squashed and vertically stretched as if caught in a concave mirror. The wide-angle effect is now more usually accomplished without the anamorphic lens, through the use of the wide-gauge 70mm film or by printing 35mm onto 70mm film for special releases.

*see also*: **aspect ratio, cinemascope, widescreen**

For further details see Belton, 1992.

## ANIMATION

Used in cartoons and now also in live action films. Cartoons is the term generally used to describe short animated films, as distinct from the term animated or animation films for full-length features. Traditionally, animation has been achieved by shooting inanimate objects, such as drawings, clay or plasticene models, frame by frame in stop-motion photography. In succeeding frames, the object has very slightly shifted positions so that when the stop-motion photos are run at standard speed (twenty-four frames per second) the object seems to move. John Hart (1999: 3) gives a very useful thumbnail sketch of the essential ingredients needed for animation. In cartoons, he explains, artists must make dynamic use of space, compositional devices and colour. They must also use fore, middle and background effectively. Traditionally, the main narrative action revolves around the principle of conflict which is mirrored by visual conflict on three levels within

the image: size (large and small characters), strong verticals against horizontals, and colours (red against green).

Animation dates back to the early days of cinema. It first appeared in the form of a special effects insert into a live-action film with Georges Méliès's animation of the moon – which he achieved through stop-motion and trick photography – in *Voyage à la lune* (1902). The Frenchman Émile Cohl is credited with having brought the comic strip to film. Unlike printed comic strips, however, he used line drawings creating stick figures among other objects. His first product *Fantasmagorie* (1908) was a huge success even though it was a spectacle effects film (to use Richard Abel's term, 1994: 286) and not strictly a narrative text. The film was a series of illogical but seamless transformations of the line drawings (an elephant turning into a house, for example). Cohl's line drawing technique was imitated and adapted by the American Winsor McCay who was himself originally a comic strip artist. McCay introduced personality or character animation through his anthropomorphization of animals. Thus, in 1914, he produced the first animated cartoon, *Genie the Dinosaur.* In this vein of anthropomorphic stars, Otto Messmer's famous *Felix the Cat* – first conceived of in 1915 – eventually became a series (starting in 1920).

Walt Disney Productions (founded in 1923) continued with this popular tradition of anthropomorphization, providing even greater **realism** to the animated creatures. In 1928, Disney produced the first synch-sound cartoon (*Steamboat Willie*, featuring Mickey Mouse). Disney is also credited with being the first to bring **colour** to **sound** cartoons (by 1932). Full feature-length colour and sound animated films came into their own with his *Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs* (1937) which won a special Oscar. In terms of animated dolls, arguably the most famous is the gorilla doll who is the eponymous hero of *King Kong* (Ernest B. Schoedask, 1933). This also demonstrated clearly that live and cartoon film could be hybridized in a feature length movie. A slightly more recent and highly successful example of this hybridization *in extenso* is *Who Framed Roger Rabbit* (Robert Zemeckis, 1988).

Disney Productions are not necessarily the pioneers of animation. Prior to the establishment of Disney studios, the Fleischer brothers (Dave and Max), in 1920, launched their *Out of the Inkwell* series. The success of their cartoon character, the clown Koko, allowed them to establish their own studio, Red Seal, in 1921. Although their business was to fail, the brothers went with their studio to work at Paramount and created, most famously, the Betty Boop character and

*Popeye the Sailor* series. Apart from the importance of their contribution to cartoon style – direct address to the audience, illogical plot developments (reminiscent of Cohl perhaps) – they were also technological pioneers. Dave Fleischer invented the rotoscope process (*circa* 1920) which, simply explained, is a process whereby individual frames of filmed action of live figures are projected onto the back of a glass then traced and rephotographed. Thus the movements of the animated figures are based on those of live figures and cartoon characters move much like human beings. The Fleischers also introduced, in 1934, the stereoptical process which gives the illusion of actual depth in the image. Disney Productions would incorporate both these processes into their own cartoon-making practices, either by imitation or by finding a similar process. Imitating human body movement continues as a practice today with some studios – although others spurn this type of hyper-realism, arguing that characters are strictly symbolic representations, not life-like creations. Studios following the imitation of life by transfer nowadays do it digitally with movements being based on motion-capture sensors attached for example to the face (see *Polar Express*, DreamWorks, 2004, which uses Tom Hanks' face for the main character).

The Disney style and look have tended to dominate the Western animation tradition. However, the realistic movement for which Disney animated films are so renowned is not the only trend of animation. The United Productions of America (UPA, established in 1941 as a breakaway group from Disney) is perhaps best remembered for its *Mr Magoo* series. UPA was to have an important impact on the evolution of animation style. It used modern art styling which created, in particular, a counter-realistic effect of jerky movements; it also wrote non-violent scenarios – thus again breaking with tradition. Its impact in the late 1940s and early 1950s was felt both on home territory and abroad, particularly in Eastern Europe. Also in the USA, Warner Brothers spawned some of the greatest names in animation. Tex Avery, worked for Warner Brothers' cartoon unit (1936–42) and helped them launch, along with Bob Clampett and Chuck Jones, the cartoon character Bugs Bunny, before going on to work for MGM (1942–55). His fast-paced, often violent, surrealist gag-style cartoons which were based on the principle of 'surprise the audience' had, and still have, a great influence (both on animation and advertising). During this same period, Warners produced a cartoon series entitled *Merrie Melodies* which include two cartoons that warrant a mention given that they seem to contradict, due to their racist content, the reputation Warners enjoyed at the time for producing

feature films with social content or criticism at their core (see studio entry on Warners). The two cartoons are *Clean Pastures* (Fritz Freleng, 1937) and *Coal Black and De Sebben Dwarves* (Bob Clampett, 1942). In the first cartoon, which features an 'all-black' cast, Saint Peter sends his angels down to 'Harlem' to clean up the night-life. The cast is made up of caricatures of, among others, Cab Calloway (whose music figures in many cartoons of this period), Louis Armstrong, Fats Waller, Stepin Fetchit, and Bill 'Bojangles' Robinson. The second is a racist spoof on Disney's *Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs* which, to Warners' credit, it eventually banned from projection (both these shorts are titles held by the British Film Institute's archival collection). Chuck Jones worked for Warners' cartoon unit from the late-1930s until it closed in 1962. He made 300 animated shorts and was perhaps most famous for producing the *Road Runner* series. A central theme to his work was to show how we are driven to follow after things we do not necessarily want (quite an antidote to the American capitalist dream if we stop to think about it – the coyote never gets the road-runner, and may even have fogotten why he chases after him!). After Warners, Jones went to MGM for a while to work on their *Tom and Jerry* series.

Elsewhere, apart from the USA, there were famously several Eastern European Schools of Animation which, starting in the early 1960s, underwent artistic and quantitative growth (Bendazzi, 1994: 333). The Czech School established itself as a major player in the world of animated films. Its world-wide renown begins with its puppet and cartoon animations, many of which cast doubt over reality as a means of subversion. Jiri Trnka's *The Hand* (*Ruka*, 1965) and Jana Marglova's *Genesis* (1966) are exemplary of this allegorical use of animation. Otherwise, the former Republic of Czechoslovakia enjoys a wide reputation as makers of children's puppet fables, and Surrealist mixed-medium animated cartoons (toys, puppets, clay figures, drawings, etc.). Its reputation as a significant school is matched in Eastern Europe primarily by Poland which also has a strong tradition in animation. Walerian Borowczyk and Jan Lenica's use of cut-out graphics (*Dom*, 1957) and Witold Giersz's painting on glass (*Maly Western*, 1960) are just two animation styles introduced by this country into the cartoon milieu. While there is stylistic variety, the Polish 'School' has a definite 'look' which Bendazzi (1994: 341), in his very comprehensive book on world animation, sums up as follows: 'a preference for dark-toned images ... and gloomy themes mostly marked by existential questioning ... and heavy pessimism'. Finally (in the former Yugoslavia), the Zagreb School's legacy stems primarily from

a group of Croatian animation artists, working in the 1950s and 1960s, whose style (inspired by the modern art styling of UPA) represents a reversal of the Disney realistic tradition.

Animation, although dominated by the American market, is a form of film-making that is widely practised in the Western world and the East. Japanese animation is becoming known to us through its presence on television. The industrial expansion of Japanese animation began in 1958 (Bendazzi, 1994: 411). Two major production companies were established around that time: Toei (1958) and Gakken (1959). Gakken, a puppet animation studio, was one of the few companies under the leadership of a woman director, Matsue Jimbo 1994: 411). Toei's feature film production tended to focus on two subject areas: legends from the Far East and tales of **science fiction**. These films, as with many others emanating from Japanese studios are fast-action, fast-produced cartoons which are often violent both in terms of their subject matter and fast editing style (ibid.).

One Japanese animation studio that stands out presently is Ghibli (established 1985) which has made twelve films to date – most famously *Princess Monoke* (1997) and *Spirited Away* (2001). It specializes in feature-length animation films and the focus is on children and their perceptions of the world. There is greater moral and thematic complexity to their films, which in turn means that the pace is slower than the typical US or indeed Japanese product. Even more surprising, given the dominant trend of Manga-inspired animation films and their macho fighting culture, is the fact that most Ghibli animations feature a female character for the central role. The key animator is Miyazaki Hayao, with seven of the studio's films to his name, and he is partnered by Takahata Isao. Hayao's films are more fantasy based than Isao's, which tend to be more experimental and based in the contemporary. Their work, whether popular or experimental, is marked by their use of realist detail in the backdrops and their skilled draughtmanship – a big attraction to older audiences. *Spirited Away* was an international success and a top-grossing film in Japan. Indeed, on their home territory, Ghibli products habitually outstrip Disney. This may explain why Disney has been a co-funder and, for a while, responsible for distributing Ghibli films in Japan and other countries.

Recent technological advances have seen the introduction of computer-aided graphics. One might think that this new technology would have reduced production costs. One minute of traditional animation requires on average 1500 drawings and the medium is therefore very costly and labour-intensive. But this is not the case and

it is sobering to recall that Steven Spielberg's digitally animated dinosaurs in *Jurassic Park* (1992), made by George Lucas's independent company Industrial Light and Magic (ILM), cost $25 million alone (representing over a third of the total costs of $66 million).

Digital animation is so sophisticated it can go beyond simply using movement and gestures to convey emotion (as animation has done in the past) and reach into the character's being to give a greater sense of depth. However, the millions of equations it takes to control each character and animate them down to individual frames of film means that it can take days to create a single frame. Often it takes up to two years to make a feature film.

Digital animation has produced greater realism in terms of movement, but can be used without necessarily endeavouring to make the characters more life-like. Indeed there are two camps on this issue of realism within the US side of the industry: Pixar and DreamWorks. Pixar is considered a pioneer in the computer-animated format (computer-generated image: CGI). Pixar was co-founded in 1986 by Ed Catmull and Steve Jobs (of Apple fame) and, until 2004, was closely linked with Disney. They made *Toy Story* (1995) for Disney, the first wholly computer-generated animated film. Since that time, Pixar products have been a huge economic success and grossed seventeen Oscars. Unlike DreamWorks, where greater emphasis is laid on the computer-generated images (eg. *Antz*, 1998, *Shrek*, 2001) at the expense of the story, Pixar works from the principle that realism is not what is being aimed at and the focus has to be on the story itself. Almost as if taking over Warners Brothers' mantle of making socially committed films, every Pixar film has a message which, as with Ghibli in Japan, is probably why it draws a large demographic audience. Pixar has also understood that with the advent of computer technology it is now possible to convey emotional complexity. Pixar uses high-colour reality – and in this context Ed Catmull's big contribution to the media was his invention of texture mapping which is a system that allows a texture to be 'poured' over the surface of a character in a realistic way without attempting to make them seem real, however. Conversely, DreamWorks tries to reproduce, through transfer, the movement of live beings at the expense of depth of character. Gags abound in their *Shrek 2* (2003), for example, whereas the characters of Pixar's *The Incredibles* (2004) have a lot to contend with, not least the government's repression of their exceptionalness.

A final mention in this contemporary scenario must go to the British success story the Aardman Animation group based in Bristol, headed by Nick Park (with David Sproxton and Peter Lord who

originated the idea) and best known initially for their *Wallace and Grommit* TV series. A hallmark of their work is their deeply intertextual play with film genre and classical narratives. In a sense this studio uses all the mediums of animation: drawing, modeling, digital animation. Beginning with tracing their animated characters on paper, including each movement, they then shoot a working script of each section of the film in black and white based on these tracings before going onto working each of these rehearsed sections out with their plasticene characters and backdrops. All these movements are then painstakingly filmed and encoded into the computer for editing. *Chicken Run* (2000), their first feature film, was a great success, it took two years to make and, unsurprisingly, given the huge expense of such an undertaking, was co-funded by DreamWorks.

Animation, because it is not based in the real, has always had inherent within it the potential to problematize representation. So, for example, it can address differently questions of gender and race. But for the more complex takes on the subversive and more fully counter-ideological animated films we have to look to the experimental work of, amongst others, Oskar Fischinger, Len Lye, Paul Driessen, the Quay brothers and Robert Beer from the West and, from Eastern Europe, the work of Jan Svankmajer and Birovoi Dovnikovi (see Faber and Walters, 2004, for more details)

There is a massive bibliography on animation; what follows is only a suggested list: Bendazzi, 1994; Culham, 1988; Faber and Walters, 2004; Furniss, 1998; Ghanian and Phillips, 1996; Grant, 1987, 2001; Hoffer, 1981; Lassiter and Davy, 1995; Lord and Sibley, 1998; Pillig, 1992, 1997; Sandler, 1998; Solomon, 1987, 1994; Taylor, 1996a, and Wells, 1998.

## APPARATUS

Baudry (1970) was among the first film theorists to suggest that the cinematic apparatus or technology has an **ideological** effect upon the **spectator**. In the simplest instance the cinematic apparatus purports to set before the eye and ear realistic images and sounds. However, the technology disguises how that reality is put together frame by frame. It also provides the illusion of perspectival space. This double illusion conceals the work that goes into the production of meaning and in so doing presents as natural what in fact is an **ideological** construction, that is, an idealistic reality. In this respect, Baudry argues, the spectator is positioned as an all-knowing **subject** because

he (sic) is all-seeing even though he is unaware of the processes whereby he becomes fixed as such. Thus the omniscient spectator-subject is produced by, is the *effect* of the filmic text. A contiguous, simultaneous ideological effect occurs as a result of the way in which the spectator is positioned within a theatre (in a darkened room, the eyes projecting towards the screen with the projection of the film coming from behind the head). Because of this positioning, an identification occurs with the camera (that which has looked, before the spectator, at what the spectator is now looking at). The spectator is thereby interpellated by the filmic text, that is the film constructs the subject, the subject is an effect of the film text (see **ideology**). That is, the spectator as subject is constructed by the meanings of the filmic text.

Later, after 1975, discussion of the apparatus moved on from this anti-humanist reading of the spectator as subject-effect, and the presupposition that the spectator is male. Now, the spectator is also seen as an active producer of meaning who is still positioned as subject, but this time as agent of the filmic text. That is, she or he becomes the one viewing, the one deriving pleasure (or fear, which is another form of pleasure) from what she or he is looking at. She or he also interprets and judges the text. On the 'negative' side of this positioning it could be said that, in becoming the camera, the apparatus places the spectator voyeuristically, as a colluder in the circulation of pleasure which is essential to the financial well-being of the film industry (Metz, 1975). The economic viability of the latter depends on the desire of the former o be pleasured. Cinema in this respect becomes an exchange commodity based on pleasure and capital gain – pleasure in exchange for money. On the 'positive' side it could be said that as agent the spectator can resist being fixed as **voyeur**, or indeed as effect, and judge the film critically.

*see also*: **agency**, **spectator-identification** and **suture**

For further discussion see De Lauretis and Heath, 1980; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 79–86; Mayne, 1993: 13–76.

## ART CINEMA

This term refers predominantly to a certain type of European cinema that is experimental in technique and **narrative**. This cinema, which typically produces low-to mid-budget films, attempts to address the aesthetics of cinema and cinematic practices and is primarily, but not

exclusively, produced outside **dominant cinema** systems. For example, the **French New Wave** and the new **German cinema**, which come under this label, received substantial financing from the state. Other art cinemas, such as the American **underground cinema** were funded by the film-makers themselves. Art cinema is also produced by individuals – often women film-makers – who do not come under any particular movement (for example Agnès Varda, Liliani Cavani, Nelly Kaplan and Chantal Akerman).

Art cinema has been rightly associated with eroticism since the 1920s when sexual desire and nudity were explicitly put up on screen. However, for American audiences during the censorship period under the **Hays code** (1934–68), 'art cinema' came to mean sex films. With an eye to the export market, film producers were quick to exploit art cinema's sexual cachet. Perhaps one of the most famous instances of this is the case of Jean-Luc Godard's *Le Mépris* (1963), starring Brigitte Bardot. Upon its completion, two of its producers (Levine and Ponti) insisted that Godard should insert some nude scenes of Bardot. He did this, but not with the anticipated results – far from titillating or sexual, these scenes are moving, tragic.

The term *cinéma d'art* was first coined by the French in 1908 to give cinema – which until then had been a popular medium – a legitimacy that would attract the middle-classes to the cinema. This earliest form of art cinema was filmed theatre (mostly actors of the Comédie Française) accompanied by musical scores of renowned composers – making it a quite conservative artefact. During the 1920s, however, owing to the impact of **German expressionism** and the French avant-garde, art cinema became more closely associated with the **avant-garde**. From the 1930s onwards, partly owing to the French and Italian realist movements, its connotations widened to include social and psychological **realism**. And the final legitimation came in the 1950s when the *politique des auteurs* made the term **auteur** sacrosanct. This *politique* or polemic argued that certain film-makers could be identified as auteurs – as generators or creators rather than producers of films. This further widening of its frame of reference has meant that, although art cinema is considered primarily a European cinema, certain Japanese, Indian, Australian, Canadian and Latin-American film-makers are also included in the canon – as well as certain films made by representatives of some minority groups: women, Blacks and self-called queers (see **Black cinema**, **queer cinema**; for women's cinema see Kuhn, 1990).

Historically, art cinema was not intentionally devised as a counter-**Hollywood** cinema, even though its production is clearly not

associated with Hollywood. It is interesting to note, however, that the 1920s art cinema was a period of great cross-fertilization between Hollywood and European cinema. Generally speaking, in art cinema narrative **codes and conventions** are disturbed, the **narrative** line is fragmented so that there is no seamless cause-and-effect storyline. Similarly, characters' behaviour appears contingent, hesitant rather than assured and 'in the know' or motivated towards certain ambitions, desires or goals. Although these films are character-rather than plot-led, there are no heroes – in fact this absence of heroes is an important feature of art cinema. Psychological realism takes the form of a character's subjective view of events; **social realism** is represented by the character in relation to those events. The point of view can take the form of an interior monologue, or even several interior monologues (Alain Resnais's and Ingmar Bergman's films are exemplars of this). **Subjectivity** is often made uncertain (whose 'story' is it?) and so too the safe construction of time and space. This cinema, in its rupture with **classic narrative cinema**, intentionally distances **spectators** to create a reflective space for them to assume their own critical space or subjectivity in relation to the screen or film.

*see* **avant-garde**, **counter-cinema**

## ART DIRECTION

This term covers the whole range of labour practices involved in the creation of the visual environment of the film – from the smallest to the largest. Thus, not only costume and set design come under this term of reference, but so too does obtaining the appropriate props. Overall responsibility for art direction lies either with the production designer or art director – the latter is often the designer of the settings. Presently, in film studies' scholarship, costume and set design have become an important topic of research. Clearly, set design, in that it is the visual environment within which characters move about, impacts heavily on the meaning of a narrative and as such demands careful analysis when reading a film. Consider for a moment the analysis of melodrama's mise-en-scène by Mulvey, Nowell-Smith and Elsaesser (all 1987) – which we now all understand plays an integral part in the meaning of the narrative, referring as it does to the couple's repression of emotion as they struggle to reach a compromise in their complex relationship. But it is also important to study the work of individual art directors since, like **auteur** film-makers, it is obvious

that they too leave authorial marks. For example, French poetic realism might well not have come about but for the legacy of the 1920s and 1930s art director Lazare Meerson, whose work heavily influenced the likes of Alexander Trauner and Georges Walkhévitch amongst others of his assistants or disciples. By the same extension, costume is an integral part of mise-en-scène and needs to be understood in a variety of ways, starting with an acknowledgement that it is governed by 'complex influences that relate to notions of realism, performance, gender, status and power' (Street, 2001: 2). Costumes tell us a great deal about the body beneath it, either in terms of the body's desire to hide itself, lose its own identity, or, conversely, to project a strong sexuality, sense of status or class. Costume also has resonances for national cinemas – it displays the cultural pulse of a nation and, if it is France, the nation's undoubted superiority in matters of good taste(!), particularly if the designer is a couturier.

For more reading on costume design and fashion see Bruzzi (1997); Cook (1996); Street (2001).

## ASPECT RATIO

This refers to the size of the image on the screen and to the ratio between the width and height. It dates back to the days of silent cinema, when the ratio was fixed at 1.33:1 (width to height) thanks to a standardization of technology brought about by hard-nosed business strategies on the part of the Edison company. Edison contracted its rivals into a cartel which had to use Edison equipment and pay royalties to the company. The cartel dominated the market from 1909 to 1917 when an anti-trust law broke it up. Ironically, this ratio was the one adopted by television for its own screens, even though HDTV uses a ratio of 1.76:1. Edison went out of business, but the aspect ratio for a standard screen remained the norm internationally, until the early 1950s, when the threat posed to film **audiences** by television obliged the film industry to find visual ways to attract or retain audiences. Although there had been experimentation with other screen sizes, it was not until economic necessity forced the film industry to invest heavily in technology that screens took on different dimensions. The first innovation in size was **cinemascope** with a standard aspect ratio of 2.35:1. Nowadays, films are more commonly projected either from the wide-gauge 70mm film frame with an aspect ratio of 2.2:1 or from 35mm film with its top and bottom pre-cropped

with an aspect ratio of 1.85:1 in the United States and 1.66:1 in European cinemas.

## ASYNCHRONIZATION/ASYNCHRONOUS SOUND

Asynchronization occurs when the sound is either intentionally or unintentionally out of sync with the image. In the latter case this is the result of faulty editing (for example, a spoken voice out of sync with the moving lips). In the former, it has an aesthetic and/or **narrative** function. First, asynchronization calls attention to itself thus the **spectator** is made aware that she or he is watching a film (so the illusion of identification is temporarily removed or deconstructed). Second, it serves to disrupt time and space and thereby narrative continuity, and as such points to the illusion of reality created by **classical narrative cinema** through its seamless **continuity editing**. Finally, it can be used for humorous effect, as occasionally in the earliest talkies when the advent of sound was met by film-makers with mixed reactions. There were two camps of thought: those who embraced the new technology and those who feared it would transform cinema into filmed theatre. As an example of this latter camp, the French film-maker René Clair was concerned that sound would limit visual experimentation and remove the poetic dimension inherent in silent film. His early sound films (mostly comic operettas) play with sound. By confounding the actual source of sound (for example, we see a woman singing framed in a window, then there is a cut and we go into her room and we realize that in fact she is miming to a record player), he draws attention to its pretensions at the 'reality effect' (see his *A nous la liberté*, 1931).

*see also*: **sound**, **seamlessness**, **space and time**

## AUDIENCE

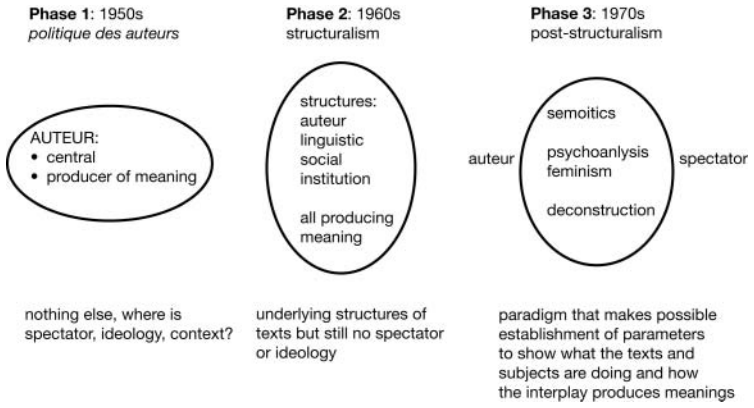
Always recognized as important by film distributors and exhibitors, the audience has now become an important area of research for film theorists and sociologists (for references see **spectatorship**). Considerable work has been done on reception theory (how the audience receives and/or is positioned by the film). More recently, the debate has focused on how the **spectator** both identifies with the film and becomes an active producer of meaning as **subject** of the film (see **agency**). The film industry has since its beginnings targeted films to

attract large audiences; this has meant that the product is predominantly audience-led. As the audience changes (for example, from working-class men and women before the Second World War to women after the war, to youth from the late 1950s), so too does the type of product.

*for a fuller discussion see* **spectator**

## AUTEUR/AUTEUR THEORY/*POLITIQUE DES AUTEURS/CAHIERS DU CINÉMA*

Although *auteur* is a term that dates back to the 1920s in the theoretical writings of French film critics and directors of the silent era, it is worth pointing out that in Germany, as early as 1913, the term 'author's film' (*Autorenfilm*) had already been coined. The *Autorenfilm* emerged partly as a response to the French *Film d'Art* (art cinema) movement which began in 1908 and which proved extremely popular. *Film d'Art* was particularly successful in attracting middle-class audiences to the cinema theatres because of its cachet of respectability as art cinema. The German term *Autorenfilm* is, however, also associated with a more polemical issue regarding questions of authorship. In this respect, some writers for the screen started campaigning for their rights to these so-called *Autorenfilm*. That is, they staked their claim not just to the script but to the film itself. In other words, the film was to be judged as the work of the author rather than the person responsible for directing it (Eisner, 1969: 39). In France the concept of auteur (in the 1920s) comes from the other direction, namely that the film-maker is the auteur – irrrespective of the origin of the script. Often, in fact, the author of the script and film-maker were one and the same (but not always), for example, the film-maker Germaine Dulac worked with the playwright Antonin Artaud to make *La Coquille et le clergyman* (1927). During the 1920s, the debate in France centred on the auteur versus the scenario-led film (that is, scenarios commissioned by studios and production companies from scriptwriters and subsequently directed by a studio-appointed director). This distinction fed into the high-art/low-art debate already set in motion as early as 1908 in relation to film (the so-called *Film d'Art* versus popular cinema controversy). Thus, by the 1920s within the domain of film theory, auteur-films had as much value if not more than canonical literary adaptations which in turn had more value than adaptations of popular fiction. After 1950, and in the wake of Alexandre Astruc's seminal essay 'Naissance dune nouvelle avant-garde: la Caméra-stylo' (*L'Écran français*,




1948), this debate was 'picked up' again and popularized – with the eventual effect, as we shall see, of going some way towards dissolving the high-art/low-art issue. The leader in this renewed auteur-debate was the freshly launched film review *Cahiers du cinéma* (launched in 1951) and the essay most famously identified with this debate is François Truffaut's 1954 essay 'Une certaine tendance du cinéma'. Although it should not be seen as the sole text arguing for auteur cinema, none the less, it is considered *the* manifesto for the **French New Wave**.

In the 1950s, the *Cahiers du cinéma* (still in existence today) was headed by André Bazin, a film critic, and was written by a regular group of film critics, known as the *Cahiers* group. This group did not pursue the 1920s theorists' thinking (see **avant-garde**); in fact, they either ignored or totally dismissed it. This later debate is the one that has been carried forward into film theory. Through the *Cahiers* discussions on the *politique des auteurs* (that is, the polemical debate surrounding the concept of auteurism), the group developed the notion of the auteur by binding it closely up with the concept of **mise-en-scène**. This shift in the meaning of the auteur was largely due to the avid attention the *Cahiers* group paid to American/ **Hollywood** cinema. During the German occupation of France in the Second World War, American films had been proscribed. Suddenly, after the war, hundreds of such films, heretofore unseen, flooded the French cinema screens. This cinema, directed by the likes of Alfred Hitchcock, Howard Hawks, John Ford and Samuel Fuller, seemed refreshingly new and led the *Cahiers* group to a reconsideration of Hollywood's production. They argued that just because American directors had little or no say over any of the production

process bar the staging of the **shots**, this did not mean that they could not attain auteur status. Style, as in mise-en-scène, could also demarcate an auteur. Thanks to the *Cahiers* group, the term auteur could now refer either to a director's discernible style through mise-en-scène or to film-making practices where the director's signature was as much in evidence on the script/scenario as it was on the film product itself. Exemplars of auteurism in this second form (total author) are Jean Vigo, Jean Renoir, Jean-Luc Godard, Agnès Varda in France, Rainer Werner Fassbinder, Wim Wenders, Margarethe von Trotta in Germany, Orson Welles and David Lynch in the United States. Certain film-makers (mostly of the mise-en-scène form of auteur) have had this label ascribed to them by the *Cahiers* group even though their work may pre-date this use of the term (for example Hawks, Ford, Fuller and Hitchcock on the American scene).

The *politique des auteurs* was a polemic initiated by the *Cahiers* group not just to bring favourite American film-makers into the canon but also to attack the French cinema of the time which they considered sclerotic, ossified. Dubbing it *le cinéma de papa*, they accused it of being script-led, redolent with safe psychology, lacking in social realism and of being produced by the same old scriptwriters and film-makers whose time was up (François Truffaut was by far the most virulent in his attacks). This quasi-Oedipal polemic established the primacy of the author/auteur and as such proposed a rather romantic and, therefore, conservative aesthetic. And, given the hot political climate in France during the 1950s, it is striking how apolitical and unpoliticized the group's writings were – pointing again to a conservative positioning. A further problem with this polemic is that by privileging the auteur it erases context (that is, history) and therefore side-steps **ideology**. Equally, because film is being looked at for its formalistic, stylistic and thematic structures, unconscious structure (such as the unspoken dynamics between film-maker and actor, the economic pressures connected with the industry) is precluded. Interestingly, of two of the writers in the *Cahiers* group who went on to make films, Godard and Truffaut, it is Truffaut's work that is locked in the conservative romantic ideology of the *politique des auteurs* and Godard's which has constantly questioned auteurism (among other things).

This *politique* generated a debate that lasted well into the 1980s, and auteur is a term which still prevails today. Given its innate conservatism one might well ask why. The first answer is that it helped to shift the notion of film theory, which until the 1950s had been based

primarily in sociological analysis. The second answer is that the debate made clear that attempts to provide a single film theory just would not work and that, in fact, film is about multiple theories.

What follows is a brief outline of the development of auteur theory through three phases (for more detail see Caughie, 1981; Andrew, 1984; Cook, 1985; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988). The figure outlined opposite gives a graphic representation of auteurism.

The term 'auteur theory' came about in the 1960s as a mistranslation by the American film critic Andrew Sarris. What had been a 'mere' polemic now became a full-blown theory. Sarris used auteurism to nationalistic and chauvinistic ends to elevate American/Hollywood cinema to the status of the 'only good cinema', with but one or two European art films worthy of mention. As a result of this misuse of the term, cinema became divided into a canon of the 'good' or 'great' directors and the rest. The initial impact of this on film courses and film studies in general was considerable, the tendency being to study only the good or great canon. Thankfully the impact of cultural studies on film studies in the late 1970s has served to redress this imbalance as well as developments in film theory.

The debate did not end there. It was picked up in the late 1960s in the light of the impact of **structuralism**. In France, the *Cahiers du cinéma* was obliged to rethink and readjust its thinking around auteurism, and in Britain the film journal *Movie* significantly developed the debate. As a concept, structuralism dates back to the beginning of the twentieth century primarily in the form of Ferdinand de Saussure's linguistic theories. However, it remained little known until the theories were brought into the limelight by the French philosopher-semiotician Roland Barthes in the 1950s – especially in his popularizing essays *Mythologies* (1957). Saussure, in his *Cours de linguistique générale*, sets out the base paradigm by which all language can be ordered and understood. The base paradigm *langue/parole* was intended as a function that could simultaneously address and speak for the profound universal structures of language or language system (*langue*) and their manifestations in different cultures (*parole*). Claude Lévi-Strauss's anthropological structuralism of the 1960s (which looked at American Indian myths) continued in a similar vein, although this time it was applied to **narrative** structures. Lévi-Strauss's thesis was that since all cultures are the products of the human brain there must be, somewhere, beneath the surface, features that are common to all.

Structuralism was an approach that became extremely popular in France during the 1960s. Following the trend set by Barthes and

Lévi-Strauss, the Marxist philosopher Louis Althusser adapted it into his discussions on ideology and Jacques Lacan into his writings on **psychoanalysis**. The fundamental point to be made about this popularization of structuralism in France is socio-political and refers to structuralism's strategy of total theory. This popularization of structuralism coincided with Charles de Gaulle's return to presidential power in 1958. His calls for national unity (in the face of the Algerian crisis), the era of economic triumphalism and the consequent nationalism that prevailed were in themselves symptomatic of a desire for structures to be mobilized to give France a sense of national identity. Thus, the desire for total structure, as exemplified by structuralism, can be read as an endeavour to counter the real political instability of the 1960s.

It is also worth labouring the point that this 'rethinking' of film theory in the 1960s did not come via film criticism (as it did in the 1950s) but through other disciplines, namely structural linguistics and semiotics. This pattern would repeat itself in the 1970s with psychoanalysis and philosophy pushing the debate along, and then history in the 1980s. The significance of this new trend of essayists and philosophers turning to cinema to apply their theories cannot be underestimated. Not to put too simplistic a reading on their importance, it is unquestionably their work which has legitimated film studies as a discipline and brought cinema firmly into the academic arena.

Structuralism was eagerly seized upon by proponents of auteurism because it was believed that, with its scientific approach, it would facilitate the establishing of an objective basis for the concept and counter the romantic subjectivity of auteur theory. Furthermore, apart from its potential to give a scientific legitimacy to auteurism, the attraction of structuralism for film theory in general lay in the theory's underlying strategy to establish a total structure.

Symptomatic of this desire for order in film theory were Christian Metz's endeavours (in the mid-1960s) to situate cinema within a Saussurian semiology. Metz, a semiotician, was the first to set out, in his *Essais sur la signification au cinéma* (1971, 1972), a total theory approach in the form of his *grande syntagmatique*. He believed that cinema possessed a total structure. To adopt Saussurian terms, he perceived cinema as *langue* and each film as being *parole*. His endeavour – to uncover the rules that governed film language and to establish a framework for a semiotics of the cinema – pointed to a fundamental limitation with such an all-embracing, total approach: that of the theory overtaking the text and occluding other aspects of the text. What gets omitted is the notion of pleasure and **audience**

reception, and what occurs instead is a crushing of the aesthetic experience through the weight of the theoretical framework.

This is not to say that structuralism did not advance the debate on film theory and auteurism. It did. Auteur-structuralism brought about a major positive change to auteur theory (*à la* Sarris). The British film journal *Movie* pointed out the problems of a resolutely romantic aesthetic in relation to cinema, but saw ways to deal with them. By situating the auteur as one structure among others – such as the notion of **genre** and the film industry – producing meaning, the theory would yield to a greater flexibility. *Cahiers du cinéma* was also critical of the romantic notion of auteurship because the auteur is not a unified and free creative spirit and film as a text is a 'play of tensions, silences and repressions' (Caughie, 1981: 128). Thus the auteur was displaced from the centre of the work and was now one structure among several others making up the film text. This displacement allowed other structures to emerge, namely, the linguistic, social and institutional structures and the auteur's relationship to them. And even though in the late 1960s the tendency was still to perceive the auteur structure as the major one, it was also recognized that the **studio** and **stars** – amongst others – were equally important contributors to the production of meaning in film. Still absent from the debate, however, was the **spectator** – the question of pleasure and ideology.

After 1968 *Cahiers* made a first attempt to introduce ideology into the debate in its exploration of Hollywood films that either 'resisted' or reflected dominant ideology. (In what is referred to as 'the *Young Mr Lincoln* debate', the *Cahiers* group claimed that this film mediated Republican values to counter Roosevelt's Democratic New Deal measures of 1933–41 and to promote a Republican victory in the 1940 Presidential elections.) Althusser's discussions on ideology, particularly his concept of interpellation, made it possible for both *Cahiers* and the British journal *Screen* to start to address the screen-spectator relationship. At this juncture, both journals accepted what, with hindsight, turned out to be a profoundly anti-humanist analysis of spectator positioning. According to Althusser, ideological state apparatuses (ISAs) interpellate individuals as **subjects**: that is, as pre-existing structures, ISAs function to constitute the individual as a subject to the ideology. ISAs manifest themselves as institutions of the state: the police, government, monarchies are ISAs. Just to illustrate: the British are subjects *to* the monarchy. The individual is, therefore, an effect of ISAs and not an agent. As subject-effects, individuals give meaning to ideology by colluding with and acting according to it. A

mirroring process occurs which provides the subject with a reassuring sense of national identity (of belonging). Applied to film this means that cinema, in terms of meaning production, positions the spectator as a subject-effect who takes as real the images emanating from the screen. Thus, meaning is received, but not constructed, by the subject.

It would take the impact of post-structuralism (see **structuralism**), psychoanalysis, feminism and **deconstruction** to make clear finally that a single theory was inadequate and that what was required was a pluralism of theories that cross-fertilized each other. Post-structuralism, which does not find an easy definition, could be said to regroup and, to some extent, cross-fertilize the three other theoretical approaches (psychoanalysis, feminism and deconstruction). As its name implies, it was born out of a profound mistrust for total theory, and started from the position that all texts are a double articulation of **discourses** and non-discourses (that is, the said and the non-said, *le dit et le non-dit*). In terms of auteur theory the effect was multiple: 'the intervention of **semiotics** and psychoanalysis' 'shattering' once and for all 'the unity of the auteur' (Caughie, 1981: 200). Because post-structuralism looks at all relevant discourses (said or unsaid) revolving around and within the text, many more areas of meaning-production can be identified. Thus, semiotics introduced the theory of the textual subject: that is, subject positions within the textual process, including that of the spectator and the auteur, all producing meanings. Furthermore, semiotics also made clear that the text is a series of **signs** producing meanings.

Having defined the auteur's place within the textual process, auteur theory could now be placed within a theory of textuality. Since there is no such thing as a 'pure' text, the **intertextuality** (effects of different texts upon another text) of any film text must be a major consideration, including auteurial intertextuality. That is, the auteur is a figure constructed out of her or his film: because of x hallmarks the film is ostensibly a certain film-maker's and also influenced by that of others, etc. Psychoanalysis introduced the theory of the sexual, specular, divided subject (divided by the fact of difference, loss of and separation from the mother (see **psychoanalysis**)). Questions of the subject come into play: who is the subject (the text, auteur, spectator)? What are the effects of the **enunciating** text (i.e. the film as performance) on the spectator and those on the filmic text of the spectator? What are the two-way ideological effects (film on spectator and vice versa) and the pleasures derived by the spectator as she or he moves in and out of the text (see **spectator-identification**)? To

speak of text means too that the context must also come into play in terms of meaning production: modes of production, the social, political and historical context. Finally and simultaneously, one cannot speak of a text as transparent, natural or innocent: therefore it is to be unpicked, deconstructed so that its modes of representation are fully understood.

## AVANT-GARDE

It is perhaps curious that a military term should come to define what is now usually an anti-establishment positioning. The term *avant-garde* was first used in the modern sense to typify various aesthetic groupings immediately before and after the First World War, from about the dates given: cubism and **futurism** (both 1909), Dadaism (1916), constructivism (1920) and **surrealism** (1924). It is also curious to note that, in part, it was in reaction to the horrors of that war that the later avant-garde movements came about. The avant-garde seeks to break with tradition and is intentionally politicized in its attempts to do so. In cinema the avant-garde cachet was first used in the 1920s when a group of French film theorists (most famously Louis Delluc, Germaine Dulac and Jean Epstein) turned their hand to film-making and sought to create a cinema of the avant-garde. The first point to be made about this loosely banded collective is the pluralism of its members' theoretical approaches to cinema, which clearly inflected their film-making practices. Between them, they addressed issues of high and popular art, realist versus naturalist film, the **spectator**–screen relationship, **editing** styles (particularly that of the **Soviet school** and **montage**), simultaneity, **subjectivity**, the unconscious, and the psychoanalytical potential of film, **auteur** cinema, cinema as rhythm and as a sign (see **semiology**). Once they turned their hands to making film, experimentation was central to their practice. This experimentation functioned on three overlapping levels: reworking genres, exploring the possibilities of film language and redefining the representation of subjectivity. **Genres** were mixed, intercalated and juxtaposed. Similarly the popular was fused with the experimental (mainstream cinema with **counter-cinema**), socio-realism with the subjective (**documentary** with **melodrama**). Working within these popular genres allowed them to extend, distort, even subvert dominant **discourses**. In so doing, these avant-garde film-makers attacked the precept of filmic **narrative** and spectator omniscience. Their films raised questions about subjectivity and its representation by

disrupting **diegetic** time and space. This was achieved in a number of ways: shifts from diegetic continuity to discontinuity, fast editing, disruption of conventional transitional **shots**, disorientating shots through **unmatched shots** or a simultaneous representation of a multiplicity of perspectives. Thus, the fetishizing **gaze** of the male was also examined, showing an awareness of the underprivileging of female subjectivity. Subjectivity not only became a question of point of view but also included the implicit notion of voyeurism and speculation (of the female other – see **gaze**) as well as the issue of desire, and the functioning of the conscious and the unconscious mind (see Abel, 1984: 241–95; Flitterman-Lewis, 1990; Hayward, 2004).

**Soviet cinema** and **German expressionism** with, respectively, their characteristic editing and **lighting** practices greatly influenced this first avant-garde, as did the surrealist movement and **psychoanalysis**. This avant-garde went through three different stages: subjective cinema (showing the interior life of a character, as in *La Souriante Mme Beudet*, Dulac, 1923), pure cinema (film signifying in and of itself through its plasticity and rhythms, as in *Entr'acte*, René Clair, 1924) and surrealist cinema (a collision of the first two stages with the intention of giving filmic representation to the rationality and irrationality of the unconscious and dream state, as in *La Coquille et le clergyman*, Dulac, 1927 and *Un chien andalou*, Luis Buñuel, 1929).

Since that period, other influences have also come into play. And, interestingly, once again there are three dominant types: first, what Wollen (1982: 92) calls the self-reflexive avant-garde (predominantly American), or what Andrew (1984: 124) terms the American romantic; second, the avowedly political avant-garde (Wollen, 1982: 92) or the European structural materialist film (Andrew, 1984: 125); finally, the narrative avant-garde of the cinema of *écriture* (Andrew, 1984: 126).

Where the American type is concerned, the major influences are the works of what are now called modernist painters but which are in fact those of the avant-garde movements of the early part of the twentieth century (see above). These films have an abstract formalism displaying a self-reflexivity that brings them close in their concerns to the pure cinema of the 1920s avant-garde (as in Maya Deren's *Meshes of the Afternoon*, 1943). As for the second type of avant-garde film, the major influences were Bertolt Brecht and his theory of **distanciation** and Sergei Eisenstein's montage theory. The film practice invoked here is one whereby the film displays its very structures and materiality – that is, it makes an exhibition of its signifying practices,

draws attention to the 'artifice' of cinema. Point of view and narrative structure do not exist so the spectator is under no illusion that what she or he is watching is a two-dimensional projection of the process of film-making. This is what Jean-Luc Godard termed making political films politically. This cinema reflects the revolutionary role of the avant-garde, assailing **ideology** by revealing the structures that put it up and keep it in place (as in Godard's *Weekend* and *La Chinoise*, both 1967). The third type more readily recalls the first and last stages of the 1920s avant-garde but also has some parentage with materialist film. Here the narrative avant-garde works with or on cinematic **codes**, bringing the theory of counter-cinema into practice. This cinema denaturalizes cinema to show that dominant cinematic language is not the only cinematic language and that new modes of subjectivity are possible, including that of the spectator as a producer of the text (see **agency**). Again, this is a predominantly European cinema and, unsurprisingly perhaps, because it addresses issues such as identification, representation, screen-spectator relations and subjectivity as well as production practices (film as work or labour) it is also a cinema associated with feminist film-makers (for example, Chantal Akerman, *Jeanne Dielman, 23 Quai du Commerce, 1080 Bruxelles*, 1975; Marguerite Duras, *India Song*, 1975; Agnès Varda, *Sans toit ni loi*, 1985).

For further reading see Andrew, 1984: 119–27; Flitterman-Lewis, 1990; Gidal, 1989; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 181–213.

## BLACK CINEMA – UK

Perhaps because British cinema itself does not have a supremely first-world track record in film production, we should not be too surprised to hear that within UK cinema, Black cinema is, in relation to its counterpart in the USA, quite a small affair. It is, however, a significant cinema although its roots go back only as far as the 1950s and 1960s. If we consider that the major waves of immigration to the UK from either the British colonies or former colonies occurred after the Second World War, then it becomes clearer still that, since diasporic communities only came into existence in a real way at that time, then it is hardly surprising that a diasporic cinema should not begin to emerge until that period. What has to surprise, undoubtedly, is that presently British Black cinema, in terms of feature films, has not grown significantly in numbers since that time.

Karen Ross (1996: 53) provides us with some revealing statistics as to the status and availability of Black cinema products. Between 1988 and 1992, the total number of Black films available for hire or archival viewing only grew from 130 to 204 (two-thirds of which are in **documentary** format and therefore are not counted as feature films). Seventy-four films in four years – especially those four years during which Black issues were very much to the fore in British consciousness – is a small output particularly if we consider that only a handful are full feature films. Black cinema certainly became a presence during the 1980s and was born out of a governmental response to the civil disobedience of the late 1970s and early 1980s. The many so-called riots of the early 1980s led to numerous enquiries, the results of which made it abundantly clear that the Black communities felt seriously disenfranchised and without a voice. Public-sector financing at a local and governmental level, including grants from the British Film Institute (BFI), was invested into five workshops around the country in major cities where inner-city strife had been at its most vocal. At the same time as the public sector was assisting in financing the workshops, the birth of Channel Four in 1982, with its remit to represent the voices of minorities, meant that there were outlets for the workshops in the form of commissioned work for the channel. Sankofa and the Black Audio Film Collective (established 1983 but now defunct) remain the best known of these workshops. The workshops were concerned as much with film practice as with debates on representation including historical representation and issues of identity and hybridity. It is perhaps for this reason that much of their production cuts across or is a fusion of documentary and fiction. Given the workshops' ethos, it is not difficult to see how certain film theorists and practitioners have identified this cinematic practice with that of Third Cinema (for a fuller debate see **Third Cinema** entry).

Before the public sector provision of financing for projects came into being (however modest), the output of British Black cinema was very tiny indeed. Among the few film-makers around, we can list Lloyd Reckord, Horace Ové and Lionel Ngakane (a Black South African in exile who has been claimed by the British as one of their first Black film-makers). These film-makers directed a handful of feature and non-feature films during the period 1960–80 and largely financed their projects themselves. Most of these films are available through the BFI National Film Archive. All, without exception, deal with the question of marginalization and race relations – thereby establishing a tradition that would, to a degree, be perpetuated in the

later cinema of the 1980s and 1990s. Reckord's *Ten Bob in Winter* (1963) tells the story of African-Caribbean immigrants newly arrived in the UK. Ngakane's *Jemima and Johnny* (1966) is about an inter-racial friendship between a Black girl and a White boy that survives the racist hostility of the street upon which they live by being kept secret in the basement of a ruined house. Ové's documentary, cinéma-vérité style informs his early shorts *Baldwin's Nigger* (1969) and *Reggae* (1970) as well as his first feature film *Pressure* (1975), which is heralded as the first Black British feature film. This film tells the story of an English-born son of Trinidadian parents. Alienated from his White friends and the White values that surround him, this unemployed youth is drawn into the world of thieving and smoking dope. Like other Black youths in his community he becomes the target of police harassment. As a result of all this cumulative pressure it is not long before he joins his older brother and gets involved with Black Power.

*The 1980s–90s and a new era of Black cinema* As a BFI production, Menelik Shabazz's *Burning an Illusion* (1981) was the first feature film to come out of the new climate in British Black film-making. It is therefore a landmark film even though, as we shall see, in some ways it continues the earlier realist tradition that was very much based in the present and not in considerations of history. It is a landmark film in that it sets an agenda – both by what it includes and what it omits – of issues that will concern the politicized Black cinema of the 1980s and 1990s. The film tells the story of a young Black woman, a secretary who, as a result of her Black boyfriend's brutal arrest and subsequent unjust imprisonment, changes from being apolitical into an active participant in Black politics. Her political 'coming out' is both one of style and politics. As a marker of her new political consciousness she rejects her White-based dress codes and straightened hair and adopts an Afrocentric dress and hairstyle. She gives up reading Barbara Cartland and takes on board (at the suggestion of her boyfriend) the writings of Malcolm X. What distinguishes this film from its precedents is the fact that it is a woman-based point of view. What makes it similar is its basis in the contemporary. What makes it ground-breaking is its broader address of race, class and gender and its attempts to show, as Lola Young puts it (1996: 155) 'that relationships are constructed within a racialized social context'. Conflicts of gender are present for a first time in this film even though, as Young (ibid.: 159) points out, the centrality of this issue disappears towards the end of the film and is subsumed under the question of racial politics.

The debates on and practices of issues of representation were closely interlinked and were a founding ethos of the workshop production of the 1980s and 1990s. It could be argued, therefore, that the nature of the film-work that followed *Burning an Illusion* took up and explored many of the issues raised (either by their presence or absence) in this landmark film. But it also has to be said that, even though outside funding was now available and the Black film-makers workshops were producing challenging as well as successful films, the amounts were not sufficient to allow for a boom in feature film production and so Black film-makers still found that, if they were to make films, then for the most part these films would have to be shorts, more precisely documentaries. As a result there was not a widespread or mass audience knowledge about this new Black cinema (as opposed to what was happening in the United States). Work remained pretty much perceived as independent art-cinema. John Akomfrah's film career to date best exemplifies this problematic. A member of the Black Audio Collective and subsequent independent film-maker his films have been both few and far between and short docu-art films. His *Handsworth Songs* (1986) is a 60-minute essay on race and disorder in Britain. The film examines the historical, social and political contexts of racial unrest and seeks, through that broad and historicized optic, to explain why the current anger and disillusionment felt within the Black communities are running so high. Akomfrah's *Seven Songs for Malcolm X* (1993) is a 52-minute documentary on the Black leader who was assassinated in 1965. And to date, Akomfrah has only directed one narrative feature film *Speak Like a Child* (1998), an intense story about three friends in a children's home in Northumbria.

In a different way, Isaac Julien (who was part of the Sankofa Collective for three years) has also been mostly limited to the production of docu-shorts but he has made some features. Perhaps best known for his highly successful feature film *Young Soul Rebels* (1991), for which he won the International Critics' Prize at Cannes, he has also made what might be considered more art-style experimental documentaries on important personas in Black history. *Looking for Langston* (1989) is a 45-minute essay on the private world of Langston Hughes, a founding member of the Harlem Renaissance and a homosexual who had to hide his sexuality in a climate of disapproval, both within White society and Black – where Black manhood could not be queer. In 1997, Isaac Julien made *Frantz Fanon: Black Skin White Mask* (sic), a remarkable composite film made up from documentary footage and re-enacted scenes from the life of this major

Black intellectual of the 1950s and 1960s. Julien has continued in this vein of docu-art short films and was nominated for the Turner Prize (2001, for *Long Road to Mazatlan* and *Vagabondia*). His films are meditations on the culture of diaspora as well as masculinity and desire. And his film practice can best be described as that of a transnational subject committed to a diasporic cinematic language (see his recent docu-fiction art film *Paradiso Omeros*, 2004).

Black women film-makers are also present in equal numbers, although few have broken through to making a full feature film as yet. Maureen Blackwood's *The Passion of Remembrance* (1986) was made with Isaac Julien and was the first full feature film to come out of a Black workshop, in this instance Sankofa. Elsewhere, Blackwood has mostly made shorts including *Perfect Image?* (1988) and *Home Away from Home* (1993). Other Black women film-makers to have made shorts include Martine Attile (*Dreaming Rivers*, 1988), Ngozi Onwurah (*The Body Beautiful*, 1990) and Amanda Holiday (*Miss Queencake*, 1991).

What unites all the productions in this new wave of Black British cinema is a desire to speak not for the diasporas but from *within* them and to reveal the heterogeneity of Black communities – to undo the **myth** of sameness and at the same time give images that do not show Blacks as unmitigated and powerless victims of racism but as citizens with all the complexities of life before them, including choices of political awareness. The issues involve representation, truth in representation and thus 'the positive' is in the frankness of the representation not in the disguising of bad qualities to enhance only the good. This consciousness about diasporas and identities has led some film critics and film-makers (e.g. John Akomfrah) to align this film production with **Third Cinema**. Furthermore, history is often a core element to these Black films. Gurinder Chadha's feature film *Bhaji on the Beach* (1993) is exemplary of this tendency. It tells the story of a small community of Asians living in Birmingham. A day trip is organized to Blackpool by a worker at the Saheli's women's centre. These women of all different generations head off to Blackpool. As the day progresses their various tales unfold. One woman is the victim of a wife-beating husband, another is pregnant by her Black boyfriend who only agrees to share the responsibility for the baby right at the end of the film, older women express their weariness at always 'doing' for their family and dream of more fanciful ways of spending their days. Chadha reveals her men and women characters in all their complexities and multiplicity at the same time as she addresses questions of identity and belonging. Chadha remains committed to these issues but has consistently blended them with

comedy, a combination which, arguably, has led her to a number of international successes (*Bend it Like Beckham*, 2000, and *Bride and Prejudice*, 2004). On the whole, however, Black British cinema has remained very much an independent cinema that has not managed to merge into mainstream. Chadha is one exception as, to date, is the writer-director Asif Kapadia with his first feature film *Warrior* (2001).

*see also*: **Black cinema – USA, postcolonial theory and Third Cinema**

For further reading see Attile and Blackwood, 1986; Bourne 2001; Doy 2000; Martin, 1995; Mercer, 1988 and 1990; Ross, 1996; Young, 1996. For list of films see Givanni, 1992, and for availability of films see Alexander, 1998; for useful bibliography see Vieler-Portet, 1991. Journals: *Channel Four Black Book*, *Black Phoenix* now called *Third Text Incorporating Black Phoenix*, *Black Film Bulletin*, *Black Filmmaker.*

## BLACK CINEMA/INCLUDING BLAXPLOITATION MOVIES – USA

Black cinema is a term that presently appears to refer almost exclusively to African-American film production. However, more recently it has come to encompass Black British cinema and, in future years, it may well extend to include other European diasporic cinema such as French Black or Beur cinemas. Although there is huge debate around the term 'black', for the purposes of this entry the term Black cinema will be primarily used in its more common and 'traditional' conceptualization to refer to a cinema emanating from Black diasporic communities in the USA (there is a separate entry for the UK), to a cinema written from within (but not for as in 'on behalf of') those communities and which is made by individuals who come from those communities. Diaspora refers to a dispersion of people originally belonging to one nation (country) or having a common culture. Black is generally used to refer to people of African or Caribbean descent/ancestry, however, it is a reference that also extends to Asian-Indians. Within the American context we must not forget that other diasporic communities exist: Native Americans (incorrectly referred to as Indians), Chicanos, and Asian-Americans (of Eastern Indian and Asian origin), and that as far as cinematic production is concerned, it is the latter that has been visibly active in film-making (e.g. Wayne Wang and the Indian film-maker now based in the USA, Mira Nair, whose film *Mississippi Marsala*, is about Indians settled in the USA,

1991). Other Black cinemas, such as African or Indian cinemas tend to come under the overall umbrella term of **Third World Cinema**. This problematic term is one conceived to englobe cinemas that are neither of the First World (USA/Hollywood) nor the Second (European cinema) but come from a third space, often a colonized and subsequently post-colonial one. This so-called Third World Cinema refers therefore to indigenous cinemas (primarily those of Latin America, Asia, Africa, and Middle Eastern countries) not to those of the Black diaspora. This is further complicated by the presence of another term in this context, that of **Third Cinema** which refers to a cinema of resistance emanating from so-called Third World countries. (And see entry on Third Cinema since certain debates have argued for including all diasporic cinemas under the rubric of Third Cinema.)

In discussing Black cinema, one is also talking about race/racism and cinema's own racism. Daniel Bernardi (1996, 7) makes the useful and valid point that 'cinema's invention and early development coincided with the rise in power and prestige of biological determinism' (i.e. belief in the superiority of certain races over others). As Clyde Taylor (1996b: 17) explains, it is impossible to talk about Black cinema without referring to racism and to Hollywood's 'negrophobia' and equally to Film Studies' 'passive racism'. In defence of film studies and thanks to the impact of cultural studies, as Bernardi (1996: 5–6) points out, the 1990s has seen a growth in scholarship in this area of Black cinema, even though there is a lot more to do (see Bernardi's comprehensive list, ibid.). By way of illustrating his remarks about Hollywood's negrophobia, Taylor, using the classic epic film of American film history, Griffith's *The Birth of a Nation* (1915), demonstrates how this film is an epic of White supremacy whose theme of national unity rests on the basis of White values – in particular the hatred of miscegnation (1996: 19). Ford's **Western** film *The Searchers* (1956) reminds us, lest we believe the mythology of White nationalism has disappeared, that some fifty years later, very similar fears were being expressed. Containment and displacement are at work in this 1950s' film, just as it was in Griffith's film forty years earlier. While set in the immediate post-Civil War period with its own set of anxieties over the cultural function of race (post-slavery) – which are expressed through fear of the Native-American (Indian) predator on White womanhood – *The Searchers* also reflects America's contemporary late 1950s' anxieties about the growth of the Civil Rights Movement's campaign activities. Fear of miscegnation and the genetic determination of race is at the heart of Ford's film, just as it is

in Griffith's. If, after Griffith's film, mainstream cinema never again portrayed Blacks as a mass menacing White society, then, as Clyde Taylor points out (ibid.: 32), this did not prevent Western epic after Western epic from picturing the mass slaughter of Indians (or indeed Mexican bandidos).

### *Black cinema early days 1890s–1960s*

Both Thomas Cripps (1977, 1982) and Ed Guerrero (1993) have documented the Black presence in early American cinema, not just as figurantes or actors, but also as independent producers and directors in their own right. Thus while Edison and others were making their race films using Black artistes (*Pickanninies*, 1894, *Negro Dancers*, 1895, *Dancing Darkies*, 1897, *The Dancing Nig*, 1907, *For Massa's Sake*, 1911), African-Americans were not slow to come forward with images to counter these negative stereotypes of Black people. Thus, first Bill Foster and then Emmett J. Scott, George and Noble Johnson, and Oscar Micheaux formed their own independent production companies to produce realistic images of African-American life for Black audiences.

Before saying more about these early pioneers of Black cinema in America, a brief point needs to be made about race films since some ambiguity surrounds the terminology. Race films specifically targeted Black audiences and were mostly made by White directors. These race films, in the early days of cinema (when short films were part of a mass of other visual attractions at fairs and exhibitions), appealed to White audiences as well. The idea of the Black body as object for the gaze, as exotic other, came into play very early within cinema history, therefore. Over time, however, race films did not necessarily carry these overly negative connotations. During the years of segregated cinema theatres (starting in the 1900s and lasting in some states as late as the 1960s), Black audiences were the recipients of films 'made for them' but which were not necessarily 'about them'. If race films were all-black films, not all of them typecast their actors. In this context, it is worth mentioning the case of Francine Everett, the Black actress, singer and dancer who, during the 1930s and 1940s, starred in a number of low-budget independent films. Although she could have gone to Hollywood (she was offered but turned down a role in the all Black-cast musical *The Green Pastures*, 1936), Everett refused to accept the stereotyped roles imposed upon Blacks. Instead, she made several short musical films and featurettes, which were extremely popular with Black audiences. She made these so-called race films

with both White and Black directors (e.g. *Keep Punching*, John Clein, 1939; *Big Timers*, Bud Pollard, 1945 who were White directors, and in 1946, *Dirty Gertie from Harlem USA*, by Spencer D. Williams, an African-American film-maker).

Returning now to our pioneers: Bill Foster set up his production studios (the Foster Photoplay Company) in Chicago in 1910 and set about producing comedies based on the Hollywood formula but recast in a Black mould. The important point here is that he was the first to turn genre inside out, to reverse it (to practise what some Blacks term 'grinning'). In his films, Blacks are not the unidentified shuffling, obsequious caricature of Black manhood, nor the de-sexed and obedient Black Mama. His films showed a slice of Black community life, including a thriving Black middle-class (see *The Railroad Porter*, 1912 and *The Fall Guy*, 1913). Other companies quickly followed: the Lincoln Motion Picture Company (1916, Los Angeles) and Oscar Micheaux' Micheaux Book and Film Company (1918).

Following the outrage felt by Black audiences at the screening of Griffith's *The Birth of a Nation*, Black independent film-makers retorted with a cinema of their own (most symbolically perhaps with Emmett J. Scott's *Birth of a Race*, 1918). This was not the sole cause for the emergence and quite long duration of a Black independent cinema sector (late 1910s to the 1940s). Other contributory factors were, first, economic and, second, cultural ones. Economic because there was a Black audience out there, in a sense already 'targeted' because of segregation (implicit or actual, depending on the state). Cultural, because the Harlem Renaissance Movement of the 1920s gave a new pride and voice to Blacks and tackled head-on the question of Blackness and issues of racism. As we shall see, this phenomenon of cinema-as-resistance to negative or incorrect imaging of Blacks reoccurs in the early 1970s and again in the mid-1980s and is equally politically, economically and culturally motivated.

Oscar Micheaux' film work in this context is perhaps best known and because his work spanned some thirty years (1918–48), during which he made between twenty-five and thirty feature films, he has left a legacy that acts as an extremely important reference point to historians and makers of Black cinema. Micheaux set up his production company in 1918, the Micheaux Book and Film Company. Half of his output was produced during the first half of his career (1918–29) and most of his films were based on novels written by him. His early films show the complexities of race but there is no easy binary opposition. He did not offer a sanitized, idealized image of Blacks to counter the Hollywood White image. He attempted to show his

personal view of the contemporary Black experience. Thus his films deal with such difficult questions as concubinage, rape, miscegenation, lynching, gambling, wife-beating, debt, urban graft and passing. For example, in *The Symbol of the Unconquered* (1920), Micheaux exposes the problem of betrayal of one's own race (and Black manhood) when a Black man passes as White. The problem is explored further since the Black not only successfully passes but also simultaneously oppresses his own people (the 'passing' villain collaborates with the Ku Klux Klan to drive homesteaders off valuable oil fields). Inter-marriage is an issue that re-occurs in his work and the expressed fear of betraying one's own race if one marries a White woman (*The Homesteader*, 1920, and *The House Behind the Cedars* 1925). Finally, *The Brute* (1920) was a sharply observed film about gambling and wife-beating which did not please many Black audiences. Micheaux' cinema was based on essentially two environments: the urban and the Western frontier. The frontier held hope for Black people (in Micheaux' view). It was there that they could find a better life freer of the racism and violence of the city.

Micheaux' cinema was a political enterprise – to bring an awareness to Black audiences of the real social and moral difficulties they faced as Blacks and also to bring them strong, identifiable images of their own lives. But his representation of Blackness has raised some criticism among more recent historians of Black cinema. As one set of critics puts it, Micheaux' drive for 'racial uplift, which was so important to counter accusations of "inferiority", challenged White definitions of race without changing the terms' (Bowser and Spence, 1996: 67). He did not question those terms and saw himself as 'an empowering interpreter of Black life *for* the community' (ibid.). This has led to further criticisms that Micheaux reproduced White versions of urban Blacks as lazy, unambitious and as wanting something for nothing (ibid.: 72–3). Other critics have remarked how Micheaux' narratives appear to valorize the paler-skinned Blacks over very dark-skinned Blacks (Karen Ross, 1996: 60–1, usefully provided a detailed summary of critics holding this position). But bell hooks (1992: 135) argues convincingly that what Micheaux was really doing was 'calling into question the Western metaphysical dualism which associates Whiteness with purity and blackness with taint'. hooks goes on to argue that by doing so Micheaux provided a subtext by which he 'interrogates internalized racism and the color caste system'. The fact that the 'baddie' in *The Symbol of the Unconquered* was a Black 'passing' as a White and was therefore pale-skinned would give credence to this intention. The fact also that passing is an issue in his

films from the earliest to the latest (see, for example, *Ten Minutes to Live*, 1932) should lead us to agree with bell hooks (ibid.) that 'Micheaux' work offers an extended cinematic narrative of black sexual politics', including the exploration of 'black heterosexual pleasure within a rigid color caste system that makes the desired object the body most resembling Whiteness'. Micheaux's interest in the expression of desire between Blacks within the heterosexual context is also extremely modern precisely because he shows the complexities of this desire and, equally significantly, because he makes women in his films the agents of desire as much as the men.

Micheaux' films offer an early form of urban realism; they were some of the earliest Black action genre movies and as such his work represents an important heritage to present film-makers. However, much of contemporary African-American cinema seems obsessed with the ghetto, male protagonists are driven by a machismo measured by guns and drugs-dealing and hatred of women and they seem determined that there is no way out except through death. All of which seems to strongly counteract the hopes behind Micheaux' work. That direction, however, appears to have been followed by the work of the so-called new Black aesthetic – predominantly the work of film-makers trained at the UCLA film school during the 1970s and early 1980s (see below). Although it should be pointed out that, during the 1960s, there were a few African-American independents making low-budget films that perpetuated the challenge to the stereotyping of Blacks initiated by Micheaux and his contemporaries (e.g. *The Cool World*, Shirley Clarke, 1963, *One Potato, Two Potato*, Larry Peerce, 1964, and *Still a Brother: Inside the Negro Middle Class*, William Greaves and William Branch, 1968). Furthermore, during this same period, Sidney Poitier came to embody the new image of the Black man. A middle-class, highly educated and well-mannered African-American who fought racism by example (and by a few occasional outbursts of well-timed and supremely controlled anger), Poitier's roles were emblematic of the integrationist politics advocated by Martin Luther King and the films he figured in were about social conscience and the fight against racism. An exemplary film of Poitier as this new Black hero is the inter-racial film and murder melodrama *In the Heat of the Night* (Norman Jewison, 1967) in which he fights Southern bigotry to save the life of a racist White youth from conviction for a murder he did not commit. Despite this positive image, critics have argued that Poitier, as 'the ebony saint', was not afforded in his roles any hint of a sexual life – at least on the surface. Close readings of his performance style would

suggest, however, that a strong sense of **sexuality** is present and indeed a great sensuousness.

### *Black cinema of the 1970s: the authentic Black experience and the new Black aesthetic*

By the 1970s the social conscience movies of the 1960s had given way to a new set of images inspired by the new Black militancy and Black pride that emerged as a result of the renewed Civil Rights action of the late 1960s. The Watts riots in Los Angeles in 1965, the assassination of Martin Luther King in 1968, and the galvanizing of the student movement of protest as a result of the killing of four White students at Kent State University in 1971 all contributed to this resurgence of a new type of Civil Rights activity. The late 1960s early 1970s was the time in America of the Black Power movement; the mid-1970s, of Blacks going to (previously) all-White universities in significant numbers. In Black history, this time was one of politicized opposition to the dominant **ideology** (not one that sought integration in the way, arguably, Martin Luther King had done and that the 1960s' Civil Rights movement had advocated). This oppositional mode also filtered into film schools and in particular into the UCLA Film School in the late 1960s and early 1970s. Then a loosely formed group of Black film-makers, having first made their graduation film, subsequently went on to make films either as real independents or as commercially viable industry-based film-makers. This loose band of film-makers were all bound by the same political ethos to challenge Hollywood's monopoly (and its predominantly White capitalist world-view). Essentially, there were two waves of film-makers: those of the early 1970s and those of the late 1970s. As we shall see (below), those who first broke into the terrain of feature film – Van Peebles, Parks Snr and Jnr – ironically ended up fuelling the Hollywood cinema machine. During 1971–2, three films rooted in African-American urban culture made by these three film-makers were big hits, particularly with Black audiences (*Sweet Sweetback's Baadasssss Song*, Melvin Van Peebles, 1971; *Shaft*, Gordon Parks Snr, 1971; and *Superfly*, Gordon Parks Jnr, 1972). The heroes of these films were rough, tough and, most important of all, they were winners. And the films themselves were direct challenges to Hollywood action films and Hollywood's representation of Blacks. They were sub-**genres** with a message, therefore. Sadly, however, even though it is clear that Van Peebles never thought that his independently produced film *Sweet Sweetback's Baadasssss Song* (*Song*) would be the

cornerstone for some 40 Blaxploitation movies, none the less his film, and the two other films mentioned, became the founding stones for a series of very profitable ventures for Hollywood.

As for those UCLA film-makers who followed later – especially Charles Burnett, Larry Clark, Julie Dash and Hailé Gerima – it was almost as if this second wave of independents had to come in their wake to rectify this cynical appropriation by Hollywood of their earlier compatriots' work. This second wave of film-makers sought to broaden the frame of reference of Black experiences in America – including that of Black women – and to challenge the stereotypes surrounding their representation. This cinema, a socio-realist/ethnographic cinema, became known as the new Black aesthetic. Unfortunately, it is one that has had a rather small impact on Black cinema and which has struggled financially to survive (see Diawara, 1993 for greater detail). The present trend has been to follow more in the wake of the first wave. However, even though this Black aesthetic cinema lacked a successful business model that would enable it to thrive in the national context, it is one that hits out against **stereotypes** (including those that Blacks produce of themselves) and that does not conform to the image of 'Black hero as oppressed' but offers images of self-determination for both men and women. This cinema looks at traditions of Black cultures. Equally, it also addresses issues of post-(White)-colonialism and neo-colonialism. Of this category of cinema, the films of Charles Burnett (*Killer of Sheep*, 1977; *To Sleep with Anger*, 1990; *The Glass Shield*, 1995; *Nightjohn*, 1997) and Julie Dash (*Daughters of the Dust*, 1991) are perhaps the best known.

### *Blaxploitation movies*

In the early 1970s, Hollywood was suffering financially (see **studio system**) so, during the period 1971–6, with an eye to profit, it capitalized on the initial success of *Song*, *Shaft* and *Superfly* and made a plethora of what have become known as Blaxploitation films. These films, starring Black actors – but produced by Whites and mostly directed by Whites – deliberately targeted Black audiences. The authentic Black experience had become subsumed into Hollywood capitalism – the very thing it sought to fight. In all three films, *Song*, *Shaft* and *Superfly*, the heroes/anti-heroes succeed against the (White) system. However, it is Van Peebles' film *Song* that remains the clearly politically motivated one, hence the irony of this sub-genre's co-optation by Whites. Van Peebles' film reflects the politicization of Black America of the early 1970s. *Song* is about the Black commu-

nity, more specifically about the law as an enemy of Black people. The eponymous anti-hero, Sweetback, is a pimp (and a stud) who gets elevated to cult hero when he kills two White policemen who have acted abusively within the Black community. He then escapes to Mexico. This film, which was independently produced and cost $500,000 to make, grossed $20 million in the first few months of its release. Similarly, *Shaft* and *Superfly*, produced by Hollywood (but directed by African-Americans), made tidy profits. These three films represented a positive moment in Black cultural history. Blacks, who hitherto had remained asexualized on the screen now expressed their sexuality. Black audiences were given strong heroes who do not get dragged down but who actually escape from the ghetto. Aggressive and rugged individualism was put up on screen and undoubtedly provided Black audiences with images that both articulated their anger and gave it a positive outcome.

For Hollywood the success of *Shaft* (which won an Oscar for Isaac Hayes' music score) and *Superfly* meant cheap products bringing in high returns. Now Black actors became the flavour of the month, provided they were not expensive. However, if they were inexpensive (i.e. not Sidney Poitier), generally speaking, they were not known by the public at large. So Hollywood turned to musicians and sportsmen (sic) to find their stars (thereby guaranteeing further White audience interest as well – what is known as 'cross-over' value). White directors and producers pumped out sequels to these original hits – all much of a muchness (pimp or private eye beating the system) and simplistically racist (the White as the fat villain). The success of these mix and match, push-button formulaic films led Hollywood to cast its net a bit wider, generically speaking (e.g. monster movies *Blacula*, William Crain, 1972, **Westerns**, *Boss Nigger* (aka *Black Bounty Killer*), Jack Arnold, 1974, and the series featuring the football star Fred Williamson *The Legend of Nigger Charlie*, 1972, *The Soul of Nigger Charlie*, 1973). (For a persuasive counter-reading *of Blacula*, see Leerom Medovoi, 1998.)

For all that the Blaxploitation movies were exploitative of Black audiences, it was surely the first time that a Black presence was so widely visible in movie theatres. Blaxploitation movies had a double-edged result, therefore. On the one hand (and this is particularly true of the earlier Blaxploitation movies – and of course the three pre-blax films), these movies gave a representation of Blackness and Black ghetto life not seen since the Micheaux films. They established an African-American identity that was different from the safe-sexed Poitier (or indeed Harry Belafonte). They created new stars, new

super-heroes: Jim Brown, Ron O'Neal, Richard Rowntree, Tamara Dobson and Pam Grier (some of whom disappeared during the 1980s only to reappear in the 1990s as Pam Grier did in Quentin Tarantino's film *Jackie Brown*, 1998). The men and women heroes of Blaxploitation movies were not White defined. Although the point needs to be made that women heroes in Blaxploitation movies were far from numerous and only two became true stars – Tamara Dobson of *Cleopatra Jones* fame (Jack Starrett, 1973) and Pam Grier – all these heroes were sexed, armed and potent and fought their own case and cause (e.g. drugs, corrupt White cops). The women-based Blaxploitation movies, while thin on the ground, did none the less, as Leerom Medovoi (1998, 15) points out, 'activate feminine narratives concerning racial loyalties and black pride'. Medovoi notes in particular that Pam Grier's roles in *Coffy* (Jack Hill, 1973) and *Foxy Brown* (Jack Hill, 1974) reveal her as facing anxieties actually felt by Black women viewers between their loyalty to the new African-American way (as exemplified by the Black Power Movement and the new heroic images of Black manhood in Blaxploitation movies) and their longing for an Afrocentrism (a passion for a retrieval of African roots). Finally, on the positive side of Blaxploitation movies we must count the dress code, language and music that were so firmly Black-encoded.

On the other hand, the down-side of the Blaxploitation movies, particularly the later ones, was the stress Hollywood placed on sex and violence at the expense of the more complex intertwining of identity factors. If sex and violence were a part of this identity, they certainly were not the whole of it in the first three African-American products that Hollywood sought to reproduce in a formulaic and stereotyped fashion. Many Blaxploitation movies deal with the drug plots against the Black community, but these can now be read as attempts by Hollywood to recuperate any articulation of a politicized message such as Black empowerment. The hero may well be a powerful masculine presence, however, the image of militant Black manhood has gone.

In 1976, the Blaxploitation movie craze crashed. For predominantly two reasons: one economic, the other political. On the economic front, although Blacks were by far the greatest audiences of these movies, they 'only' represented 12 per cent of the population. Demographically speaking, they are not then a large target audience, something that Hollywood requires to make profit. So the 'genre' died out. Cynically, now that, in the late 1980s early 1990s, cable and syndicated television and video sales have upped the demand for all

sorts of films and made targeting 'small' audiences a profitable concern, Hollywood is back in there making Black-cast movies. The fading of the Blaxploitation boom was also politically motivated. In the late 1970s, as a result of the politicizing effects of the Black Power Movement – at least as far as the representation of Black men was concerned – images of Blacks as pimps, junkies, dealers, thieves ran counter to the new images Black men had of themselves. If, however, in the Black cinema of the 1980s and 1990s, Black male images have become more diversified, such is not the case for Black women. Images of Black women as 'bitch' or 'ho' (whore) still prevail (see below).

### *After 1976 – towards a mainstream Black cinema*

Over the last twenty-five years two discernible styles of Black cinema have emerged: the populist tradition which comes down to a revival of the Blaxploitation movie (for example, the Eddie Murphy films of which *Vampire in Brooklyn*, Wes Craven, 1995, merely continues the *Blacula* tradition, comedy-style). At its best, this populist style parodies its antecedents. The second discernible style is the urban African-American ghetto street-life hip-hop-rap movie (Spike Lee's films are exemplary of this tradition). Only to a very minor degree does the more aesthetically minded Black cinema live on in a handful of films.

Of the populist/post-Blaxploitation category, Keenan Ivory Wayans' *I'm Gonna Git You Sucka* (1988) was the first and is, arguably, one of the best Blaxploitation parodies. Playfully **intertextual**, it sends up not just the clothes worn during the 1970s (as 'funny to look at now') but exposes their original parodic/ironic value. That is, the clothes chic of flares, tight polyester shirts, platform shoes, hot pants so preponderant in Whites' dress-code of the 1970s was none other than a restoration into mainstream culture of the dress-code of double-marginals – Black pimps and prostitutes! Wayans also brought back in the **stars** and the music from the earlier films: we all 'remember' the music of *Shaft* – nostalgia for all, including the stars who were willing to come back and make fun of their previous selves.

If Black cinema became a visible phenomenon in the 1980s, it was thanks partly to the success of the star Eddie Murphy – an examplar of the populist tradition (and great puller of White audiences). But it was also thanks to the success of early 1980s' hip-hop-rap films. This category of Black cinema, though perhaps not ideological, does

represent the revival of a specific cultural nationalism: Black urban street life – mainly as it concerns men. Thus, for feminists, Black feminists, it is not an unproblematized revival, nor is it an unproblematic representation of Black culture (see below). However, these films are compositions that do run counter to **classical narrative cinema** in their syncopated jazz-like structure their strong reliance on the rhythm of rap music. They are low-budget products all made for under $10m and grossing up to five times that figure. Lee's *She's Gotta Have It*, 1986, was made for $175,000 and grossed $8.5m; *Do the Right Thing*, 1989, cost $6.5m and grossed over $27.5m. Lee's success has opened the door for others, which is a positive outcome. For example, 1991 saw nineteen Black-cast and Black-directed films and since then there has been a boom in African-American cinema products. It is also the case that the 1990s has witnessed a big increase in the number of African-American stars – mostly male stars it is true – and it is difficult not to attribute this greater presence to Hollywood's realization (thanks to the boom in Black cinema) that Black actors are bankable items and should be more widely used.

Spike Lee's story is undoubtedly *the* success story. With seventeen films to his name to date – most of them made independently or with some funding from the majors (the exception being *Malcolm X*, 1992, see below) – he has become *the* bankable Black film-maker. Whilst his work is consistently controversial and criticized either for the way he represents women, although to be fair he often makes them into strong characters, or for being sensationalist (but again his restraint in his documentary-fiction *4 little girls*, 1997, should be cited to counter this accusation), or for mis-representing history (in *Malcolm X* for example), he has put Black consciousness on the map and, moreover, he has managed to beat Hollywood by making his films into cross-over films (a recent example being *25th Hour*, 2002). He has also brought New York into the frame solidly as a city of reference for his investigations into contemporary American life that is not just limited to the Black experience (see *Summer of Sam*, 1999, and *25th Hour*).

Leaving Spike Lee aside it is the case, however, as Jacquie Jones (1991) says, that Hollywood still holds the purse strings – it chooses the Black directors, actors and the storyline. And these films represent a cinema that does not threaten existing conventions. Citing numerous films, but focusing on Mario Van Peebles' *New Jack City*, 1991, which was independently produced so was perhaps not the best choice to illustrate her otherwise not invalid argument, Jones claims that this cinema proffers a new ghetto aesthetic that magnifies the grim realities of Black urban life, plays on the 'Black on Black crime'

**myth** and, finally, serves to illuminate the image of the Black male for the American audience. At best, then, Blacks become sociologically interesting. Ed Guerrero (1994, 30) argues differently that these 'male-focused, "ghettocentric", action-crime-adventure' movies differ from the standard Hollywood studio action-film product and 'implicitly undermine Hollywood's inherent tendency to repress or co-opt resistant or oppositional social perspectives in its films'. Guerrero sees *New Jack City* (among other contemporary ghetto-centric films) as 'caught up in the aspirations and communal problems of the social worlds they depict' and as historicizing 'the cultural, political and economic issues of the resistant communities they represent'.

Undoubtedly, Hollywood co-opted this cinema in the same way as it had the early 1970s' Black action cinema. And it did so quite swiftly. These cheapies were good value at a cost of between $1.5m and $10m. At that price, returns were guaranteed by Black audiences alone, so any cross-over revenue was pure profit. Once the budget was in the $30m range, then crossover became an imperative, however. While this could seem to compromise Black film-makers, most African-American film-makers working within the studio system argue that they are there 'to expand the definitions and possibilities of being black and to subvert the dominant norm by marketing a "black sensibility" to as broad an audience as possible' (Guerrero, 1994, 30), including of course a White audience.

Leaving that polemic aside, what is interesting in the evolution of Black cinema since its beginnings is the way in which this latest boom – unlike the new Black aesthetic – has not drawn on its historical past but is in many ways deeply ahistorical. While the ghetto-centric movie draws on the ghetto culture of 1970s-Blaxploitation movies, gangster/gangsta-chic has replaced the imagery of Black identity proposed by the earlier movies whose own image is based on the historical and political context of the 1960s' Civil Rights Movement and later the Black Power Movement. Gangsta-chic is based on violence and addiction which the 1970s failed to remove (despite the evidence to the contrary in the Blaxploitation films). There is no apparent desire to leave the ghetto – or the 'hood – only to die in it. Guerrero (ibid.) makes the point that Blacks today are worse off economically speaking than they were before the 1960s' Civil Rights Movement. The ghetto culture is back but with a difference. The ghetto culture has spiralled down in one long social continuity of governmental neglect. The music is rap and is based on violence and revenge, as is the narrative (the story of the rapper film-maker Tupac

Shakur is but one we can point to). The implicit brotherhood of the Blaxploitation movie has gone and now it is gang warfare. The fight is over drugs and who controls them, not how to get rid of them (this gangster warfare is somewhat reminiscent of the 1934s' gangster movies where the fight between gangs was over alcohol).

The film *Menace II Society* (Allen and Albert Hughes, 1993) shows this regressive reality of the 'hood film. The film starts with an evocation by the young protagonist of his father's involvement with the Watts Riots, and then interfaces, through his flashbacks, his parents' life in the 1970s (represented very much in the Blaxploitation movie style) with that of his own life now in the 1990s (represented in the form of the now familiar contemporary hip-hop 'hood film). Ultimately, the present is just a worse manifestation of what was before. Leerom Medovoi (1998: 7) sees the problem in such representations as being located in the fact that they are based on a very narrow historical field, one that is not tied to the destructive legacy of the slave trade but only to the immediate past. The broader history behind the current anger, Black rage and destructiveness is what is missing in these films. Such representations are very few and far between, emanating from the independent films of the new Black aesthetic group (e.g. Burnett and Dash) and which looks at the past – the deep past – as well as to the 'new formulations of identity and subject-hood' (Guerrero, 1994: 28).

In these ghetto-centric films, the reappropriation of Black women by Black male film-makers has not represented a sign of liberation for women either – a deep disappointment given the positive heritage of their representation in Micheaux' films and some Blaxploitation movies. So far in the majority of these movies women occupy predominantly two positions: 'bitch', the wilful woman ripe for being brought down, or 'ho', the sexually demanding and not easily satisfied woman. There is, occasionally, the presence of the 'good' woman, the 'rescuer' the one who utters (however ineffectually) the words of salvation, the one who perhaps represents the 'missing' parent (e.g. *Menace II Society*). For the most part, woman is usually defined in relation to the other male characters, she has no narrative of her own. Misogyny also hits out at the mother, who is often seen as ineffectual, and in return patriarchy is valorized. This is particularly the case in the films of two film-makers, John Singleton (*Boyz 'n the Hood*, 1991) and Matty Rich (*Straight Out of Brooklyn*, 1991). In mainstream cinema, Leslie Harris' *Just Another Girl on the* IRT (1993) stands more or less alone as a film that counters this deeply misogynistic view of women in the 'hood.

### *Who is the speaking subject?*

This new Black cinema (whether populist, urban/ghetto, socio-realist) raises the question of who is the speaking **subject**? Is it 'just' Black? Is it 'just' male and Black? What, in America, is its originating space (i.e. East or West Coast, North or South)? How is it situated in time and space (i.e. in relation to its history)? Speaking the Black subject raises further questions. To whom are these images destined? What about the risks involved in becoming the voice of the Black cause? That is, of speaking about the Black condition rather than from it? Of setting in place a new set of stereotypes (e.g. 'Black as victim')? What, in the final analysis, is to be the relationship with Hollywood? Can Black cinema co-exist with Hollywood in the same time and space?

Blacks represent 12 per cent of the American population, and they presently make up 25 per cent of the cinema-going audience, which is primarily a youth audience. Black culture permeates American society, particularly the youth class. This should make Black cinema an attractive proposition for Black investment. As yet, however, this has not transpired. The emergence of Black cinema is not thanks to Black financing but is a result of Hollywood's economic policy which has co-opted Black cinema into its industrial monopoly. There are kicks against this, which may herald change. First, there was Spike Lee's much publicized defiance over the financing of *Malcolm X* (1992). Warners produced it but would only put up $28m, Lee needed $34m. He publicly exposed Warners when he named the Black celebrities who helped make up the $6m shortfall. Second, Lee and other film-makers have set up an association based in New York: the Black Film-makers Foundation, to counter Hollywood's control and to help finance Black film-makers' work (founding members include Charles Burnett, Julie Dash, Reginald and Warrington Hudlin, Charles Lane). Third, Black film-makers have refused, through their film practices, to be measured by the two key modalities usually imposed by critics on films coming from the margins: authenticity and **realism** (Kennedy, 1993). Thus, although critics may decry the failure of films that refer to rap culture both texturally (through their structures) and intertextually (through the presence of rap artists and their songs within the film) to convey the authenticity of the concerns of rap lyrics, they are missing the point that this cinema is not one that is seeking to marginalize itself as **avant-garde** but one that is seeking to deconstruct **hegemonic** practices from within (Kennedy, ibid.). Similarly, why must realism mean one thing

only – ghetto Black violence – and not middle-class success? Finally, there is another voice from the margins that is at last getting heard – that of the Black female and African-American female film-maker (currently there are twenty African-American female film-makers in America). This is a voice that gives a different image of Black womanhood to that offered by Black male cinema. To the misogynistic and at times homophobic images of Lee, Singleton and Mario Van Peebles, Kathleen Collins counters with images of middle-class professional womanhood (*Losing Ground*, 1982), Heather Foxworth with images that expose Black male sexism within the Black community (*Trouble I've Seen*, 1988). Mira Nair's *Mississippi Masala* (1991) comes at inter-racial desire from a new and different perspective that points to the multicultural reality of the United States. In this film, the two young lovers are an African-American man and an Asian-Indian woman – inter-racial marriage in this context reveals itself as having the immense potential of a rich mixture (a Masala) of cultural backgrounds. Finally, African-American women and their sexuality and the way it has been negatively constructed by Black male film-makers is being addressed in theoretical contexts (see Manatu, 2003).

*see also*: **Black cinema – UK, postcolonial theory, Third Cinema**

For further reading see authors quoted in above text and see also: Antonio, 2002; Imruh Bakari, 1993; Bogle, 1988 and 1994; Cripps, 1978 and 1993; Diawara, 1993; Gabbard, 2004; Givanni and Reynaud, 1993; Guerrero, 1993; Snead, MacCabe and West, 1994; Manatu, 2003; Martin, 1995; Masoud, 2003; Rocchio, 2000; Taylor, 1986; Wilkins, 1989. For a list of films see Givanni, 1992, for a list of women film-makers see Oshana, 1985, and for a list of available films in the UK, see Alexander, 1998. For a bibliography on Black cinema see Vieler-Portet, 1991. Finally for journals see *Black Film Review* (1986–91) and *Black Camera*.

## BLOCKBUSTERS

The phenomenon of the blockbuster has been around in the West for half a century and the term refers to two aspects of the film product: first, its enormous cost and expected financial return; and, second, the array of special attractions and dazzling effects (be it stars, sets, costumes, technical effects) put on screen to bring audiences in in their droves. Blockbusters are a way for the major production companies to stay on top and dominate competition: because they are so

expensive to make, minor production companies cannot afford to compete. They also come with massive financial backing for their publicity campaign to ensure that they attract an audience beyond those who conventionally attend. To this effect an imaginary community is created by the campaign which sells the film on the principle of inclusion – you are either in because you have seen it or out because you have not. Other aspects of selling this inclusion are the spin-off merchandising products (toys, games, etc). A further vital key factor to their million-dollar success is of course the pre-sale value of the film to TV and video/DVD etc.

Blockbusters come in and out of fashion, often being dropped either because the economic climate of the times is unfavourable and studios are suffering financially or because of studios and production companies finding themselves overstretched financially after making losses on a particular blockbuster film that flopped (the most famous case being *Cleopatra*, Mankiewicz, 1963). But it always bounces back. So far we can trace three cycles of the blockbuster post-1945: the 1950s ending early 1960s; the mid-1970s ending early 1980s (Michael Cimino's *Heaven's Gate*, 1980, is often cited as the flop that put a stop to that period of blockbuster production); and the 1990s (and still on-going). In each instance technological advances are exploited with a view to bringing back lost audiences to the cinema theatres. So in the 1950s it was **cinemascope** and **colour**; in the mid-1970s it was the new super-formats of the widescreen (70mm film), use of front projections and motion-control systems for special effects and new sound technology (George Lucas's *Star Wars*, 1977, being an outstanding example); in the 1990s it was the advances in digital technology – this made so much more possible in terms of camera work and special effects and it continues to be exploited to its full over a broad set of **genres**. Special effects are now so important there are several production houses (dotted around the world) that are entirely devoted to special effects.

Blockbuster is a term and not a generic type. Blockbuster movies include **action films**, **crime films**, **epics**, **sci-fi films**, **war films**, **Westerns**, some **animated films** and of course we must not lose sight of films from Eastern nations – who also have their blockbusters – such as the martial arts films. In blockbusters everything is larger than life, including sound. When purporting to refer to the real – as with war movies – this 'larger than life', in order to pass as authentic, can take on the form of the hyper-real. Take, for example, the opening sequence of *Saving Private Ryan* (Spielberg, 1998), which re-creates the Allied landing on Omaha beach. Recent

developments in computer and video games have contributed further to this idea of blockbuster films being more than the real and have, as we know, impacted on the use of digital technology in cinema (*Lara Croft: Tomb Raider*, de Bont, 2003, and *Run Lola Run*, Tykwer, 1998, are two examples). So now it is possible and desirable, given target audiences, to invent sets that go beyond the real and yet which have a three-dimensionality that allows them to convince us of a larger than life reality (take as an example the recent *Lord of the Rings* series (Peter Jackson begun 2001)).

What attracts us to blockbusters? The special effects are an essential ingredient, but there is more to it than that. We are there to enjoy the spectacular elements but we are also there because we want to work out the narrative. However, there is a tension between narrative and spectacle and often it is quite difficult to find a coherence to the story-line because it is so consistently interrupted by spectacle. King (2000) writes very helpfully about the basic ingredients of the American blockbuster movie and argues that it is not the case that it is all spectacle at the expense of narrative. If we assume that narrative has as its mission the production of homogeneity then the spectacular film is not really going to offer us this. A primary reason, King argues (2000: 4), is that Hollywood's driving mission is to make money and that in its 'desire to appeal to a mass-market [it] is likely to produce a degree of built-in *in*coherence and conflicting demand'. What the spectacular does have, of course, is ideological effects (as does any film for that matter); but they emanate from a particularly narrow frame of reference in that the spectacular offers – merely – a way of reconciling rival or contradictory demands.

The first set of contradictions is based in the myth of the frontier. As King explains (2000: 2), the myth of the frontier is a founding stone of American narrative frameworks (especially the spectacular – we need only think of the Western). The frontier myth is always in opposition with the concept of home (be it domesticity, family, etc.). The frontier within the spectacular broadens in its frame of reference depending on which generic type you are watching. In a war movie the frontier is clearly represented by troops trying to gain advantage on enemy territory; domesticity through a longing for home. In action films the opposition is often murkier – the cause propelling the protagonist into action may not be clear nor indeed even honourable (see Michael Mann's *Collateral*, 2004, in this context) and domesticity is represented through the idea of the (heterosexual) couple or family life which, in turn, is often put at risk by all the action going on. In the action thriller slightly different poles of

opposition are set up. Often this generic type takes the form of the individual (the frontier hero) being pitted against corporate industry, technology that has gone awry or anonymous government bodies (the anonymity preserves any questioning of America's institutions per se of course). Again the family will be there as the other sphere – once more under threat as the individual frontier hero persists in trying to overcome the 'baddies'. Domestic tranquillity is the hoped for outcome, but does not always transpire. The frontier hero may well lose all that is dear to him in this David and Goliath struggle (see Michael Mann's *The Insider*, 1999). Thus, in terms of reconciling rival demands, we go to see the spectacle with the heightened expectation of an alternative to domesticity – to experience the thrill of the spectacle as opposed to our more humdrum everyday existence. The ideological effect is to bring the concept of the frontier into the civilized sphere (2000: 5), giving us a vicarious but 'harmless' experience of the frontier. Of course, once we read against the grain then we get a sense that the frontier myth with its ideological effects and the institutions they support should be questioned.

The second set of contradictions has to do with the very process of viewing itself. We derive pleasure from the effects bombarding us – what King (2000: 94) refers to as 'in your face' effects. This does not limit itself to action-type movies. Musicals, especially more recent ones, also offer this effect. We love this feel of being 'done to' (2000: 98); but we also resist it because we would like to linger longer, savour the effects which flash past so quickly. Baz Luhrmann's *Moulin Rouge!* (2001) is a good example of this split response. There is huge enjoyment from the flourish of the cameras and the dazzling sets, costumes, and song and dance routines. However, because the camera never allows us to linger long enough to see everything, so our pleasures are never fully indulged in terms of looking. This wanting more draws us into the erotics of the spectacle (be it musical, action or war movies) – a **scopophilic** process by which we get hooked. However, whilst we derive pleasure from this bombardment of our senses we are also engaged in trying to make sense of the narrative – thus there is this further set of contradictions with, this time, spectacle vying with narrative for our attention. At times a film can come dangerously close to failing to keep us on that knife-edge. Michael Mann's *Collateral* is a good example of this. There is a sense in which this film is a replay of just so many of Mann's visual and thematic obsessions (beginning with *Thief*, 1981), we could ask ourselves does the Tom Cruise character, Vincent, a stone-cold assassin who completely lacks a history, engage us enough to tough-out this

action-packed adventure? Is the lack of any real narrative saved for us by the taxi-driver character played by Jamie Foxx – Max Durocher (literally Max of the Rock) – or is he just a conventional (Black) side-kick persona for the central protagonist? Whatever our answers it does not seem to matter as far as box-office records are concerned. Mann's film has been a big commercial success, so clearly audiences are not tired of the formula (yet).

For further discussion of blockbuster films see separate entries for **action films**, **crime films**, **epics**, **musicals**, **sci-fi films**, **war films**, **Westerns**.

For further reading see King, 2000; Neale 2000.

## B-MOVIES

Cheap, quickly made movies first came into prominence in the United States during the depression (early 1930s) when audiences demanded more for their money – a double bill: two films for the price of one. So a B-movie was screened as a second feature alongside a major feature film (called an A-movie). Monogram and Republic made B-movies only, mostly **thrillers** and **Westerns**; the major studios also had to turn some of their studios over to B-movie production and some of their productions met with astonishing success (for example RKO's *Cat People*, Val Lewton, 1942). The Supreme Court decision in 1948 to end the major studios' cartel over distribution and exhibition opened the screens to independently produced films. The impact of this decision on the Hollywood studios was to recreate fierce competition among the majors. As a result the cost of making films in and for Hollywood went sky-high. The effect was to put an end to the production of B-movies and to the double bill.

*see also*: **studio system**

## BOLLYWOOD

This term, which is a conflation of Bombay and Hollywood, was coined in the 1980s by the West to refer to the dominant form of Hindi popular cinema produced in Bombay (now Mumbai), namely the singing-dancing-action films which have now found a place on

the world stage. There is a concern that this term has ended up giving a rather limited view of Indian cinema since there is a far more diverse production than just Bombay commercial cinema (Kabir, 2001: 21). However, on the other hand, it has allowed the West to understand that these types of movies represent a large-scale entertainment product that should be viewed in the same way as Hollywood films are regarded (ibid.). It has also allowed the West to come to know this cinema rather than just being limited to 'knowing' Indian cinema as a small collection of **auteur** films.

What is a Bollywood film? First, it is a popular Hindi film with massive audience appeal, helped doubtless by the fact it is presented in a seamless mix of Hindi and Urdu (the two North Indian sister languages understood by about half the population of India). Second, it is a mix of epic, romance and melodrama. Finally, it is a musical love-story based on a set of quite explicitly coded conventions. The story, which is about unconditional love, conflict, revenge and redemption, is woven together by a minimum of six songs and two lavish dance routines (with forty-plus people). The average Hindi popular film relies on a conventional narrative (boy-meets-girl), and its originality comes down to the musical score and the song and dance routines. In this regard, as with its narrative line, it has quite a lot in common with the Hollywood musical. In terms of cross-fertilization between the two cinemas, however, it is noteworthy that whilst Bollywood readily borrows plot-lines from Hollywood, the reverse is almost impossible because of the complexities of the Bollywood song and dance routines which Hollywood is hard pressed to imitate (2001: 15). Bollywood borrows but, thanks to its own codes and conventions, so transforms the initial text that it is hard to detect the original.

Much like the Hollywood musical, the Bollywood musical has its own ideological effects. But, whereas the American genre sells utopia in the form of harmonious marriage, the Bollywood musical, in its stressing of the importance of honour and self-respect as well as upholding religious and moral values which include marriage, provides a far broader or complex image of what it means to be Indian. The *Devdas* story – which has had three iterations (Barua, 1935; Roy, 1955; and Bhansali, 2002) – is a good illustrative example of this obedience narrative and the consequent ideology at work. It was a narrative that became a popular model for love-triangle films and, in ideological terms, gave a strong warning to those who would attempt to marry against parental authority (2001: 10). The story goes as follows: 'Devdas is a high-caste Brahmin who cannot marry the love

of his life, Parvati, his neighbour's daughter, because she is of a lower caste. He later befriends a prostitute who gives up her profession and turns to spirituality. In a downward spiral of self-destruction, the Hamlet-like Devdas becomes an alcoholic and ultimately dies at the gate of Parvati's marital home' (2001: 10).

These Bollywood films last between two and a half to three hours, so performance, sets and locations are crucial – especially since the construction of the narrative is formulaic and based in repetition. Audience consumption is very different from a Western audience. Audiences interact with the screen (laughing, clapping, hissing), male spectators walk out from time to time (though they readily return for the climatic dance sequences), and so on (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 123). But the point is that if these audiences are attracted to these films in their millions, despite their repetitive nature, it is because of the exquisite nature of the sets and exotic locations on the one hand and, on the other, the glamour of their movie stars. Love scenes in Bollywood musicals are extremely discreet with little overt sexuality (Torgovnik, 2003: 32). Indeed intimacy of this order is usually confined to the song and dance sequences, hence their enormous importance, and their attraction to male audiences.

Let us now consider the stars since they had such an influence on the genre itself. By the mid-1940s, when the studio system collapsed (due to the speculative nature of financing the industry which rendered it unstable), financiers sought safer investment for their (often 'black' economy) money. So they turned to stars and offered them huge fees. The new order had begun: 'from now on stars were to rule the roost' (Joshri, 2001: 26). Raj Kapoor and Dilip Kumar were the first to establish themselves. So too was Nargis, the great female star. These were soon followed by Dev Anand and Guru Dutt. Each generation of stars in different ways moved the genre on, however. Kapoor and Dutt went on to be film-makers in their own right. Kapoor set up his own production company (RK Films) and Nargis, his fetish star, was a key factor in the huge success of his productions. Dutt went on to become one of India's leading innovative film-makers. With his serious take on song to heighten drama, Dutt, along with the likes of Satyajit Ray and Mrinal Sen, was credited with contributing to the Golden Age of Indian cinema (1950s to early 1960s) – primarily a social cinema that dealt with many of the real concerns of India. In the mid-1960s, thanks to the introduction of colour, the Hindi film took a new turning which essentially put an end to the more experimental nature of the Golden Age cinema, returning it to its former formulaic typology. These new films stressed

in the form of settings and costumes. Production values became all-important at the expense of social drama. By the 1970s, these formulaic films, to keep their attractiveness alive, began to mix genres up together and so combined romance, comedy, family drama and action (2001: 16). These became known as the Masala film (so-named after the different spices that make up the Masala curry). It is interesting to think of this labelling in relation to questions of audience consumption; somehow these films were, as it were, good enough to eat (and it is worth remembering that during the 1970s the female star Madhuri Dixit was a cult figure)! In any event this multi-genre approach is still the dominant film style for the Bollywood musical today.

During the 1970s and through the 1980s another type of Hindi film was also being made. This was the Bollywood blockbuster angry young man movie with Amitabh Bachchan as *the* superstar. His movies were a defiant challenge to the other more trivial films of Bollywood cinema and had the effect of changing the nature of the Hindi film by bringing violence into the melting pot of this already multi-genre style film. His biggest blockbuster hit was *Sholay/Flames* (Ramesh Sippy, 1975). The shift in mood of the Bollywood film as embodied by Bachchan and exemplified by *Sholay* is often associated with the radical shift in the political arena of the time. Indira Gandhi had declared a state of emergency during this period of great civil unrest (Gopalan, 2002: 9). The typical narrative of these more action-based musical films – which are peopled with 'gangsters, avenging women, brutal police, and corrupt politicians' – are stories of revenge and vigilante action (2002: 10). *Sholay* gained iconic status itself not just because it had a 'mimetic relationship to reality' (India of the 1970s) but also because, in that it so clearly reconfigured the American Western (2002: 10), it became 'the legendary source that spurred an entire generation of film-makers to borrow from globally circulating genres' (2002: 11). In its truest sense *Sholay* was perhaps *the* first Masala movie.

The effect of these action films on the more conventional song and dance Hindi film was to cause a drop in the latter's popularity during the 1980s. However, the action Bollywood film, after a successful run of over fifteen years, subsequently witnessed a 'partial eclipse' by the end of the 1980s – arguably due to the rise to political power of the BJP [the Bahratiya Janata Party] and its focus on 'Indian-ness' – and a reverse trend occurred with the return of the song and dance family-oriented film which still prevails today (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 110). To the West this might seem a curious phenomenon

when one considers that, even though the family is still a big cinema-goer, today's audience is predominantly a youth audience – especially male, representing about half of India's population (five hundred million out of one billion). However, as Kabir (2001: 2) makes clear, one of the great advantages that 'Hindi cinema has always enjoyed over the commercial cinemas of other regions is its ability to create a composite world'. Indeed, ever since the Bombay musical films of the 1930s (the first of which was *Alam Ara*, 1931), differences have been glossed over in favour of a composite reality, so this is by no means a new phenomenon. But this does not mean that the texts lack variety for there is, as Mishra (2002, xviii) rightly points out, an immense complexity to this genre. Today, this composite world is one that successfully combines the global with the local. So, on the one hand, a typical Hindi film will be a product of cultural pickings that appeal to a pan-Indian audience in their reference to global culture, but it will also always 'revert to tradition', to the status quo that audiences demand when it comes to marriage (Kabir, 2001: 3). This insistence on tradition enables cinema audiences to define what it means to be Indian (ibid.). But it does not detract from their ability to take pleasure in the ideology of consumption that is also put up on screen in the form of modern fashion and wealthy lifestyles that come from Western influence (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 115). This hybrid nature of the new Bollywood film means that it exports well. The presence of the global within the film facilitates identification for the diasporic Indian audiences world-wide but, equally important, the representation of a traditional India offers a mirror of Indian-ness with which they also seek to identify. It is noteworthy in this context that diasporic film-makers have recently turned their hand to making Bollywood musicals and, interestingly, that they have been female directors: Mira Nair, *Monsoon Wedding* (2002); Gurinder Chadha, *Bride and Prejudice* (2004).

Nowadays, the Indian film industry has acquired a renewed status with the liberalization of finances dating from the mid-1990s. This has meant that stars do not command the industry in the same way as they did before and that scripts have increasingly become the starting point for the film before the star (Gokulsing and Dissanayake: 111). This does not mean, however, the end of megastars. The latest male superstar is Sharukh Khan. His recent film *Devdas* was an international success even though it was the most expensive Hindi film ever made (an expense that had much to do with the figure he can command). Like earlier stars before him (particularly of the 1950s), Khan has set up his own production company (Dreamz Unlimited), thereby

giving himself considerable control over his star image. As for the women who enjoy superstar status as well (though certainly not to the extent of Sharukh Khan), presently, we can list: Kajol, Karisma Kapoor, Kareena Kapoor and Aishwarya Rai.

*see also*: section on Indian cinema in **Third World cinemas**

For further reading see Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003; Gopalan, 2002; Joshri, 2001; Kabir, 2001; Mishra, 2002; Torgovnik, 2003.

## BRITISH NEW WAVE

The British New Wave, like its French counterpart, was quite short-lived: 1958–64. As a movement, it coincided with the social and cultural changes occurring in Britain largely as a result of the emergence during the 1950s of a youth class. This was a period marked by radical change in music, fashion and sexual mores – this was the era of the 'swinging sixties'. It was also the era of 'kitchen-sink' drama, of a gritty new **realism** on stage starting with John Osborne's play *Look Back in Anger* (1956).

The legacy of the British New Wave is both that particular kitchen-sink theatre of realism and the radicalized **documentary** tradition of the **Free Cinema Britain**. Given that the film-makers who dominated the New Wave – Lindsay Anderson, Karel Reisz and Tony Richardson – were the same as those of the Free British Cinema group, this part of the heritage is hardly surprising. The Free British Cinema group's work had focused on the youth and working-classes at work and in leisure; the New Wave was one that focused on contemporary social issues of youth growing up in a culture of increasing mass communication. Prostitution, abortion, homosexuality, alienation caused by mass communication culture, failures in couples' relationships – these were some of the dominant 'social problems' dealt with. The documentary-realist style is everywhere in evidence in this cinema of the New Wave, with the predilection for location shooting, particularly in northern industrial cities, the use of black and white fast stock film (which gave a grainy, newsreel look to the images), and natural **lighting**. **Stars** were not used, although actors who were used, such as Alan Bates, Albert Finney, Richard Burton and Michael Caine, soon found star status thanks to their roles in these films. It is noteworthy that the two women actors most associated with the films of this movement, Rachel Roberts and Rita

Tushingham, never gained such status. The majority of the films were based on books or plays written by authors who had first-hand experience of working-class life: Alan Sillitoe, John Braine, David Storey, Shelagh Delaney.

Although some film historians nominate *Room at the Top* (Jack Clayton, 1959) as the first New Wave film, it would be more accurate to say that that film was a precursor to the movement and that Richardson's adaptation for the screen (1959) of Osborne's *Look Back in Anger* is in fact the real beginning of this movement. Osborne and Richardson were also flag-bearers in that they were the first to form an independent production company, Woodfall Films, to finance their projects. This was swiftly followed by Joseph Janni's Vic Films, then Bryanston – a subsidiary of British Lion and made up of a consortium of sixteen independent producers – and, finally, Beaver Films, formed by Richard Attenborough and Bryan Forbes. Soon after being established, Woodfall Films sought financial backing from Bryanston to produce Shelagh Delaney's *A Taste of Honey* (Richardson, 1961). This link-up with the British Lion subsidiary would in part seal the fate of this movement in 1964.

*Look Back in Anger* with Richard Burton in the protagonist's role as Jimmy Porter was the first of the so-called 'angry young men' films, shortly followed by Albert Finney in *Saturday Night and Sunday Morning* (Reisz, 1960) and Alan Bates in *A Kind of Loving* (John Schlesinger, 1962). The real difficulties of single motherhood and the loneliness that social marginalization imposes on homosexuals are central themes to *A Taste of Honey.* The hypocrisy of authoritarian institutions such as the Borstal comes under fire in *The Loneliness of the Long Distance Runner* (Richardson, 1962). *This Sporting Life* (Anderson, 1963) exposes the corruption and commercialism of the rugby-league business and the brutality to which lovers can be pushed by a lack of communication.

By 1963, over a third of film production was New Wave. The movement was riding high and proving that the British film industry could resist **Hollywood** domination. It was, however, this very success, in particular of Woodfall Films which produced the majority of the New Wave films, that brought about the movement's – and thereby the British film industry's – demise. Richardson wanted to make a film adaptation of the novel *Tom Jones.* He wanted to shoot it in **colour** and full costume. This required a considerably larger budget than was typical for a New Wave production. British Lion refused to back the project and so Richardson turned to the American production company United Artists. At this time Hollywood

was experiencing severe financial difficulties and was only too pleased to turn its attention to Britain and invest money where overheads and talent were cheap. United Artists' agreement to finance the production of *Tom Jones* (1963) was the thin edge of the wedge that broke the back of the British independent companies and, ultimately, British Lion. Taken by the British success, the major Hollywood **studios** invested in British production projects and, by 1966, 75 per cent of British films were American-financed. By 1967 this figure grew to 90 per cent. By the end of the 1960s, when Hollywood began to experience an upswing in its fortunes, the American companies had upped stakes and gone home, leaving the British film industry virtually incapable of financing itself. Add to this the selling-off in 1964 of British Lion, which had released the majority of the New Wave films, and the picture of the industry's demise is complete.

*see also*: **Free Cinema Britain**

For further reading see Hill, 1986.

## BUDDY FILMS

Traditionally buddy films are for the boys. That is, the **narrative** centres on the friendship between two male protagonists. This **genre** was very much in vogue in the 1960s and 1970s, perhaps as a response to the dehumanizing effects of the Vietnam War in which the United States became heavily entangled after 1962. Paul Newman and Robert Redford are the icons of this genre, often appearing together (*Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*, 1969; *The Sting*, 1973, both George Roy Hill). This friendship is totally heterosexualized, there is no possible misreading since the heroes are always doing action-packed things together (shooting themselves out of trouble, primarily) – 'boys will be boys' – and a woman will be 'around' even if very marginal to the narrative (she guarantees the heroes' heterosexuality, just in case). The buddy genre developed, in the 1980s and 1990s, to include a proto-father–son friendship, again with the icon Newman but accompanied this time by a younger alter-ego, Tom Cruise (*The Color of Money*, Martin Scorsese, 1986) – signifying a restoration of family values or at least of the value of the father ('every boy needs a man to show him how to be a man'). Though considered a male genre, recently this phallocentrism has been called into question, in some instances to hilarious effect, as in the film

*Thelma and Louise* (Ridley Scott, 1991) in which two women buddies hit the road. Another 'inverted' buddy movie is the very camp and funny Australian-British co-production *The Adventures of Priscilla, Queen of the Desert* (Stephan Elliot, 1994). Buddy films have also, in the light of AIDS, stretched in meaning and produced a sub-genre that addresses gay male friendship (for example *Longtime Companion*, Norman René, 1990). In this manifestation the buddy film has come to represent what it most eschewed or feared in its earliest manifestations.

## CENSORSHIP

In some countries censorship is quite benign and limited to a rating system to protect minors and to inform audiences of the content of films. Other countries still pursue a very strong line in censorship, banning films in their entirety or insisting on cuts being made. Censorship tends to be imposed in three main areas: sex, violence and politics. The first two have been of primary concern to groups lobbying for the welfare of minors; the third more clearly has been the concern of state institutions and governments. Relaxation of censorship laws is very recent: late 1960s for the United States; mid-1970s for the United Kingdom, France and Spain – and so on. In some countries, the United States and Germany for example, it is constitutionally illegal to censor films, even though censorship may be maintained. Generally a country that is more assured in its political culture and does not feel its **hegemony** to be under threat is less inclined to draconian censorship. However, the fact that this is not always the case points to the notion that consensuality is not always a given. Incidents in France around Scorsese's film *The Last Temptation of Christ* (1988) show that the Catholic lobby still has a strong foothold within smaller communities. Although there is supposed to be a separation between church and state in France, the Catholic lobby obliged mayors to cancel screenings. Similarly in this seemingly contradictory vein, repressive regimes have enacted sensible censorship laws. During the Nazi regime and also during the occupation of France, the Germans imposed strict regulations to protect minors, so that certain films were forbidden to those under sixteen.

Because the United States' film industry is dominant, the American **Hays** Office/Code is the best-known censoring body. Its official title is the Motion Picture Producers and Distributors of America, popularly renamed the Hays Office after its first president, William

H. Hays (serving from 1922–45). The Hays Office was established in 1922 in response to public furore over the morality of some of Hollywood's **stars**. However, the point should be made that this office was established by the film industry itself, which thought it in its own interests to set it up as a way of protecting itself against federal intervention. It is curious that sex scandals off-screen should bring about censorship of **narratives** on-screen. But that's what happened – and many careers were broken, even if the scandals were not proved or indeed if a star was acquitted in a trial, as was the case, most notoriously, for Fatty Arbuckle. Hays wanted Hollywood to act as self-censors rather than let state or federal censorship intervene. This meant of course that stars were even more in the pocket of the production companies, thereby finding themselves in the paradoxical position of having simultaneously to be larger than life and yet also totally 'normal' and ordinary – a schizoid conflict that killed some of them (for example James Dean, Marilyn Monroe, Judy Garland, River Phoenix).

While the film industry may have been reasonably successful in watching over its stars, it did not fare so well in self-censoring its own product. Movies privileging the underworld and gangsters, for example, were severely condemned by critics. So in 1934 a production code (based on the Ten Commandments) was published to which all companies had to adhere. In 1968 the code was discarded in favour of a ratings system which still prevails. The office is now the MPAA: Motion Picture Association of America.

For further reading see Kuhn, 1988 (cinema of the silent period); Black, 1994 (Hollywood in the 1930s); Matthews, 1994 (censorship in the United Kingdom).

## CINEMA NÔVO

A cinema that emerged in Brazil in the early 1950s and whose style and critical aesthetic were at first influenced by the **Italian neo-realist** movement – not surprising given that several of the directors active in this cinema had studied film in Rome in the early 1950s, the peak period of Italian neo-realism. Films of this first period were primarily **documentary** in style and portrayed the lives of ordinary people. Later, in the 1960s, this movement became more radicalized and a cinema co-operative was formed that sought to renovate a film aesthetic appropriate to contemporary Brazil where poverty, starvation

and violence were the daily diet of most, and concentrated wealth the good fortune of the very few. Film-makers in this co-operative included Glauber Rocha, Nelson Pereira dos Santos and Ruy Guerra. This cinema was populist and revolutionary: populist because of its blend of history, **myth** and popular culture; revolutionary because, if in its populism it could advocate rights for the disenfranchised and landless peasants (for example Rocha's *Antonio das Mortes*, 1969), none the less, it made clear that such populist advocacy could do nothing against the harsh conditions in which most Brazilians lived and which dos Santos' film, *Vidas Secas* (*Barren Lives*, 1963) so admirably captures.

Although cinema nôvo is more readily associated with its 1960s' manifestations, it is important to remember that it pre-dates most of the 'new wave' movements that occurred in Europe. It is also important to recall that it was far more radical in its purpose than any of its European counterparts. It not only attacked mainstream cinema (including Hollywoodized Brazilian cinema), it was also fiercely polemical and based on what Rocha termed an 'aesthetic of hunger' and an 'aesthetics of violence'. Within this context, the films, such as dos Santos' *Vidas Secas* and Rocha's *Terra em Transe* (*Land in Anguish*, 1967) to mention but two, are to be read as 'allegories of underdevelopment' (Stam, in Shohat and Stam, 1994: 256) and also as signifiers of impotence not just in the light of poverty but also in the light of the military *coup d'état* of 1964. Nor did this cinema stand still. It evolved from this aesthetic of hunger to an 'aesthetic of garbage' (ibid.: 310), that is, to a syncretic film style that was known as Tropicalist and which was based on Afro-Brazilian culture and mythology. In film this manifested itself as an 'aggressive collage' (ibid.) of many simulataneous discourses and speeds of narration, much like a palimpsest. As Stam explains in his lucid study of Brazilian cinema (ibid., 310–12), Tropicalism had moved beyond cinema nôvo's 'opposition between "authentic Brazilian cinema" and "Hollywood alienation"' to a juxtaposition of 'the folkloric and the industrial, the native and the foreign'. This garbage style, which also feeds off itself (waste recycling waste) was seen as entirely 'appropriate to a Third World country picking through the leavings of an international system dominated by First world capitalism' (ibid.) (for a magisterial study of this cinema see Stam's Chapters 7 and 8 in ibid.: 248–337).

By the early 1970s, the cinema nôvo group's activities had been suppressed by the military dictatorship which had come to power in 1964 and whose repressive measures became total by 1968. But this

cinema has left an important legacy. It was one of the indigenous film movements in Latin America to bring a cinema called **Third World Cinema** to world attention. As a protest cinema it was also an important influence in the thinking behind the **Third Cinema** manifesto published by the Argentinian film-makers and theorists Fernando Solanas and Octavio Getino in 1969. And as Ismail Xavier argues (1997), although cinema nôvo 'disappeared' it re-emerged in Brazil in a different form. No longer able to make a cinema of direct social critique, former cinema nôvo film-makers turned to melodrama and more specifically to family dramas to make their comments obliquely and ironically on Brazil's conservative modernization. This they did with narratives exposing the powerlessness of the patriarch (see Ruy Guerra's *Deuses e os Morios/The Gods and the Dead*, 1970).

For further reading see Chanan, 1983; Johnson and Stam, 1995; Pick, 1993; *Screen* special issue on Third Cinema, 24: 2, 1983.

## CINEMASCOPE

Cinemascope and colour were introduced in the early 1950s by the American film industry in an attempt to stem the commercial decline of its cinema due to falling audience numbers. Cinemascope is a widescreen effect made possible through the use of the anamorphic lens.

In **film theory**, cinemascope was welcomed by the *Cahiers du cinéma* group primarily because it extended the possibilities for **mise-en-scène**. For some critics in this group, it also represented the death of **montage**. Montage for the *Cahiers* group, but most especially for Bazin (1967), was an anti-realistic film-making practice that manipulated the audience through its juxtapositioning of **shots** and the carving-up of reality. **Realism** and objectivity could be assured only by the predominance of **depth of field/deep focus** with its long takes and implicit unimpeded vision. Cinemascope, the *Cahiers* group argued, would privilege mise-en-scène and extend the merits of depth of field – meaning would be produced through the framing of shots and movement within the shots. Cinemascope implied a number of things for the *Cahiers* group. First, it gave breadth (that is, space) and thereby created a frieze effect on the screen. In so doing, it recognized the sculptural nature of cinema's **narrative** (*Cahiers du cinéma*, no. 25, 1953). Second, cinema should not try to create depth

but should suggest depth through breadth. Cinema is about lateral movements and space, and cinemascope allowed for a freer expression of those two concepts (*Cahiers*, no. 31, 1954). Third, cinemascope implied location shooting and the definitive arrival of colour (*Cahiers*, no. 31, 1954). Finally, because cinemascope provided the spectator with almost panoramic vision (that is, virtually consonant with the way human vision functions), it was the perfect solution to the arbitrary divide between audience and screen.

Although in the 1950s and 1960s Hollywood perceived cinemascope as appropriate to certain **genres** (such as **Westerns** and **epics**), European cinemas – starting with the **French New Wave** – used it to a subversive effect for intimist films about the failure of human relationships (as for example in Jean-Luc Godard's *Le Mépris*, 1963, or *Pierrot le fou*, 1965).

*see also*: **anamorphic lens, widescreen**

## CINEMATOGRAPHER/DIRECTOR OF PHOTOGRAPHY

The person responsible for putting the scene on film. This person is responsible for the general composition of the scene (the **mise-en-scène**, the **lighting** of the set or location, the **colour** balance). The director of photography is also responsible for the choice of cameras, lenses, film stock and filters. Camera positions and movements, the integration of special effects are also the director of photography's responsibility as is the overall style from scene to scene (including balance of light and colour). Finally, they are directly concerned in the process of the actual printing of the film.

## CINÉMA-VÉRITÉ

Initially the title of a Soviet newsreel – *Kino-Pravda* ('film-truth') – which was the filmed edition of the Soviet newspaper *Pravda*, the term was not used to describe a particular **documentary** style until Dziga Vertov (the documentarist who in the 1920s shot this newsreel/newsreel for the paper) coined it in 1940 in reference to his own work. Vertov characterized this cinema as one where there were no actors, no décors, no script and no acting. The French ethnographic documentarist Jean Rouch followed in this tradition, at first quite

stringently. His earlier 1950s documentary work was an 'objective' filming of the activities of indigenous people in Francophone Africa – what was termed *cinéma direct*. There was no staging, no **mise-en-scène** and no editing – so these documentaries were as close to authentic as they could be. Later, in the 1960s, Rouch moved away from this very purist *cinéma direct* to a more sociological investigation where he did intervene in the staging of **shots** and put his footage through the editing process – what has come to be termed *cinéma-vérité*. Less objective but no less real, this *cinéma-vérité* attempted to catch reality on film. Ordinary people testified to their experiences, answered questions put by Rouch or his colleagues. A handful of French or French-based film-makers followed in Rouch's tradition (Joris Ivens, Chris Marker, Mario Ruspoli, François Reichenbach, Jacques Panijel and Jean Eustache). *Cinéma-vérité* is unstaged, non-dramatized, non-**narrative** cinema. It puts forward an alternative version to **hegemonic** and institutionalized history by offering a plurality of histories told by non-elites. As such, it is quite a politicized cinema, although Gidal (1989: 129) challenges this reading and sees *cinéma-vérité* as espousing a crude **ideology**. In any event, *cinéma-vérité* impacted on the radical collectives which formed in the immediate aftermath of May 1968 in France – including Godard and Guérin's Dziga-Vertov group.

## CLASS

Because film is a system of representation that both produces and reproduces cultural signification, it will ineluctably be tied up with questions of class. Because the film industry is a mode of production in itself, based in capitalism and geared to profit, it is necessarily bound up with considerations of power relations which are also related to issues of class. In both these aspects, clearly, the questions of **gender** and race will also be of significance. Debate around class in film **theory** has been mostly inflected by Karl Marx's definitions of class and by subsequent rethinkings of those definitions first by Antonio Gramsci, Louis Althusser and Herbert Marcuse and then by **post-structuralist** theorists.

### *The Marxian definition of class and its rethinking*

According to Marx, class refers to groups of people who have similar relations to the means of production. That is, they get their living in

the same way. Thus, the working-class works the modes of production (mines, factories, etc.), the capitalist class owns the means of production. In between these two distinct classes are others: the middle- and lower-middle- classes who can be for example small business owners or management or trained professionals. Marx also recognized that there can be fractures within each class (for example between skilled and unskilled workers or between trained professionals (i.e. diploma-holders) and those who have made it to the same status through work on the ground, and so on). Class is based on objective differences among sets of people and defined, quite negatively, as in opposition to other sets of people: a set of people will forge a class identity to protect its interests against another class. Therefore class is about not just economic relations but also power relations (O'Sullivan *et al.*, 1992: 39–42).

The conflict of ideas is secondary to this first set of conflicts and normally occurs when new material modes of production come into being. However, because new modes of production will cause new ways of thinking about production, the dominant class will endeavour to prevent new thinking by advocating ideas based on the previous order (Burns, 1983). A contiguous way of controlling potential class conflict and maintaining the status quo is through the fracturing of the productive labour force. The worker is alienated from the total means of production in that she or he is only a part of it (on a production line doing assembly work): mass production and technology cause work to be fragmented. The worker is also alienated from the commodity produced which is destined to the market and for profit. Her or his work is built into that profit, she or he pays for it – that is, the exchange value of the commodity is based in part on the repression within the worker's wage of the profit margin (for example, a worker gets paid the real equivalent of four hours although she or he has worked for eight).

Given that class difference is predominantly based in power relations, it follows that different classes are characterized by divergent **ideologies**. This is the most evident site for the making visible of class conflict. Marx, and Gramsci after him, argue how cultural artefacts manifest these differences (think of punk as opposed to *Vogue* dress-codes). They also make the point that culture functions to make sense of those differences (for example, early **melodrama** 'explains' class difference between the bourgeoisie and the proletariat). Thus, in Marxist thinking, cultural aesthetics is very bound up with the concept of class.

Later Marxists, Marcuse and Althusser, thought that by the 1960s it was less a bourgeois/proletariat divide and more an impersonal power

that dominated: 'The System' (Marcuse) or 'ideological state apparatuses' (Althusser). This idea, that there was no longer a dominant class, was taken further by French thinkers. On the one hand it was argued that there was in the post-industrial society, with its new wealth and cheaper products, an emergence of a new middle-class and the obliteration of major class differences. Others maintained that class differences had become internalized in new kinds of conflict (for example, around race issues). To Althusser's and Marcuse's anti-humanist position (man (sic) as subject-effect of the system/state), Alain Touraine argued that the old class divide had been replaced by different sets of people: those who are in control of the structures of political and economic decision-making, and, conversely, those who are reduced to the condition of dependent participation (Bottomore: 1984).

Although it was grounded in Saussurean structural linguistics and **semiotics**, the **structuralist** debate of the 1960s also embraced Marxist thinking. Of particular interest and relevance to film studies was Marx's cultural aesthetic, which determined that an art object should not be considered outside or as separate from both its mode and its historical moment of production. Marxist aesthetics necessitates a move away from textual analysis as a be-all and end-all of aesthetic evaluation and demands contextual analysis – an examination of the underlying structures (labour, finance, manufacture, etc.) that went into the making of the aesthetic text.

### *Relevance to film studies and film theory*

The Marxist theory of class and cultural aesthetics found its way into film studies and theory in predominantly four ways: analysis of class relations within the text; the historical and cultural contexts of the production; modes and practices of production, and, finally, the ideological effect of the cinematic apparatus upon spectator-text relations (see **apparatus**, **ideology** and **spectator** for discussion of this last point).

On the first point, it is clear that certain **genres** yield more readily to class analysis than others: **comedy**, melodrama and social problem films (that are a sub-genre of **social realism**) are perhaps the most obvious. To illustrate the point let's take melodrama. One of the earliest traditions in this genre was to pitch the bourgeoisie against the proletariat. Most often, that conflict was also gendered. Here are a few sample scenarios: poor young girl or fallen woman (sic) at the mercies of rich fat bourgeois male; poor young man (often an

artist . . . ) at the mercies of some rich, upper-class vamp or female (often she is married, so it is not her money – but never mind since she still represents her husband's wealth); wealthy widow falls for proletarian hero; professional woman falls for proletarian criminal (and so on). Melodramas of the 1930s and 1940s centred on social mobility (for example the self-sacrificing or scheming mother trying to better her offspring's (usually the daughter's) future).

Given Western governments' policies to get women out of the factories and back into the kitchen, melodramas from 1945 centred more on the family – particularly the middle-class family. This was especially the case in the United States, where there was a concerted mediation of the desirability of a return to the hearth (desirable for economic reasons for the government, but not for the woman). In Marxist terms, whatever the **narrative** context, clearly the bourgeoisie is the class vested with capital power. In some film narratives capital is corrupt so must be resisted. However, since that representation is often caricatural, capital as a bad thing is not being targeted but rather abuse of capital power, for which an individual will be punished. Capital in and of itself, according to the narrative, still remains intact as a good thing. Film, in this instance, **naturalizes** capital and power. In the later melodramas the family under capitalism comes to be unquestioningly represented. The father is the head of the household and wage-earner, the wife the agreeing consensual woman who will produce children. In Marxist terms, the bourgeois family is a product and thereby a representer of patriarchy and capitalism and of course a reproduction and reproducer of that system. In these melodramas, although class is there, implicitly, as an issue, class struggle is not. But because these films deal with family structures, issues of dominance have now become gendered (see Cook, 1985: 76ff.).

As this starts to make clear, historical and cultural contexts of the production (the second of our four points) yield readings in relation to capital as well as class and gender. The overdetermination or valorization of the family, that is, over-investment in its importance in 1950s melodramas and, incidentally, comedy – the Doris Day factor: the squeaky-clean girl next door – is a case in point. The modes and practices of production (the third point) also yield readings. For example, the film industry functions in exactly the same way as the class system described above. There is the same dynamic of the owning and producing classes, the same principle of alienation through fragmentation in that each worker does her or his part of the production process. The traces of manufacture (such as make-up) are elided by the camera-work, the **lighting** and the **editing**. Thus, the mark of the worker is not

present in the final commodity which is produced not for her or his pleasure but for profit. The real value, labour, gets lost in the exchange value, the film as a saleable commodity. **Stars** have an exchange value in much the same way as commodities in any marketplace do – they too must make profit: they are the form of value, not value itself. That is, they are not stars as persons but star images as exchange-value or capital exchange (we pay to see them, agree to the price of the ticket).

Class in cinema is iconographically denotated, is signified by certain referents (clothes, language-register, environment, and so on). Film presents itself as real, places before the spectator the illusion of reality (see **iconography**, **spectator** and **suture**). So these icons serve to naturalize class, as does the homogeneity of **classical narrative cinema**, structured around the order-disorder-order nexus (similar to the Victorian novel that has a beginning, middle and end, where end means marriage). No matter that there may be new production practices, the film industry will continue to advocate the earlier ideas rather than allow the promotion of new ones. Filmmakers attempting innovative ideas quickly find themselves marginalized by the Hollywood studios – as indeed was the case at different times in their careers for Orson Welles, Francis Ford Coppola and Martin Scorsese. In this respect, mainstream cinema represents only the thinkable, that which does not challenge our sense of identity, which, as cinema constantly tells us, however subliminally, is ultimately determined through our gender, and more pervasively our presumed heterosexuality – not through our class or race. In other words, because self-identity or **spectator identification** is the constant 'reality-effect' of mainstream cinema – we look into the screen-mirror. Our first priority is with whom (not what) we identify. Our first identification is with a person as gender, not a person as class, age or race. In this respect, cinema as a cultural artefact serves hegemonic purposes. The dominant ideology is structured in such a way – at its simplest level because there must be (re)production – that we necessarily think of ourselves as gendered subjects. To think otherwise would be unthinkable (think about the still predominantly negative, even hostile, attitudes to transsexuals, transvestites, same-sex love, etc.). Viewed in this light, representations of class might appear to be a sort of red herring. Far from it. As part of the representation of 'reality' or dominant ideology, they serve to reinforce the belief that the unthinkable is just that, unthinkable – which is of course what keeps patriarchy, class and hegemonic structures in general in place.

For further reading see Hill, 1986; Stead, 1989.

## CLASSICAL HOLLYWOOD CINEMA/CLASSICAL NARRATIVE CINEMA

So-called to refer to a cinema tradition that dominated Hollywood production from the 1930s to the 1960s but which also pervaded mainstream Western cinema. Its heritage goes back to earlier European and American cinema **melodrama** and to theatrical melodrama before that. This tradition is still present in mainstream or **dominant cinema** in some or all of its parts.

Classic narrative cinema is what David Bordwell (in Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 1) calls an 'excessively obvious cinema' in which cinematic style serves to explain, and not obscure, the narrative. This cinema, then, is one that is made up of motivated **signs** that lead the **spectator** through the story to its inevitable conclusion. The name of the game is verisimilitude, 'reality'. However, an examination of what gets put up on screen in the name of reality makes clear how contrived and limited it is and yet how ideologically useful that reality none the less remains (see **ideology**). The narrative of this cinema reposes upon the triad 'order/disorder/order-restored', also known as disruption/resolution. The beginning of the film puts in place an event that disrupts an apparently harmonious order (marriage, small town neighbourliness, etc.) which in turn sets in motion a chain of events that are causally linked. Cause and effect serve to move the narrative along. At the end the disorder is resolved and order once again in place.

The plot is character-led, which means that the narrative is psychologically and, therefore, individually motivated (see **motivation**). Thus, by implication, if the initial event is not individually or psychologically motivated it is more than likely that it will be left without explanation. Bordwell (Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 13) citing Sorlin, makes the point that this is particularly evident when it is an historical event that is supposed to have initiated the narrative line. The event happens 'just like that'. An exemplary film is *Gone With the Wind* (Victor Fleming, 1939). Hyped as 'the greatest love story ever told', it gets told against the backdrop of the American civil war which gets represented duopolistically as a clash between the southern states' traditions and the northern states' ideological conviction that slavery must be abolished. In this respect, history becomes ahistorical (events have no past, no explanation, no cause). As such, history is eternally fixed, naturalized (in a not dissimilar way to the way in which woman in this cinema

gets naturalized (see **counter-cinema**)). For example, in a **war movie** we might see that war is bad, but only because of the effects it has on the characters – we do not learn about the causes of the war, nor do they get examined. Think of the Vietnam War films made by Hollywood – even if the representation of that war is harrowing to watch and war, thereby, is not glamorized (as it was in films about the Second World War), the complex set of historical circumstances whereby the United States got enmeshed in that war is not touched upon – rather it is the psychological *effect* of the war on GI Joe that we see. If, in a war-context, a cause is given at all then it is in the form of an individual (as with Hitler and the Second World War).

Classic narrative cinema, no matter what **genre**, must have closure, that is, the narrative must come to a completion (whether a happy ending or not). Any ambiguity within the plot must be resolved. For example, in *Psycho* (Alfred Hitchcock, 1960), Norman Bates may still remain psychotic, but in terms of the narrative or plot-line he has been caught for his murderous activities, so there is closure. Whatever form the closure takes, almost without exception it will offer or **enunciate** a message that is central to dominant **ideology**: the law successfully apprehending criminals, good gunmen of the Wild West routing the baddies, and so on. What is interesting, however, is which ideological message supersedes all others. In his study of classic Hollywood cinema, Bordwell (Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 16) notes that of the sample of a hundred randomly chosen films he examined, ninety-five involved heterosexual romance in part of the action and eighty-five had romance as central to the action. Closure mostly means marriage (as with Victorian novels, incidentally), with all that that entails: family, reproduction, property. That is, the representation of the successful completion of the **Oedipal trajectory** is central to the classic narrative cinema. Such a high percentage of romance films points again to the ideological effects of dominant cinema and to its motivated function as **myth**-maker. However, in its **naturalizing** heterosexual coupledom and family it also makes the point that all else must (potentially) be read as deviancy. To return to the example of *Psycho*: Marion Crane is murdered by psychotic Bates, but we know from the narrative that she would never have ended up in his motel and therefore been murdered if she had not stolen money from her male boss in order to buy or lure her lover away from his wife (ex-wife, really, but he is paying alimony to her and so cannot afford to 'leave' for Marion). Double-theft. Man as exchange commodity. So Marion is 'punished'

for transgressing the patriarchal order: stealing money (from one man) and trying to 'break' up a marriage (by stealing another man and ending his ties with his wife). Why else at the end of the film does her sister do the right thing (and not get killed), do coupledom the right way – and get her man (the same one her sister failed to purchase)?

In this cinema, style is subordinate to narrative: **shots**, **lighting**, **colour** must not draw attention to themselves any more than the **editing**, the **mise-en-scène** or **sound**. All must function to manufacture **realism**. **Ambiguity** must be dissolved through the provision of **spatial and temporal contiguity** – the spectator must know where she or he is in time and space and in relation to the logic and chronology of the narrative. Reality is ordered, naturalized: 'life's just like that'. The narrative is goal-orientated and so, naturally, are the characters. This mythico-realistic storyline reflects the other great American myth: that of upward mobility and success. The dream factory makes the American dream come true.

Let's show how this is done. Bordwell (Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 5) makes the point that this classic cinema is normative not formulaic (which implies fixity). This normativity is, presumably, what enables it to be affected by the force of other cinemas and to integrate or co-opt some of their practices, notably those of the **avant-garde** and European **art cinema**. But back to the reality-effect. To achieve the fundamental principle of realism, editing must function to move the narrative on logically and, predominantly but not exclusively, chronologically (even a flashback will, in the main, be narrated chronologically – or the causal chain will be clear). However, editing must not call attention to itself, so continuity is essential. To achieve this, generally speaking, a whole scene is shot in one take – usually in a long shot – called a master shot or master scene. After this, parts of the same scene will be reshot, this time in close-ups and medium shots. These are then edited into the master scene and redundant parts of the master scene are cut. To ensure continuity, **match cuts** and **eyeline** cuts need to be consistently observed. Match cuts link two shots – one in long the other in medium shot, for example, but related in form, subject or action – creating a seamless continuity (we do not 'see' the cut). The eyeline match allows us to see the direction of the character's **gaze**: we move, unobtrusively, from watching the character watching, to watching what she or he is watching (see **continuity editing**).

There are other aspects of editing that might seem not to have reality inherent in them. **Cross-cutting** is an example of how,

despite its lack of realism, the reality-effect works. Cross-cutting allows us to see two separate sets of action in different spaces but juxtaposed in time – normally with a view to creating suspense. However, since we have been stitched into the narrative as omniscient spectator we do not question our ability to be in two places at once, in fact we expect to 'see it all' (see **suture**). The camera also has a vital role in this reality-effect. The **shot/reverse-angle shot** used for dialogue establishes a realistic set of exchanging looks – again stitching us into a particular character's point of view. Where necessary, establishing shots are used to orientate the spectator, after which the camera can hone in on the character or part of the setting. Because the plot is character-led there is an excess of close-ups, not just on the face but on other parts of the body, thus fragmenting the body – which would seem to fly in the face of reality. However, because such shots offer us greater access to the body, they function to reinforce the **myth** of intimacy. We are the **subject** of the gaze and simultaneously identify with the character in the film looking at those parts of the body. The natural effect produced by three-point lighting (see **lighting**) furthers the naturalness of this realism. Colour must suit the emotional or psychological mood of the sequence, setting and/or entire film. Music serves only to reinforce meaning (danger, romance, and so on).

These audio-visual cinematic norms are just as ideologically inflected as the classic narrative norms which they serve. Feminists have pointed out how, with its representations of romantic love, the family, and male-female work relations, classic cinema perpetuates and so normalizes patriarchal ideologies which assume the naturalness of unequal relationships – predominantly those of class, race and gender. The reality-effect means 'It is just like life, just like that'.

*see also*: **narrative**

For further reading see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985; Cook, 1985.

## CODES AND CONVENTIONS/CLASSIC CANONS

All **genres** have their codes and conventions (rules by which the **narrative** is governed). These are alternatively referred to as classic canons or canonic laws. For example, a **road movie** implies discovery, obtaining some self-knowledge; conventionally the roadster is male and it is his point of view that we see. The narrative follows an

ordered sequence of events which lead inexorably either to a bad end (*Easy Rider*, Dennis Hopper, 1969) or to a reasonable outcome (*Paris, Texas*, Wim Wenders, 1984). These canonic laws can of course be subverted as they usually are in **art cinema** or **counter-cinema**. Codes and conventions should not be viewed just within their textual or generic context but also within their social and historical contexts. Codes and conventions change over time and according to the ideological climate of the time – compare any John Wayne **Western** with Clint Eastwood's characterization of the gunman as a problematic hero or anti-hero; or again compare **science-fiction** films of the 1950s with those of the 1980s and 1990s. These shifts may not represent real social change (how many men really question their machismo?), but they reflect, however indirectly, changes in social attitudes (for example, the effect of the women's movement has rendered unequal power relations between men and women less desirable than before).

*see also*: **classical Hollywood cinema**, and **narrative**

## COLOUR

The history of colour in cinema is a more chequered one than that of **sound**. It was not until the advent of colour television in the 1960s and 1970s (first in the United States, later in Europe) that it became fully dominant. Until that date its only peak period had been the early 1950s and even then accounted for only 50 per cent of the production (Cook, 1985: 29).

### *History*

As an idea, colour had been thought of as early as the first days of cinema. By 1896, the American Edison was employing teams of women to hand-paint images in the whole or part of the frame. In France, Méliès was doing much the same thing – single-handedly. A little later, as films got longer and therefore more expensive to paint, Pathé Fréres invested in stencil painting – again carried out by women (who incidentally also did the **editing** for these longer films) – a process which the American industry also adopted. By the 1920s, Hollywood had moved on from stencil coloration and was tinting or toning films that were for major release.

The first experimentation with colour film itself came about in 1912 in the United Kingdom when it was used for **documentaries**.

Colour film was produced by an additive process, that is, by filming through colour filters and subsequently projecting through the same colour filters. But this process did not prevail. Instead, modern colour technology was based on the subtractive process (eliminating unwanted colours from the spectrum). This was first done in the 1920s by Technicolor Motion Pictures Corporation (a company set up in 1915).

The principle of technicolour is that of a dye transfer. Technicolor first used two-strip cameras and negatives quite successfully in the 1920s until, in 1932, it perfected three-strip cameras and negatives. After shooting, these negatives were processed through an optical printer on to three separate positives through a filter for one of the primary colours. These positives were then individually imbibed with the appropriate complementary colour (also known as the subtractive colour). Thus the original image when projected would have the appropriate colour gradations. Since this colour system could be achieved only through using three-strip cameras and since they had been patented by Technicolor, the company by 1935 had complete control of its product in relation to Hollywood – control that would last almost twenty years. It hired out its cameras and its technicians, and processed and printed the film. Technicolor supplied its own colour consultant, Natalie Kalmus (ex-wife of one of the founders of the company), whose job it was to fit the technology to **Hollywood**'s needs – a factor that would considerably affect the **ideology** surrounding colour (see below).

In 1947 the US government's anti-trust law started the process of erosion on Technicolor's monopoly of 35mm colour film. At that time, Eastman-Kodak, in a mutual agreement, was not in competition with Technicolor. It had a cross-licensing agreement with the company to use colour for its smaller gauge, 16mm, film – and in any event colour film was still not the dominant factor in film production in the 1930s and 1940s. Colour was mostly used for **musicals**, **costume dramas** and cartoons – often with great success (*A Star Is Born*, George Cukor, 1937, *Gone With the Wind*, Victor Fleming, 1939). Incidentally, Walt Disney, who was the first to use technicolour, was so pleased with his short colour cartoons' success that he acquired exclusive rights for colour cartoons. However, by the early 1950s the two companies had rescinded their agreement since the anti-trust law had charged both companies with monopolistic practices. Eastman-Kodak now went on to develop its own technology and produced an integral tri-pack colour film (in 1954) that could be used in any camera and was cheaper and easier to use than

Technicolor. It was also cheaper to process because it was a single negative. Technicolor's demise in the film industry was further accelerated by the fact that its dye process did not adapt well to **cinemascope**. Although Technicolor finally resolved those problems, it was not before Eastman had garnered most of the market. The Technicolor company is still involved in feature films but to a small degree and focuses more on research and laboratory processing.

### *Colour and theory*

Colour film is an ambiguously positioned concept. On the one hand it can reproduce reality more naturally than black and white film. However, it can also draw attention to itself and, indeed, have symbolic value. Hollywood had a double response to this. At first, in the 1930s and 1940s, it decreed that colour should be reserved for certain genres that in themselves were not particularly realistic – stylized and spectacle genres (musical, **fantasy**, **epics**). Later, in the 1950s, when colour was more widely used, Hollywood concurred with Natalie Kalmus's dictat that all colour films should endeavour to use colour to underscore mood and meaning. To that effect bright and saturated colours were discouraged (Bordwell, in Bordwell *et al*., 1985: 356).

But colour also has value and functions in relation to the **scopophilic drive**. Steve Neale's (1985) analysis of the value of colour in film representation makes three essential points. First, colour has a dialectical (that is, a dual conflictual) function. This came about because colour was initially associated with spectacle and, therefore, was not seen as realist. Subsequently, however, following the advent of colour television – with its documentary and news or current affairs programmes – colour also obtained the cachet of **realism** (thus, incidentally, going back to one of its original meanings in the earliest experiments). Henceforth, the key terms centring the **discourse** about colour became nature/realism on the one side and, on the other, spectacle/art – two contradictory sets of terms. Simply expressed, if colour is used as spectacle it cannot refer to its realist function, any more than if its aesthetic mode prevails. If the realist mode is invoked, then the film must reflect nature (the colour on screen is the colour 'out there' in the real world) and, thereby, deny its function as spectacle and/or art.

Neale's second point about colour is possibly the most important (certainly for **feminist film theory**). Referring to the contradiction between the two sets of terms, Neale (1985: 152) says that it is at this point that another element enters into consideration: the female

body. Women already occupy, within patriarchal ideology, the 'contradictory spaces both of nature and culture' (that is, nature and artifice) and they are also the 'socially sanctioned objects of erotic looking' (i.e. spectacle). For these reasons, women 'naturally' function as the 'source of the spectacle of colour in practice' (colour within the film will be determined by the female star's colouring, that is, what colour most complements her (but why so much orange for Rita Hayworth and Deborah Kerr, and so much yellow for Doris Day?)). Women also function as 'a reference point for the use and promotion of colour in theory' (the female **star** is an essential vehicle for colour, she gives pleasure in her look-at-able-ness). Neale concludes, first of all, that 'the female body ... bridges the ideological gap between nature and cultural artifice', that is, she bridges the gap caused by colour's **ambiguity** – so she is both realism and spectacle. But the female body simultaneously marks and focuses 'the scopophilic pleasures involved in and engaged by the use of colour in film'. Colour positions her as the site of pleasurable viewing *and* makes the **spectator** want to look at her.

What is significant in this reading, at least for feminists, is that, in being the embodiment of the dialectical function of colour, the female figure must implicitly be placed in other sets of dialectical functions. Thus at the same time as the female body bridges the gap between the two sets of terms within the discourse on colour (realism and spectacle), she both *marks* and *contains* 'the erotic component involved in the desire to look at the coloured image' (Neale, 1985: 155). That is, in relation to the erotic, she is simultaneously positioned as **subject** (she contains, she is the holder of the erotic) and as object (she marks, she is the site of the erotic, the 'to be looked-at-ness'). Even though in mainstream or **dominant cinema** it is doubtful that this double positioning (subject and object) leads the female body, through its visual treatment, to assume **agency** (to become subject), it is clear that in non-mainstream cinema such agencing could occur. In this respect colour could be used **counter-cinematically** to subvert the canonical **codes and conventions**.

Neale's third point develops further this potential for colour to subvert. Referring to Kristeva's writings on colour, Neale (1985: 156) argues that, because colour is so closely associated with the psychic and erotic pulsions, it is capable of escaping, subverting and shattering the symbolic organization (i.e. colour subordinated to the narrative) to which it is subject. According to Kristeva, colour operates on three levels simultaneously: the objective, the subjective and the cultural. Within the domain of visual perception, the objective

level refers to an outside whereby an instinctual pressure is articulated in relation to external objects. In the case of cinema this 'outside' would be the images up on screen at which the spectator looks (instinctual pressure). This same pressure motivates the subjective level and causes the eroticization of the body proper ('seeing is responding'). Finally, the cultural level functions to insert this pressure under the impact of **censorship** as a **sign** in a system of representation. That is, the cultural operates to contain what happens between the objective and the subjective. It is a form of censorship in that the cultural's intentionality is containment of the subjective and erotic processes ('seeing is responding but watch it does not go too far'). The cultural is not always successful in its purpose of course. Pornographic films are an easy example of this. However, certain scenes in un-X-rated movies can be so erotically charged as to catch the spectator by surprise!

For further reading on colour technology see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985; Konigsberg, 1993; on colour and theory see Neale, 1985.

## COMEDY

In film history comedy is one of the very earliest genres. This is not surprising, given that the first actors to come on to the screen were predominantly comedians from vaudeville and music-hall theatres. Early exhibition practices also explain this phenomenon. The first films were short one-reelers and were included in a mixed-media show presented by a compère in a vaudeville theatre, a music-hall or a tent at a fair. At that time, then, cinema catered for popular taste and the humour on screen tended to reflect popular comedy – as opposed to comedy of manners or social comedy. The early silent tradition of comedy was gag-based (as indeed was the very first comic film, Louis Lumière's *Arroseur arrosé*, 1895). This developed into routine comedy (Mack Sennett's *Keystone Kops* comedy series, of the 1910s, with their inevitable chase sequences) and into the emergence of the comic hero (sic) as, for example, Charlie Chaplin, Buster Keaton and Fatty Arbuckle. This primarily gestural tradition was, in its later manifestations, especially in **sound** cinema, closely allied to farce. Gestural gags now became verbal gags in comedies by the Marx brothers and W. C. Fields. But, as with the earlier tradition, violence was never far from the surface and this comic tradition is noteworthy for its aggressive humour.

As a genre, comedy deliberately goes against the demands of **realism** – hardly surprising given film comedy's heritage. Yet it is a genre that is perceived as serving a useful social and psychological function in that it is an arena, or provides an arena, where repressed tensions can be released in a safe manner. Apart from the gag-based comic tradition, the other dominant style of comedy comes from the more 'polished' comic theatre tradition. The plot-line is less anarchic than in the earlier vaudevillesque tradition and therefore less ostensibly aggressive until one examines characterization. **Stereotypes** are far more foregrounded in this comedy, starting with **gender** (screwball comedies, as we all know, are about 'the battle of the sexes'), but including race, national prejudice and so on. Some comedy parodies this stereotyping. For example, Marilyn Monroe is much smarter than the dumb blonde she is purported to be in *Gentlemen Prefer Blondes* (Howard Hawks, 1953), *The Seven Year Itch* (Billy Wilder, 1955) and *Some Like it Hot* (Billy Wilder, 1959). Or again, Katharine Hepburn may have to comply with Hollywood's insistence on closure meaning marriage but she'll choose her man, she'll whip him into shape before she's at all prepared to consider him as a suitable partner (*Philadelphia Story*, George Cukor, 1940; *The African Queen*, 1951, and the innumerable combinations with Spencer Tracey).

Comedy is still a big tradition in Europe, especially in France where half the film industry's production is comedy. Britain has a strong tradition with its Ealing Comedies and *Carry On* movies. But these are past history (1940–50s and 1958–78 respectively) – as indeed, on the whole, is the British film industry itself. Even good British comedy stories such as *Notting Hill* and the *Bridget Jones* series are American productions – although they may star British actors like the smooth but caddish Hugh Grant and the slightly nicer Colin Firth in the lead male roles, and have a 'made in England' feel to them, the money to make them either comes from Miramax or some other American super-conglomerate and, most often, it is an American star for the female lead (Julia Roberts or Renée Zellweger). In the United States, because of demographic shifts in audiences, comedy is no longer the big puller it used to be. Production tends to target youth audiences, which means action-packed narratives, not sassy talk. For this reason, the comedy that is produced tends to be more in the farce and gag tradition than the supposedly more sophisticated talk-humour (note the popularity of the *Wayne's World*, or *Austin Powers* movies of the 1990s). But that is not the total picture for comedy of course. For example, there is a global, thirty-something market which is drawn to the more sophisticated 'made in England'

comedies mentioned above. Certain film-makers, notably women, have taken the genre on board to explore its subversive potential. Susan Seidleman's *Desperately Seeking Susan* (1985) is exemplary in this respect, as are films by French comedian Josiane Balasko (see *Gazon maudit/French Twist*, 1995).

*see also*: **genre**

For further reading see Brunovska Karnick and Jenkins, 1995.

## CONTINUITY EDITING

This is a strategy in film practice that ensures narrative continuity. The film does not draw attention to the way in which the story gets told. The editing is invisible, and as such offers a seamless, spatially and temporally coherent narrative. Spatial continuity is maintained by strict adherence to the **180-degree rule**, temporal continuity by observing the chronology of the narrative. The only disruption of this temporal continuity in mainstream cinema comes in the form of a **flashback**.

However, theoreticians have made the point that this seamlessness masks the labour that goes into manufacturing the film and as such has an **ideological** effect. This cinema gives the **spectator** the impression of reality, presents as natural what is in fact an idealistic reality (no 'fault-lines' can be perceived). The spectator has a sense of unitary vision ('it's all there, before me') over which she or he believes she or he has supremacy ('it's all there, so I know everything that's going on'). In this respect, the spectator colludes with the idealism of the cinematic reality-effect.

*see also*: **editing** and **spatial** and **temporal contiguity**

For further discussion see apparatus and spectator. Bordwell and Thompson (1980) provide a very full and useful introduction to the concepts and strategies of continuity editing, and also to alternatives. For more detail on the continuity system within classical Hollywood cinema see Bordwell *et al.* (1985: chapter 16).

## COSTUME DRAMAS

Not to be confused with **historical films** or with period films, costume dramas are set in an historical period but do not, like his-

torical films, purport to treat actual events. They refer in general terms to the time in history through the costumes which, by convention, should be in keeping with the time. A period film is a different, looser term in that it can be used to refer to costume dramas and also to more contemporary times but where dress-codes and **setting** are clearly of another period (for example period films could be set in the 1910s, 1920s or 1930s but a film shot in the 1990s and set in the 1980s is not a period film – the time-lapse is not long enough). Thus, the Merchant–Ivory adaptations of E. M. Forster's novels, because they are set in the 1900s, are more readily period films than costume dramas. However, in that they refer to earlier times, Roman Polanski's adaptation of Hardy's *Tess of the D'Urbevilles* (*Tess*, 1979) is a costume drama, as is Martin Scorsese's *Age of Innocence* (1993), a film based on Edith Wharton's novel of the same name. Many costume dramas are literary adaptations (the French film industry is particularly strong in this tradition). Arguably, the most famous of them all is Victor Fleming's *Gone With the Wind* (1939).

*see also*: **adaptations**, **genre**

For further reading see Bruzzi, 1997; Cook, 1996; Harper, 1994; Street, 2001.

## COUNTER-CINEMA/OPPOSITIONAL CINEMA

This type of cinema can be found in a variety of cinemas: experimental, **avant-garde** and **art cinema**. At its simplest it is a cinema that, through its own cinematic practices, questions and subverts existing cinematic **codes and conventions**. In its aesthetic and often political concerns with the how and the why of film-making, it is a cinema that can be quite formalist and materialist and, therefore, very discontinuous in its look. That is, the structure and texture of film will be visible on screen. For example, **spatial and temporal contiguity** will be deconstructed, the security of the **setting** offered by a logical **mise-en-scène** will be decomposed and all other elements of **seamlessness** and compositional continuity will be exposed. This is then a cinema that draws attention to itself, its manufacture and the production of meaning. There is no safe **narrative**, no beginning, middle and end, no closure or resolution. Needless to say, spectators are not stitched into counter-cinematic

films but are intentionally distanced by these practices so they 'can see what is really there', and reflect upon it rather than be seduced into a false illusionism.

Although as a practice this questioning and, potentially, self-reflexive cinema goes back to the 1920s, it was in the early 1970s that the term *counter-cinema* was coined – largely because film theorists and some film-makers (notably Jean-Luc Godard and Agnès Varda in France and the underground film movement in the United States) began to question Hollywood's hegemony and **dominant cinema**'s system of representation. It is in this latter respect that feminist film theorists first took an interest in the possibilities of counter-cinema to do more than just retransmit women's issues by doing it politically – by exposing the way in which dominant cinema has represented as natural woman's position as object and not **subject** of the **gaze**, as object and not agent of desire (see **agency**). Women film-makers, in subverting cinematic codes, not only denaturalized dominant film **hegemony** in so far as verisimilitude is concerned. Through their films they also made visible the meaning of phallocentric fetishization of women as spectacle and receptacle. By denormalizing dominant practices, they made visible what was made invisible: woman's **subjectivity** and difference – which fetishism denies (see **subjectivity**). An example is Sally Potter's *Thriller* (1979), which rejects the male gaze and seeks to find and assert woman's right to her own subjectivity.

Counter-cinema, then, is oppositional, exposes hegemony practices, unfixes – renders unstable – **stereotypes**, makes visible what has been normalized or invisibilized.

*see also*: **deconstruction**, **feminist film theory** and **naturalizing**

For further reading see Gidal, 1989; Johnston, 1976; Kaplan, 1983: 142ff.

## CROSS-CUTTING

Literally, cutting between different sets of action that can be occurring simultaneously or at different times, this term is used synonymously but somewhat incorrectly with *parallel editing*. Cross-cutting is used to build suspense, or to show the relationship between the different sets of action.

For further discussion see **cut** and **editing**.

## CUT

The splicing of two shots together. This cut is made by the film editor at the **editing** stage of a film. Between sequences the cut marks a rapid transition between one time and space and another, but depending on the nature of the cut it will have different meanings.

### *Jump cuts, continuity cuts, match cuts and cross-cuts*

These are the four types of cut typically used for cutting between one sequence or scene and another, although jump cuts and match cuts are also used within a sequence or scene.

*Jump cuts* Cuts where there is no match between the two spliced **shots**. Within a sequence, or more particularly a scene, jump cuts give the effect of bad editing, of a camera that, literally, is jumping about without any desire to orientate the **spectator**, or of jolting the spectator along. Spatially, therefore, the jump cut has a confusing effect. Between sequences the jump cut disorientates not only spatially but also temporally. The most quoted film which exemplifies all of these uses of the jump cut is Jean-Luc Godard's *A bout de souffle* (1959). The most famous jump cut of all comes between sequences 1 and 2: in a countryside lane the protagonist shoots a motorcycle cop dead, runs across a field – cut – to the protagonist in a Paris telephone booth. Within sequences, jump cuts around enclosed spaces make those spaces unfamiliar. Most unusual of all is the use of jump cuts within dialogue. In the same film the two protagonists (Michel and Patricia) at one point are sitting talking in a car. However, we never fully decipher what they are saying because of the numerous jump cuts inserted into the dialogue. Godard (1982) claimed that he had to insert these jump cuts because he had made his film (his first) far too long, by an hour. He may be pulling our leg. However it does go to show how economies of scale force decisions that eventually become canonized as art (see **30-degree rule**).

*Continuity cuts* These are cuts that take us seamlessly and logically from one sequence or scene to another. This is an unobtrusive cut that serves to move the **narrative** along.

*Match cuts* A cut from one **shot** to another where the two shots are matched by the action or subject and subject matter. This cut is the exact opposite to jump cuts within a scene. These cuts make sure that there is a spatial-visual logic between the differently positioned

shots within a scene. Thus where the camera moves to, and the angle of the camera, make visual sense to the spectator. For example, in a duel, a shot can go from a long shot on both contestants via a cut to a medium close-up shot of one of the duellists. The cut matches the two shots, is consistent with the logic of the action. This is a standard practice in **Hollywood** film-making, to produce a seamless reality-effect. **Eyeline matching** is part of the same visual logic: the first shot shows a character looking at something off screen, the second shot shows what is being looked at. Match cuts then are also part of the seamlessness, the reality-effect, so much favoured by **Hollywood**.

*Cross-cuts* These are cuts used to alternate between two sequences or scenes that are occurring in the same time but in different spaces. Generally they are used to create suspense, so they are quite commonly found in **Westerns**, **thrillers** and **gangster** movies. These cuts also serve to speed up the narrative.

### Montage cuts, compilation shots and cutaways

These are all used within sequences or scenes, although montage cuts can in fact compose a whole film (see **editing**).

*Montage cuts* A rapid succession of cuts splicing different shots together to make a particular meaning or indeed create a feeling (such as vertigo, fear, etc.). First employed by the **Soviet school**, they have become incorporated into **avant-garde** or **art cinema**. They can be used to deconstruct one set of meanings and put in place another (for example the slow pomp of a funeral procession can be deconstructed and reconstructed by a rapid montage of shots into an indictment against the bourgeoisie, as in René Clair's *Entr'acte*, 1926).

*Compilation shots* A series of shots spliced together to give a quick impression of a place (shots of Paris, London or New York to establish the city) or a quick explanation of a situation (police arriving at a murder scene: shots of the crowd, journalists, police, detectives, finally the corpse) or a character's impression of an event (watching the highlights of a sporting event, or a performance of some sort).

*Cutaways* Shots that take the spectator away from the main action or scene. Often used as a transition before cutting into the next sequence or scene. For example: inside a court scene the day's proceedings are coming to an end, cutaway shot to the outside of

the courthouse then cut to the next day in the lawyer's or solicitor's office.

Cuts give rhythm to the film, so getting that tempo right is essential. A film, therefore, goes through several cuts before the editor – usually working in tandem with the director – comes up with what is known as the rough cut (within Hollywood this cut is sometimes referred to as the director's cut, but it is not the final cut). Adjustments and changes are then made to produce a fine cut before the final cut is made and the film is ready for the post-synchronized **sound** mix to be transferred on to its optical track.

*see also*: **sequencing**

## DAY FOR NIGHT

A form of shooting in daylight with the intention of creating a night effect either by underexposure of the film stock or through using filters on the camera. Either way the purpose is to save on production costs. François Truffaut pays homage to this effect in his 1972 film *La Nuit américaine/Day for Night*.

## DECONSTRUCTION

Although the term originates with the French philosopher Jacques Derrida in the late 1960s and is seen as coterminous with **post-structuralism**, in terms of film history deconstruction was being practised and deconstructive films were being made as early as the 1920s. Noël Burch (1973) argues that the first deconstructive film was the **German expressionist** film *The Cabinet of Dr Caligari* (Robert Wiene, 1919), an interesting claim given that the **codes and conventions** of **dominant cinema**, which this film contested, were barely in place. But this claim also suggests that any new cultural **discourse**, once it assumes a dominant status, will bring in its wake an oppositional cultural discourse. In **film theory** the term *deconstruction* is largely perceived as synonymous with **counter-cinema**. Deconstructive film does what the term implies: it deconstructs and makes visible through that deconstruction the codes and conventions of dominant cinema; it exposes the function of the cinematic **apparatus** as an instrument of illusionist representation and attacks the

**ideological** values inherent in that representation. It refuses the logic of a homogenous filmic space and **narrative** closure. Deconstructive films are counter-cinematic in both aesthetic and political terms. However, politics and aesthetics until recently have rarely meant sexual politics. With the exception of Germaine Dulac's and Maya Deren's **surrealist** films of, respectively, the 1920s and the 1940s, feminine **subjectivity** had hardly been addressed at all until the impact of the women's movement of the 1970s brought in its wake **feminist theory** and feminist films.

For further reading see Gidal, 1989; Kuhn, 1982.

## DEEP FOCUS/DEPTH OF FIELD

These two terms are not interchangeable but they are deeply interconnected because the technique of deep focus is dependent on a wide depth of field. Depth of field is a cinematographic practice whereas deep focus is both a technique and a film style with theoretical and ideological implications. Depth of field refers to the focal length any particular lens can provide. Greater depth of field is achieved by a wideangle lens and it is this type of lens that achieves deep focus. With deep focus, all planes within the lens's focus are in sharp focus – thus background and foreground are both in focus. Deep focus then is a technique which uses fast wide-angle lenses and fast film to preserve as much depth of field as possible. Although some critics have credited the film-maker Jean Renoir with first using this type of focus so that he could make long takes and not have to edit to create movement (movement of course occurring within the frame), it is traditionally Orson Welles who is credited as the first to use the effect in *Citizen Kane* (1941). Because deep focus requires a small aperture, it also requires fast film stock and this was not available until the late 1930s. Renoir created the illusion of deep focus by creating depth of space through staging in depth and adjusting the focus according to what was of main interest. Staging in depth is a perspectival strategy that dates back to the 1910s in cinema history. It is a system whereby the illusion of depth is created by characters moving from the back to the foreground or by the **mise-en-scène** privileging the background or middleground characters. The background could be brought ('pulled') into sharp focus and the foreground would be slightly out of focus (Salt, 1983: 269). However, as David Bordwell (in Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 344) makes clear, neither Renoir

nor Welles was in fact the first to achieve deep focus. Bordwell (1985: 344–6) lists several examples of its use in 1940s films and points also to the work of the US cinematographer Gregg Toland (who, incidentally, shot *Citizen Kane*), where it is already in evidence as early as 1937 *Dead End*. In fact, Toland had already experimented with deep focus in his silent cinema work, the earliest example of which is Arthur Edeson's *The Bat* (1926).

The theoretical and ideological debate over the merits of deep focus over **montage** was first launched, in the 1950s, by André Bazin in his essay 'The Evolution of the Language of cinema' (Bazin, 1967: 23–40). When speaking of montage, Bazin does not mean it entirely in the more limited way in which we now tend to refer to it (as the **Soviet cinema** style of editing), but to an 'ordering of images in time' (ibid.: 24) used by many cinemas in the pre-sound era. Bazin offers a definition of montage as 'the creation of a sense of meaning not proper to the images themselves but derived exclusively from their juxtaposition' (ibid.: 25). Pre-war classics of the American screen, Bazin tells us, used montage just as much as any of the more experimental schools (Soviet or **German expressionism**), it just did so in an invisible way (ibid.: 24). He goes on to explain that montage, however used, imposes its interpretation on the **spectator** and takes away from realism (ibid.: 26). To formulate his debate, Bazin distinguishes between two trends in cinema, the one pre-sound that is much invested in the image and which has major recourse to the use of montage; the other, the cinema of the 1940s and which is primarily invested in reality (ibid.: 24). His first point is not to dismiss montage as a cinematic style appropriate only to silent cinema, but to state that the spatial unity of a film should dictate the dropping of montage in favour of what he terms 'depth of focus' but which we now refer to as deep focus. For Bazin, deep focus made a greater objective **realism** possible. Since deep focus, contrary to the fast editing style of montage, usually implies long takes and less editing from **shot** to shot, this style of shooting is one that draws least attention to itself and, therefore, allows for a more open reading. As Bazin says (ibid.: 36) 'depth of focus reintroduced ambiguity into the structure of the image if not of necessity . . . at least as a possibility'. Certain films, according to Bazin (thinking specifically of *Citizen Kane*), are unthinkable if not shot in depth. Deep focus's great virtue for Bazin was that the spectator was not subjected to the ideological nature of montage which rests as it does on a priori knowledge (i.e. that montage will produce x meaning). Rather, deep focus presents the spectator with a naturalism of the image that refuses all a priori

analysis of the world (see ambiguity and ideology). But we would argue that montage and deep-focus editing, while seemingly ideologically opposed, are about two different ways of reading film. In both instances, the spectator is 'responsible' for creatively reading what he or she sees. Montage creates a third meaning through the collision of two images. A meaning that is produced outside the image in point of fact. The sequence of images in conflict (what Eisenstein termed a montage of attractions) provokes a creative reaction within the spectator who produces for him/herself a third meaning. Whereas deep-focus editing produces meaning within the image, and the spectator takes his/her own reading from the image before him/her.

*see also*: **editing**

## DENOTATION/CONNOTATION

Two key terms in **semiotics**. Following on from Ferdinand de Saussure's work on signification (see **semiology/semiotics**), Roland Barthes coined these two terms to give greater clarity to the way in which **signs** work in any given culture. They are what Barthes termed the two orders of signification. Thus there is a first order of signification (denotation) and a second order (connotation). These in turn produce a third order: **myth**. Denotation means the literal relationship between sign and referent; thus, *tree* denotes the object referred to. In film terms, this first order of meaning would refer to what is on the screen, that is, the mechanical (re)production of an image: for example, three people in a frame (a three-**shot**), two men and a woman. The second order of meaning, connotation, adds values that are culturally encoded to that first order of meaning. And it is at this second order of signification that we can see how signs operate as myth-makers. That is, they function as crystallizers of abstract concepts or concepts that are difficult to conceptualize – they make sense of the culture (for example, institutional, social) in which individuals or communities find themselves.

Returning, by way of illustration, to this three-shot. At the denotative level, the two men are standing either side of the woman. The main source of **lighting** is coming from the side, casting one of the men into the shadows. The camera is at a slight low angle, thereby slightly distorting the features of the characters. At the connotative level of meaning, the reading produced is as follows: this image is signifying the dangers of a triangular relationship. In **classical narrative**

**cinema** – which reposes on the triad order/disorder/order-restored – convention has it that a triangular relationship must end with the demise of one character (the man in the shadows), so that order can be re-established. Within that cultural convention we can also see how the third order of signification, myth, gets produced and feeds into **ideology**. The myth that triangular relationships are doomed, and cause disruption to order, implicitly makes clear that heterosexual coupledom is the only ideologically acceptable face of sexuality.

## DIEGESIS/DIEGETIC/NON-DIEGETIC/EXTRA- AND INTRA-DIEGETIC

Diegesis refers to **narration**, the content of the narrative, the fictional world as described inside the story. In film it refers to all that is really going on on-screen, that is, to fictional reality. Characters' words and gestures, all action as enacted within the screen constitute the diegesis. Hence the term diegetic sound, which is sound that 'naturally' occurs within the screen space (such as an actor speaking, singing or playing an instrument on screen). The term *non-diegetic sound* refers to sound that clearly is not being produced within the on-screen space (such as voice-over or added music). Of course film is about the illusion of reality into which the spectator gets comfortably stitched (see **suture**). And to a degree even diegetic sound and space are totally illusory and falsely constructed: the sound because with most films it is post-synchronized; the space because the actual images and **shots** we see are the result of countless takes – so neither is ultimately 'naturally' there (see **naturalizing**). Certain film-makers will play on or with this illusory nature of cinema through the use of extra-diegetic sounds. Extra-diegetic sounds or shots apply to sounds or shots that come into screen space but have no logical reason for being there. They are inserted as a form of **counter-cinematic** practice or **deconstruction** to draw the **spectator**'s attention to the fact that she or he is watching a film. Jean-Luc Godard is a famed practitioner of this.

The term diegetic also refers to **audiences**, so that there are diegetic audiences: audiences within the film. These are often used to draw attention to the **star** in the film or to act as a backdrop to display the star. These diegetic audiences also serve to draw us, the extra-diegetic audience, into the screen and thereby into the illusion that we too are part of the diegetic audience. **Musicals** very commonly use diegetic audiences, dancing and singing around the main protagonists – usually a couple – just to show off how brilliant they

are in performing their song and dance. **Westerns** also use the diegetic audience to show off the bravery of the hero in contrast with their own cowardice (see, for example, Gary Cooper in *High Noon*, Fred Zinnemann, 1952).

Finally, intra-diegetic sound. This refers to sound whose source we do not see but whose presence we 'know' to exist within the story: for example, the voice-over of a narrator whose story we are being told and who is also portrayed in the film, that is, who exists on the same level of reality as the story and characters in the film. Michael Curtiz's *Mildred Pierce* (1945) is a classic in this domain. At times we only hear the heroine's disembodied voice recalling moments of her past in voice-over as we **flashback** to images of her in the frame, but we know the voice belongs to her and that she is a character in the story. She recalls in voiceover in the first flashback: 'I felt all alone . . . lonely' after her husband, Bert, had left her. Another classic example of this use of intra-diegetic sound is *Rebecca* (Alfred Hitchcock, 1940). At the very beginning we hear the disembodied voice of a woman say: 'Last night I dreamt I went to Manderley'. A little later in the film we realize that that 'I' and the 'I' of the female protagonist are one and the same. At that moment we realize the earlier sound was intra-diegetic – an interesting way of creating suspense. The voice-over of a protagonist who is announcing a flashback in her or his life, then, is intra-diegetic. Most typically the protagonist's face will dissolve into an image of an earlier time as we hear the voice-over say 'and yet it was only yesterday . . . ' (as in *Le Jour se lève*, Marcel Carné, 1939). In fact flashbacks themselves could be seen as intra-diegetic because although they are part of the **narrative** they none the less interrupt the narrative flow in the present. Interior monologue is also intra-diegetic and is quite distinct from the non-diegetic voice-over of an omniscient narrator who gives information about the story but is not personally part of the story. Intra-diegetic sound, then, at its simplest refers to the inner thoughts or voices of a narrator whose story we are witnessing. It also creates a different order of audience **identification**. During those intra-diegetic moments the character's **subjectivity** becomes ours: there is a double privileging – we are positioned not only physically but also psychically as the **subject**.

## DIRECTOR

The person responsible for putting a scenario or script onto film. Sometimes, but not always (particularly in **Hollywood**) the director

has complete responsibility for the final version of the film (known as director's cut). In the early days of cinema, the director typically had complete control over the whole product. With the coming of sound, as products became more expensive to make, that control diminished (to varying degrees depending on the film industry) and the director worked in closer collaboration (or disharmony) with the **producer** and **stars**. By the 1950s, thanks to the effect of **auteur theory**, the role of the director was once again elevated to the status of creative artist on the basis that they could be said to have a discernible style. Since the 1970s in the West, film has become so expensive and the audience primarily a youth audience that studios or producers have had to target audience demand. This has meant that, with the exception of a few directors who are well known on the international circuit (e.g. Spielberg, Scorsese, Besson), stars are once again in the ascendancy and films are **genre**-led (mostly action movies, grand spectaculars and romance). The role of the director remains, however, as the one responsible for seeing the film as a whole and seeing it through to completion. In film studies the term more commonly used for director is film-maker since it refers very clearly to their function.

*see also*: **cinematographer**, **producer**, **studio system**, **vertical integration**

## DISCOURSE

This term is enjoying great currency, replacing the more imprecise word 'language'. Discourse refers to the way in which texts are **enunciated**. For example, cinematic discourse differs from that of a novel or a play, for it tells the story through **image** and **sound**. Discourse also refers to the social process of making sense of and reproducing reality, and thereby of fixing meanings. Cinematic discourse reproduces 'reality' and tells stories about love and marriage, war and peace, and so on.

In that discourses are simultaneously the product and the constituter of reality (they speak for and speak as the **hegemonic** voice), they both reflect and reinforce **ideology** and in this respect they reflect power relations – that is, there will be dominant and marginal discourses. In cinema, for example, there is mainstream/**dominant cinema** which is the dominant discourse and then the marginal discourses of, say, Black, Third World and women's cinemas.

Discourses 'differ with the kinds of institutions and social practices in which they take shape, and with the positions of those who speak and those whom they address' (Macdonell, 1986: 1). Thus, there are different types of discourses: institutionalized discourses (law, medicine, science); media discourses (television, newspapers); popular discourses (pop music, rap, comic strips, slang). These discourses, although they fix meaning, do not fix them as eternal. Thus, discourses cannot be separated from history any more than they can be disassociated from ideology since they serve to make sense of the culture in which we live. For example, legal or medicinal discourses fix the way in which the treatment of crimes or illnesses are dealt with at a particular time in history. It is clear that seventeenth- and eighteenth-century legal and medicinal practices are not the same as today (we do not use the stocks for punishment of petty crime nor leeches for curing ailments).

Discourses, then, are social productions of meaning and as such are wide-ranging: political, institutional, cultural and so on. Although film is predominantly perceived as a cultural discourse, social and political discourses are, of course, equally present. And dominant film discourse both reflects and reinforces dominant ideology (starting with heterosexuality and marriage). Furthermore, as with other discursive texts, there are discourses not just within film but also around it. Discourses around cinema attempt to fix its meaning, and these can range from theoretical discourses on cinema (**auteurism**, **spectator**-film relations, **sexuality**, etc.) to more popular discourses such as film reviews, trade journals and articles in fanzines. Or these discourses can be based in other discourses not necessarily related to cinema (such as **psychoanalysis** and feminism). Or, finally they can be either critical discourses (for example film reviews, students' essays) or populist ones (as in fanzines, popular press).

To illustrate how film discourses within a film operate in relation to history, ideology and reality construction, see the discussion of the shift in meanings in the entries on **horror** and **science fiction** movies.

## DISSOLVE/LAP-DISSOLVE

These terms are used interchangeably to refer to a transition between two **sequences** or scenes, generally associated with earlier cinema (until the late 1940s) but still used on occasion. In a dissolve a first **image** gradually dissolves and is replaced by another. This type of

transition, which is known also as a soft transition (as opposed to the **cut**), suggests a longer passage of time than a cut and is often used to signal a forthcoming **flashback**. If it is not used for a flashback but as a transition between two sequences or scenes then it usually connotes a similarity between the two spaces or events – even though that similarity may not at first be apparent.

## DISTANCIATION

A term first coined in relation to theatre, specifically by Bertolt Brecht in relation to his own theatre production in the 1920s and 1930s, although the principle on which it is based, alienation, comes from the **Soviet cinema/school** of the 1920s. Brecht's purpose was to distance the **audience**, through numerous strategies, so that it could adopt a critical stance and perceive how theatre practices and characterization serve to reproduce society as it is ideologically and institutionally constructed (see **ideology**). By denormalizing theatre, by showing its artifice (staging and acting), he wanted to politicize his audience into thinking that society itself could be denormalized and therefore changed. Distanciation in film is an integral part of **avant-garde** films and **counter-cinema** and is achieved in a number of ways. First, on a visual level, fast **editing**, **jump cuts**, **unmatched** shots, characters speaking out of the screen to the audience, unexplained intertitles (written or printed words on a blank screen between shots to explain the action or supply dialogue, common in silent films), non-**diegetic** inserts – all serve to distance and indeed disorientate the **spectator** (as in Jean-Luc Godard's films). Second, on the **narrative** level, distanciation is achieved by either over-filling or under-filling the narrative with meaning (Chantal Akerman's films are exemplary of the latter, Godard's of the former). Finally, characterization: distanciation occurs here through the anonymity of the character, her or his two-dimensionality and inscrutable physiognomy (Robert Bresson's and Alain Resnais's films are good illustrations of this practice).

*see also*: **naturalizing**, and **spectator-identification**

## DOCUMENTARY

The first film-makers to make what were in essence travelogues and called *documentaires* were the Lumière brothers in the 1890s. Thirty

years later the British film-maker and critic John Grierson reappropriated the word to apply to Robert Flaherty's *Moana* (1926). Grierson was the founder of the 1930s documentary group in Britain and was one of the theorists influential in determining the nature of documentary. According to Grierson, documentary should be an instrument of information, education and propaganda as well as a creative treatment of reality. In the late 1940s, the academicism of Grierson's position was severely criticized by Lindsay Anderson and other founder members of **Free Cinema Britain**. According to these critics the use of the documentary as a means of social propaganda took away the aesthetic value of documentary film and, on an ideological level, normalized intellectual condescension and social elitism (see **naturalizing** and **ideology**). Although Grierson's position, with hindsight, does appear elitist, if we examine the climate of the times in the late 1920s, the reasons for that position do at least become clear. In the United Kingdom (as in the United States) after 1918 there began a progressive development in popular democracy. By 1928 both men and women in the United Kingdom had equal rights to vote. Grierson, who had worked in the United States during the period 1924–7, was struck by the intellectual concerns about mass democracy – such as lack of education among the electorate, making the ordinary voter uninformed when making choices – and was determined to do something about it. This feeling of the need to educate was held by other members of the British establishment who, like Grierson, saw cinema as an excellent means of education. So he worked between 1930 and 1939, first with the Empire Marketing Board and subsequently with the GPO, as producer of some forty-two documentaries on aspects of British life, institutions, governmental agencies and social problems – all with the intention of involving citizens in their society. *Coalface* (1935), about the miners and their labour, and *Night Mail* (1936), about the Post Office workers are exemplary films in this regard.

An alternative voice in documentary work emerged a little later, during the Second World War primarily, in the films of Humphrey Jennings. Jennings was a poet and a painter, interested in **surrealism** and Marxism, in literature and science. Unlike Grierson's liberal elitism, which focused on the dignity of labour but as divorced from the social context, Jennings's films focused on the everyday life and sounds of ordinary men and women (as in *Spare Time*, 1939). He was the first documentarist to go outside London into the northern parts of the UK and to make films about industrial workers. A great concern of his was the Industrial Revolution and its effects on Britain

and British people. Many of Jennings's films were made, appropriately, for the Mass Observation Unit – a unit set up by left-wing thinkers to observe ordinary people through registering accounts of their lives and feelings. Jennings's intimate observation of the ordinary also had a poetic, surreal quality to it, shown in the way he framed his images of industrial Britain and juxtaposed images of the ordinary with those out of the ordinary.

Although the tradition of recording other cultures dates back to the travelogues made by the Lumière brothers, it is really Robert Flaherty who was the first documentarist in that tradition. The first so-called documentary is his *Nanook of the North* (1922), about Eskimo life. Flaherty also directed a film for Grierson, *Industrial Britain* (1931–2) – surprisingly given Flaherty's romantic world-view. In the Soviet Union during the 1920s Dziga Vertov recorded Soviet progress in his documentaries made for *Kino-Pravda* 'Film-Truth'. Interestingly, in his work we can trace the possible heritage of the two British tendencies mentioned above. Vertov, like Grierson, saw documentary as an educative tool, but his style – an **avant-garde** formalism, achieved by **montage**, to the point of **deconstruction** – showed an aesthetic preoccupation with the image that we find in Jennings's work. During the 1930s the Soviet film-maker Medvedkin took the possibilities of documentary on to a new stage: he shot, developed and projected filmed documentation on the spot to workers as he travelled around the Soviet Union by train – this work became known as *ciné-train*.

Owing to lack of financial resources following the Second World War, many aspiring film-makers in Europe had to turn to documentary work before they could go on to make feature films (Alain Resnais, Georges Franju and Agnès Varda in France and Ken Russell in the United Kingdom spring to mind). Although some of these directors, especially those mentioned, made important politicized documentaries they hardly constituted a movement. The next important development to occur was in the 1960s with the rise of the **cinéma-vérité** group in France and the direct cinema in the United States. Two new technological developments contributed to this documentary style – television and the lightweight camera. Television news had the appearance of live images. The lightweight camera made it possible to be unobtrusive and mobile and to catch reality on film. Certain earlier documentary traditions also inflected their work: ordinary people testified to their experiences whether, for example, it was the everyday experience of Parisians in the summer of 1961 (Jean Rouch and Edgar Morin's *Chronique d'un été*, 1961), the French

people's experience of the German Occupation (Marcel Ophuls, *Le Chagrin et la pitié*, 1970) or the miners' strike in the United States (Barbara Kopple's *Harlan County USA*, 1976).

In the liberal climate of the 1970s in Western society, many film-making collectives and independent film-makers made documentaries challenging the establishment. Feminist films were much in evidence and were about individual women's lives, motherhood, prostitution. Black women and women of colour also got their first foothold in the film-making process. Lesbian and gay film-makers found a voice through the documentary and dealt with their lifestyles as well as gay politics. During this period some of the major themes tackled were abortion (even in France, where it was then still illegal: see *Histoire d'A*, Charles Belmont and Marielle Issartel, 1973), sexual identity, racism and economic exploitation.

More recently since the 1980s, developments in video technology and, subsequently in the late 1990s, digital technology have led to the emergence of numerous collectives and workshops in Europe and the United States. It has also led to a further and a still greater democratization of the camera and to more voices from the margins finding a mode of expression. It has also led, particularly in the new millennium to the vocalization of dissent on the one hand and, on the other, to a proliferation of autobiographical texts. Changes in television broadcasting have also helped to raise the visibility of the documentary. With the advent of cable and satellite television there is a need for more programmes, including ones that target specific audiences.

*see also*: *cinéma-vérité*, **ethnographic film**

For further reading see Barsam, 1992, for a general history; Bruzzi, 2000; Grimshaw, 2002; Nichols, 1991 and 2001; Renov, 1993, for theory on the documentary; Lovell and Hillier, 1972 and Winston, 1995, for the British documentary.

## DOMINANT/MAINSTREAM CINEMA

Dominant cinema is generally associated with Hollywood, but its characteristics are not restricted to Hollywood. As Annette Kuhn says (1982: 22), it is in the relationship between 'the economic and the ideological [that] dominant cinema takes its concrete form'. Thus all countries with a film industry have their own dominant cinema and

this cinema constantly evolves depending on the economic and ideological relations in which it finds itself. Given the economic situation, the film industry of a particular country will favour certain production practices over others. For example, the assembly-line system and vertical integration of Hollywood's **studios** in the 1930s and 1940s have now given way to a fragmentation of the industry and to the rise of independent film-makers whom Hollywood studio companies now commission to make films. On the ideological front, the dominant filmic text in Western society revolves round the standardized plot of order/disorder/order-restored. The action focuses on central characters and so the plot is character-driven. **Narrative** closure occurs with the completion of the **Oedipal trajectory** through either marriage or a refusal of coupledom. In any event closure means a resolution of the heterosexual courtship (Kuhn, 1982: 34). This resolution often takes the form of the recuperation of a transgressive female into the (social) order (Kuhn, 1982: 34). Visually, this **ideological** relation is represented through the 'reality' effect – the illusion of reality. The **continuity** of the film is **seamless**, **editing** does not draw attention to itself. The **mise-en-scène**, **lighting** and **colour** are appropriate to the **genre**. **Shots** conform to the **codes and conventions** dictated by the generic type.

For further reading see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985.

## EDITING/SOVIET MONTAGE

Editing refers literally to how **shots** are put together to make up a film. Traditionally a film is made up of sequences or in some cases, as with **avant-garde** or **art cinema**, episodes, or, again, of successive shots that are assembled in what is known as collision editing or montage. At its simplest there are four categories of editing: chronological editing; **cross-cutting or parallel** editing; **deep focus**; and montage.

A film can be constructed entirely using one category (as, for example, Sergei Eisenstein's montage films of the 1920s); generally speaking, however, it tends to be made up out of two if not all categories. Each category has different implications in terms of temporal relations. Time can seem long or short. Time can have an interior or an exterior reality. Interior temporality is suggested by the sequence and is fictional. Exterior temporality occurs when there is a direct correspondence between sequence tune and time within the

**narrative**: reel time equals real time (in its most extreme manifestation see Andy Warhol's 1960s films). Again, generally speaking, a film will use both kinds of temporality.

### *Chronological editing*

As the term implies, this type of editing follows the logic of a chronological narrative, and is very close in spirit to **continuity editing**. One event follows 'naturally' on from another. Time and space are therefore logically and unproblematically represented. Beginnings and endings of sequences are clearly demarcated, shots throughout the sequence orientate the spectator in time and space and the end of a sequence safely indicates where and when the narrative will get picked up in the following sequence. This type of editing is one most readily associated with **classical Hollywood cinema** and is one which produces a very linear text. This linearity or chronological order gets broken only when there is a **flashback** or a cross-cutting to a parallel sequence. In both instances this break with linearity is signalled: a fade or dissolve with a voiceover ('and yet it was only yesterday . . . ') for example, to signify that a flashback is coming; a quick series of cuts between two locales at the beginning of a parallel sequence to link them up logically for the spectator. (For detailed discussion, see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 60–9.)

### *Seamlessness*

Seamlessness (see also **suture**) is a key effect of continuity and chronological editing and is used to refer to the **Hollywood** film style where – in the name of **realism** – the editing does not draw attention to itself. The spectator is presented with a **narrative** that is edited in such a way that it appears to have no breaks, no disconcerting unexplained transitions in time and space. Hence its seamlessness (with which **lighting**, **sound** and **colour** collude). It is the opposite of an editing style that draws attention to itself (for example, through **jump cuts** and **unmatched shots**) is mostly found in oppositional, non-mainstream, **counter-cinema**.

### *Cross-cutting editing*

**Cross-cutting** is limited as a term to the linking-up of two sets of action that are running concurrently and which are interdependent within the narrative. The term *parallel editing* has been used incorrectly to refer to the same effect, probably because it is a literal way of

explaining the effect of cross-cutting: putting in parallel two contiguous events that are occurring at the same time but which are occurring in two different spaces. However, as a term, parallel editing actually refers to the paralleling of two related actions that are occurring at different times (a classic example is Alain Resnais's *Hiroshima mon amour*, 1959). Both styles of editing are used for reasons of narrative economy (they speed it up) and of course suspense. They also assume that there will be a resolution in one space and time of these two sets of action. Unsurprisingly, **Hollywood**, with its love of linearity and safe chronology, makes little use of real parallel editing and primarily uses cross-cutting. Commonly cross-cutting is used in **Westerns** (John Wayne or Clint Eastwood on the way to rescue some damsel or town in distress) and **gangster** or **thriller** movies (cuts between the goodies and the baddies, victim and killer for example). Jean Cocteau makes imaginative use of parallel editing in his fantasy fairy tale *La Belle et la Bête* (1946) – real and fantasy time and space are in inverted order to each other and yet they run in parallel.

### *Deep-focus editing*

André Bazin was the first to qualify this style of editing as objective **realism**, although the United States cinematographer Gregg Toland was arguing as early as the mid-1930s for the realism of **deep focus**. Shooting in deep focus means that less cutting within a sequence is necessary so the spectator is less manipulated, less stitched into the narrative and more free to read the set of shots before her or him. Ideologically, then, as an editing style it can be considered counter-Hollywood, or at least counter to seamlessness (see **ideology** and **suture**). Certainly Hollywood, at different times in its history, used deep-focus photography, that is, shots staged in depth; it did not, however, use deep-focus editing – clearly, with its emphasis on stardom, cuts to the close-up are inevitable. (For detailed analysis see Bordwell, in Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 341–52.)

### *[Soviet] montage*

Montage editing came out of the Soviet experimental cinema of the 1920s and, although it was Lev Kuleshov who first thought of the concept of montage, it is primarily associated with Sergei Eisenstein (director of *Strike*, *Battleship Potemkin*, both 1925, and *October*, 1928). In his films of the 1920s, Eisenstein adapted Kuleshov's fundamental theory that collision or conflict must be inherent to all visual **signs**

(see **semiology**) in film. Juxtaposing shots makes them collide or conflict and it is from the collision that meaning is produced. A simple illustrative example, provided by Eisenstein himself the first set of shots depicts a poor woman and her undernourished child seated at a table upon which there is an empty bowl; cut to the second set of shots depicting an overweight man with a golden watch and chain stretched over his fat belly; he is seated at a table groaning with food – the rapid juxtaposition of these two sets of images through fast editing cause a collision that in turn creates a third set of images (construed in the **spectator**'s mind), that of the oppression of the proletariat by the bourgeoisie. A first principle of **montage** editing, then, is a rapid alternation between sets of shots whose signification occurs at the point of their collision. Fast editing and unusual camera angles serve also to denaturalize **classical narrative cinema**, and this is a second principle of montage editing. In fact, as far as narration goes, given Einsenstein's revolutionary task (to present the proletarian story), it is unsurprising that his editing style indicated a privileging of the image over narrative and characterization (that is, there is no single hero, only the proletariat as hero). Montage is largely used by art and avant-garde cinemas, but mainstream cinema has also incorporated it to spectacular effect (as in *Jaws*, Steven Spielberg, 1975). Perhaps the most ironic of all recuperations of montage editing, though, must be the use of these principles in film and television advertisements.

*see also* **Soviet cinema**

Montage and deep-focus editing are seemingly ideologically opposed. Yet in both instances, the spectator is 'responsible' for creatively reading what he or she sees. Montage creates a third meaning through the collision of two images. A meaning that is produced outside the image in point of fact. The sequence of images in conflict (what Eisenstein termed a montage of attractions) provokes a creative reaction within the spectator who produces for him/herself a third meaning. Whereas deep-focus editing produces meaning within the image, the spectator takes his/her own reading from the image before him/her. Montage is also a style of editing that works towards **deconstruction** because it draws attention to itself, and that is certainly a major way in which it has been used by art and avant-garde film-makers, even though the closed reading effect never in fact disappears. A good illustration is Luis Bunuel's surrealist film *Un chien andalou* (1929). The montage editing of this film gives an

aesthetic plasticity to it, pushing the film form forward. However, the juxtaposition of images clearly produces anti-clericalism and anti-bourgeoisie meanings (as well as profound misogyny).

It is also evident that these two editing styles create opposite rhythms through their visual impact. Montage editing is fast, jerky and abrupt; deep focus quite slow and uniformly even. An alternation of these two styles in a film would create two very distinct times, either juxtaposed or contradictory. In other words, the temporal exteriority (that is, real time) and objectivity of deep-focus editing would juxtapose or indeed be contradicted by the temporal interiority and subjectivity of montage editing. Perhaps one of the most extreme examples of this incorporation of both styles into film is Alain Resnais's *L'Année dernière à Marienbad* (1961), where time is completely destroyed by the juxtaposition, particularly within sequences, of these two styles.

*see also*: **sequencing**, **spatial and temporal contiguity**

## ELLIPSIS

A term that refers to periods of time that have been left out of the **narrative**. The ellipsis is marked by an editing transition which, while it leaves out a section of the action, none the less signifies that something has been elided. Thus, the **fade** or **dissolve** could indicate a passage of time, a **wipe**, a change of scene and so on. A **jump cut** transports the spectator from one action and time to another, giving the impression of rapid action or of disorientation if it is not matched (that is, if the **spectator** does not know where she or he has jumped to). **Cross-cutting** and parallel editing also imply ellipsis.

## EMBLEMATIC SHOT

A procedure in early cinema, introduced in 1903 by the film-maker Edwin S. Porter in his film *The Great Train Robbery* (in this case a medium close-up of the mustachioed gang-leader holding a gun and poised to shoot). Porter recognized the need to situate the **genre** and **narrative** for the **spectator**, hence the use of the emblematic shot. The **shot**, usually placed at the beginning of the film, was to act as a **metonymy** for the whole film, that is, it would sum up the **diegesis** of the film. This shot could also be placed at the end of the film to

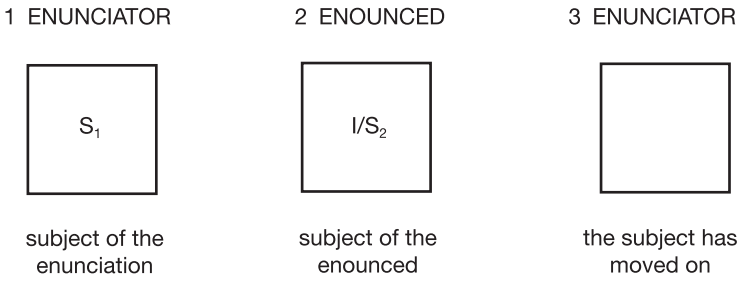
sum up what had been seen. Noël Burch (1990: 193) describes this use of the shot at the beginning as the earliest attempt to establish the narrative – acting, therefore, much as establishing shots in current mainstream or **dominant cinema** (shots at the beginning of a film or sequence that serve to orientate the spectator in time and space). It also serves to create ocular contact between actor and spectator and so represents an early form of **suture**. When placed at the end, such emblematic shots constitute the first attempts at narrative closure – that is, the film has a meaningful, constructed and signalled ending – it is no longer a case of the film just having run out, as with the earliest cinema.

## ENUNCIATION

Film theorists have adapted this term into discussions of modes of cinematic address. As a concept it was first developed by the French semiotician Emile Benveniste (1971) in an attempt to study the operation of **discourse** within specific social contexts. It is more specifically the three key terms that come under the general rubric of *énonciation* that are particularly helpful to discussions of modes of cinematic address and **subjectivity**. The key terms are: *énonciation*/ enunciation: the time-bound act of making a speech act; *énonciateur*/ enunciator: the person responsible for making the speech act; *énoncé*/ enounced: the verbal result of that act (that is, what is spoken).

The first important point is the distinction between enunciation and enounced: the enunciation is a time-bound speech act (the speech act as it is happening); the enounced is the result of that act, so it is now out of time, out of the time at which it was uttered. Thus, on a time scale, they are not one and the same. The next point concerns the terms enunciator and enounced. These two terms allowed Benveniste to make a distinction between two types of **subject**: the subject of the enunciation, as opposed to the subject of the enounced. The subject of the enunciation is the enunciator (the one who utters). But who is the subject of the enounced? Who is represented within that utterance? The enunciator? Are they necessarily one and the same? We may think so but this it not always the case, says Benveniste. And to illustrate his point he gives the paradox of the 'liar'. If the enunciator says 'I am lying', to which subject is she or he referring? Who is telling the truth? If the subject of the enunciation is telling the truth ('I am lying') then the subject of the enounced is lying. They cannot both be lying because they are not one and the

same. The subject of the enunciation (the one who utters) has already moved on. If the subject of the enounced is telling the truth, then the reverse is true and the subject of the enunciation is lying (the one who utters is lying). Therefore to the earlier temporal difference of the two speech acts (enunciation and enounced) is added the idea of subject difference (see Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 50). The following diagram illustrates this.




It is not difficult to see how this reasoning fits in with Jacques Lacan's concept of the divided subject and misrecognition (for a fuller discussion, see **subjectivity** and **suture**). Lacan (1977) points to the crucial nature of the unconscious in this process of enunciation. The subject of the enunciation is both the conscious and the unconscious subject. Thus, as the conscious subject seeks to represent itself in language, it does so at the expense of coming after the word, by which time the unconscious subject is already not there but becoming something else, a situation Lacan refers to as 'future anterior'. In other words, the conscious subject of the enunciation utters 'I' and, in becoming situated as 'I', becomes the subject of the enounced (see above, diagram 2). The spoken subject becomes presence. However, the unconscious subject is already beyond that 'I' and becoming something else. The spoken subject, subject of the enunciation, now becomes absence. To say 'I', therefore, is not to be it, because the subject of the enunciation (who in enunciating is making a *time-bound* speech act) has already gone past it and is saying and being something else. What is absent for the subject of the enounced, then, is the unconscious – it is outside the unconscious subject and fixed in language. The belief that both subjects are one and the same, whereas they are not, is to misrecognize the self. That is, the mirrored 'I' (this time in language) is not the same as the one standing before the mirror – that one has already gone on (see above, diagrams 2 and 3).

### *Relevance to film theory/cinematic address*

In terms of **spectator**–film relations, the spectator-as-subject is both constituting and constituted through the process of 'reading' the film text. In terms of cinematic address (that is, the interaction or interrelatedness of film as text and the spectator), the spectator is, therefore, both the enunciator (the subject-spectator making sense of the text) and the enunciated (the spectator-subject being situated by the text). The self-reflexivity of **art**, **avant-garde** and **counter-cinema** keeps those two subjects distinct. However, **dominant cinema** produces films that are seamless and do not draw attention to the **apparatus** (that is, the way films are made): the story 'naturally' unfolds, the text makes sense of itself so the constituting subject-spectator, because she or he has no role to play, is no different from the constituted spectator-subject. And this leads to the illusion of unity between the two subjects, in other words, to misrecognition.

Although not referring to film per se, Benveniste makes a clear and useful distinction with regard to these two implicit modalities of enunciation. According to Benveniste, enunciation is articulated in one of two registers: *histoire* (meaning story) and *discours* (meaning discourse). Story, or better *histoire* since it connotes both story-telling and history, indicates the enunciation of past events by a dissimulated author (authors in this register do not announce their presence – they are not there). *Discours*, however, implies that active ongoing social production of meaning and the subject of enunciation in this register is ever present and so too is the receiver (since discourse implies dialogue and therefore an interlocutor). As Kuhn (1982: 49) clearly puts it: '*discours* foregrounds subjectivity in its address, while in *histoire* address is more impersonal'. We can see here the usefulness of these registers in relation to cinematic address. The more impersonal register of *histoire* means that the actual process of story-telling – the authorial voice or point of view – is absent. All markers of subjectivity are hidden. The story unfolds 'naturally', as 'always there', complete, with no hint as to how it got there. In mainstream and **classical narrative cinema**, the **narrative** itself – through the effects of **continuity editing** and its ensuing seamless appearance – does precisely the same. As *histoire*, the narrative represents itself, because complete, as reality. And the spectator, confronted with this completeness, gets positioned as the all-knowing subject. Since sexual identity (read: heterosexuality) is **Hollywood**'s great subject, it is not difficult to see the ideological resonances of this reality-effect.

Of course mainstream cinema is not devoid of *discours*. Character subjectivity within the **diegesis** occurs, for example through point-of-view **shots**, dialogue, **flashbacks**. But, as Lapsley and Westlake (1988, 51) make clear, such 'explicit instances of enunciation are [still] contained within a supervening narrative that specifies who is speaking and looking'. However, I would tend to nuance this and concur with Kuhn (1982: 53) that *histoire* 'is a defining feature of dominant cinema' but that that is not the end of it. By very dint of the presence of discursive elements it 'might be possible to envisage modes of address which, in mobilising the discursive, constitute viewing subjects rather differently' (Kuhn, 1982, 53). This point relating to positioning is developed in the **spectator** entry. But Kuhn's other point, that narrative point of view as an element of cinematic address 'is worth examining for what it reveals about the place of women as enunciator' (1982, 52) is one I would now like to examine in relation to the flashback.

In terms of modes of address within film, Benveniste's concept of enunciation does seem particularly useful when discussing flashbacks. It would seem to be able to show what is going on in terms of subjectivity. As Turim (1989) makes clear, there are several types of **flashbacks**. I only want to deal next with the broad concept of flashback and enunciation and then see how it relates to the female protagonist as enunciator. The first point to make is that the protagonist-as-subject, like the spectator, is a constituting and constituted subject. The subject both performs the text, that is, plays her or his part in the narrative, and is performed by it, is placed in it. The protagonist is, then, simultaneously subject of the enunciation and subject of the enounced. A first 'mirroring' occurs: let us call it $A_1$. $A_1$ then goes into flashback mode through a dissolve and possibly a voice-over. The subject of enunciation is now signifying that she or he is becoming the subject of the enounced – a 'past-interior' to rephrase Lacan's term. The subject of the enounced is about to be re-enounced. A second mirroring occurs: $A_2$. In the flashback proper, the subject of the enounced, $A_2$ (that which has already been spoken and so is past-anterior) is now masquerading as the subject of the enunciation. Masquerading because there is a reperformance of the past (a making over again, in a time-based speech act) which has already occurred. So there is an apparent subject reversal. But there is also a double-mirroring: first, the subject of the enounced in relation to the subject of enunciation (which the former is pretending to be, hence the 'abnormal' subject reversal) *and*, second, the subject of the enunciation in its 'normal' relation to the subject of the enounced (but in the past). So now we are confronted with a third and fourth order mirroring: $A_3$ (the subject reversal, the

masquerading subject) and $A_4$ (the subject of the enunciation set in the past). It is $A_3$ which points to the most intriguing effect of the flashback. All others of course point to the narcissism inherent in this cinematic trope or figure of speech, but $A_3$ suggests the distorting effect of the flashback on time and memory (both are back to front). Because there is a double agencing of subjectivity (the subject of the enounced and the subject of the enunciation are both at work here), it also suggests a **mise-en-scène** of the relationship between the conscious and the unconscious. In this respect, absence (the unconscious) is made presence – almost as if the 'I' of the subject of the enounced is looking back and catching the 'I' of the subject of enunciation.

Given this parametric reading, using variables on a constant, the flashback, then, can be the moment when the psyche has control of its unconscious. So flashbacks, for whatever **gender**, should represent an ideal moment of empowerment. But is this the case? Leaving **avant-garde** and **counter-cinema** aside, if we look at classical narrative cinema it is with little surprise that we find that male flashbacks dominate, including male flashbacks narrating a woman's story – as is ultimately the case in *Mildred Pierce* (Michael Curtiz, 1945). In this film, of the three flashbacks it is the last one, the detective's flashback, that in essence rewrites/interprets Mildred's two preceding ones. It is his flashback that resolves the enigma around the murder and Mildred's role in it (Kuhn, 1982: 50–2). Women's flashbacks in the films of the 1940s and 1950s, which are often triggered off by a male 'expert' (doctor, detective), are used to 'explain away' their psych(ot)ic disorders (suicide attempts or just plain insanity). In other words, they tend to be frame-worked by the male protagonist, so that it is he who is reaching into the unconscious of the woman, not the woman herself. In these instances, clearly the female protagonist remains the subject of the enounced – her unconscious is therefore 'beyond' her (read: her comprehension).

Maureen Turim (1989: 117) looks at the issue of women's flashbacks in mainstream and art cinema, and attempts to read against the grain of some of the 1940s and 1950s obvious readings of mainstream films' use of flashbacks.

## EPICS

In the beginning there was *The Ten Commandments* (1923) and *Ben Hur* (1926), and they were so successful they went forth and multiplied and, born anew in **sound**, there was *The Ten Commandments* (1956), *Ben Hur* (1959), but then there was *Cleopatra* (1963) and

she was so wilful and costly she ruined **Hollywood** and did the epic in. . . . So one official version of this genre's rise and fall might have it. And of course, because epics cost so much to make, it is a case of economies of scale. Epics not only cost a monumental amount of money, they require huge sets, casts of thousands and, above all, a monumental hero (sic) played – at least since the advent of sound – by a monumental star. And as for topic, it is usually taken from history: Biblical or 'factual'; certainly most preferably from a distant past so that the ideological message of national greatness would pass unremittingly. Generally speaking, in Western society, *the* nation is the United States because the epic is predominantly an American genre, Hollywood having the resources necessary to produce it.

Arguably D. W Griffith's *The Birth of a Nation* (1915) was the first great epic and David Lean's *Lawrence of Arabia* (1962) the last. The heyday of the sound epic was the 1950s, starting with *The Robe* (Henry Koster) in 1953, the first **colour** film to be made in **cinemascope**. The major reason for a resurgence in production of this genre was of course economic but there were also ideological reasons for its re-activation. Hollywood's popularity was on the decline. Home leisure, especially television, was keeping **audiences** away from the movies. To attract them, film studios were having to produce big spectacles that no television set could muster. So, on the economic front, colour, 'scope and epics seemed a surefire cocktail to seduce audiences back in. The other factor in their appeal was the grandeur of the themes – biblical or historical – based in heroic action and moral values which of course fed into the dominant cultural climate of the time: the Cold War conflict between Western capitalism and Eastern/Soviet communism. The ideological function of these epics became one of reaffirming the image of the United States as a superpower; of asserting the need of its citizens to be cleaner than clean in the face of the threat of communism that McCarthy and the House of Un-American Activities (HUAC) were determined to cleanse its nation of; and, finally, of the socio-economic need for clearly defined **gender** roles in the economic restructuring of the nation's post-war job market (that is that women should relinquish jobs they had taken up during the war period and go back into the domestic sphere and become consumers of the new technology that had been domesticated for their purpose).

From this, it might seem easy to see why an epic based on Cleopatra might sound the death-knell for the genre. After all, it was about a woman, a leader, a queen (even) who picked and chose her men and spat them out (that is, had them killed) when she had had enough.

Strong, self-assertive women were not the norm on screen and the feminist movement had yet to come to the United States. In any case this brand of 'Hollywood feminism' (to use Thomas Elsaesser's term, 1987, 69) was far removed from any feminist **ideology**. So that was not the reason why this film was the swan-song for Hollywood and its epic tradition. This was the period of John F. Kennedy (the youngest president of the United States), of optimism, change and collectivism. As a topic, Cleopatra was out of date – even though in terms of fashion the creations designed for Elizabeth Taylor's Cleopatra had a profound influence on women's garments, hairstyle and make-up well into the late 1960s. None the less, the cost and the epic grandeur on and off screen, the numerous changes of directors, locations, scripts, Taylor's illness, her affair with Burton, represented a type of **excess** that was out of touch with the spirit of the age. And so it was that Cleopatra marked the end of Hollywood's movie imperialism, old-style.

Interestingly in the new millennium, epics in the Western world have made a bit of a comeback. The reasons for this cannot entirely be put down to a perceived need to stay away from blockbuster action-packed contemporary spectaculars in the wake of the New York Twin Towers disaster of September 11, 2001 (9/11), since the first big success in this run was Ridley Scott's *Gladiator* 2000. The year 2004, however, saw a literal 'plethora' of epics with three big-cast movies: *Troy* (Petersen), *King Arthur* (Fuqua) and *Alexander* (Stone). These films are about imperial grandeur. But they are also more disconcerting than that, particularly if read a bit more closely. In each instance, greed for more or a determination to 'take back' what is deemed rightfully 'theirs' propels the spectacular blood-letting narratives. Deceit and cunning is used, so too is lying about the real cause for the engagement in warfare, slain or dying heroes are brutally treated – it is all there and feels all too contemporary in the light of the Iraq war. We have come a long way from the slave underdog hero of *Spartacus* (Kubrick, 1960). America leads is presently the only super-power. A Goliath as it were surrounded, if we believe the current propaganda, by invisible enemies. These new epics do little to allay this perception.

*see also*: **genre**

## ETHNOGRAPHIC FILM/GAZE

Ethnographic film is one which provides an anthropological study of a given society or culture (a first, albeit problematic, example being

Flaherty's *Nanook of the North*, 1922). In so doing it aims to be as objective as possible in its scientificness. Thus the ethnographic gaze is one that attempts not to interpret for the viewer nor to cheat in what it shows. In this way it is reminiscent of the *cinéma-vérité* work done by Dziga Vertov and Jean Rouch. However, only rarely can the ethnographic gaze be neutral or at least come from within. Typically, the documentarists/ethnographers are Eurocentric in their provenance. Inevitably, therefore, the cinematic eye will be predominantly that of an outsider, not an insider with an inner/indigenous knowledge of that culture (see Minh-ha, 1989). Two interesting examples to contrast in terms of outsider/insider ethnographic gaze are the American avant-garde film-maker Maya Deren's *The Divine Horsemen* film about Haïtian voodoo practices, which she was invited to film during the 1950s (it was edited, 1973–7, a decade after her premature death), and Tracey Moffatt's *Night Cries: A Rural Tragedy* (1990) a re-negotiation of Charles Chauvel's *Jedda* (1955), which dwells on the social problem of Aboriginal children who were taken away from their natural parents to be raised by White families. The first example is that of an outsider invited inside because of her recognized gifts as an artist and her sympathies with voodoo practices, but significantly she could never bring herself to edit her footage into a final film form – the footage was the experience. The latter example is that of an insider formalistically redressing the White ethnographic gaze and showing how that experience felt from an indigenous point of view.

For further reading see Grimshaw 2002.

## EUROPEAN CINEMA

Entries in this book have been made on various individual European cinemas when, at a point in history, they could be said to constitute either a movement or a school (for a list, see the end of this entry). When talking about European cinema it must be borne in mind that political **ideologies** have meant that Europe has never been a stable unified entity. For example, from the Second World War until very recently (1990) there were two Europes, as is best exemplified by the former division of Germany into two Germanies (East and West). So clearly it is impossible to talk about a European cinema – at least from this side of the Atlantic. Viewed from the United States, more particularly **Hollywood**, European cinema since 1920 has been construed

as a global concept and perceived as meaning two distinct things (at least). First, European cinema is predominantly **art cinema** and is often more sexually explicit than the home product (see **Hays code**). Second, it is the only true rival to Hollywood and must at all costs be infiltrated and dominated. The most recent trade agreements (GATT) between the United States and Europe are but the latest in a series of attempts of the American film industry to secure favourable deals for the export of its products into Europe – an attempt which France, as the only European country still to possess a viable film industry, has robustly resisted. (The agreements included, at France's insistence, a quota limitation on the number of films to be imported into France annually from the United States. The United States wanted unlimited access to the screens; France kept the quota to around 180–200 films a year.) Although the United States is a very dominant presence in the share of the film market in Europe, if we compare the United Kingdom with France it is clear how much of a resistance France has managed to put up in the past. In 1981 the US share of the film market in the UK was 80 per cent, in France 35 per cent. In 1991 the figures were 80 per cent and 59 per cent. Presently the US share in the UK stands at around 85 per cent and in France around 64 per cent. But these figures also show how, over the last decade, protectionism notwithstanding, the United States has eroded that resistance.

Because Hollywood is still so dominant in Western culture, it continues to be the point of reference. Thus in Western Europe a nation's cinema is defined, in part, in relation to what it is not (that is, 'not-Hollywood'), in relation to an 'other'. This in turn produces two strategies. First, European countries produce films with the intention of intruding into that 'other's' territory. France and the United Kingdom in particular have done this with some degree of success with their heritage films (such as *Manon des sources*, Claude Berri, 1985; *Cyrano de Bergerac*, Jean-Paul Rappeneau, 1990; *A Room with a View*, 1985 and *Howards End*, 1992, both Merchant/Ivory). Second, with a view to protecting its own financial interests, an indigenous industry makes products specifically for the national **audience,** thereby drawing on its nation's cultural specificities, something which Hollywood of course cannot do. France, Germany and Spain in particular follow this practice.

*See also* (listed chronologically) **German expressionism**, **Soviet cinema**, **French poetic realism**, **Italian neo-realism**, **Free Cinema (British)**,

**French New Wave**, **British New Wave**, **Germany/New German cinema.**

For an interesting example of an attempt to bring some cohesion to bear when talking about European cinema see Sorlin, 1991; Vincendeau, 1995; Forbes and Street, 2000; Ezra, 2004.

## EXPLOITATION MOVIES

A term that has gained critical currency recently and which refers to films which are generally low in production values but which target specific audiences through exploiting specific 'topical' themes or narratives about specific social groups. In a sense exploitation movies have always been around (in the form of **pornography**, for example). But in the West we can determine several key moments: the 1950s 'teen pics'; the 1970s **blaxploitation** movies; the mid-1970s European sexploitation movies, mostly emanating from France after the lifting of censorship; and the more recent teen comedies and nasties. Since there are already entries on blaxploitation and pornography, I will focus in this entry only on the first and last categories.

The 1950s saw the major launch by Hollywood of what are termed 'teen pics' – a form of exploitation films that deliberately targeted teenagers who had become a new exploitable consumer market (although arguably there were earlier forms in the 1930s with Mickey Rooney and Judy Garland films). The mid-1950s was a period of conspicuous consumerism amongst middle-class teenagers. Youth was associated with a hedonistic commitment to pleasure and leisure unrelated to adult concerns. Their generation's aggressive rock and roll music filtered into their behaviour and hep-talk slang, which also excluded adults, of course. The teenage cult was something Hollywood needed to exploit in the light of competition it was experiencing from television. Product placing in these films was part of what made them exploitation films. But it was primarily the nature of their narrative that capitalized on what was perceived as the teenage problem which earned them this label. Arguably, *the* film which launched the 'teen pics' was Nicholas Ray's *Rebel without a Cause* (1955), starring James Dean as the angry 'rebel' teenager whose parents do not understand him, so adding to his sense of alienation. Ray's film tells the story very much from the teenager's point of view – so the audience comes to feel the truth of the adolescent's anguish at the end of the film. And this was very new as an approach.

The distinction between a 'teen pic' whose audience address is clearly the youth classes versus a movie that proselytizes about the problem (and so really targets more of an adult audience) can perhaps be best summed up by comparing the reception of Ray's film to that of another teen pic of the same year, Richard Brooks' *The Blackboard Jungle*, which achieved almost the opposite effect. Though well intentioned as a film that attempts to 'understand the teenage problem', its point of view is that of the teacher in a tough New York inner-city school who has to contain the hoodlums in his class. As opposed to Ray's film, the moralizing tone of the adult is never far away. As far as teen exploitation movies are concerned, perhaps the first film of this type was Don Siegel's *Crime in the Streets* (1956), which takes this teenage problem a stage further, bringing teenage gangs into the city streets and portraying them as perpetrators of ugly, gratuitous delinquent violence. Thus, a first type of exploitation 'teen pics' – of deviant, alienated youth – was spawned. By the late 1950s, American International Pictures took the lead in making this type of exploitation movie and produced teen-gang movies (*Dragstrip Girl* and *Motorcycle Gang*, both Edward Cahn, 1957; *Dragstrip Riot*, David Bradley, 1959) or drug-related 'teen pics' (*High School Confidential*, Jack Arnold, and *The Cool and the Crazy*, William Witney, both 1958), where warring gangs, drag-car/hot-rod chases, high-speed motorbiking, and drugs send the protagonists on a downward spiral (often to death). But teenage delinquency or trauma was not the only side of the exploitation business. Hollywood also tried to sell a more wholesome image, which tended to break down into two types: either the nice boy and nice girl next door narrative or a rock 'n' roll musical starring (budget permitting) a marketable rock star. Of the first kind, *A Summer Place* (Delmer Daves, 1959) and *Blue Denim* (Philip Dunne, 1959) are exemplary. The teenagers mimic adult behaviour as they conduct their sexual awakenings. In the latter, the first to make a breakthrough was *Rock around the Clock*, starring Bill Haley (Fred Sears, 1956). This was sanitized wholesome rock 'n' roll, with youngsters jiving and going through early teenage love struggles. The films acted as vehicles selling the music and a certain idea of teenage culture which could not upset the parents. In this same typology of films, because of his huge popularity, obviously, the Elvis movies stand out – but even here his image was sanitized and his notorious pelvic movements kept under wraps. Typically, he got to play either the misunderstood rock star who gets thrown into jail (*Jailhouse Rock*, Richard Thorpe, 1957) or the tender crooning lover (see *Love me Tender*, 1956; *GI Blues*, Norman Taurog, 1960).

More recently a new wave of 'teen-exploitation pics' has come to the screen. These can be broken down into two broad categories: the teen comedies and the teen nasties. The recent teen comedies have moved away from their earlier prototype of the 1960s beach-party, surfing or biker teen-movies that sold glamour and music (see *Gidget*, Paul Wendkos, 1959, starring Sandra Dee, and *The Wild Angels*, Roger Corman, 1966, starring Peter Fonda and Nancy Sinatra). Nor do today's teen nasties conveniently fall under the trash label that was so easily conferred upon the 1950s 'teen problem pics'. Interestingly, in the 1950s, their very schlock nature allowed teen audiences to make them into cult films (see the example of *I was a Teenage Werewolf*, Gene Flower, 1957). Today's teen comedies follow zany implausible plots: *Wayne's World 1* (Penelope Spheeris, 1992) and *Wayne's World 2* (Stephen Surjik, 1993) are good examples. Even though Wayne and Garth are not strictly speaking teens themselves, they are, however, proto-teens and their off-beat humour (and nasty sexist epithets) appealed hugely to youth audiences. The slightly less zany *The School of Rock* (Richard Linklater, 2003), with its take on the anarchic youthful teacher who leads his teenage class to moderate success, is another illustrative example of the implausible tale – despite its narrative proximity to the American Dream that everyone can be a winner. Other teen comedies mix the serious with the comedic in an attempt to dramatize the way in which the youth class has been unable to overcome the beastliness and egocentrism of its parents and so is doomed to live either on the periphery of society or as a genius drop-out (see *Garden State*, Zach Braff, 2003, for example). Nor are these teen comedies without their nastiness. *Ghost World* (Terry Zwigoff, 2001) exemplifies this trend with its two bored female teenagers, Enid and Rebecca. Living in suburbia, they are driven by the emptiness of their alienation to get up to numerous unpleasant tricks at the expense of others.

The second category, teen nasties, is not really a true continuation of the teenage problem films of the 1950s, although it does owe something to it, insofar as we are presented with alienated youth. The difference comes in the form that their anomie takes as a result of their sense of alienation. Instead of taking it out on themselves as individuals, or being the victims of a cruel mishap, or gangs beating up on each other, now (in their often drug-induced state and intrinsic sense of boredom) they plan sadistic murders, or get into power-play relations that are heavily sado-masochistic in their nature. In the teen nasties category there has been a recent spate of films which, despite their directors' pleas that they are only showing the

truth, have been accused of 'teensploitation'. In terms of power relations that manipulate, *Thirteen* (Catherine Hardwicke, 2003) and *Ken Park* (Larry Clark, 2002) are good illustrative examples. In terms of murders, two clearly come to mind: *Bully* (Larry Clark, 2001) and *Elephant* (Gus Van Sant, 2003). Both are based on true events and both are starkly different in their representation. In *Bully*, Clark comes close to a prurience with youth that leaves one uneasy – lingering as he does particularly on the female teenager body. Clark claims that he made this film about the murderous revenge upon a bully by his gang as an attempt to wake us up to the way many kids are living today (2002: 25). All eight of the teens are portrayed as pretty unlikeable: the (eventually) murdered bully; three of the gang who are drugged out of their minds; the teen-slut; a best-but-bullied friend and his manipulative girlfriend; and, finally, a teenage hoodlum hitman. The film falls into so many clichés, starting with the moral bankruptcy of contemporary America. But it also ends up saying more or less that all the central characters in the film were bullies of one sort or another – which, in anybody's world-view, is a pretty sweeping generalization on today's youth. Less prurient in its representation, Van Sant's *Elephant* is based very unloosely on the Columbine high-school massacre (1999). Van Sant wanted to remain dispassionate, to offer no answers and so chose not to give the bigger picture, but aimed rather to give us 'a clean portrait of an event' shot in an unobtrusive documentary style in order to show the day's incidents as a part of the 'messy complexities of reality' (2004: 18). But, as with *Bully*, hints of a confused sexuality haunts our reading of the two main male protagonists. Is it because of their homo-erotic relationship that the girlfriend in *Bully* wants her boyfriend's best friend murdered, to get her rival out of the way? Does the fact that the two high-school killers in *Elephant* get bullied at school and have a homo-erotic relationship cloud our ability to read the messy complexities of real life Van Sant wants to portray for us? The point is that these teen nasties show a very unpleasant side to young people between the ages of thirteen and eighteen, and we have to wonder about adult prurience and an unhealthy preoccupation on their part with the 'problem' with youth, which in turn all too easily leads to a demonization of youth culture. And the question becomes why? Why are these films being made? Is it in our interests to see youth as abject? Of course some of these stories are based on truth. But the point is, surely, if these stories must be represented at all, to try and give them the necessary development that will allow the spectator to move away from simplistic snap judgments (as a good example, albeit

not a 'teen pic', I would refer you to *Monster*, Patty Jenkins, 2003). Do we want these films to help create an environment for change? Or do we simply go and see them to have our worst prejudices confirmed and feel helpless to make change happen?

For further reading see Doherty, 1988; Gidal, 1989; Schaefer, 1999; Harper and Mendik, 2000.

## EYELINE MATCHING

A term used to point to the **continuity editing** practice ensuring the logic of the look (see **gaze**). In other words, eyeline matching is based on the belief in mainstream cinema that when a character looks into off-screen space the **spectator** expects to see what she or he is looking at. Thus there will be a **cut** to show what is being looked at: object, view or another character. Eyeline then refers to the trajectory of the looking eye. The eyeline match creates order and meaning in cinematic space. Thus, for example, character *A* will look off screen at character *B*. Cut to character *B*, who – if she or he is in the same room and engaged in an exchange either of glances or words with character *A* – will return that look and so 'certify' that character *A* is indeed in the space from which we first saw her or him look. This 'stabilizing' (Bordwell and Thompson, 1980: 167) is true in the other primary use of the eyeline match which is the **shot/reverse-angle shot**, also known as the reverse angle shot or shot/countershot, commonly used in close-up dialogue scenes. The camera adopts the eyeline trajectory of the interlocutor looking at the other person as she or he speaks, then switches to the other person's position and does the same.

*see also* **editing, 180-degree rule**

## EXCESS

Usually used in terms of performance (see **stars**) but also for certain **genres**. In terms of performance, excess points to a highly stylized performance through gesture (as with the mannered style of Bette Davis) or to a contrast in actorly style when the whole performance is minimalist bar a momentary outburst of verbal and gestural excess (Robert De Niro, Jeremy Irons and Meryl Streep are actors in this

vein). In the first instance, the star is drawing attention to herself or himself as star – as being more than the part – and as such is pointing to her or his authenticity as star persona (that is, we expect Jack Nicholson to 'act like that'). In the second, the star points to her or his authenticity as actor. And by being both less than the part (minimalist) and more in a moment of excess (such as an outburst of anger) the star proves that she or he can impersonate a role, and yet be more of a star than one who merely personifies a role.

Other aspects of excess can be found in **narrative** and **mise-en-scène**. **Classical narrative cinema** contains and does not expose its **signs** of production. However, there are certain genres, such as the **epic**, **musical**, **science fiction** movies, that are readily associated with excess by **Hollywood**. With others, the excess is not deliberately on display but may be uncovered through a reading against the grain or close textual analysis. As Kuhn (1982: 35) says, narrative excess can be found in the **film noir** genre of the 1940s. Not only is the detective or private eye investigating a murder or a crime of some order or another, he (sic) is also involved in investigating and scrutinizing the female protagonist. To the solution of the crime is added the 'woman question' – and as such the narrative is in excess. In terms of mise-en-scène and excess, **melodrama**, with its obsessive attention to décor within the domestic sphere, is a genre that comes to mind. Part of the reason for excessive mise-en-scène has to do with consumerism and targeting the female **audience**. But a more subversive reading can be made of melodrama's highly stylized look. Elsaesser (1987: 53) points out that this is to do with the effects of **censorship** and morality codes – very much in effect until the 1960s. In this regard, style becomes used as meaning. In order to convey what cannot be said, primarily on the level of sexual and repressed desire, décor and mise-en-scène had to stand in for meaning (see **melodrama**).

## FADE

A transition between sequences or scenes generally associated with earlier cinema – up until the late 1940s – but still used on occasion. In this transition an **image** fades out and then another image fades in. In use from 1899, the fade was one of the first forms of transition that could be edited within the camera, so its historical importance resides in the fact that earliest film-makers realized they could now make films that were composed of more than just a single action

taken in one take. The **cut** as a transition came a little later, in 1901. The use of the fade suggests a lapse of time and possibly a change of space (for example, if a character gets knocked out she or he may go out with a fade and come back 'some time later' through a fade-in in the same room).

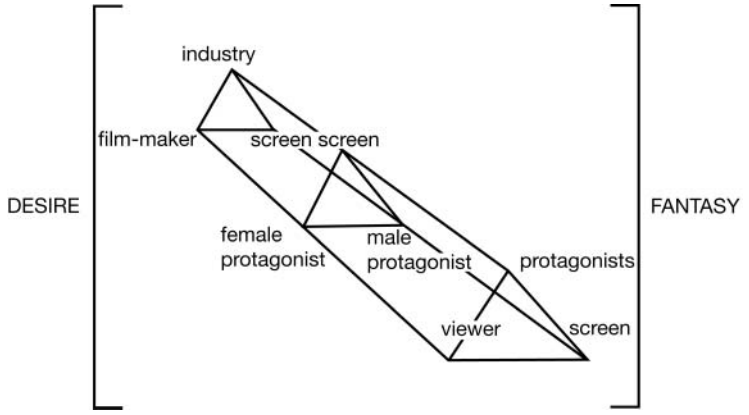
## FANTASY/FANTASY FILMS

Generically speaking, fantasy films englobe four basic categories: **horror**, **science fiction**, fairy tales and a certain type of adventure movie (journeys to improbable places and meetings with implausible 'creatures', such as *Planet of the Apes*, Franklin Schaffner, 1967). Fantasy films are about areas 'we don't really know about' and, therefore, areas we do not see as real. However, fantasy is the expression of our unconscious, and it is these films in particular that most readily reflect areas we repress or suppress – namely, the realms of our unconscious and the world of our dreams. It is also true that these films, as indeed with other genres, act **metonymically** as **enunciators** of dominant **ideology** and social **myths**. As we know, mainstream **Hollywood** cinema's great subject is not sexual identity but heterosexuality and more precisely the family. When this dream is threatened, the 'threat' must be removed. The doubly deviant woman in *Fatal Attraction* (Adrian Lyne, 1987) – she is not a mother but a career woman and she is sexually voracious – must be removed so that family life can go on. Norman Bates's victim in *Psycho* (Alfred Hitchcock, 1960), was a deserving one because she was a double thief stealing her boss's money *and* stealing another woman's husband. The fairly recent spate of cyborg movies (the artificial reproduction of humans), as Kaplan (1992: 211) argues, are clearly related to the issue of reproduction rights and who controls them. (It is noteworthy that probably *the* first cyborg novel was written by a woman. Why did Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley first dream of (1816) and then write (1818) *Frankenstein*?) It is also noteworthy that the number of these films has increased since the legalization of abortion in many countries in the Western world. Men are wanting either to have control over reproduction, as in *The Fly* (David Cronenberg, 1986) and *Alien* 3 (David Pincher, 1992) or to destroy the reproductive organism, as in *Dead Ringers* (Cronenberg, 1988).

Fantasy is inextricably linked with desire, which, according to Lacan, is located in the Imaginary (see **Imaginary/Symbolic** and **suture**) – that is, the unconscious. Fantasy, then, is the conscious

articulation of desire, through either **images** or stories – it is, then, the **mise-en-scène** of desire. In this context, film puts desire up on screen. The film industry is the industry of desire, Hollywood is the dream factory. But film is not just film, it is also a nexus of text relations which function as fantasy structures enunciating unconscious desire. Film-text relations can best be described as a series of overlaying triangles of equal importance that are enclosed within the desire/fantasy parameter – as the diagram below illustrates.

There is no single set or level of fantasy (just as there is no one desire). In the first instance, each triangle in the diagram generates a set of fantasies that are both interrelated and yet distinct from each other. Just to illustrate: the fantasy created by the film-maker is in relation to, but distinct from, the fantasy perceived by the **spectator** as constituted subject; and, as constituting subject the spectator creates yet another fantasy; but, given that fantasy structures are multiple, spectator identification is equally multiplicitous. For example (but of course by way of fantasy!), with *Rebel Without a Cause* (1955) the film-maker Nicholas Ray could have fantasized that his film was about teenage malaise and alienation in 1950s America and that James Dean was an archetypal anti-hero. Given Ray's own background – as a loner, something of a drifter and misfit – he could also have fantasized Dean as his alter ego. A male teenage spectator, seeing the film when it was released, would identify with Dean which, as constituted subject, he is supposed to do, but in this context he would fantasize Dean as his alter ego. As constituting subject, his reading of the film and the character portrayed by Dean could concur with the **documentary** realism created by Ray, but not necessarily read the film



as a 'problem film' per se in which, as Dean exclaims, 'we are all involved'. He could read it instead as a realistic portrayal of youth culture and, too, its embattlement against uncomprehending adults or parents. The film becomes appropriated, encultured – a 'cult film' of the spectator's life (as he fantasizes it). Finally, given the multiplicity of identificatory positions, this spectator can identify with both Sal Mineo and Natalie Wood (Dean's friends) as Dean's **diegetically** adoring audience – thus satisfying both homoerotic and heteroerotic desire.

The second point to make in relation to these structures of fantasy is that, since fantasy is the mise-en-scène of desire and since desire is located in the unconscious, it follows that cinema, in creating images that we as spectators wish to look at, calls upon the structures of our own unconscious and makes us privy to them. The cinematic **apparatus** functions in this respect to position us as voyeurs to our own fantasies. According to Sigmund Freud, storytelling is a child's way of dealing with its anxiety around sexual differences and dependencies, most particularly on its mother. Storytelling, then, is creating fantasies that emerge from our unconscious desires and fears. Cinema narratives relay these fantasies before our eyes, the primary ones being as follows: the fear of abandonment by and desire for unity with the mother/([m]other); the fear of castration (Freud) or the fear of being devoured by the mother (Melanie Klein); the bastard and foundling fantasies; the desire for illicit viewing (of parental coitus) – the primal scene.

Let's take *Jurassic Park* (Steven Spielberg, 1993) to explore this set of fantastic mise-en-scènes. The devouring mothers are of course the re-created dinosaurs – all female (at least at birth) and the result of genetic engineering (men tinkering with reproductive rights). These dinosaurs who become sexually ambiguous after birth – they are able to change sex – are also the attacking father and terrifying parents illicitly viewed/fantasized as copulating. The children, Lex and Tim, fear abandonment, and this is fulfilled when they are separated from their 'parents', the two palaeontologists Ellie Sattler and Alan Grant, in whose care they have been placed. Incidentally, it is this same 'father' (Grant) who poses the threat of castration in the opening sequence when he draws the talon of a dinosaur over a young boy's stomach in reply to his persistent questions about dinosaurs – no child-liker he. Father as life-giver and life-destroyer is also exemplified in the role of this reluctant 'father': when Lex and Tim are being attacked in the Land-Rover, Grant eventually has to try to rescue the life-threatened children.

In this film the foundling fantasy, whereby the child can reject the family because the parents are not her or his and are too lowly, is inverted. The foundlings, Lex and Tim, are eventually accepted by Grant when, at the end of the film, he fulfils the **Oedipal trajectory** by saving his 'family'. He even feels protective to the point that the boy ends up cradled asleep in his arms. The only 'bastards' in this movie are the illegitimate dinosaurs. They are the illegitimate children of the billionaire entrepreneur John Hammond – their 'mother'. Again an inversion, this time sexual. In the bastard fantasy, the mother is perceived by the child as not being possessed by the father – because of her illicit liaisons with other men. She is also perceived as lowly and immoral – a prostitute. This fantasy then breaks up the notion of the family unit: the child sides with the real mother against the father and, moreover, because of her status, the child can even possess her. In the film, as a result of Hammond's illicit reproductive practices, the dinosaurs do break up the 'family' unit; and they unite with Hammond as mother against the father (all the people they kill are men); they also leave Isla Nublar(!) with Hammond in the form of the blood in the amber on his stick – but now Hammond is a fallen (wo)man, exposed for his immorality, a potential prey to be possessed by his dinosauric children.

For further reading see Donald, 1989.

## FEMALE MASQUERADE

In its basic sense female masquerade means a display of ultra-femininity. How it comes about and how it is used against the grain, as it were, needs to be understood because it is particularly useful as a concept when investigating genres that strongly forefront female protagonists, such as **film noir**. Indeed**,** female masquerade often comes into play in relation to the femme fatale – although that is not the only genre of course (it occurs in **melodramas** and **musicals** too). Essentially there are two ways to understand this term. First, within a psychoanalytical framework, masquerade functions as a disavowal of difference. According to Freudian and Lacanian **psychoanalysis** the male's fear of castration by the female leads him to two major strategies of containment of the female body (**voyeurism and fetishism**). The male desire to repress the feminine leads to an over-investment in the female parts. This allows the male to fetishize the female form more easily. The exaggerated female parts of the body

draw attention to themselves and, thereby, can become over-endowed with meaning. And it is in those very parts that the male can seek out the hidden phallus and perceive, for example, in the stiletto heels and long slinky black dress (or gloves, or cigarette holder) a projection of his own phallic being. This fetishizing process works to render the female body safe. So, in the end, by masquerading as ultra-feminine, the female form in this fetishistic relationship ultimately masquerades as phallic.

But in order for this containment to fully work, the female has to collude with this positioning. And she colludes in order to survive within patriarchal society. Thus female masquerade is a key tool to this collusion. That is, the female colludes with the male by over-stressing her feminine traits – primarily through her dress code but also gestures. In a sense though she is knowingly putting on a mask (Doane, 1982).

And it is here that the masquerade function starts to open up into a subversive space. For not all women will accept this positioning as fetish. However, they might use the practice of the predominant structure of the masculine (fetishizing) look to their advantage and masquerade for their own purpose. For example, a woman who wants to occupy a masculine place (be it for power or sexual reasons) would need to disguise this ambition, or suffer immediate retribution. And we know only too well how many femmes fatales seek (through an illicit obtaining of wealth) this place of power or empowerment. How better to disguise this ambition than by donning the mask of femininity, thus hiding her transgressive desires (namely, to get rich in the capitalist flow or follow sexual desires that are proscribed to her)? The female masquerade in this context functions to help the woman get what she wants (or nearly, most often she gets caught out at the end and 'punished'). The disguise through masquerade is so complete the man falls for it. He is seeing her one way, but she, fully knowingly, is perceiving herself in completely the other way.

This putting on a mask has a second subversive effect, however. The knowledge of putting it on means also that there is knowledge of what lies beneath – that in fact the mask can be taken off. This suggests that there is a gap between the masquerading woman and the real woman underneath. So here the woman who knowingly masquerades is showing precisely through her ultra-feminine traits (be it through clothing or gestures) how patriarchy functions to position her. In this context the excess of femininity in its parodic and ironic value ends up destabilizing the desired for image, defamiliarizes

female iconography and ultimately threatens the male **gaze** (Doane, 1982). Modleski (1988) analyses Hitchcock's ultra-feminine women protagonists in this light and shows just how powerful their (ironic) return of the look can be.

## FEMINIST FILM THEORY

Although there were women film-makers back in the 1920s and even earlier (see Hayward, 1992) making statements about the suitability of the camera to a woman's expression of her own **subjectivity**, feminist film theory did not come about fully until the late 1960s as a result of the second wave of feminism – the first being the Suffragists and Suffragette movement of the early 1900s. This second wave took the world of academia and journalism in the Western world and Australia by storm and very quickly began to generate texts related to women's issues and, just as importantly, to disciplines taught within academia – including film studies. Indeed, no discussion of film (or television for that matter) can ignore feminist film theory which, since the early 1970s, has so strongly impacted on film studies – starting with the issue of **gender** representation. Essentially, to date, we can distinguish three periods in the evolution of this theory: the early 1970s; the mid-1970s to the early 1980s; the mid-1980s to the present. The following three sections set out the history and the debates of those periods and look at the impact of each period as well as the problems and outcomes each generated, thus pushing the debate along.

### *Feminist film theory 1968–74*

Although we use the term 'feminist film theory', Annette Kuhn (1982, 72) rightly points out that there does not exist one single theory, rather a series of 'perspectives'. The logic for this can be found in two occurrences directly linked to the second wave of feminism. The first is a contemporary occurrence, an effect of the 1960s. The second is based in a longer look at history. Women (mostly students), radicalized during the 1960s by political debate and so-called sexual liberation, reacted against being placed second after men in the intellectual – and at times violent (as in the United States) – pursuit of political change. The failure of radicalism, which culminated and then crashed in 1968, to produce any substantive change for women led them to form consciousness-raising groups

that effectively galvanized women into forming a women's movement. This rejection of male radicalism in intellectual terms can be interpreted also as a rejection of the pursuit of 'total theory' as exemplified by the totalizing effect of **structuralism** (*the* debate of the 1960s) – although, as we shall see, feminists did not reject some of the fundamental principles of structuralism. Indeed they were party to moving that debate on to the more pluralistic one of **post-structuralism**.

The second occurrence was in some ways an outcome of the first. Looking at what had happened to them in recent history, women saw the need to look longer and further at woman's history and from a number of perspectives. Annette Kuhn's definition of feminism, in this instance, most aptly sums up how feminism and feminist film theory after it are composed of a number of tendencies, so resisting the fixity of one 'single theory': '[feminism is] a set of political practices founded in analyses of the social/historical position of women as subordinated, oppressed or exploited either within dominant modes of production (such as capitalism) and/or by the social relations of patriarchy or male domination' (1982: 4). By extension, feminist film theory, then, is political. And as early as its first period it set about analysing, from different perspectives, **dominant cinema**'s construction of women. As we shall see, at this juncture, the differences in perspectives were particularly marked between feminists on either side of the Atlantic.

The effect of this first period of feminist film theory was to shift the debate in film theory from **class** to gender. Feminist film critics examined the question of feminine identity and the representation of women in film images as the site/sight or object of exchange between men. At this point the focus of these analyses was exclusively **Hollywood** cinema and had the sobering effect of dismissing films, which previously had been elevated to **auteur** status, for their male-centred point of view and objectification of women. Exemplary of this approach was Molly Haskell's book *From Reverence to Rape: The Treatment of Women in the Movies* (1974). (It is noteworthy that the person to coin the term *auteur theory* was Andrew Sarris, Haskell's husband – see Auteur.) In her book Haskell, an American journalist, made two very important points. First, she suggested that film reflects society and vice versa and in so doing reflects the **ideological** and social construction of women who are either to be revered (as the Virgin) or reviled (as the whore). Second, in her analyses of the 1930s and 1940s Hollywood cinema she made the important distinction between **melodrama** and women's films – the latter, as she

pointed out, being made specifically to address women. This second point, that of the central role of the female protagonist *and* female spectator, led to a renewed and different focus on **genre** and the possible aesthetic and political consequences of gender difference. This very crucial point was one which was developed in the second period of feminist film theory. For the moment, however, let's focus on the first point, since this was the one that revealed differences in perspectives held by feminists on either side of the Atlantic.

In the United States in the early 1970s, Molly Haskell, Marjorie Rosen (1973) and Joan Mellen (1974), were the three leading feminists writing on the representations of women in cinema. The approach they adopted was sociological and empirical – which was consonant with the state of the art in film criticism in the United States at that time. Their critical approach was intended to expose the misrepresentation of women in film, which it did, but in a specific way. Consistently with a sociological-empirical approach, which aims to ascribe – to fix meanings based on fact – they also assumed a presumed feminine essence repressed by patriarchy. That is, their analyses presumed a predetermined sexual identity, difference. In simple terms what was being said was 'the facts show that women get represented in images as Virgin or whore because that's how patriarchal society represents women to itself'.

With hindsight this conclusion now seems quite reductionist. But the fact remains that these findings constituted a first important stage. Meantime in Europe (particularly in the United Kingdom) this essentialist debate represented three major problems for feminist film theorists, who included Claire Johnston, Laura Mulvey, Pam Cook and Annette Kuhn. These feminists were influenced by the more scientific and definitely anti-empirical approach offered by **semiotics** and structuralism. They argued that the essentialist debate assumed, first, that all women possessed an innate ability to judge the authenticity of the representation of women in film, and, second, that all women film-makers were feminists. Most critically of all, they pointed out that a belief in a fixed feminine essence meant legitimating patriarchy through the back door. By accepting the fixed essence of woman as a predetermined 'given order of things', implicitly, what was also being accepted was the 'naturalness' of the patriarchal order (Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 25). The British feminists, arguing along Althusserian lines, also pointed out that film was as much productive of as it was a product of ideology, and, furthermore, that – in the same way that Althusser theorized that the **subject** was a construct of material structures – so too was the **spectator** a constituted subject

when watching the film. The time was ripe for a moving on from a causal and reductionist debate. Historical materialism (an analysis of the material conditions within historical contexts that placed women where they were), semiotics and **psychoanalysis** were the tools invoked to investigate beyond the currently superficial findings and reflectionist statements produced by the American authors.

These criticisms notwithstanding, Haskell's, Mellen's and Rosen's work represented a significant first benchmark that had important outcomes. Their 'saying that it was there' made it clear that the next step was to find out 'how it got there', the better to change 'it'. Their work led to the definition of three basic approaches to achieve this uncovering and subsequent changing of the way women are constructed in film. There was a need for, first, a theoretical analysis of the way in which mainstream cinema constructs women and the place of women; second, a critical analysis of the work of women film-makers; and, third – as a conjuncture of these two points – the establishing and implementation of feminist film practices.

The final point that needs to be made about this period is that women were becoming a presence in all areas of the cinematic institution. The year 1972 witnessed the first feminist film festivals in the United States and the United Kingdom. Women film-makers formed collectives to encourage women into film-making (for example the London Women's Film Group, formed in 1972). *Women and Film*, the first feminist film journal, was also published in the United States between 1972 and 1975. The next period then had a powerful heritage already as it set to its own trail-blazing practices.

### *Feminist film theory 1975–83*

In 1972 Claire Johnston, Laura Mulvey and Linda Myles organized the Women's Event at the Edinburgh Film Festival. To accompany the Event Johnston edited a pamphlet, *Notes on Women's Cinema*, published in 1973, which contained her own ground-breaking essay: 'Women's Cinema as **Counter-Cinema**'. This text was one of the first to make clear that cinematic textual operations could not be ignored. To change cinema, to make women's cinema, Johnston argued, you had first to understand the ideological operations present in actual mainstream film practices. The task was to determine both the 'how' of female representation and the 'effect' of female positioning in the process of meaning construction. Under the 'how', of first importance was a reading of the **iconography** of the **image**. How was the female framed, lit, dressed, and so on? Under the

'effect', of primary significance was the female's positioning within the structure of the **narrative**. In the first instance what was required was a reading of the image as **sign**, a need to understand the **denotation and connotations** of the image. In the second instance the psychology of the narrative had to come under scrutiny: why, repeatedly, do so many narratives in mainstream cinema depict the woman as the object of desire of the male character embarked upon his **Oedipal trajectory**? Camera-work and **lighting** make it clear that she is a figure upon whom he can fix his fantasies. These, then, are the textual operations constructing ideology which, argues Johnston, we must come to understand through a **deconstruction** of the modes of production, which in turn leads to an exposing of the cinematic and narrative codes at work. Only then can an oppositional counter-cinema become a possibility. It is worth quoting from her conclusion to make the point that the cinema she envisaged was not one that relied on self-reflexivity or **foregrounding** the conditions of film production alone (what she refers to here as political film) but one that would draw on female **fantasy** and **desire**:

> a strategy should be developed which embraces both the notion of films as a political tool and film as entertainment. For too long these have been regarded as two opposing poles with little common ground. In order to counter our objectification in cinema, our collective fantasies must be released: women's cinema must embody the working through of desire: such an objective demands the use of entertainment film. Ideas derived from the entertainment film, then, should inform the political film, and political ideas should inform the entertainment cinema: a two way process.
>
> (Johnston, 1976: 217)

This formidable recipe of foregrounding film practices and female **subjectivity** would, Johnston believed, effect a break between ideology and text – a dislocation that would create a space for women's cinema to emerge.

The other ground-breaking essay of this period was Laura Mulvey's 'Visual Pleasure and Narrative Cinema' (1975). Mulvey's focus was less on textual operations within the film and more on the textual relations between screen and **spectator**. This important text is perceived as *the* key founding document of psychoanalytic feminist film theory. Since this issue is discussed in much greater detail under **spectator**, I will confine myself to a brief summary here. In this

essay, Mulvey seeks to address the issue of female spectatorship within the cinematic **apparatus**. She examines the way in which cinema functions, through its **codes and conventions**, to construct the way in which woman is to be looked at, starting with the male point of view within the film and, subsequently, the spectator who identifies with the male protagonist. She describes this process of viewing as **scopophilia** – pleasure in viewing. However, she also asks what happens to the female spectator, given that the narrative of **classical narrative cinema** is predominantly that of the Oedipal trajectory and since that trajectory is tightly bound up with male perceptions and fantasies about women? How does she derive visual pleasure? Mulvey can conclude only that she must either identify with the passive position of the female character on screen, or, if she is to derive pleasure, she must assume a male positioning. This deliberately polemical essay met with strong response by feminist critics. The next section details the development of that debate. For now let's examine the third aspect of theoretical work during this period: textual analysis.

In the United States particularly, feminists turned their attention to analyses of the textual operations in film and their role in constructing ideology. Essays in the influential journal *Camera Obscura* – launched in 1976 by a breakaway group from the earlier *Women and Film* collective – were instrumental in revealing the ideological operations of patriarchy; and through applications of structural-psychoanalytic theories they demonstrated how narrative codes and conventions sustain patriarchal ideology in its conditioning and control of women. Textual analysis focused on narrative strategies and, in particular, picked up the question of genre and its role in structuring subjectivity – a point which, as we have seen, Molly Haskell had raised in drawing the distinction between melodrama and women's films.

The intervention of psychoanalysis and feminism now brought melodrama and women's films into the critical limelight, focusing on the **discourses** that construct the symbolic place of 'woman and the maternal'. The **Western** too was investigated. The dominance of male-defined problematics within the narrative, the role of women as mere triggers (sic) to male action and choice and, finally, the counter-Oedipal trajectory of so many of its heroes – all these narrative strategies are exposed. Why indeed do so many gunmen ride off into the sunset leaving 'the woman' behind? **Film noir** was another genre which under scrutiny could not hide the dominance of a male subjectivity whose **gaze**, motivated by the fear of castration, either

fetishizes the 'threatening', dangerous woman into the phallic and therefore unthreatening other or seeks to control and punish the perceived source of this fear. (See **melodrama**, **Western** and **film noir** for a full discussion; and for more detail on these points see **psychoanalysis**.)

Another part of the feminists' strategy in their textual analyses was to read against the grain and, in particular, to foreground sexual difference. **Horror** and film noir, because of their voyeuristic 'essence', were prime targets of investigation, but so too were melodrama and women's film because of their focus on the family and the so-called 'woman's space'. Thus, for example, in a film noir or horror film a woman's annihilation, which on the surface might appear as a result of her own actions, may in fact be read as the male repressing the feminine side of his self by projecting it on to the woman and then killing her. Alfred Hitchcock's *Psycho* (1960), for example, plays on this sexual identity in crisis in a number of very complex ways. Norman Bates adopts numerous positions: that of his 'castrating phallic mother' who constantly reminds him that women are filth; so in disguising or dressing himself up as her, he becomes that filth – which, of course he must eradicate; he is also the voyeuristic gaze of mainstream cinema looking through numerous holes (peeping Tom) at the woman's body and, finally, the male gaze that must annihilate that which he must not become – woman and filth.

Melodrama is historically perceived as a theatre form that reflects nineteenth-century bourgeois values whereby the family at all costs will prevail, remain united and in order. When the genre was taken up by early cinema this reflection continued. Superficially, by the 1930s and 1940s, melodrama and women's films appeared not to challenge the patriarchal order. However, in their narrative construction these films gave space for a woman's point of view. And it was in this respect that a reading against the grain was possible. Closure for these films meant that order and, if possible, harmony in the family had to be restored. But what caused the initial disorder? Most often conflict between the two sexes. As Laura Mulvey (1977, reprinted 1989: 39) points out, melodrama is the one genre where ideological contradiction is allowed centre screen: 'Ideological contradiction is actually the overt mainspring and specific content of melodrama. . . . No ideology can ever pretend to totality: it searches for safety-valves for its own inconsistencies'. And melodrama is just one of those safety-valves. But what is interesting in this context are the implications of the **setting** specific to melodrama: the domestic sphere, the woman's space or place and the family. The male char-

acter at the centre of the conflict has to resolve it within that sphere. 'If the family is to survive, a compromise has to be reached, sexual difference softened, and the male brought to see the value of domestic life. ... The phallocentric, misogynist fantasies of patriarchal culture are shown here to be in contradiction with the ideology of the family' (1977: 40). And because it is the female character's subjectivity to which we are privy, it is her emotions with which we first identify. Unlike the Western or gangster movie and the dominance of male-defined problematics which only the hero's action can resolve, here we are confronted with 'the way in which sexual difference under patriarchy is fraught, explosive and erupts dramatically into violence within its own private stamping ground, the family' (1977: 39). There is something tantalizing in the implications of this reading against the grain that goes something like this: If melodrama and women's films are the only sites where narrative strategies expose the contradictions in patriarchal ideology, and if the domestic sphere is the private stamping-ground of patriarchy, then how much indeed the rest of mainstream cinema must work to assert in public spaces that patriarchal ideology is without contradiction. *And* how "dangerous" it would be if female subjectivity crept out of the private domestic sphere and exposed those contradictions. If melodrama did not exist, Hollywood would have had to invent it.

### *Feminist film theory 1984–2000s*

The revalorizing of certain genres that previously had been dismissed, scorned even, was an important accomplishment, as was the opening up of the debate around female spectatorship. However, by the mid-1980s feminists felt that the focus on the textual operations of films was too narrow and that a film needed to be examined within its various contexts – that is, the historical and social contexts of its production and reception. Clearly this move broadens the debate around spectatorship and reintroduces the question of class, which had been superseded during the last two periods by questions of gender. Since Mulvey's 1975 essay on female spectator positioning as male, the debate had moved on to consider that positioning as masochistic (Silberman, 1981), or as either masochistic or transvestite (Doane, 1984). But the significant breakthrough came in De Lauretis's (1984: 152) rereading of an earlier essay by Modleski (1982) from which she deduced that the female spectator enjoyed a double desiring position. As a result of the mother/daughter relationship, in which the daughter never fully relinquishes her desire for her

mother, the female spectator is positioned bisexually. And it is her constant shifting back and forth between the two positions that creates woman's enigma (Modleski, 1988: 99). This shifting means also that women can never become fully socialized into patriarchy – which in turn causes men to fear women and leads them, on the one hand, to establish very strict boundaries between their own sex and the female sex and, on the other, to the need to 'kill off' the woman, either literally or by subjugation.

Explicit within Modleski and De Lauretis's arguments is that there is a female **Oedipal trajectory** and that the notion of lack and penis envy is a patriarchal construct designed to preserve the status quo of male dominance and to side-step the issue of sexual difference. Williams (1984: 89), arguing against Stephen Heath's reading (1978) of horror films as a **mise-en-scène** of sexual difference where the woman represents castration, draws on Susan Lurie's challenge (1980) to Freud's notion of the male child's perception of the mother's body as castrated. Williams (ibid., 1984) resumes Lurie's argument: 'The notion of the woman as a castrated version of a man is, according to Lurie, a comforting, wishful fantasy intended to combat the child's imagined dread of what his mother's very real power could do to him'. The fact that texts have been constructed around the castration myth does not, argue these feminists, make it any more real but merely points to the lengths to which patriarchal ideology will go out of its fear of the (m)other. Modleski and De Lauretis single out women's films as rare exceptions to this neglect or disavowal of a female Oedipal trajectory in cinema. But this does not necessarily make them a 'good thing'. In this genre, that is deliberately woman-centred (the story is apparently told from the woman's point of view) to attract female audiences, the narrative often plays on the two positionalities of desire [male and female] that define the female's Oedipal situation: (De Lauretis, 1984: 153). By the end of the film, however, this shifting back and forth will and must be brought to an end and desire for the female suppressed in favour of desire for the male. Moreover, even when the mother or surrogate mother is represented as quite monstrous, as the phallic mother, the Oedipal trajectory is still there and is completed. Hitchcock's *Rebecca* (1940) is one such film where the heroine eventually turns away from her evil set of surrogate mothers (especially Mrs Danvers) and enters into maturity (that is, a full relationship with her father-figure husband).

This revelation of a female Oedipal trajectory, according to De Lauretis (1984), is not where feminist film theory must stop. After all 'the cinema works for Oedipus', which means that the heroine's

double desiring within the film narrative is eventually resolved along Oedipal lines. She will 'kill off' the mother and marry her father. The ideological operations of patriarchy cannot tolerate women sustaining their double desire. Why else in both *Now Voyager* (Irving Rapper, 1942) and (although a thriller and not a women's film per se) *Marnie* (Alfred Hitchcock, 1964) is it a male – more specifically with *Now Voyager* a psychiatrist – who 'rescues' the heroine from the (phallic) mother? (For discussion of *Rebecca* see Modleski, 1988; for *Now Voyager* and *Marnie*, Kaplan, 1990.)

In this analysis we can see one of the ways in which women's cinema can foreground woman's own construction of meaning: that is, by constructing differently a different social subject, a double-desiring subject whose duplicity need never be resolved. Not a counter-Oedipus, but, as De Lauretis (1985) so felicitously puts it, an 'Oedipus Interruptus'. What is extraordinary (but maybe not) is that women film-makers from cinema's earliest days were constructing differently desiring subjects, as Sandy Flitterman-Lewis's study (1990) so admirably demonstrates.

So far so good. However, feminist thinking by now was also perceiving the limitations of psychoanalysis. Although Lacan's notion of the construction of the subject through language/discourse opened up the debate on sexual difference, there still remained the problem that femininity was still defined in relation to masculinity – the feminine 'other' to the masculine subject. Power relations were also seen in that light. The limit of this approach was to create an ideology of gender: that is, to construct the concept 'Man'/'Woman' (or if you prefer: patriarchal-subject-man/patriarchal-object-woman), in the end to essentialize Woman, and in the final analysis Man (as the subject of the gaze, power, etc.). It was not so much that the issue of gender had been done to death, but that, in focusing their attention in this way, critics had neglected issues around Woman and women – or that through such an approach women could not be talked about. There was a need to move on from questions of gender and to broaden the debate to include questions of class and power relations between women, of differences among the spectating female subjects, of the film industry as more than just an ideological institution or apparatus of patriarchy that renders women invisible and constructs Woman – and also to see these questions in relation to history. Only after this broadening of the debate could gender be reintroduced – because, as we shall explain, it had been relocated.

In the United Kingdom, feminists began to incorporate the historical-materialist approach of work done in cultural studies –

which examined popular culture within the sphere of class, gender and race and in relation to power and resistances to that power. In the United States, feminists more specifically turned their attention to the French philosopher Michel Foucault and his theory of power as well as his 'notion of the social as a practical field in which technologies and discourses are deployed' (De Lauretis, 1984: 84). By technologies Foucault meant the conjuncture of power (*technos*) and knowledge (*logos*). *Logos* also means *discourse.* Thus *technologies* means *discourses of power.* This last point will be discussed more fully when we examine the effect of another of Foucault's theories, the technology of sex, on feminist theory. But first to power theory.

Since Foucault also had an impact on cultural studies' debates, what follows is a brief explanation of how his writings influenced both American feminists and cultural studies and how this influence in turn affected feminist film theory. There are certain problems with adapting Foucauldian theory to film theory (see De Lauretis: 1984, 84–102), but, in the sense that he more or less evacuates gendered subjectivity, it makes it easier to see what else is there. In arguing, in relation to power, that 'discourses produce domains of objects and there are modes of subjection' (Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 101), Foucault points to a multiplicity of positionings; there are some where individuals have power, others where they do not. Foucault's statement (1977: 194) that 'power produces; in fact it produces reality' means that, as a product and producer of power, the individual is both a producer and a product of reality. But it also means that reality is produced from a multiplicity of positions within the power network. It is for this reason that Foucault argues that power comes from below. It is useful, he states, to see power not as hierarchized from the top down but rather as being omnipresent (1978: 93) since all social relations are power relations. Domination evolves from a complex set of power strategies or investments, so it is possible to pinpoint not one source but, rather, several. Foucault also makes the point that, at all stratifications of power, there are resistances to those power relations and that these resistances, far from being in a position of 'exteriority in relation to power', coexist alongside the nexus of power relations (1978: 94–6). Finally, within the context of this synopsis, Foucault insists that power, in and of itself, is neither negative nor positive and that what does matter is how it gets exercised (1977: 194). That is, power in its exercise is a 'silent, secret civil war that re-inscribes conflict in various "social institutions, in economic inequalities, in language, in the bodies themselves of each and everyone of us"' (Merquior, 1985: 110–11).

In terms of feminist film theory, there are two main points of application of Foucault's thinking on power. First, the notion of cinema or the film industry (particularly Hollywood) as unique producer of the reality-effect no longer holds. The multiplicity of positions that produce the reality-effect include not just the textual operations of the film products themselves but also the conditions or (im)positions of production and reception. Thus the social relations of power between the different parts of the industry (that is, scriptwriter(s), continuity and location assistants, camera and lighting crew, editor(s), director(s), producer(s), distributor(s), exhibitor(s), and so on) are as much parts of the reality-effect as the spectators. (The use of the plural here draws attention to the fact that several scriptwriters, directors, etc. may be involved in the making of a single film, thus increasing the notion of a plurality of producers of meaning.) How that reality is produced is as much an effect of the power relations and resistances within the industry as it is within the **audiences**. The spectator can no longer be seen as the single construct of an ideological apparatus. Audiences are multiplicitous. There is not a 'female' or 'male' spectator but different socio-cultural individuals all busy producing reality as the film rolls by. Age, gender, race, class, sexuality affect reception and meaning production. This broadening of the context in which a film is analysed has enabled feminist film theorists to move away from the male-centred effects of psychoanalytic readings, but without necessarily having to throw out psychoanalysis itself, which could be refocused within this context. In other words, femininity no longer needs to be defined in relation to masculinity; nor does it have to be perceived as a single construct, Woman. As Doane (1982: 87) says, femininity can now be seen as a position constructed 'within a network of power relations'. So femininity becomes more than just a male construct. Femininity can be viewed as multiform and pluralistically positioned: women. By implication femininity can be viewed, as De Lauretis says (1989: 25), from 'elsewhere' – from women's points of view.

This point leads on to the second, which concerns resistances. Resistances, as Foucault says, exist alongside the nexus of power relations. As always present, they filter through social and institutional strata – they leave their traces. This means also that they get caught up at some point within power relations, even though as resistances themselves they have moved on. I am talking here about counter-cinema. Interestingly, Foucault talks about resistances as counter-investments (1978: 97) – that is, counter-investments are the opposite of what occurs with power, whereby individuals have vested interests

in adopting one discursive practice over another. In this light, counter-cinema counters the workings of power relations in mainstream cinema but does not stand as exterior to them. It gives voice to a multiplicity of discourses that are in contradiction or counterpoint, thus simultaneously exposing the complex set of stratifications and power strategies that lead to domination (**hegemony**) and proposing a making visible of what is so palpably dissimulated by hegemonic investment (that is, the discourses that get dropped). This means that patriarchal hegemony is revealed as no more of a fixed essence or totality than femininity. Rather, what this counter-cinema discloses is that patriarchy has come about as a result of investments in certain discourses over others (including psychoanalysis). By extension these counter-cinematic practices expose the silent civil war mentioned earlier that reinscribes conflict into institutions, language and individuals. In this respect, women's counter-cinema is about discursive disclosure, that is, the expression of other knowledges normally passed over in silence. Moreover, because counter-cinema is not exterior to power relations, those practices of exposure and disclosure get recuperated to some degree into dominant cinema. In the meantime new resistances are in formation. Although recuperation into the mainstream does serve to normalize resistance, recuperation in Foucauldian terms means also to choose to invest in a discourse until now ignored and unpractised. Vested interests change as we know; so too then must the present hegemony, however slowly. As Claire Johnston (1976: 217) said several decades ago: 'we should seek to operate at all levels: within male-dominated cinema and outside of it'. The fact that women currently do this, although the numbers are still quite small, attests to that possibility for change.

If we bear this in mind, it should become clear why gender could be reintroduced into the debate. In his first volume of *The History of Sexuality* (1978), Foucault talks of the technologies of sex, by which he means the way in which sexuality is constructed by discourses that are in the culture's vested interests. In her brilliant and groundbreaking essay 'Technology of Gender', Teresa De Lauretis (1989: 2) argues that gender is also a product of various social technologies, including cinema. Foucault's discussion of the technology of sex, just like his theory of power, evacuates the idea of gendered subjectivity. But to do this De Lauretis asserts, is to ignore the 'differential solicitation of male and female subjects' and 'the conflicting investments of men and women in the discourses and practices of sexuality' (1989: 3), which is why she insists on a technology of gender. In the first

instance, De Lauretis is referring to the ways in which the technologies of gender construct gender in terms of sexual difference – in this respect institutional discourses, which are 'implemented through pedagogy, medicine, demography and economics' (1989: 12), are the power/knowledge investments producing 'meanings, values, knowledges and practices' as they concern or interpellate or solicit the male and female subject differently (1989: 16). Division of 'labour' (sic) is a prime example: Man as producer, Woman as reproducer. As far as cinema is concerned, we have seen (above) how feminist theory was already focusing on how discourses construct the symbolic place of Woman. So the institutional representation of femininity was, as De Lauretis acknowledges, already under scrutiny. What is different about this way of looking is that male and female subjects are viewed not in relation to masculinity but in relation to different power strategies.

In the second instance, De Lauretis is signalling that men and women do not have the same investments in terms of discourses and practices of sexuality. How could they, given their different histories? Women 'have historically made different investments and thus have taken up different positions in gender and sexual practices and identities' (1989: 16). And it is at this point that De Lauretis starts to 'rough-map' (her term) the possibilities for changes or dislocations in the social – that is, power-relations of gender. She goes on to argue that the 'female-gendered subject [is] one that is at once inside and outside the ideology of gender' (1989: ix). We saw earlier how the ideology of gender fixes Woman (as feminine, maternal or eternal): that is, Woman fixed on-screen inside the ideology of gender – not woman as a multiplicity of discourses, nor the multiplicity of women. This multiplicitous woman is the female-gendered subject outside the ideology of gender, the one that is not represented, the one that is off-screen and yet by being off-screen, as off-screen space implies, is inferred on-screen:

> the movement in and out of gender as ideological representation, which I propose characterizes the subject of feminism, is a movement back and forth between the representation of gender (in its male-centred frame of reference) and what that representation leaves out, or, more pointedly, makes unrepresentable. . . . These two kinds of spaces are neither in opposition to one another nor strung along a chain of signification, but they co-exist concurrently and in contradiction.
>
> (1989: 26)

Even if mainstream cinema through its textual operations and industrial practices tries to conceal the off-screen space, it no longer can, says De Lauretis, because the 'practices of feminism have shown them to be separate and heteronomous [subject to different laws] spaces' (1989: 26).

Feminist film theory over the past two decades or so has exercised considerable influence over film theory in general. But the debates have to broaden further still. It has not yet, as Black feminists have said, dealt with the social and cultural experiences of all women. And the feminist voices have been predominantly White and middle-class. The effects of cultural studies in the United Kingdom since the early 1980s have caused change in this respect. The study of popular culture has not been a White-only area of investigation. Blacks and Asians are writing about and creating their own experiences. Increasingly Black women are entering into the academy, particularly in the United States. The voices of Latin American women, Asian women and Asiatic women as well as those of Black and White women are being heard and seen on the screen – and in growing numbers. The debates move on, as the reading list makes clear.

*see also*: **theory**

For readings on feminist film theory see De Lauretis, 1984 and 1989; Doane *et al.*, 1984; Kaplan, 1983, 1990 and 1997; Kuhn, 1982; Mellencamp, 1995; Mulvey, 1989; Penley, 1985 and 1988. For readings against the grain see Creed, 1993; Doane, 1992; Kaplan, 1980; Kuhn, 1985; Mayne, 1984; Modleski, 1988; Penley, 1989; Williams, 1984. For profiles on women filmmakers see Kuhn and Radstone, 1990. On female spectatorship see Pribham, 1988; Mayne, 1993; Hull *et al.*, 1982; Stacey, 1993. On Black feminism see Attille and Blackwood, 1986; Davis, 1981; Davies *et al.*, 1987; hooks, 1981; Hull *et al.*, 1982; Moraga and Anzaldua, 1981.

## FILM NOIR

This is a term coined by French film critics in 1946 to designate a particular type of American **thriller** film. After the liberation of France in 1944, which saw the lifting of the ban (imposed by the occupying Germans) of the importation of American films, French screens were inundated with Hollywood products, including a new type of thriller. By analogy with the label given by the French to categorize hard-boiled detective novels – *roman noir* – the term film

noir was coined to define this new-looking film. The film noir, predominantly a **B movie**, is often referred to as a sub-**genre** of the crime **thriller** or **gangster** movie – although as a style it can also be found in other genres (for example, **melodrama**, **Western**). This is why other critics see film noir as a movement rather than a genre. These critics point to the fact that, like all other film movements, film noir emerged from a period of political instability: 1941–58, the time of the Second World War and the Cold War. In the United States this was a time of repressed insecurity and paranoia: the American dream seemed in tatters and American national identity under severe strain. As a result of the war, women had moved into the workforce and had expanded their horizons beyond the domestic sphere; at the same time men were removed from that sphere – which they had controlled – to go and fight. The men's return to peacetime was a period of maladjustment: what had 'their' women been up to? where was their role at work and in the political culture generally? and what had they fought the war for, only to find the United States involved in a new kind of hostility based in suspicion and paranoia? So the question of national identity was also bound up with the question of masculine identity.

Rather than a genre or movement it might be safer to say that film noir is above all a visual style which came about as a result of political circumstance and cross-fertilization. Film noir has a style of cinematography that emphasizes the impression of night-time photography with high-contrast lighting, occasional low-key lighting, deep shadows and oblique angles to create a sense of dread and anxiety. The various claims, therefore, to a single heritage are not really in order. The French claimed a first with Marcel Carné's *Le Jour se lève* (1939) – a very dark film; the Americans believed they had strong claims to the honour with their thriller films of the 1940s (for example, arguably the first one, John Huston's *Maltese Falcon*, 1941). Certainly the visual **codes** given to express the deep pessimism of the **French poetic realist** films of the latter part of the 1930s (exemplified by the work of Carné, Julien Duvivier and Jean Renoir) were in part antecedents to the film noir. But so too was the 1920s **German expressionist** style in so far as the distorted effects created by **lighting**, **setting** and use of shadows reflected inner turmoil and alienation so associated with film noir. However, it would be political events that would complete the cross-fertilization. In the late 1930s and early 1940s, as the threat of war increased and anti-Semitic pogroms continued, a considerable number of European film-makers and technicians fled to America, more particularly Hollywood. The

most significant impact was made by the émigré film-makers who had worked in Germany and who were associated in one way or another with German expressionism. Fritz Lang, Josef von Sternberg, Billy Wilder, Richard Siodmark, Otto Preminger, Douglas Sirk, Max Ophuls are but the most famous names.

There are three main characteristics of the film noir which emanate from its primary founding on the principle of contrastive lighting: chiaroscuro (*clair–obscur*/light–dark) – the highly stylized visual style which is matched by the stylized narrative which is matched in turn by the stylized **stereotypes** – particularly of women. The essential ingredients of a film noir are its specific location or setting, its high-contrast lighting as well as its low-key lighting, a particular kind of psychology associated with the protagonist, and a sense of social malaise, pessimism, suspicion and gloom (not surprising given the political conjuncture of the time). The setting is city-bound and generally a composite of rain-washed streets and interiors (both dimly lit), tightly framed shots often with extreme camera angles – all reminiscent of German expressionism. The cityscape is fraught with danger and corruption, the shadowy, ill-lit streets reflecting the blurred moral and intellectual values as well as the difficulty in discerning truth. Characters are similarly unclear, as is evidenced by the way their bodies are lit and framed: half in the shadows, fragmented. The net effect is one of claustrophobia, underscoring the sense of malaise and tension. The protagonist (according to classic canons the 'hero' is a male) is often side-lighted to enhance the profile from one side and leaving the other half of the face in the dark, thus pointing to the moral **ambiguity** of this main character who is neither a knight in shining armour nor completely bad (interestingly the prototype for this characterization goes back at least as far as Edward G. Robinson's gangster portrayal in *Little Caesar*, Mervyn LeRoy, 1930). He usually mistreats or ignores his 'woman' (either the wife, very much tucked away out of the city, or the moll with the golden heart who invariably sees the 'truth') and gets hooked on a *femme fatale* who, more often than not according to the **preferred reading**, is the perpetrator of all his troubles (see *Double Indemnity*, Billy Wilder, and *Murder My Sweet*, Edward Dmytryk, both 1944). This 'hero' is often obsessive and neurotic and equally capable of betrayal of his *femme fatale*. The ambiguity of his character is paralleled by the contortions of the plot, whose complexities seem unresolvable, particularly by the hero, who, until the very end, seems confused and unclear about what is happening. In this respect, film noir is about power relations and sexual identity. The power the *femme fatale* exerts over the hero is

his own doing, because he has over-invested in his construction of her **sexuality** at the expense of his own **subjectivity**. He has allowed her to be on top because of his own insecurities about who he is. (For a full discussion of this crisis in masculinity see Krutnik, 1991.)

But that's only half the story, because film noir is not so clear-cut in its misogyny. Film noir gives a very central role to the *femme fatale* and privileges her as active, intelligent, powerful, dominant and in charge of her own sexuality – at least until the end of the film when she pays for it (through death or submission to the patriarchal system). In this respect, she constitutes a break with **classical Hollywood cinema**'s representation of woman (as mother/whore, wife/mistress – passive). These women are interested only in themselves (as the frequent reflections of them in mirrors attest) and in getting enough money, by all means foul, to guarantee their independence. By being in contradiction with the ideological construct of women, such an image construction makes readings against the grain eminently possible. As Janey Place (1980: 37) says, as far as these women are concerned, 'It is not their inevitable demise we remember but rather their strong, dangerous and above all, exciting sexuality'. These women are symbols of 'unnatural' phallic power: toting guns and cigarette holders like the best of the men – to get what they want. They move about easily in traditionally male spaces, bars, etc. They might even dress like men with their very tailored suits with broad shoulder-pads; or they might slink out of the shadows, thigh-first, dressed in clinging sequinned evening gowns – either way they are mysterious, ambiguous and deadly (guns and looks can kill). In both instances they are empowered by their sexuality. (Examples are *Woman in the Window*, Fritz Lang, 1944; *Gilda*, Charles Vidor, 1946; *Kiss Me Deadly*, Robert Aldrich, 1955.)

Ultimately film noir is not about investigating a murder, although it might at first appear to be. Generally speaking, in the film noir the woman is central to the intrigue and it is therefore she who becomes the object of the male's investigation. But, as you will have guessed, it is less her role in the intrigue that is under investigation, much more her sexuality because it is that which threatens the male quest for resolution. The ideological contradiction she opens up by being a strong, active, sexually expressive female must be closed off, contained. That is the **diegetic** trajectory and visual strategy of film noir. However, there are obvious difficulties in containing this woman. And this is reflected by the **narrative** strategies inherent in film noir. There is, as Gledhill (1980: 14) points out, a proliferation of points of view. Whose voice do we hear through these multiple **discourses**

each telling a story? Who has the voice of author/ity? The devices used in film noir – voice-over and **flashback**s (which primarily privilege the male point of view), diegetic narratives issued by different characters (the woman, the police, the private eye) – are just so many discourses vying for dominance. In the end, film noir is about which voice is going to gain control over the storytelling and – in the end – control over the image of the woman (Gledhill, 1980: 17). This struggle occurs both between men and between the man and the woman, but, more importantly what this struggle foregrounds is the fact that the woman's image is just that: a male construct – which 'suggests another place behind the image where woman might be' (Gledhill, 1980: 17). Food for feminist thought, but not the director's cut! There has to be closure – which means implicitly a closing-off of the ideological contradictions that such a suggestion makes plain. And in the end, closure does occur, but at a price. It is the male voice (that of the Symbolic Order, the Law of the Father) that completes the investigation (see **Imaginary/Symbolic**). However, as the multiplicity of points of view that prevailed until the closing moments show, guilt is not easily ascribed to only one person. Because of the lack of clarity it is not quite so easy to 'Put the blame on Mame, boys'. (For an interesting play on female/male subjectivities see *Mildred Pierce*, Michael Curtiz, 1945. Of the three flashbacks, the first two are hers, the last and 'truthful' one is that of the male and representative of the law, the police detective.)

There are contextual reasons for this struggle for dominance. As Janey Place (1980: 36) says, **myths** do not only mediate dominant **ideology**, they are also 'responsive to the *repressed* needs of culture'. Thus, in film noir this construction and subsequent destruction of the sexually assertive woman must be viewed within the economic and political climate of the 1940s and 1950s. I have already mentioned the repressed insecurity and paranoia respective to the political climate of those two decades. On the economic front, thanks to the Second World War, women went into work in the 1940s in huge numbers to help the war effort – and in many cases did so by replacing 'their' men who were at war. By the end of the war, these formerly independent women were being pushed back into the family and the domestic sphere. The film noir challenged the family by its absence and so did the film noir woman who, as sexually independent, contributed to the instability of the world in which the male protagonist found himself. The 1940s film noir was, then, an expression of male concern at women's growing economic and sexual independence and a fear of the men's own place in society once they

returned from war. The 1950s film noir functioned to reassert the value of family life not just so that the men could get their jobs back but so that national identity, so much under siege in postwar United States, could be reasserted. We see here how film noir articulated the repressed needs of American culture. Furthermore, the masochistic sexual fantasies implicit in the threat the *femme fatale* poses for the male protagonist are, in this respect, tied up with questions of (male) identity. But they are 'nothing' really in relation to the sadistic closures designed for the woman: death, being outcast or being reintegrated into the family.

A sign that film noir has grabbed the imagination in a deep sense as a generic or sub-generic type is not just that it continues to be *re*-produced (despite the fact that intrinsically it is associated with a particular period in social history, early 1940s to late 1950s) but that so much continues to be written about it (this new millennium to date has seen the publication of at least ten books on the subject!). Thus in term of production we get remakes of noir movies set in the contemporary (*Farewell My Lovely*, Richards, 1975) or alternatively neo-noirs which hark back to that period of Hollywood film history (*LA Confidential*, Hanson, 1997). In terms of the continued writing we can only surmise that the troubling nature of noirness has created a mystique all its own and thereby an endless desire to be revisiting and unravelling the nostalgic territories of the uncanny.

*see also*: **genre** and **female masquerade**

For further reading see Cameron, 1992; Copjec, 1993; Kaplan, 1980; Krutnik, 1991; Modleski, 1988; Stephens, 1995. Of this millennium: Dickos, 2002; Dimendberg, 2004; Hare, 2003 and 2004; Mason, 2002; Phillips, 2000; Porfirio, *et al.*, 2002; Spicer, 2002; Schwartz, 2001; Slocum, 2001.

## FLASHBACK

A **narrative** device used in film (as in literature) to go back in time to an earlier moment in a character's life and/or history, and to narrate that moment. Flashbacks, then, are most clearly marked as **subjective** moments within that narrative. Flashbacks are a cinematic representation of memory and of history and, ultimately, of subjective truth. Interestingly, flashbacks date back to the very beginnings of film history – at least as early as 1901 with Ferdinand Zecca's *Histoire d'un crime* – thus coinciding with the birth and burgeoning

of psychoanalysis. In this respect flashbacks are closely aligned therefore with the workings of the psyche and an individual's interpretation of history. Furthermore, because flashbacks almost always serve to resolve an enigma (a murder, a state of mental disorder, etc.) they are by nature investigative or confessional narrative **codes**, which again brings them close to the process of **psychoanalysis**. Finally, because they also reconstruct history, flashbacks can serve nationalistic purposes or conversely can be used to question certain social values.

Let's now unpick this. Most of what follows is very largely based on Maureen Turim's excellent and thorough analysis: *Flashbacks in Film: Memory and History* (1989). First we'll look at the codes of the flashback; second, flashbacks and history; third, flashbacks and the psyche.

### *Flashback codes*

In the first instance the spectator is given visual and aural codes to signify the beginning and ending of a flashback. Normally there is a **fade** or **dissolve**, often on the face of the person whose flashback we are about to witness, and generally a voice-over by a narrator (again usually, but not always, the person whose flashback it is). The **image** shifts from the present to the past. However, although there is a shift in temporal and spatial reality, that shift does not undermine the narrative logic. Already then the flashback is exposing itself as a double-edged code. There is an assumption of temporality and order in the flashback but simultaneously – by its very nature – it is patently calling into question our assumptions about chronological time. Time is carved up and layered. It is both the past and the present, the past made present visibly before our very eyes. We are watching the flashback, so the assumed time is the past. However, we 'understand' cinema in the present (the reel/real is unreeling before our eyes in the always present). The **spectator** is doubly positioned in relation to time. She or he is aware, thanks to the visual and aural codes that mark out the flashback, that she or he is in the past; but also unaware of being in the past because of the '**naturalising** processes within the fiction' (Turim, 1989: 17) – naturalized, that is, because the shift in time and space does not disrupt the narrative logic, rather it keeps it safely in place (see **enunciation** and **spatial** and **temporal contiguity**).

Part of this naturalizing process can be pointed to by the fact that the spectator is rarely in a position, thanks to the **seamless** codes, to question whose **subjectivity** the flashback might represent, whose

truth it is and whether or not it is truth (see Kuhn's discussion (1982: 50–3) of *Mildred Pierce*, Michael Curtiz, 1945). If we do believe that flashbacks are more authentic than a chronological tale it is because of their confessional nature and also because they are supposed to be answering an enigma. In both instances there is an implicit truth, even if it is one-sided.

Flashbacks are hermeneutically determined: that is, they will yield a solution to an enigma in the end. So flashbacks come to a 'natural' end when the past has either caught up with the present or has explained the present state of affairs. They can also be seen in this light as a retardation device creating suspense and delaying the answer to the enigma. Alfred Hitchcock's films are notorious for this; he even went so far as to hold the flashback back to keep the enigma alive (as in *Marnie*, 1956, when a last-minute flashback tells us the reasons for Marnie's psychological disorders).

### *Flashbacks and history*

Flashbacks are 'naturally' aligned with history since they make the spectator aware of the past. They are both history and story (the French word *histoire* usefully encapsulates this double nature of the flashback). But they are a particular representation of the past because it is subjectivized through one or several people's memories. History/story becomes personalized and is narrated through the heroics or eyes of the individual. The ideological, and indeed nationalistic, implications of this are clear. By framing history as an individual experience and because a film in flashback is based on the premise that cause and effect are reversed (we know the result before we know the cause), history can become didactic: a moral lesson is to be learnt – alternatively as in times of war, it can lead to patriotic identification (Turim, 1989: 17). To illustrate these two possible outcomes I quote the disastrous effects of Hollywood and stardom on a woman's psyche as in *Sunset Boulevard* (Billy Wilder, 1950), the inadvisability of a wife and mother having too much socio-economic and class ambition for her family, especially an ungrateful daughter as in *Mildred Pierce*, and, as a classic example of the displacement of the meaning of war on to personal relationships (which makes identification possible), *Casablanca* (Curtiz, 1942) with its call to American patriotism and engagement in the Second World War (see Turim, 1989: 126ff. and 133ff.).

In the framework of history, biographical flashbacks are also redolent with ideological connotations. Because they represent an evaluation

of a life, but through a subjective framing of history, they tend to mythologize the 'great man' (sic): as, for example, in Abel Gance's *Napoléon vu par Abel Gance* (1927). In this film there are various levels of ideological and nationalistic readings to be made. First, of course, is the might and intellect of Napoleon – the brilliant battle strategist since early boyhood when he had to prove against bullying schoolboys that, although from Corsica, he was just as good if not a better Frenchman than they. There is also the man of destiny and vision: *l'homme providentiel* who can help France to find national coherence *and* assert its greatness in the world. His success in war and his emblematic eagle reflect the glory and the stability of France's First Empire under his emperorship as opposed to the factionalism and instability of France's republican periods (a clear pointing to Gance's own political dissatisfaction with the then Third Republic).

Only occasionally do biographical flashbacks put in question a nation's power structures and its belief in the legitimacy of capitalism. *Citizen Kane* (Orson Welles, 1941) is a classic in this respect in its demythologizing the American way of life and the **myth** of capitalism that allows men to become tycoons. This is a film that deconstructs larger-than-life ideological statements on class and power in American society (see **deconstruction** and **ideology**). This deconstruction is achieved by the fact that the flashbacks are not those of the dead Kane. They are a third-person compendium-narrative, put together by a journalist, of other people's subjective readings of him (see Turim, 1989: 112–17). The trial testimonies that make up the flashbacks in this film do more than expose Kane and American societal values, they also put journalism on trial (to make the Kane story sellable, truth must be compromised). Last but not least, *Citizen Kane* exposes Hollywood's cinematic practices of seamlessness that produce the reality effect (that is, film's ability to dissimulate that it is only a representation of reality up on screen, not reality itself).

### *Flashbacks and the psyche*

The flashback is a mimetic representation of thought processes looking to the past, whether they be dreams, confessions or memories. They are then subjective truths, an explanation of the present through the past. Flashbacks show how memories are stored and repressed. They also function on an associative level with memory (the protagonist might see something that reminds her or him of a similar sight in the past that has deep resonances for her or him). Because we are positioned as witnesses to these divulgences of the

past we become the proto-analyst, and the protagonist our analysand. Often this spectator positioning is strengthened by the presence of an actual psychiatrist or confessor within the film. Flashbacks that deal with psychological motivation were particularly popular in American cinema during the 1940s and 1950s when popularizing Sigmund Freud was very much the order of the day. This popularization must be seen in the context of the very deep malaise felt during the 1940s at the relinquishing of isolationism and entering the Second World War and then, in the 1950s, the aura of suspicion generated by the Cold War and the deep cynicism of the younger generation in relation to their elders' values and beliefs. Freud did not necessarily *offer* easy solutions, but at least popular Freudianism resolved enigmas or provided simple explanations as to why a character was as she or he was.

What is interesting first of all about flashbacks in this context is that they tend to predominate in two **genres** – **film noir** and psychological **melodrama** – and that they tend to be gendered (see **gender**). But before explaining this statement it should first be said that both genres start from a similar positioning in relation to the representation of the past. The past is seen as an object of nostalgia, therefore of desire or as an object of despair. In both cases this object of fascination is also frightening and dangerous because of the nostalgic desire to repeat (Turim, 1989: 12). This desire to repeat is of course deeply atavistic and masochistic, but it is also bound up with the notion of fate – this notion of fatalism is particularly evident in the film noir genre. Patterns of repetition generated by flashbacks point to psychotic fears that are acted out in the present. Such patterns as the abandoned child syndrome, the rejected child, the controlled/(s)mothered child, the abused child are just some of the psychoses that motivate the flashbacks particularly in the psychological melodrama. However, they are also present in film noir, especially (but by no means exclusively) if the victim of the psychosis is a woman.

This brings us to the issue of the gendered nature of these flashbacks. Predominantly, in these films of the 1940s and 1950s the film noir focuses on the male protagonist, the psychological melodrama on the female. What is surprising is that the flashbacks do not break down into such neat genderized categories. In the psychological melodramas, which often represent the woman as dysfunctional, over-ambitious, mad or making repeated suicide attempts, the flashback functions as an exploration of the woman's psyche, not necessarily by the woman herself, but rather by her analyst, doctor,

enquiring detective, and so on. Furthermore, when necessary, women are given truth serums and electric shock treatment in order to 'get at the truth'. So the flashback is not their subjectivity but others' subjective view of them – a return to the past provoked by a probing or electrifying of the female psyche. Implicitly the ideological purpose being served here is the message that women do not control their unconscious, but men do (control the women's and of course their own). Women are stripped of their own narration and, therefore, subjectivity (Turim, 1989: 160). Given that during the war women had been able to enter the workforce and 'do men's jobs' and that they were separated from their men who were at war and very far away, the independence they had gained would 'naturally' unsettle the returning servicemen. Viewed in this context such films as *Mildred Pierce*, *The Locket* (John Brahms, 1946) and *Possessed* (Curtis Bernhardt, 1946) say more about masculinity in crisis than they do about the female psyche – particularly when one considers that in all three of these films it is the investigator (doctor or detective) who resolves the enigma to the woman's disturbed psyche, not the woman herself. (For further reading on these films see Cook, 1980; Turim, 1989: 157–64.)

What of the male protagonist in the film noir? The flashbacks are clearly inscribed as his and are most generally marked by his voice-over. They are either investigative or confessional and unlike the flashbacks in psychological melodrama, with their redemptive quality, they are strongly inscribed with fatalism. They are also more retrospective than introspective: a summing up or evaluative judgment of the past events (Turim, 1989: 172). The flashbacks serve to underscore the profound ambiguity of the male protagonist. As Turim says (1989: 171), the voice-over bridges the gap between the past and the present, the present is speaking about the past and as such the voice-over represents a subjectivity that is a controlling of the past 'exhibiting a self-reliant masculinity'. The protagonist is also streetwise. However, he is driven by a fatal neurosis, a fatal compulsion that is triggered off by an 'evil' woman to whom he is fatally attracted, but who is forbidden to him (because either she or he is married). The fact that he is attracted to the 'evil' woman and will transgress to 'get her' reveals his desire to play the death scenario. The fact that he repeats the scenario through his confessional or investigative flashbacks shows also how compelling the masochistic scenario is – the past as object of desire.

Turim (1989: 175) describes the film noir as 'a romance of the death drive', but such a romance cannot be accomplished without

the inscription of the evil female protagonist. In other words, the male protagonist cannot fulfil his masochistic fantasy without the woman. The woman stands as a projection of the protagonist's psyche, and as such she is the agent of evil, forcing him into a cycle of repetition that can be stopped only with death (his or hers). This projection, however, does make clear just how alluring the wish to transgress is to the protagonist. The forbidden woman in this respect becomes that which is forbidden to him by patriarchal law: namely, the mother. So now the masochism inherent in the fatal compulsion of repetition and death also points to a refusal to complete the **Oedipal trajectory**. Rather than enter into the Law of the Father, the male protagonist chooses to transgress it (see **Imaginary/Symbolic**).

A brief analysis of *Double Indemnity* (Billy Wilder, 1944) will serve to make these points clear. In this film the protagonist, Walter Neff, is an insurance broker. He is the site of exchange between client and his company and is directly answerable to the claims-investigator Barton Keyes. In this respect he is doubly inscribed into the Law of the Father: the company and more specifically his boss – who 'locks' him into it, even (through his name, Keyes). He is also quite 'feminized': as site of exchange for money which he never gets to handle. The film opens with Neff (a weak name suggesting naff, inept) stumbling into his office, fatally wounded. What has happened? Through his confessional flashback, which he records for Keyes to hear – presumably after he dies – we learn that, in an attempt to get his hands on insurance money fraudulently, by killing off a client to whom he had sold a double indemnity package, he has ended up getting himself shot by the client's wife to whom he had become fatally attracted and with whom he had dreamt up the fraudulent scheme. During his whole confession, Keyes is standing listening, unnoticed, by Neff's office doorway.

The confessional flashback is doubly confessional: the tape and the listening Keyes. The nature of the confession shows how desperately Neff wanted to procure the money, that is, to pull off the fraud successfully. In other words, in his transgression, Neff was willing himself to defy Keyes (the claims-investigator/defrauder). In so doing, he was defying the Law of the Father as represented by Keyes – testing his masculinity against Keyes's. The transgression marks, then, a desire to assert his masculinity over his 'feminized' position – which of course in and through his confession he makes clear he failed to do. During this confession his 'father' is listening; the father listening to the 'feminized' son who cannot assert his masculinity over his father.

Furthermore, we discover during the confession that his fatal wounding is at the hands of his desired forbidden woman/other/mother, Phyllis Dietrichson (a sinister *femme fatalish* name if ever there was one!). Although he kills her before he returns to his office (site of the patriarchal law, the company) to make his confession, she – as fetishized woman, therefore phallic mother – is the one to shoot first.

Let's tie this all up. The double confession points to an atavism around his 'feminized' self and to a masochistic desire to repeat the failure either to usurp the father or to fulfil successfully the Oedipal trajectory. Although Neff does not know Keyes is listening, he intends him to listen eventually. So he clearly wishes to display his 'feminized' self to Keyes as well as his failure to assert his masculinity. Counterpointed to this homoerotic display of Neff's desire for the father is the father witnessing, unseen: a reversal of the primal scene with the father watching the son desiring. Absent from this scene is the mother: she has already been killed by the son but not before she let loose the fatal (castrating) shot. Because she is forbidden, she represents fascination and danger, the very qualities that make her desirable. In this respect she functions on two levels. First, she embodies the very nature of the flashback in relation to the past as object of desire but also frightening and dangerous. The nostalgic desire to repeat, which is an inherent code of the flashback and which we know is redolent with masochism, is exemplified by her dual gendering as fetishized object of desire and as phallic mother who actually carries a gun. Since he cannot assert his masculinity over the father, his masochistic scenario must lead him to death. The 'feminized' son is shot by the 'phallicized' mother – death at the hands of the father. Second, by shooting the son, she forces him to return to the father and to expiate his transgression, first through confession and then through death. True to the Oedipus myth, Neff confesses and then dies, thereby reasserting the primacy of patriarchal law as ultimately inviolable.

## FOREGROUNDING

Bringing to the fore or front, in this instance, the front of the screen. Formal elements of a film may function to show that it is a particular character's story that is being foregrounded: subjective camera **shots**, medium close-ups of the character in the foreground, voice-over. By extension, but also by analogy with linguistics, foregrounding means

drawing the **spectator**'s attention to a particular element in a film through the use of an unusual filmic device. Because foregrounding can be used to draw attention to the practices of film-making itself, clearly it is much in evidence in **counter-cinema**. But mainstream cinema makes use of it as well. For example, Alfred Hitchcock foregrounded his 'self-as-auteur' by making a brief appearance in most of his films.

Michael Powell's *Peeping Tom* (1960) is arguably the best example of foregrounding. Starting with foregrounding film-making itself, this film is a film about movies *and* about the spectators who watch them and their (in this case morbid) urge to gaze (that is, **scopophilia**). It foregrounds the three looks that characterize the cinema: the look of the camera; that of the character; that of the spectator. It foregrounds the power of the film-maker: Mark Lewis, the protagonist. He is a compulsive film-maker who, by the time the film picks up with him, has taken to murdering the women he is filming by pointing a spiked leg of his camera tripod at their throats and stabbing them to death. The spectator is positioned behind the camera (foregrounding her or him as director or murderer or voyeur). But she or he also, in a complex set of shots towards the end of the film, gets doubly positioned behind and in front of the camera (foregrounding her/him as voyeur and victim). This latter instance deserves some further elaboration because of the density of the **mise-en-abîme** of foregrounding. This series of shots occurs towards the end of the film when Mark, returning home, finds his lodger sitting in the dark watching one of his 'murder' films. He confesses his crimes and then sets the scene to show her 'fear itself' (let us not forget that in **horror** and **thriller** films abject fear is gendered feminine). He approaches her with his camera, spiked leg pointed at her throat and with a mirror fixed to the camera so that she can see her face reflected in it. The spectator sees the shots from behind the camera and, in a **reverse-angle shot**, those of the face reflected in the mirror. The first set of shots foregrounds the role of the director/spectator/voyeur; the second set foregrounds the victim, not as victim but as voyeur of her victimness. The chilling effect for the spectator, first of all, is the double foregrounding both of woman-as-victim and of fear (the spectator becomes the woman-as-victim in fear watching her own fear). The second effect is equally unnerving. As the mirrored image looks out to the spectator she or he is caught in the co-conspiratorial role as accomplice to the director/murderer. In other words, the film is watching the spectator watching the film.

## FRAMING

The way in which subjects and objects are framed within a shot produces specific readings. Size and volume within the frame speak as much as dialogue. So too do camera angles. Thus, for example, a high-angle extreme long shot of two men walking away in the distance (as at the end of Jean Renoir's *La Grande illusion*, 1937) points to their vulnerability – they are about to disappear, possibly die. Low-angle shots in medium close-up on a person can point to their power, but it can also point to ridicule because of the distortion factor.

*see also*: **mise-en-scène**, **shots**

For a more detailed discussion see Bordwell and Thompson, 1980: 104–36.

## FREE CINEMA (BRITAIN)

According to Lindsay Anderson, one of the founders of Free Cinema, this movement coincided with the explosion on to the theatre boards of John Osborne's *Look Back in Anger* (1956). Free Cinema was a term Anderson coined in 1956 to designate a series of documentaries and shorts he was putting together for screenings at the National Film Theatre. The first programme (February 1956), which launched the manifesto 'Free Cinema', contained three films: *O Dreamland* (Anderson, 1953), *Momma Don't Allow* (Reisz and Richardson, 1955) and *Together* (Mazzetti, 1956). In the manifesto Anderson and a small group of film-makers called for a change in the way British cinema was being made and committed themselves to innovation on both a technical and narrative level. There were six programmes in all (from 1956 to 1959) and the basic ethos linking the films, which included the work of French, Italian and Polish film-makers, was that the films were free because they were made outside the framework of the film industry and because their statements, which were commentaries on contemporary society, were entirely personal. Although these films were personal statements, none the less there was a strong emphasis on the relationship between art and society (including an openness to representations of the working-class) and an insistence that the film-makers were committed to the values expressed in their work. Thus, in the context of the first programme, Anderson's film was about ordinary people enjoying a fair at Margate, Reisz and Richardson's

about youth dance culture (the jive) and Lorenza Mazzetti's about two deaf men working as East End dockers. Although distinct as narratives, none the less the unifying theme was the representation of the working-classes and, in terms of look, the use of lightweight cameras giving a granular socio-realist appearance to the documentary. Mazzetti's film, which was the longest at 52 minutes, was arguably the one that most closely resembled a feature film (it shows how these two men survive not just the bleakness of London's East End but also finally turn the tables on those who continuously abuse their deafness).

Rather than a movement, however, we should speak of a tendency in cinema. First, because the Free Cinema programme itself was international and made up of an eclectic grouping of films made by young contemporary film-makers – and as such represented the deep-felt need for new voices to be heard: this constitutes an appeal not a movement. Second, because, on a national scale, Free Cinema films were produced by only a handful of film-makers, and while they may have shared common ideals, they had no style in common with the exception of the work of the three film-makers who founded this so-called movement: Lindsay Anderson, Karel Reisz and Tony Richardson. As Richardson himself stated, in an interview in *The Listener* (2 May 1968), Free Cinema was a label invented to designate a number of **documentary** films made by the three film-makers during the 1950s; it was not a case of a movement but a sharing of common ideals where cinema was concerned. In any event, the legacy of Free Cinema is closely related to the work of these three film-makers and it is on this that the rest of this entry will focus. (For a wider debate see Lovell and Hillier, 1972.)

Among the common ideals held by these film-makers, two stand out as most significant: first, documentary films should be made free from all commercial pressures and, second, they need to be inflected with a more humanist and poetic approach. In this respect, Free Cinema was born out of the 1930s documentary tradition of Humphrey Jennings rather than John Grierson (whom this group of film-makers criticized). A third important point in relation to the emergence of this cinema is that both Anderson and Reisz were critics for the film review *Sequence*, which was launched by Anderson in 1946, and that it is out of writings for this review that the ethos of Free Cinema was born. This review criticized the British documentary for its conformity and apathy and feature film for its conventionality and lack of aesthetic experimentation. *Sequence* was a new departure in film criticism. In their articles Anderson and Reisz examined the

style rather than the content of a film and deplored British cinema's adherence to **classical narrative cinema**. They denounced the bourgeois, suburban tradition inherent in this cinema and accused it, through its lack of **transparence** on the working **class**, of avoiding reality.

These three Free Cinema film-makers were unanimous in their condemnation of the monopolizing practices of the British film industry. In the 1950s full feature films were produced by only two companies: Rank Organisation and ABC (a branch of Warner Brothers). And the films that predominated were, according to Anderson *et al.*, insipid comedies or war films that glorified the British fighters, trivialized the horrors of war and, last but not least, perpetuated the tradition of the class system *(The Dam Busters*, Michael Anderson, 1955, being exemplary of this second type of film). Needless to say financing for their own film projects was not forthcoming from those two giants. On the whole they had to self-finance, which is why their first films were shorts or documentaries. They did, however, manage to obtain some resourcing from the British Film Institute's Experimental Film Fund and the giant industrial company Ford of Dagenham. Ford commissioned a series of documentaries – entitled *Look at Britain* – of which Free Cinema were responsible for two: Anderson's *Every Day Except Christmas*, 1957, and Reisz's *We are the Lambeth Boys*, 1959. The BFI Experimental Fund produced five films: *Momma Don't Allow* (Richardson and Reisz, 1956), *Together* (Lorenza Mazzetti, 1956), *Nice Time* (Alain Tanner and Claude Goretta, 1957), *Refuge England* (Robert Vas, 1959) and *Enginemen* (Michael Grisby, 1959).

The primary characteristic of these film-makers' documentaries and shorts was their belief in the importance of everyday life and people. They were committed to representing working-class life as it was lived, not as it was imagined. In their images nothing is forced, giving an authenticity that makes their films close in spirit to the humanism of Jennings's documentaries (what Anderson (1954) terms 'public poetry'). What links the three film-makers is the fact that their work focuses on the individual and the collective; that, in terms of editing, they use juxtaposing rhythms (slow or fast). Indeed, their rhythmic editing had strong connotations with jazz – deliberately, since jazz was part of the working-class subculture (*Momma Don't Allow* deals explicitly with jazz and dancing as a social and sexual liberation for the working-class youth). The other important link between the three is the continuity in the style of their films, undoubtedly due to the presence on four out of their six Free

Cinema films of the cameraman Walter Lassally. Finally, a contributing factor to the continuity in their style was the homage their films paid to those film-makers they considered constituted their own heritage: John Ford, Marcel Carné, Jean Cocteau, Robert Flaherty, Jean Grémillon, Humphrey Jennings, Jean Renoir, Vittorio de Sica, Arne Sucksdorff and Jean Vigo.

What of the legacy of the Free Cinema? Certain critics claim that it left very little trace at all, and that the **British New Wave Cinema** of the late 1950s (of which *Look Back in Anger*, Richardson, 1959, was the first film) was not, as other critics claimed, a direct outcome of Free Cinema but of the literature and theatre of the time. The 'truth' of course lies somewhere in between: the New Wave movement came out of the conjuncture of literary trends and the Free Cinema documentary tendency. This argument is sustained by the fact that the names of these three film-makers reappear as directors of these New Wave films. In 1959 Tony Richardson founded a production company with John Osborne, Woodfall Films (with financial support from Bryanston Films, a subsidiary of British Lion!). This company produced most of the New Wave films. Richardson, who had earlier directed the stage performance of *Look Back in Anger*, now made it into a film. Reisz made *Saturday Night and Sunday Morning* (1960) and Anderson *This Sporting Life* (1963) – two key films for British cinema.

For more details of this legacy see **British New Wave**.

## FRENCH NEW WAVE/*NOUVELLE VAGUE*

Not really a movement, but certainly an important moment in film history. The French New Wave came about in the late 1950s, although, as we shall see, it did have precursors. The term refers to films made, on the whole, by a new generation of French film-makers which were low-budget and, most importantly, went against the prevailing trends in 1950s cinema of literary adaptations, costume dramas and massive co-productions – a cinema which had been labelled by the *Cahiers du cinéma* group as the *'cinéma de papa'* (old fogeys' cinema; see **auteur**).

The term *Nouvelle Vague* was not in the first instance associated with these film-makers. Indeed it was originally coined in the late 1950s by Françoise Giroud, editor of the then centre-left weekly *L'Express*, to refer to the new socially active youth class. However,

the term very quickly became associated with current trends in cinema because of the appeal of the youthful actor Gérard Philipe and, more especially, the tremendous success of twenty-eight-year old Roger Vadim's *Et Dieu créa la femme* (1956) and the mythologizing effect it had on Brigitte Bardot. This meant that producers in the late 1950s wanted work made by 'young ones' – both on screen and behind the camera. This demand helped to propel a new wave of film-makers on to the screen. This was not the exclusive reason, however, for this 'new' cinema. In demographic terms the older guard of film-makers, who had held the reins from the 1930s through to the 1950s, were ageing fast or dying off: This created a gap for a new wave of film-makers (some 170 in the period 1959–63) who in turn became associated in people's minds with the *Nouvelle Vague*. In the collective memory, all that remains of the *Nouvelle Vague* today is this group of film-makers – not the new youth class. A misnomer made **myth**.

Misnomer or not, an important effect of this demand for a *jeune cinéma* was that it created the myth that those making it were all young. There was also a commonly held belief that, because some of the more notorious first films of the New Wave to hit the screens were made by critics from the influential *Cahiers du cinéma* group (Claude Chabrol, Jean-Luc Godard, Jacques Rivette, Eric Rohmer, François Truffaut), all of this cinema came from film-makers who had not been through the normal circuit of assistantship to established directors. The facts attest differently. The film-makers loosely grouped into this so-called '*jeune cinéma*' were in their early thirties. During the period 1959–60, of the sixty-seven film-makers making their first feature film, only 55 per cent came from backgrounds not directly attached to film-making, and the remaining 45 per cent was made up of short-film directors (like Alain Resnais or Agnès Varda) and film assistants.

Another myth perpetuated was that this cinema coincided with the birth, in 1958, of the Fifth Republic. Two films, *Le Beau Serge* (Chabrol, 1958) and *Les 400 Coups* (Truffaut, 1959), were seen as the trail-blazers of this New Wave, shortly followed by Godard's *A bout de souffle* (1959) and Resnais's *Hiroshima mon amour* (1959). History is not so convenient. There were of course precursors. On the one hand, there was the influence on film-making practices of the theoretical writing, primarily emanating from the *Cahiers du cinéma* journals of the 1950s, which advocated the primacy of the **auteur** and **mise-en-scène**. And, on the other, there were film-makers who were already making films that went counter to dominant cinematic

practices of the 1950s. They were just not associated with any group. Low-budget, non-studio films were being made. In fact Agnès Varda's 1954 film *La Pointe course is* often cited as the herald of this movement. The modes of production and the **counter-cinema** practices she put in place became commonplace by the late 1950s. Location shooting, use of non-professional actors (or unknown ones from the theatre, such as the young Philippe Noiret in Varda's film), a deliberate **distanciation** so that **spectator identification** cannot occur, no necessary sense of chronology or **classical narrative** are a first set of hallmarks of Varda's style that are recognizable in the New Wave films. Her subversion of genres, her use of counterpoint, of juxtaposing two stories – one based in the personal, the other in the social – and her deliberately disorienting **editing** style are other important features of her cinematic style which Resnais for one has acknowledged as influencing his own film-making practices.

Another last myth that needs examining is the belief that because this cinema was controversial or different in style it was also a radical and political cinema. This is predominantly not true: the New Wave film-makers were largely non-politicized. If their films had any political aura it came down to the fact that some film-makers carried on the 1930s tradition of criticizing the bourgeoisie, but now placed their narratives in contemporary **discourses** – that is, viewing the bourgeoisie from the youth point of view. The other reason why the New Wave might have been perceived as political, or a reason *post facto*, is that there were in fact two New Waves. The first occurred in the period 1958–62, the other during 1966–68. The first New Wave was anarchic, but only in relation to what preceded it: the *cinéma de papa*. As we shall see, the second New Wave was more clearly a politicized cinema. Hindsight may have conflated the two moments into one and perceived it as political. Politicized or not, both were to inform and have an impact on future cinemas.

### *1958–62*

As we already know, the New Wave film-makers rejected the cinema of the 1950s and focused their attention on the auteur and mise-en-scène. The individual film-maker and his (sic) signature was all. Paradoxically, given their so-called modernity and innovativeness, this was rather a romantic ideal and conservative aesthetic. But it must be reiterated that they were not a politicized group. Their cinema marked a complete rupture with the 1950s cinematic codes and conventions on both the narrative and the visual level. In terms of

**narrative**, there was often no récit, no completed or necessarily realistic story as such; there was no beginning, middle and end – more often it was a slice of life; gone were the literary adaptations of the 1950s, no 'high art' literature but rather pulp or popular fiction if adaptations were being made (with a particular liking for American detective pulp fiction). There were no **stars**. The time was the 'now-ever-present' of the 1960s. Discourses were contemporary and about young people. Taboos around sexuality were 'destroyed' (partly the effects of the so-called 'free-love' phenomenon) and the couple was represented as a complex entity with issues centring on power relations, lack of communication and questions of identity. The representation of women was more positive, women became more central to the narrative, and more agencing of their desire.

On the visual side, the institutional **iconography** was **deconstructed**. The establishing **shots**, which safely orientate the spectator in terms of **space and time**, were excised. A fast **editing** style, achieved by **jump cuts** and **unmatched** shots, replaced the seamless editing style that had prevailed before. The newly adopted lightweight camera, more commonly used for television, abandoned the **studios** and went out into the streets and suburbs of Paris (Paris was the one icon that did not disappear). Film stock was fast and cheap. These two latter aspects of technology gave this cinema a sense of spontaneity and **cinéma-vérité** more readily associated at the time with television production, which was mostly live at that time.

### *1966–68*

By the time of this second New Wave, the contemporary discourses of the earlier New Wave had generally become more politicized and there was no positive reflection of the dominant **ideology**. Godard's films are particularly exemplary in this context (*Deux ou trois choses que je sais d'elle*, 1966; *La Chinoise* and *Weekend*, both 1967). Bourgeois myths (especially those surrounding marriage, family and consumption practices) were taken to bits and denormalized. The consumer boom, nuclear war, Vietnam, student politics, adolescence – all were subjects for treatment. By now the consumer boom (already criticized in the first New Wave) was not about comfort and a better way of life but about prostituting the self in order to be better able to consume. The most important consumer durable of that time, the car, was exposed as the machine of violence and death into which our covetousness had transformed it – a minotaur of our age (*la déesse*), the consumer durable that consumes us.

This cinema then was as much about the process of film-making as it was about denormalizing the sacred cows of the bourgeoisie. Film-making practice, the technology of the media, exposed social practice, consumption. It was also a counter-**Hollywood** cinema that did not seek to emulate the American giant, as the 1950s products had done, but addressed first the personal and later the political tensions that the younger generations were experiencing during the 1960s. Both New Waves put in place a counter-cinema to the standardization effects of American technology (hand-held camera, no studio, editing practices that drew attention to themselves, no star-system). It did not de-Parisianize itself, but it did secure a social sphere for the youth class, for both men and women. The first New Wave was not politically engaged but it was anti-bourgeois in sentiment (especially Chabrol's films). And it was motivated by a desire to present the point of view of the individual in society. Moreover, the themes it treated filtered into mainstream cinema as early as the mid-1960s. In the late 1960s, by the time of the second New Wave, this cinema had become politicized, questioning institutions and their power effects over individuals – questions which filtered into the more evidently political cinema of the 1970s (the exemplary director being Constantin Costa-Gavras, but also Louis Malle).

It is worth noting that the brief popularity of both New Waves coincided with the political culture in which they found themselves and with the most politically tense moments in France's history of that period. The first period of popularity, 1958–62, coincided with the radical effect on institutions of the advent of the Fifth Republic and its new constitution which invested the presidency with executive powers – giving the president virtually supreme power over the parliament. This period also marked the bloody decolonization of Algeria. In this light it is easy to see why the disruptive anarchy of the first New Wave was seen as political. The second period of popularity, 1966–8, coincided with the progressive disenchantment with de Gaulle's authoritarian presidential style, unrest on social and educational levels owing to lack of resources to accommodate the expanding urban society and student university numbers, workers' concern at their conditions, and concern with unemployment – all of which culminated in the events of May 1968.

Although this cinema was criticized for its focus on the individual – its emphasis on auteur and the confessional style of the films – it left one very important legacy. Thanks to the huge influx of film-makers into the industry (around 170), production practices had to be reconsidered. For money to be spread around, films had to be low-budget.

Given the number of film-makers, the cheaper, lightweight camera came into its own. As a result there was a democratization of the camera. This pioneering effect was to make the camera more accessible to voices formerly marginalized and, by the 1970s and 1980s, women, Blacks and Beurs (the Arab community in France) were entering into film-making.

*see also*: **auteur/auteur theory**

For further reading see Kline, 1992; Marie, 2003.

## FRENCH POETIC REALISM

In the mid-1930s the liquidation of the two major film trusts in France, Pathé and Gaumont, meant that the small independent producer could take up pole position. Whereas before 1935, the two majors had dominated production, after 1935 and until 1939 on average 90 per cent of the French films produced were by small independent film companies. This had a fortunate effect on the French film industry. The collapse of the major commercial **studios** facilitated France's **art cinema**. Independent producer-directors were, for a while, free to make their films, and moreover could access the majors' studios and technical services, as well as their cinema circuits. A small faction of these independents, most famously Yves Allégret, Marcel Carné, Julien Duvivier, Jean Grémillon and Jean Renoir, became loosely banded under the label of the poetic realist school. But, despite their small number, they none the less re-established France's ailing international cinematic reputation which had been on the decline ever since the First World War, by which time the **Hollywood** majors had completely cornered the international market.

Poetic realism has been seen in relation to its historical context as shadowing the rise and fall of the Popular Front – a consolidated party of the left which eventually came to power in 1936. The party was voted in on a wave of optimism for its platform of social reforms. However, because of the economic climate and the threat of war these were never fully implemented. The party was in power for a thousand days, but after only six months in office it was obvious that little or no change was going to be possible given the political and economic climate. To the optimism of its advance come the filmic echoes of working-class solidarity as exemplified in Renoir's *Le Crime*

*de M. Lange* (1935) and the optimistic title of his *La Vie est à nous* (1936). As markers of the decline of the Popular Front and of the desperation felt at the ineluctability of war come deeply pessimistic films like Marcel Carné's *Quai des brumes* (1938), *Le Jour se lève* (1939) and Renoir's *La Règle du jeu* (1939).

This simplistic reflection needs nuancing however, since not all the films in this grouping necessarily gave this straightforward early-optimism, later-pessimism message. Furthermore, not all the film-makers in this school were sympathetic to the left. At least two 1936 films are undyingly pessimistic in their message. These are Julien Duvivier's *Pépé le Moko* and *La Belle équipe* (both starring the poetic realist fetish star, Jean Gabin). In the first, Pépé dies at his own hands. Wanted by the police, he holes up in the Casbah in Algiers where he is surrounded by an adoring gang and mistress; but all he can dream of is returning to Paris – the price for fulfilling that desire is death. In *La Belle équipe* male working-class solidarity is exposed for its weakness as it swiftly becomes eroded by the alluring presence of a woman. Duvivier was certainly not a man of the left, which might explain his dark films in this euphoric period of the early Popular Front. However, another film-maker, Jean Grémillon, this time of the left, was making similarly bleak films around the same time. His *Gueule d'amour* (1937) portrays the destruction of a man who foregoes his duties (as a soldier) for his passion for a 'heartless' woman (whom he eventually murders).

In poetic realist films there is a strong emphasis on **mise-en-scène**: décor, **setting** and **lighting** receive minute attention and owe not a little to the influence of **German expressionism**. Poetic realism is a recreated **realism**, not the socio-realism of the **documentary**. In this respect the realism is very studio-bound and stylized. For example, parts of Paris are studiously reproduced in the studio – an almost inauthentic realism. This stylized realism of the mise-en-scène is matched by the poetic symbolism within the **narrative**. The narrative is heavily imbued with the notion of fatalism. The male protagonist is generally doomed and the film's **diegesis** is so constructed as to put the degeneration in his mood on display. This is the mise-en-scène of male suffering par excellence. Setting, gestures, movement (or lack of it), verbal and non-verbal communication are all markers for this degeneration and so too are the lighting effects. To this effect side-lighting, for example, is used on the protagonist's face, or part lighting of the space in which he finds himself, or highlighting objects that are of symbolic value to him. Indeed objects are endowed with symbolism to quite a degree of

abstraction and resonate throughout the film, measuring the state of degeneration as the protagonist responds to their recurrence in the film.

A major reason why all aspects of the film process function so intensely to create this aura of poetic realism is that these films are, in the final analysis, the result of team work. There is the director, but there are also – of major importance – the scriptwriter, the designer for the sets, the lighting expert and the composer of the music soundtrack. Carné for example worked with the poet Jacques Prévert who scripted several of his films, he had Alexander Trauner as his set designer and Joseph Kosma was a frequent composer to his films.

For further reading see Andrew, 1995, Crisp, 1993.

## FUTURISM

A revolutionary modernist movement, founded in Italy at the beginning of the twentieth century when in 1909 the poet Filippo Tommaso Marinetti published a literary manifesto calling for the obliteration of past Italian culture and the creation of a new society, literature and art extolling the virtues of modern mechanization. Although short-lived in Italy, this movement had considerable impact on several aesthetic movements: the vorticists in the United Kingdom (inaugurated 1913) and the Russian futurists (1912). The Russian futurists adopted an experimental and innovatory approach to language that was to filter through into the post-Revolutionary movement of constructivism. The pre-Revolutionary movement, influenced as it was by the abstract forms of European **modernist** art, primarily exemplified by cubism and futurism, believed in technique and the evacuation of fixed meanings. After the Revolution, the constructivists, seeing in technology the huge potential for social change, advocated a new order in which workers, artists and intellectuals would work together to produce a new vision of society – art and labour were seen as one. This notion of art as production was eagerly embraced by the newly emergent Soviet Cinema of the 1920s – and also admirably suited the political exigencies of post-Revolutionary Russia of the 1920s who needed the propagandizing effect of cinema to spread the message that all workers were pulling together to secure the national identity of the new Soviet republics.

*see also*: **Soviet cinema**

## GANGSTER FILMS

The gangster film is the one most readily identified as an American genre even though the French film-maker Louis Feuillade's *Fantômas* (1913–14) is one of the earliest prototypes. It is in the contemporaneity of its **discourses** that the gangster film has been so widely perceived as an American genre. This genre, which dates from the late 1920s, came into its own with the introduction of **sound** and fully blossomed with three classics in the early 1930s: *Little Caesar* (Melvyn LeRoy, 1930), *The Public Enemy* (William A. Wellman, 1931) and *Scarface* (Howard Hawks, 1932). In the United States this was the period of Prohibition (1919–33), during which the manufacture, sale and transportation of alcoholic drinks was forbidden, and the Depression (1929–34), when worldwide economic collapse precipitated commercial failure and mass unemployment.

These two major events in the United States's socio-economic history helped to frame the mythical value of the gangster in movies. Prohibition proved impossible to enforce because gangsters far outnumbered the law enforcers. Prohibition, however, brought gangsters and their lifestyle into the limelight as never before. Gang warfare and criminal acts became part of the popular press's daily diet and soon became transferred on to film. In fact, many of the gangster films of that period were based on real life. Gangsterism viewed from this standpoint was about greed and brutal acts of violence – in summary about aggression in urban society. But the gangster movies were not as straightforwardly black and white as that. The male protagonist embodied numerous contradictions that made **spectator identification** possible. If we look to the second socio-economic factor mentioned above, we can find a possible reason for the complex and nuanced characterization of the gangster-hero.

The Depression exposed the American dream – which said that success, in the democratic and classless society guaranteed by the American Constitution, was within the reach of everyone – as a myth. How could this be so when the society was so evidently hierarchized into the haves and have-nots – as the effects of the Depression made so blatantly clear? According to the American Dream, success meant material wealth and, implicit within that, the assertion of the individual. The gangster was associated with the proletarian **class**, not the rich and moneyed classes of the United States. Therefore the only way he (sic) could access wealth and thereby self-assertion – that

is success, the American Dream – was by stealing it. Accruing capital meant accruing power over others. In this respect, the gangster embodies the contradictions inherent in the American Dream: success comes, but only at the expense of others. And because the gangster points up these contradictions, his death at the end of the film is an ideological necessity. He must ultimately fail because the American Dream cannot be fulfilled in this cynical way; and he must also fail because he cannot be allowed to show up the Dream's contradictions.

The classic gangster film came into its own with the advent of sound, which reinforced the realism of this genre. Warner Brothers (see **studio system**) was the first studio to launch this genre in a big way with *Little Caesar* and *The Public Enemy*, and their films are seen as the precursors to the film noir. By 1928 this production company had finally become vertically integrated and entered into full competition with the other majors. It was the first company to introduce sound (1927, *The Jazz Singer*, Alan Crosland) and was now poised, as a major in its own right, to outstrip the other four. Warner Brothers became associated with the genre because its production practices had set a certain house style of low-budget movies and short shooting schedules. Cheap-to-make films influenced the product, and so **backstage musicals** and gangster films were the genres to prevail. Warners were also very much associated with social content films, and indeed after the launch of Roosevelt's New Deal (1933–4) became identified with the new president's politics of social and economic reform. **Social realism** and political relevance combined with a downbeat image endowed Warners' films with a populism that made their products particularly attractive to working-class audiences, a major source of revenue for film companies.

The gangster movie, in its naked exposure of male heroics, has been likened to an urban **Western**. But unlike the Western, where rules are observed, the gangster movie knows no rules, other than death. Central to the gangster film is the antagonism between the desire for success and social constraint. The gangster will choose to live a shorter life rather than submit to constraints. Hence the aura of fatalism that runs through the film. But, as far as the spectator is concerned, for the duration of the film, where violence is countered with violence, where there are no rules, she or he is witnessing an urban nightmare as the **narrative** brings the plot to the brink of a social breakdown.

The gangster film is highly stylized with its recurrent **iconography** of urban **settings**, clothes, cars, gun technology and violence. (In recent history, the film that most fulsomely parodies and yet pays homage to this genre and its iconicity is Quentin Tarantino's *Reservoir Dogs*, 1992.) The narrative follows the rise and fall of a gangster; a learning curve that of course has **ideological** resonances for the spectator – but not before there has been a first pleasure in identifying with the lawlessness of the 'hero'. During his (fated) trajectory towards death, the protagonist's coming to self-awareness – rather than self-assertion, which is what he initially sought through success – functions cathartically for the spectator: we 'learn' from his mistakes. Furthermore, the use of the woman who is romantically involved with the protagonist and in whose arms he (often) dies – as the law enforcers stand menacingly around the prostrate couple, armed to the teeth – positions the spectator like her and therefore as sympathetic, understanding even, to the gangster. And thus, although the 'message' of the film – 'the gangster must die for his violent endangering of American society' – intends to provide the spectator with a sense of moral justification, there is none the less an inherent criticism of American society which says that ultimately the 'little guy' must fail.

The classic age of the gangster movie (1930–4) was brought to a swift halt in an ambience of moral panic. Pressure was put on the **Hays** office to do more than ask the film industry to apply self-**censorship**. In 1934 the Production Code (see **Hays code**), which condemned among other things films glorifying gangsters, became mandatory. Given the popularity of the genre, film companies were not going to give up such a lucrative scenario. Forced to water down the violence, they produced a set of sub-genres: private-eye films and detective thrillers. That is, without dropping much of the violence, they now **foregrounded** the side of law and order resolving disorder. Told to put a stop to the heroization of gangsters and violence, they simply shifted the role of hero from gangster to cop or private eye. Thanks to the Hays code intervention, the seeds for the film noir were sown. The sadism of the gangster became transformed into the guilt and angst of masculinity in crisis of the film noir protagonist. Against the ambiguous urban landscape of some modern American city, the hard-boiled detective seeks justice. The **ambiguity** of the city reflects the ambiguity and complexity of a society where corruption reigns and law cannot easily bring the guilty to justice. Thus the detective is often a private eye, outside 'official' law, a law unto himself. As a marginal, by being outside he can solve the crime

and bring the perpetrators to justice (Cawelti, 1992). Traditionally the detective is male; however, recent hard-boiled detective novels written by women (such as Sara Paretsky) have introduced the phenomenon of the woman private-eye detective, who has subsequently found her place on the screen – they are 'just as tough' and as equally poor as their male counterparts. Being poor is part of the construct of the private-eye, pointing to the fact that, even though their methods may be outside the law, none the less they are not in the job for the money. Women in the detective thriller, on the whole, have a more central role than in the earlier gangster movies. They are beautiful and dangerous, often the murderess and therefore subjected to investigation by the detective.

*see* **film noir** and the separate entry for **thriller**; *see also* **psychoanalysis**

## GAZE/LOOK

This term refers to the exchange of looks that takes place in cinema. But it was not until the 1970s that it was written about and theorized. In the early 1970s, first French and then British and American film theorists began applying psychoanalysis to film in an attempt to discuss the spectator–screen relationship as well as the textual relationships within the film. Drawing in particular on Freud's theory of libido drives and Lacan's theory of the mirror stage, they sought to explain how cinema works at the level of the unconscious. Indeed they maintained that the processes of the cinema mimic the workings of the unconscious. The spectator sits in a darkened room, desiring to look at the screen and deriving visual pleasure from what she or he sees. Part of that pleasure is also derived from the narcissistic identification she or he feels with the person on screen. But there is more; the spectator also has the illusion of controlling that image. First, because the Renaissance perspective which the cinematic **image** provides ensures that the spectator is **subject** of the gaze. And, second, given that the projector is positioned behind the spectator's head, this means that it is as if those images are the spectator's own imaginings on screen. Let's see what the theorists have to say about all of this.

Christian Metz (1975) draws on the analogy of the screen with the mirror as a way of talking about spectator positioning and the **voyeuristic** aspect of film viewing whereby the spectator is identified with the gaze (since the gaze cannot be returned, the spectator is

voyeuristically positioned). However, Metz argues, because he (sic) is identified with the gaze, this also means that he is looking at the mirror. In other words, through the look, the spectator is re-enacting the mirror stage. In this respect, this identification is a regression to childhood. Raymond Bellour (1975), for his part, talks about the cinema as functioning simultaneously for the **Imaginary** (that is, as the reflection, the mirror) and as the **Symbolic** (that is, as language through its film **discourses**). In both instances, these two theorists assert, the spectator is at the mirror stage and about to acquire sexual difference (in looking into the mirror the boy child sees his sexual difference from his mother). You will note that the female spectator got left out of this debate. It would take the work of the British feminists Laura Mulvey (1975) and Claire Johnston (1976) to take this debate further, closely followed by American feminists. But by the early 1970s the debate around the gaze had got as far as saying that at every film viewing there occurs a re-enactment of the boy-child's unconscious processes involved in the acquisition of sexual difference (mirror stage), of language (entry of the Symbolic) and of autonomous selfhood or **subjectivity** (entry into the Symbolic order and, thereby, the Law of the Father, and, consequently, rupture with the mother as object of identification). Thus the spectator is constructed as subject, derives visual pleasure from seeing his self as having an identity separate from his mother, and – aligned with his father whose patriarchal law he has entered – he can now derive sexual pleasure in looking at the (m)other; that is, woman – the female (m)other. (For greater detail see **Imaginary**/**Symbolic** entry).

It is not difficult to see that Oedipal desire is indeed a male reality (as opposed to **fantasy**). In fact, Bellour (1975) particularly draws attention to the notion of male representation or characterization in cinema as a reiteration of the Oedipus story (see **Oedipal trajectory**). Cinema actively encourages Oedipal desire. **Hollywood**'s great subject is heterosexuality, the plot resolution 'requires' the heterosexual couple formation. Cinematic practices, then, are a perfect simile for Oedipal desire in that their looking-relations structure woman as object and man as **subject** of desire. In so far as the exchange of looks is concerned, in **dominant cinema**, it comes from three directions – all of which are 'naturally' assumed as male. First, there is the pro-filmic event – the look of the camera, with behind it the cameraman (sic). Then there is the **diegetic** gaze: the man gazing at the woman, a gaze she may return but is not able to act upon (see **agency**). Finally there is the spectator's gaze which imitates the other two looks. The spectator is positioned as the

camera's eye and also, because as spectator he (sic) is subject of the gaze, as the eye of the beholding male on screen. A nice **naturalizing** of Oedipal desire if ever there was one!

Small wonder feminists took up this concept of the gaze and submitted it to some more rigour. As E. Ann Kaplan (1983: 30) says: 'Dominant Hollywood cinema ... is constructed according to the unconscious of patriarchy; film **narratives** are organized by means of a male-based language and discourse which parallels the language of the unconscious'. And it is for this reason that she makes such a strong plea for feminists not to reject psychoanalysis as a male construct, which it is, but to examine it and by exploring it learn how to counter its effects. The first step was to expose the naturalization of the triple position of the look. Laura Mulvey's vital and deliberately polemical article 'Visual Pleasure and Narrative Cinema' (1975) started the debate by demonstrating the domination of the male gaze, within and without the screen, at the expense of the woman's; so much so that the female spectator had little to gaze upon or identify with (for greater detail, see **scopophilia** and **spectatorship**). The exchange or relay of looks (as it is also known) within film reproduces the **voyeuristic** pleasure of the cinematic apparatus, with all that that connotes of the male child viewing, unseen, his parents copulating (what in psychoanalytic terms is called the primal scene). Visual pleasure equals sexual pleasure, yes, but for the male.

Kaplan (1983) asks 'Is the gaze male?' She comes up with an answer that opens a door for readings against the grain, for readings that do not necessarily show the woman as object of the gaze. While conceding that in mainstream Hollywood cinema it is men on the whole who can act on the desiring gaze, she none the less makes the point that to own and activate the gaze is to be in the 'masculine' position, that is, to be dominant. She then goes on to argue that both men and women can adopt dominant or submissive roles. But of course this does not mean any real change, the same binary opposition (masculine/feminine) is still in place. And as Linda Williams (1984) cautions 'When the Woman Looks' (that is, becomes 'dominant') she usually pays for it, often with her life. 'The woman's gaze is punished ... by narrative processes that transform curiosity and desire into masochistic fantasy' (1984: 85). So this ability to switch roles is not necessarily fortunate – it is even potentially dangerous.

Having recognized the existence of the dominance/submission structure, the next stage, Kaplan (1983) argues, is to question why it is there. What need, whose need does it fulfil? If cinema does mimic the unconscious, then it must reflect what is repressed – latent fears

around sexuality and sexual difference. It is for this reason that she advocates investigating film through psychoanalytic methodology as a first step towards 'understanding our socialization in patriarchy' (1983: 34). It is here that the readings against the grain become possible. By exposing how woman is constructed cinematically, this reading refuses to accept the normalizing or naturalizing process of patriarchal socialization.

*see also* **apparatus**, **psychoanalysis**, **scopophilia**, **spectator**

For further detail see **feminist film theory**.

For further reading see Kaplan, 1997.

## GENDER

Gender has a socio-cultural origin that is **ideological** in purpose and must be seen as quite distinct from the notions of biological sex and sexuality. Part of the ideological function of gender has been to dissimulate this difference and to see sex and gender as the same. This in turn, as we shall see, makes possible numerous slippages, including the notion of a fixed sexuality. The ideological function of gender 'has been to set up a heterogeneous and determinate set of biological, physical, social, psychological and psychic constructs as a unitary, *fixed* and unproblematic attribute of human subjectivity' (Kuhn, 1985: 52, my emphasis). The ideological function of gender is to fix us as either male or female and is the first in a series of binary oppositions that serve to construct us as male or female. As Kuhn points out, these binary oppositions are socially, psychologically, physically and biologically grounded. Thus the female is economically inferior to the male, is associated more with the domestic than the public sphere, is more emotional, less strong than the male. She is the site of reproduction and not production which is the male domain, and so on. It is clear how this essentialist approach (woman is this/man is that) fixes gender and leads to a **naturalizing** of gender difference (we accept it as 'natural').

During the 1980s, feminist critics marshalled gender relations into the centre of the debate around sexuality. In so doing they sought to problematize gender relations which up until then had not been considered as problematic. In Western culture, masculinity had not been seen by men as determined by gender relations. It was free from

such considerations, natural and therefore unproblematic. In language, the masculine is the linguistic norm and the female is defined in relation to it (for example, actor/actress). During the 1970s the focus of feminist thinking had been on issues of femininity. But it became clear that, in order to challenge any essentialist reading of the female, gender relations would have to come under scrutiny. Femininity could not be seen in isolation but as part of other categories of difference starting with the vexed issue of gender difference. This, in turn, would finally place scrutiny of masculinity on the agenda.

There are, arguably, two dominant debates surrounding gender relations, both of which found a voice first within feminist theory, and subsequently within cultural studies, gay studies, literary and film theory. These debates are rooted in **psychoanalysis** and Marxist materialism. Both debates have contributed significantly in moving the whole question of gender relations into wider arenas and in so doing have helped, rather than hindered, an understanding of how gender is not a simple case of sexual difference as ideology would have us believe, but a series of hierarchical power relations cleverly disguised so as to hide the way in which gender is imposed by force. Furthermore, these debates have shown the importance of historical and social processes with regard to gender relations and have stressed the way in which they can occlude other forms of social determination such as race, **class** and sexuality. These debates have examined how cultural practices reproduce gender ideology and have demonstrated the importance of understanding how the inscription of gender and renditions of sexual difference operate in dominant culture. To understand the construction of gender and how gender ideology functions are vital first steps to countering them, to the uncovering of alternative readings (see **ideology**).

The psychoanalytic debate draws largely on Jacques Lacan's rooting of subjectivity in language (see **Imaginary/Symbolic**). The child, in order to complete its socio-sexual trajectory, must move from the Imaginary illusion of unity with the self and desire of the mother into the Symbolic Order. This order is the patriarchal order and represents social stability, and is governed by the Law of the Father. The father prohibits his son from incest with the mother and the male child obeys for fear of castration by the father. This order, then, is also determined as phallic since sexual difference is marked by the possession or lack of a penis. This approach shows how patriarchal language serves to perpetuate gendered subjectivity and how it is hierarchically deterministic. The male is fixed in language as 'he', but he is also subject of that language since, in entering the Symbolic

Order, he joins ranks with his father to perpetuate the Law of the Father. Conversely, the female in entering the Symbolic Order is fixed by language as 'she'. But because she is not *of* the patriarchal language she is not subject but object. This approach, then, makes it possible to see how sexual relations are rooted in power relations that are linguistically based and as such does expose the ideological functions of gender relations. It does not go far enough, however, for two reasons. First, it smacks of a self-fulfilling essentialism: 'it will always be like this'. Thus psychoanalysis explains subject construction and so to a degree sanctions it. Second, if it does show a way to challenge gender ideology it assumes that it will take place at the level of language. But this is to ignore the other forms of social determination such as history, class and race.

This was the objection of the Marxist materialists. And it is their debate that has served both to balance the psychoanalytical approach and to broaden further the frame of investigation. They see gender ideology as a social and cultural construction that attempts to construct gender upon purely binary lines. The notion of a fixed and gendered subjectivity becomes impossible as a concept, they argue, since it assumes that only one category of difference exists: masculinity and femininity. The impossibility of such an ideological stance becomes clear if one considers that power relations also affect gender relations. Because masculine is the linguistic norm, a first hierarchy imposes itself. In the Western world we live not only in a patriarchal world but also a homosocial world. Power is invested in the masculine and, in order for it to stay there, men bond (the political and economic establishment, military forces, just to mention two obvious instances). Why is there such a prevalence of homophobia in society if it does not bespeak this desire to conceal that we live in a homosocial environment? And how far removed is the homosocial relation from the homoerotic one? Racial and class difference are other categories that gender ideology seeks to dissimulate. Why otherwise the prurience with the potency of the Black male or the working-class hero? They are perceived first as their sex and sexuality.

This fixing of a gendered subjectivity attempts to disguise the fact that gender is not as stable as ideology would have it. And it is here that we understand why gender ideology seems so necessary to the safe functioning of a patriarchal world. Gender is constructed not just through language but through social ascriptions and cultural practice. Thus, gender ideology is represented in a variety of cultural practices: literature, mass media, cinema and so on. However, it is the examination of the inscriptions of gender into cultural practices that allows

not only for a **deconstruction** of gender ideology to take place but also for other differences to emerge. Where to situate cross-dressing, transsexualism and transvestism if gender is so fixed? What to do with lesbians and gay men? What about masquerade and metaphorical transvestism? The sexual subject or subjectivity here is 'defined' in terms of either otherness (transvestism, etc.) or sameness (homosexuality, etc.) but not difference. Clearly, the binary oppositions start to collapse under such questions.

A film which poses these questions and remarkably exposes the problems inherent in gender ideology is Neil Jordan's *The Crying Game* (1992). Here no sexual identity is fixed. A Black soldier, Jody, posted in Northern Ireland, falls into an IRA trap by letting a woman seduce him. Taken captive, he shows a photograph of his lover, Dil, to his captor, Fergus, with whom he has established a rapport. His lover, also Black, lives in London and works as a hairdresser. After Jody dies, Fergus, who is on the run from his IRA masters, goes to London and seeks her out. He goes to the salon where she works and has her cut his hair. He has already changed his name to Jimmy so the haircut completes the disguise. He is immediately attracted to Dil. However, Dil is a transvestite. But her/his cross-dressing is so successful that she/he dupes all, including Fergus/Jimmy. Only when their relationship gets to the point of making love does Jimmy 'discover the truth'. At first he is horrified and runs away. But Dil seeks him out and their relationship resumes. The IRA masters are closing in on Jimmy, but they also 'know' about his relationship with Dil so her life is in danger. In order to save her, Jimmy disguises Dil into a slimmer version of her/his dead lover Jody by cutting her hair and making her dress in Jody's cricket whites (!).

The point here is that no sexuality, no gender identity is fixed. Jody, it now transpires, was bisexual – the name Jody itself is sexually unidentifiable. Dil (an equally ungendered name) can assume any gender and so is completely unfixable. All is in a fair state of flux. Indeed, the mirroring of the double disguise of Fergus/Jimmy and Dil/Jody makes this point clear. Fergus, until meeting Dil, thought of himself as heterosexual. His attraction to Dil changes his perceptions of his identity. When he transforms Dil into Jody he assumes Dil's earlier role when she completed his disguise as Jimmy. All sorts of levels of play around Fergus/Jimmy's sexuality are encoded into this: metaphorical transvestism (becoming 'Dil'), homoeroticism (fabricating 'Jody'), homosexuality (loving Dil).

Mainstream cinema does not function, however, to undermine dominant ideology. Quite the reverse. But this does not mean that its

own functioning as an ideological **apparatus** cannot be unpicked nor that alternative readings to the **preferred reading** cannot be given. Conventional signs of gender fixity can come under scrutiny. **Lighting** and **colour** are but two primary and evident areas for this scrutiny. Lighting, particularly with black and white films, was used differently for male and female stars to point to their gender difference and to a set of binary oppositions. The use of back-lighting to give the heroine a halo effect and front-lighting to bring out the whiteness of her skin was intended to point to the virginal and pure nature of American womanhood. It was used also to point to her fragility when contrasted with the deliberately contrastive lighting used for the hero. This lighting brought out his handsome dark looks, pointing to his strength and manliness. Colour is also used to point to gender difference. Indeed, since the introduction of colour it is noteworthy how the female and male protagonists are shot differently. As Neale (1985: 152) makes clear, colour is used to signify woman's look-at-able-ness, woman as the 'source of the spectacle of colour'. And since the advent of colour there has been an even greater emphasis on the fragmentation of the female body (Turner, 1988: 81). Other conventions play into this strategy of gender differentiation. Thus **mise-en-scène**, the **iconography** of the **image**, **gesturality** in performance styles, the function of the **gaze**, just as much as lighting and colour, are also conventions at the service of gender ideology that can be questioned. Clearly, if these can be questioned then so too can the idea of a fixed gendered spectator (see **spectator**).

By way of illustrating this notion of questioning, let us take a fairly extreme example, that of cross-dressing. As we shall see, the function of cross-dressing in mainstream cinema can be critically examined in the light of the debates around gender. For a start, why is it that we must not be allowed to be completely duped by cross-dressing? Why in the film *Tootsie* (Sydney Pollack, 1982) must we always be aware of the phallus under Tootsie's dress? How come neither Jack Lemmon nor Tony Curtis are allowed to convince fully as a woman in *Some Like it Hot* (Billy Wilder, 1959)? In other words, why is it that male sexuality must not be completely repressed? What occurs to women who cross-dress? Annette Kuhn's brilliant essay on cross-dressing (1985: 48–73) addresses these questions and provides some illuminating answers. Cross-dressing, she argues, **foregrounds** the performance aspect of dress and problematizes gender identity and sexual difference (1985: 49). Clothing as performance threatens to undermine the ideological fixity of the human subject: change your clothes

and you change your sex (1985: 53). Cross-dressing plays with the distance between the outer-clothed self (gendered clothing) and the self underneath (the gendered body). Thus sexual disguise plays on gender fixity, makes it possible to think about it as fluid (1985: 56). With its potential to denaturalize sexual difference (1985: 55), it is small wonder that cross-dressing is so contained in mainstream cinema. Thus we are always in the know. We derive pleasure from knowing/not-knowing: *we* know it is a masquerade but we do not know if or how it will be found out (see **naturalizing**).

It is probably because of its potential to threaten ideological fixity that for the most part cross-dressing occurs only in **comedies** or **musicals** (**genres** that operate in fairly asexual and unrealistic spaces). Given that Hollywood is obsessed with selling gender difference and particularly heterosexuality, it is naturally wary of destabilizing cultural stability. Not surprisingly, then, cross-dressed women for the most part have to suppress desire, or suspend it until their 'true identity' comes out. Not so the male cross-dresser. He can make clear his desire for the woman – indeed it is an essential ingredient to the comedy. What this tells us is that 'lesbianism', as evinced by a male crossdresser attracted to a woman, is safe. The joke is at the lesbian's expense – because the cross-dresser is so evidently straight. If, however, he is not straight, he threatens the status quo – and for this reason is unlikely to be seen in mainstream cinema (compare for example *Tootsie* with *The Kiss of the Spiderwoman*, Hector Babenco, 1985). A female cross-dresser must suppress her sexuality if she wants to occupy a central position. No other comportment can be countenanced, otherwise she implicitly masquerades as homosexual – which as we have already discussed is one of the greatest taboos of all, and is no position for a woman to play with. To make this cross-dressing completely safe, even though she is cross-dressed, the male protagonist continues to probe and seek to assure himself of her sex. Unlike the male cross-dresser whose disguise within the **diegesis** is taken as a given, the female cross-dresser's disguise then is not. In either case, male or female cross-dresser, it is not gender bending but gender-pastiche that is on offer.

*see also* **feminist film theory**, **Oedipal trajectory**, **sexuality**, **stereotypes**, **subject/subjectivity**

For further reading, see Butler, 1990; De Lauretis, 1989; Dines and Hurnez, 1995; Kirkham and Thumin, 1995; Showalter, 1989; Tasker, 1993.

## GENRE/SUB-GENRE

As a term genre goes back to earliest cinema and was seen as a way of organizing films according to type. But it was not until the late 1960s that genre was introduced as a key concept into Anglo-Saxon film theory, even though the French critic André Bazin was already talking of it in the 1950s with reference to the **Western**. The debate around genre at that time served to displace the earlier debate around **auteur theory** – even though, in more recent times, genre and auteur theory have become reconciled.

Genre is more than mere generic cataloguing. As Neale (1990: 46 and 48) points out, genre does not refer just to film type but to **spectator** expectation and hypothesis (speculation as to how the film will end). It also refers to the role of specific institutional **discourses** that feed into and form generic structures. In other words, genre must be seen also as part of a tripartite process of production, marketing (including distribution and exhibition) and consumption. Generic marketing includes posters, souvenirs, film press releases, hyperbolic statements: 'the *greatest* war movie ever!' – all the different discourses of 'hype' that surround the launching of a film product on to the market (think of the tremendous marketing strategy surrounding *Jurassic Park*, Steven Spielberg, 1993). Consumption refers not only to audience practices but also to practices of critics and reviewers. Clearly, genres are not static, they evolve with the times, even disappear. Generic conventions as much as genres themselves 'evolve', become transformed for economic, technological and consumption reasons. Thus, genres are paradoxically placed as simultaneously conservative and innovative in so far as they respond to expectations that are industry- and **audience**-based. In terms of the industry, they repeat generic formulas that 'work' and yet introduce new technologies that shift and modernize generic conventions. This same paradox holds true for audiences with their expectations of familiarity as well as change and innovation.

### *Some general principles*

Neale (1990: 63) remarks that the term *genre* is a fairly recent one at least in its reference to popular mass entertainment. Prior to the nineteenth century it was literature or high art that was generic. But with the impact in the late 1800s of new technologies which made popular entertainment more accessible, the position has reversed. The need to commodify mass culture and target different

sectors of the public has meant that it is now popular culture that is generic.

Genre is seemingly an unproblematic concept, but this is not the case. And this is particularly evident with film. First, because generally speaking a film is rarely generically pure. This is not surprising if we consider film's heritage which is derivative of other forms of entertainment (vaudeville, music-hall, theatre, photography, the novel and so on). As Neale says (1990: 62), film constantly refers to itself as a cross-media generic formation. Thus, a clear generic definition cannot immediately be imposed on a film even if a genre can be defined by a set of **codes and conventions** (as in, say, our expectations of a **road movie** or a **musical**). But, because genres themselves are not static and because, as we have just mentioned, they are composed of several intertexts, they are, of course, mutable (see **intertexts**). They rework, extend and transform the norms that codify them (Neale, 1990: 58). As we shall see, attempts at straitjacketing a genre are virtually impossible. Neale (ibid.) offers a term that helps to clarify this problem when he refers to 'genre texts' which could be seen as distinct from genre itself. Genre would stand for the generic norms and genre texts for the actual film products. In a similar drive for clarity Alan Williams (quoted in Neale, 1990: 62) speaks of 'principal genres' to refer to what he sees as the three main categories of film: **narrative** film, **avant-garde** film and **documentary**. He reserves the term 'sub-genres' to refer to what we term film genres.

A second problematizing factor is that genres also produce sub-genres, so again clarity is proscribed. For example, sub-genres of the **war movie** are Resistance films, certain colonial films, prisoner of war films, spy films (most of which cross boundaries with the **thriller** film genre) and so on. A third factor is that a genre cannot be seen as discrete and ideologically pure (see **ideology**). As Robin Wood (1992: 478) makes clear, genres are not 'safe' but are ideologically inflected. Ideological inflections within film genre find representation through a series of binary oppositions which, among other hegemonic 'realities', reinforce **gender** distinctions. For example, constructs of **sexuality** are based around **images** of the active male versus the passive female, independence versus entrapment (that is, marriage and family). **Sexuality** is constructed also as good/bad, pure/perverse. Furthermore, these are attributes which are most commonly attached to women – thus reinforcing the virgin/whore **myth** of woman. Constructs of society, beyond heterosexuality and the 'desirability' of marriage and reproduction, posit the evils of city versus rural or small town life, the work ethic and capitalism versus

fraudulent attempts to get rich quick (that is, good capitalism versus bad capitalism).

Although it is important to be aware of the ideological function of a genre, it is equally important to be aware of the dangers of reductionism inherent in an ideological approach to genre. As we shall make clear in the next section, genres are inflected as much by the capitalist imperatives of the film industry as they are by audience preference and the socio-historical realities of any given period. And, as we have already mentioned, genres evolve and change over the years, some even disappear. This would indicate, as Leo Braudy (1992: 431) believes, that genre serves as a barometer of the social and cultural concerns of cinema-going audiences. Genres have codes and conventions with which the audience is as familiar as the director (if not more so). Therefore, some genre films 'fail' because the audience feels that they have not adhered to their generic conventions sufficiently or because they are out of touch with contemporary times – see what has happened to the **epic**. Alternatively, the nonconformity of a film to its generic conventions can lead an audience to make it into a cult film. Film genre, therefore, is not as conservative a concept as might at first appear: it can switch, change, be imbricated (an overlapping of genres), subverted. Indeed, in terms of product, genre films do get parodied, bent and broken. And this is part of the process of generic change, but also a way of cinema challenging dominant ideological discourses. Thus, for example, in the early to mid-1950s the earlier sense of a secure national identity established by **Westerns** (pre-war) which gave a strong representation of America's pioneering spirit started to be challenged by certain films beginning with Delmer Daves's *Broken Arrow* (1950) which suggested there were doubts as to how the West was truly won.

This type of challenging does not limit itself to the level of narrative alone. It can also find parodic form by taking the codes and conventions to task as, for example, with Mel Brooks's *Blazing Saddles*, 1974 (which mocks the Western) or Robert Altman's spoof on the private-eye genre *The Long Goodbye* (1973). Interestingly the 1970s marked a period in Hollywood cinema where parody was quite extensive and genres got so bent they forced spectators to question what they had just seen. *Chinatown* (Roman Polanski, 1974) and *The French Connection* (William Friedkin, 1971) are very good examples of this practice. In both these films the bending of the generic codes are such that we, the spectator, are constantly held at a distance – both because we don't quite understand what we are seeing and because we have no entry in by way of identification with

the central protagonist. In these two films the upholders of the law are shown as both effective and ineffective, as blind in their determination to win at all costs and eventually (whilst they may have solved the crime or mystery) being completely unable to make the arrest or bring the story to a positive conclusion.

Finally, in this context of the unfixity of genres, we the audience also participate in the process of change. Because genres are simultaneously bound by certain conventions and expectations and are intertextual we carry a wealth of knowledge ourselves which means that we too, in a parodic and iconoclastic fashion, can make readings of the films against the grain.

### *Some approaches: structuralism, economies of desire and history*

Mention was made at the beginning of this entry of the genre debate displacing the **auteur** debate. You will note from the auteur entry, however, that the auteur debate did not disappear. Indeed, it went through several phases, much like the genre debate itself. Gledhill (in Cook, 1985: 58–68) gives a superb synopsis of the debates so I will make only brief mention of the impact of the structuralist debate on genre theory (see **structuralism**). This debate made two things possible. First, it relocated genre in a much wider set of structures (after it had been through the 'total structure' rites of passage in the 1970s). Second, it reconciled the auteur/genre debates and dissipated the misconception that the two concepts are mutually exclusive.

Until the late 1960s genre had been considered only in terms of codes and conventions and as a system for codifying films. However, it is easy to perceive why such a reading of genre made it a prime site for **structuralist** practice. Metz (1975) argued that genres go through a cycle of changes: 'a classic stage, to a self-parody of the classics, to a period where films contest the proposition that they are part of a genre, and finally to a critique of the genre itself' (Turner, 1988: 86). Although not all genres necessarily follow this dynamic, some do seem to (for example, the Western). Most helpful in examining the dynamic nature of genre, however, was the application to genre of Vladimir Propp's description of the narrative as a set of oppositions. An analysis, over a period of time, of the structure of a genre through a set of oppositions made it possible to see where change had taken place – even to the point of being able to discern where inversion occurred. The classic example of this Proppian approach is Wright's (1975) investigation of the Western. Wright demonstrates how a first

set of oppositions established in the classic Western evolves over time so that in more recent Westerns there is a completely inverted set of oppositions. For example, what was valued in the earlier Western was civilization and strong socialization. It was the hero's function to ensure that those outside society, the bad, weak-willed villains, remained out in the wilderness. Having saved a situation, the hero might well move on, but society and order had been made secure and were seen to be good – so the hero has upheld the values of civil society. In later Westerns, the hero is no longer inside society as an upholder of civilization. Rather, civilization is now seen as corrupt and weak. And it is the villains who now live inside society, the hero outside, in the wilderness.

Wright makes the point also that these changes reflect social change and audience expectations. Thus, for example, *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance* Kid (George Roy Hill, 1969) says much about the young generation of that time and their desire to be free and on the road. Wright's analysis serves, usefully, to make the point that genres are less about ritual than we might at first believe. As Neale (1990: 58) puts it, conventions of a genre 'are always in play rather than being, simply, *re*-played'. Moreover, since genres are about **spectator**-text relations as well as socio-historic relations, it becomes evident that genre must be discussed in relation to the numerous structures that serve not to fix it but to sustain it. The value of structuralism in relation to genre history is, then, that it broke the hold auteurism had on critical thinking about film and showed how structures other than that of the auteur had to be taken into consideration in so far as the production of meaning was concerned.

In an earlier informative essay on genre, Neale (1980: 19) argues that genres are a fundamental part of cinema's machinery. The cinema machinery or **apparatus** regulates the different orders of **subjectivity** including that of the spectator (1980: 19). This means that a genre, just like the apparatus of which it is a part, becomes part of a system that regulates desire, memory and expectation (1980: 55). Neale draws a useful conclusion on the strategies that genres fulfil in relation to the economies of desire (1980: 55). First, genres operate over a series of textual typologies (that is, **war movies**, **Westerns**, etc.), what Neale calls 'instances', and so offer the possibility of regulating desire over a determined number of genre texts (that is, there are only so many textual instances possible). In this way they help the industry to control demand and, therefore, production. Second, genres contain the possibilities of reading. That is, generic codes and conventions give a **preferred reading**, thus regulating memory and

expectation. This provides the industry with the wherewithal to control 'the effects that its products produce' (1980: 55).

The idea of generic limitation is clear enough: we can actually see how that worked during the heyday of the **studio system** when studios specialized in the production of certain genres and not others – in other words, economies of scale dictated that their production machine was geared to specific output. The second point needs further clarification and can best be explained in relation to four essential component parts of genre: technology, narrative, **iconography** and **stars**. Genres exhibit the technology of cinema. Depending on the genre, different aspects of cinema's technology are put on display. For example, colour and **cinemascope** or wide screen are important technological devices for the Western; **science fiction** requires special effects. Not to use them could be to frustrate spectator expectations and therefore not to regulate desire. Indeed the voyeuristic and fetishistic (see **voyeurism/fetishism**) nature of film technology – the camera as probe and as container of the image – makes possible the fusion of desire and technology into an eroticization of technology (for example, Stanley Kubrick's *2001: A Space Odyssey*, 1968; David Cronenberg's *Dead Ringers*, 1988). Arguably today's Computer Graphic Imaging (CGI) has brought us to the point where digital practice has fetishized the image itself. We look to the thrill that special effects can now create for us. They are as important as the film narrative itself (think, for example, of the marvellous CGI effects in the Harry Potter series or Martin Scorsese's *The Aviator*, 2004).

Genres also act as vehicles for stars. But stars, too, act as vehicles for genres. As we know, narrative structures and iconography are two functions whereby the audience recognizes the genre. Thus, the star becomes the site of generic **enunciation** – that is, the star now becomes a vehicle for the genre. In this light, genres are the discursive or narrative site in which the star can exhibit her/his potential to fulfil the demands, codes and conventions of a particular genre and perhaps even surpass them (take any Robert De Niro film as an example). Genres are also the iconographic site in which the star (male or female) can display the body, or have it displayed (obvious examples include Marilyn Monroe, James Dean, Marlon Brando, Brad Pitt). On these two counts (narrative and iconography), memory, expectation and desire are all activated within the spectator and regulated by the strategies of performance: we recall the genre and the star and we expect certain things of them and are gratified.

Genres refer to others of their own type and so are both inter-referential and intertextual. This means also that they are inscribed in history. The latest Western refers back generically to the other Westerns made since the very first one. But there are also social motivations behind the making of a genre: why do Westerns or **gangster** movies exist? what needs do they fulfil? So genres are therefore motivated by history and society even though they are not simple reflectors of society (Neale, 1980: 16). For example the Cold War films of the 1950s made on both sides of the 'Iron Curtain' were an attempt to allay fears of insecurity in the face of technological advancement (atomic bombs, space exploration), and to vindicate the merits of either Western or Eastern block ideologies (capitalism and communism). **Film noir**, as a sub-genre of the thriller, had its heyday in the 1940s and 1950s, a time when the United States was at war and immediately afterwards. During that time, the role of women had fundamentally changed. They were now at work, part of the social and public sphere. But what of 'their men' over 'there' fighting? What could they expect to find once they got 'home'? Home, the United States, was no longer the safe patriarchal regime they had left behind them. Nor did peace hold much promise given the apparent threat of communism. Film noir, viewed in this light, has been seen as an expression of male insecurity in the face of social change and a growing disillusionment with the lasting efficacy of peace. Genre speaks to its times (as well as its nation) – think, for example, of the **Blaxploitation** movies of the 1970s in the USA and how it tried to undermine the rise of the Afro-American's Black consciousness movement of that same period. More recently should we feel concern at the appeal of the retro-genres that are so successful presently? Neo-noirs and neo-melodramas are having considerable success. Are they reappearing in parodic mode or in slavish repetition? If we think in terms of the following titles – *Road to Perdition* (Mendes, 2002), *Mulholland Drive* (Lynch, 2001), *The Man Who Wasn't There* (Coen Brothers, 2001), *Far from Heaven* (Haynes, 2002) – perhaps we are justified in thinking that these few examples alone give us room to say with confidence that genre is once again re-examining itself and challenging its spectator.

In conclusion, genre can be identified by the iconography and conventions operating within it. But genre is also a shifting and slippery term so it is never fixed and, either through economic and historical exigencies or through intentional parodic practice, is in a constant process of change.

*see also* **specific genres**

For further reading see Altman, 1999; Grant, 1986, 1995 and 2003; Grodal, 1997; Neale 1980, 1990 and 2000; Schatz, 1981.

## GERMAN EXPRESSIONISM

A term used to refer within cinema studies to a particular filmic style which emerged in Germany during the years 1919–24 and which is associated with a period in world cinema history – that of Weimar Germany's cinema of the 1920s. German expressionism has been applied to cinema by analogy with the preoccupations of the expressionist movement in modern art of the early part of the twentieth century whose aim was to convey the force of human emotion and sexuality. The word expressionism means 'squeezing out', thus making the true essence of things and people emerge into a visible form. Its themes are revolt, self-analysis, madness, and primitive, sexual savagery (Courthion, 1968: 7–9). A deliberately anti-bourgeois aesthetic movement, its precursors number, among others, Edward Munch (*The Scream* being arguably *the* emblematic painting of expressionism) and Vincent Van Gogh. The expressionist movement was famous for its crudely painted forms and vibrant colours (landscapes, figures and still lives). Expressionism (whose history loosely spans some thirty years, 1900–30) was primarily the work of artists from northern and central Europe (Austria, Germany, Scandinavia and Switzerland) and its exponents came primarily from two main groups of artists: the Blaue Reiter (based in Munich) and the Brücke group (based in Dresden) which was founded in 1905 and disbanded in 1913. Many, indeed some of the greatest, exponents of expressionism were not part of these groups but solitary painters. Artists of that movement who are most renowned today include Wassily Kandinsky, Gustav KIimt, Egon Schiele and Chaïm Soutine.

In its reaction to bourgeois aesthetics, through its rejection of realist modes of representation, expressionism can be qualified as a modernist movement. In its preoccupation with sexuality and emotional uncertainty it stands as a movement that does not necessarily embrace the optimism of modernism, but looks rather at the psychological effects of this new age of technology on the individual. The impact of Freud and psychoanalysis – particularly his work on hysteria – must not be ignored in this discussion of expressionism. Expressionism, in its attempts to display a metaphysics of the soul,

mirrors to a degree the efforts in psychoanalysis to bring the workings of the unconscious to the fore, to the level of consciousness where the malaise or hysteria can be expressed. Expressionism was not limited to painting but was manifest in the literature, theatre and architecture (again primarily) of Scandinavian and German-speaking countries and spread from these domains into cinema in terms of **narrative**, set, and **mise-en-scène**. Indeed, expressionistic architecture with its strange and distorted structures found its major outlet in theatre and film sets – the economics of the time were not in a position to permit experimentation on real buildings (Silberman, 1996: 307). The impact on cinema of the famed Max Reinhardt theatre in Berlin – especially Reinhardt's theatre work of the period 1907–19 – can be read as emblematic of this cross-fertilization process between different cultural arenas. Several of the main film actors associated with German expressionistic film came from his troupe (Conrad Veidt, Werner Krauss and Emil Jannings, to name the most remembered today). Furthermore, Reinhardt's use of expressionist sets and high-contrast chiaroscuro **lighting** were later to become two of the major mise-en-scène strategies of German expressionist film. It should be added, of course, that German expressionism's famed predilection for chiaroscuro (the use of highly contrastive lighting, literally light and dark) which is already in evidence in German films of the 1910s, was undoubtedly due in part to the influence of Danish cinema lighting practices of that time.

The German expressionist film movement emerged for several conjunctural reasons. Critics of different generations have read different things into this movement. Some have seen it as reflecting a German mentality on the brink of madness, obsessed with death and fatality and ready to encompass fascism (Kracauer, 1992, and to some extent Eisner, 1969). Others have seen these films as an attempt to escape, even into horror, from the dreadful effects of the economic crisis and inflation (Manuell and Fraenkel, 1971). More recently, this movement has been relativized within a broader context of German film production and seen as more of a continuation of pre-war film traditions than a new departure (Elsaesser, 1996: 143; although Eisner also hints at this, 1969: 17).

In terms of context, post-World War One Germany was facing a period of terrible poverty and constant insecurity. The reprisals taken on the vanquished Germany by the implementation of the Versailles Treaty, in the form of heavy reparation payments, were such that the period 1918–24 was one of civil strife and staggering inflation. Thus, this nation, which had (like its enemies) suffered terrible losses on the

battlefields, lost its empire (its colonies became mandates of the League of Nations) and, in the early post-war year of 1919 faced civilian deaths of three quarters of a million from malnutrition. Insecurity took the form of political instability as well as fears on the part of the Weimar Republic and its ruling government (1919–33) of what was perceived as the communist threat. Nor was Weimar Germany itself exempt from accusations of corruption and decadence, despite the fact that the 1920s was a period associated with 'Expressionism, Weimar culture and a time when Berlin was the cultural centre of Europe' (Elsaesser, 1996: 136).

Berlin might well have become the cultural capital of Europe in the 1920s, but it was also perceived as the capital of decadence primarily because the pre-war 'strictures in morality and social convention were thrown aside by the young' (Manuell and Fraenkel, 1971: 13), censorship was abolished (albeit briefly: 1918–20), politically there were pockets of communist activity and, finally, sexualities of all types had emerged onto the civic scene. Berlin was red and it was hot. But economically speaking it was a city of crashed markets and rampant poverty. It was, then, a city of huge contrasts and paradoxes. To this effect, German expressionist film could be said to reflect the mood of the times.

The thematic preoccupations of pre-war cinema – which had shown such a fascination with the trappings of modernity through its representation of the modern city and its technologies, mostly associated with speed and the motor car, trains and telephones (particularly in crime and detective films) – were not replaced by post-war cinema as such, but were given a darker treatment in films associated with German expressionism. Fascination with modernity was replaced with a representation of its dehumanizing effects (e.g. Lang's *Metropolis*, 1926). And the effects of the economic conditions on the metropolitan realities of Berlin are reflected in Lang's *Dr Mabuse, the Gambler* (1922), a sinister tale in which Mabuse acts as a cypher for the corruption and social chaos so much in evidence not just in Berlin but more generally, according to Lang, in Weimar Germany.

There is considerable debate as to whether German expressionism was in fact a film movement. For example, Thomas Elsaesser argues (1996, 141) that thematically and stylistically there were precedents in pre-war German cinema, particularly in the form of the fantastic films which exploited, among other literary trends, German Gothic-Romantic legend and fairy tales. The fantastic film was an important tradition in pre-war cinema associated primarily with the film-maker Paul Wegener (ibid.). It was a tradition which married conservative

content with experimental style. For Elsaesser, therefore, the German expressionist film movement was not a new departure but a tail end of the fantastic film tradition (ibid.). Manuell and Fraenkel (1971: 33) make the point that legendary costume films and costume dramas were far more prolific at the time than German expressionist films. What is clear is that German expressionism cannot be seen as standing for all of the so-called Golden Age of German cinema (1920–29) although its impact on the evolution or development of film style was quite significant. In real terms, German expressionist films were very much in the minority of film production during the 1920s (only ten or so have survived into the canon) and their existence has perhaps more to do with film industry practices than with necessarily a conscious aesthetic or film movement per se.

In the post-war years the move was to consolidate the German film industry and to rationalize it much along the lines of the **Hollywood** vertically integrated **studio system**. A major merger operation took place in 1917 combining larger production firms with smaller ones. This merger brought about the foundation of UFA (the Universum-Film Aktiengesellschaft). The German film industry became largely identified with UFA although some production companies managed to remain – albeit only for a short while – independent from UFA. One such company was Decla, headed by Erich Pommer. And, in a sense, it is thanks to him and his willingness to take a risk on something new that the 'first' so-called expressionist film, *The Cabinet of Dr Caligari* (1919) saw the light of day (although its Berlin première, according to Silberman (1996: 307), was 26 February 1920). It appeared to herald a new cinema. However, this film was part of a broader strategy put in place by Pommer at Decla. Namely, a production programme that was aimed more particularly at producing a cinema that was based, as Thomas Elsaesser (1996: 143) puts it, on 'a concept of product differentiation'. In any event this new cinema was one which was to last in reality for a short five-year period (1919–24). Thus, the expressionist film was one film style amongst others. For its part, in this age of consolidation, Decla merged with Bioskop in 1920 (becoming Decla-Bioskop) and subsequently with UFA in 1921 (although some film historians quote 1920) – Decla-Bioskop remained under the tutelage of Pommer who continued to produce expressionist films.

The German expressionist film is a highly stylized type of film. Hallmarks of this style are oblique camera angles, distorted bodies and shapes, bizarre and incongruous **settings** that are almost gothic in their look and framing. Lighting is similarly highly stylized in its use

of heavy contrast between light and dark (known as chiaroscuro or high-contrast lighting) creating dramatic shadows. The subject matter is equally surreal and gothic and about unnatural acts or realities – a projection on screen of a character's subjective and often mad world. Marc Silberman (1996: 308–10) makes some interesting points in relation to the dynamic tension between setting and actorly style. The expressionist film focused on the formal issues of the image, mise-en-scène was abstract and primarily two dimensional. The lack of depth of the image contrasted with the 'obsessive interiority' of the acting – at least the acting of the central male protagonists. The actor's body, Silberman explains (ibid.: 309), was a 'formal element within the mise-en-scène that could be coupled with or set off against other elements like set design'. At times, then, the body 'conforms to architectural lines' (ibid.) – as in the case of Cesare, the somnabulist in *The Cabinet of Dr Caligari*, and his movement along the walls, or Nosferatu's shadow ascending the stairs in Murnau's 1921 film of the same name. As such, set design, lighting and the body are all interrelated squeezings-out of a psychology. At other times, the actor's gestures can be mechanical and abrupt, 'creating a mechanical, artificial rhythm' (ibid.) – the evil Mephistopheles (played by Emil Jannings) of Murnau's *Faust* (1926) is the embodiment of this type of deliberately contrastive dramatic and explosive acting.

In German expressionist films, then, the actor's body is as much a producer of meaning as the mise-en-scène. But, as Silberman argues (ibid.: 310), the centrality of the body as 'the focus for the metaphysics of the image' was not a new tendency but one which owed its heritage to the *Autorenfilm* (the art film) of the early 1910s. What is also striking in these expressionist films is the contrast between the intensity and interiority of the angle and the limited camera action and sparse editing style. The camera is quite static, and editing is quite standard and basic. Silberman is right to make the point (ibid.) that as far as the concept of the modernity of the cinematic **apparatus** is concerned, expressionism effectively denied, or missed the opportunity of experimentation with the technology of the apparatus – at least until the process of editing known as **montage** (see entry on **editing**) impacted on German cinema (by the mid-1920s). The later expressionist films (e.g. Murnau's *The Last Laugh*, 1924, and Lang's *Metropolis*, 1926) show a new approach to camera and editing practices. The camera is 'unchained' and has 'replaced the actor as producer of meaning' (ibid.: 312) and fast, at times montage-style of editing reflects the modernity of the apparatus as a twentieth-century technological instrument of speed (ibid.).

*The* emblematic film of this movement was the film that 'launched' it, the Austrian Robert Wiene's *The Cabinet of Dr Caligari*. This horror film tells the story of the delusions of a young lunatic, Francis, whose perception of reality we are treated to until the very final twist at the end of the film when we discover that *he* is the madman not Dr Caligari. According to Francis's version of reality, Dr Caligari is a mad and sinister doctor who wants to display his somnambulist Cesare (played by Conrad Veidt, *the* fetish **star** of this movement) at the local fair. Display, however, is not his real motive, or so Francis would have us believe. The doctor's secret, hidden motive is to exploit the sleepwalking Cesare to carry out the murders of people who thwart his, the doctor's, desires. The film ends with us discovering that Francis is the true lunatic and that what we have just witnessed is no more than his delusions for which he is now receiving treatment from the doctor he believed to be Doctor Caligari.

Although the look of the film is definitely expressionistic (the sets were painted and designed by the expressionist artists Hermann Warm, Walter Reiman and Walter Röhrig), in terms of the narrative, with its themes of death, tyranny, fate and disorder, this film continues the long line of German romanticism (as exemplified by the Brothers Grimm and Friedrich Schiller) and can also be seen as a film following in the fantastic tradition established by Paul Wegener before the 1914–18 war (Elsaesser, 1996: 141). As we recall, the expressionist movement itself was deliberately anti-romantic and anti-naturalist in its focus. So it could be argued that while the film is stylistically expressionistic it is not so thematically. The final outcome of the film is fairly estranged from the expressionist ideal as well. The submission by the youth (the son) to the all-knowing paternalistic doctor suggests a quite conservative reading, one which advocates obedience to a strong authoritarian figure (Murray, 1990: 26–7). However, in that the film appears to be a psychological outpouring of Francis' sexual repressions (through his expression of an imagined and distorted world view), it is close to the expressionistic practice of squeezing out the inner self. (It is worth reading Kracauer's (1992: 21–33) account of the making of this film and that of Manuell and Fraenkel (1971: 17–18) since the original script, by Carl Mayer and Hans Janowitz, was far more radical and politicized.)

Whatever our reading of it now, at the time of its release, *The Cabinet of Dr Caligari* met with huge international success particularly in France and the USA. The German film industry imagined that it could impose itself on the international scene by capitalizing on this success. Decla-Bioskop was absorbed into UFA by 1920–1 and this

major conglomerate, with the help of Erich Pommer as Head of Production, set about producing expressionist films that would export well. Fritz Lang's *Destiny* (1921) and *Dr Mabuse, the Gambler* as well as Friedrich Murnau's *Nosferatu* (1921) were hugely successful and allowed Germany to enter foreign markets in a way unknown before (the sale of just one of these films to one foreign country would finance the production of a new film). Added to this financial success story was the cultural respect these films obtained for a country that had lost a world war and with it a considerable international prestige. In this regard it is not possible to dissociate the German expressionist film from nationalistic values. So, once again, this movement strikes us as more conservative than perhaps its avant-garde experimental style would lead us to believe.

For a number of different reasons the fortunes of this movement soon waned and by 1924 it more or less came to an end although the style lived on for a while in a handful of films: Lang's *Metropolis* (1926) – which was a box-office failure – *M* (Lang, 1931) and Georg Pabst's *Kameradschaft* (1931). There were two major reasons for this movement's decline. The first was economic. The Mark had regained strength by 1923 and its stabilization meant that the former export trading advantage disappeared (Elsaesser, 1996: 144). The second had to do with the emigration of personnel, primarily to the United States who – either for political or professional reasons – went to Hollywood to work. Thus, Leni, Lubitsch, Murnau and Lang – to name but the most renowned – left Germany and took with them their own film-making practices which had considerable influence on Hollywood production styles particularly in relation to the horror film and **film noir**.

*see also*: **modernism** and **horror**

For further reading other than authors mentioned in the text see also Coates, 1991.

## GERMANY/NEW GERMAN CINEMA

A movement that came into forceful being by the early 1970s although its roots go back to the early 1960s when, inspired by the **French New Wave** and the **Free Cinema (Britain)**, twenty-six young film-makers and film critics signed the Oberhausen Manifesto in 1962. The manifesto declared its intention to create the new

German feature film. It swore a death to the established film industry (*Papas Kino*, daddy's cinema) and promised the birth of a new cinema that would be international. The first outcome of this Manifesto, which drew the government's attention to the lack of provision for new potential talent, was the foundation of the Board for the New German Cinema (1964).

However, this new wave cinema was quite distinctly marked from its two sources of inspiration in that it was directly politically motivated as a movement. Indeed this film movement needs to be understood within its historical, political, economic and geographical moment. Officially, the movement had two generations: Young German Cinema of the 1960s and New German Cinema of the 1970s and early 1980s. The generational shift had more to do with ideological changes than with two distinct groups of film-makers. The major shift was away from the auteurist approach (*autorenfilm*) which led to an emphasis on individual creativity at the expense of a politicized cinema (see **auteur** entry). The New German Cinema focused on establishing a new aesthetics and a corpus of social critical films which at the same time recognized the needs of the industry and as such its cinema products were less rarefied than the 1960s outputs. This new wave of German cinema spans twenty years, 1962–82, its 'death' being marked by the suicide of one of its major proponents, the film-maker Rainer Werner Fassbinder. However, such a date would exclude many films made during the 1980s that are clearly part of the New German Cinema ethos. Thus it might be better to say that by the mid-1980s three conjunctural moments did, in some respects, serve a semi death knell to this cinema. These were: the effect of television and, equally importantly, the conservative Kohl government which withdrew much of its financial support from this radical cinema, plus the departure of a number of the original and more renowned film-makers to work on the international production scene.

If we regard the movement as beginning in 1962, then in political terms, we must recall that in 1961 the Berlin Wall was erected splitting this great city into two ideological realities (capitalist and communist) and thus effectively signifying the already very real division of Germany into two parts: the West (FRG) and East (GDR). Post-war in the West, interestingly, the film industry had been dispersed by the allies with centres in Munich, Hamburg and West Berlin as a deliberate strategy to counter a re-formation of the film industry into one oligarchy (as it had been during the Third Reich in the form of UFA). No such thing occurred in East Germany which, post-war,

inherited the former Weimar studios at Babelsberg (east of Berlin near Potsdam), thus keeping its film industry, DEFA, very much as a centralized affair.

This New German cinema emanated then from West Germany and, unlike films produced by the industry in East Germany, it was a cinema which attempted to come to terms with its nation's recent past, namely, the Nazi era. The cinema it was rejecting was that of the National Socialist film industry of the 1930s and 1940s, a cinema which still prevailed in the 1950s in the mainstream production with its highly popular provincial films (the so-called *Heimat* films – a genre which Edgar Reitz, in his 16-hour TV series *Heimat*, 1984, would subvert and reinscribe into a completely new meaning: a German political history told through the chronicle of provincial family life from the end of the First World War to 1982). The motivation of the New German cinema was to give a renewed credibility to the cinematic **apparatus** and industry after the abuse it had received under Nazi rule (as a propaganda tool). The government saw the merit of this motivation and wanted to exploit the non-conformist practices of this new wave cinema to give a new image to the new Germany.

In economic terms, this new and resisting cinema emerged at the very moment when the industry was itself in decline due to a major drop in audience numbers thanks to the increased consumption of television sets. With the industry under threat it was easier for spaces to open up for a new type of cinema. This same phenomenon occurred in Britain and France with their new waves, although it was a much slower process. Moreover, with West Germany audience reception of this new wave German cinema was by no means as enthusiastic as the initial reception of the French and British new waves in the two other countries. Indeed, German audiences showed very little interest in this new indigenous product. It was left to the French and American audiences to appreciate this new and strongly politicized cinema.

The names most famously associated with this movement, or perhaps it would be more appropriate to call it a collective of young, independent film-makers much in the **auteur** tradition, are those of Rainer Werner Fassbinder, Wim Wenders, Werner Herzog, Volker Schlöndorff, Hans Jürgen Syberberg, Alexander Kluge and Jean-Marie Straub (a Frenchman living in Munich and who worked in close collaboration with Danièle Huillet, also French). And the fetish **stars** most commonly linked with these film-makers are Hanna Schygulla and Klaus Kinski. Kaes (1996: 616) distinguishes two

phases in this cinema: the Young German Cinema of the 1960s and the New German Cinema of the 1970s. During the first phase, Alexander Kluge, a legalist by profession, was an effectual negotiator with the German government and successfully brought about the establishing of Board for the New German Cinema with an official fund (of 5 million marks) for the young German film-makers. But the established film industry took a dim view of this and lobbied the government to pass a Film Subsidy Law whereby films borrowing from the government would have to commit themselves to a return of at least half a million marks, effectively closing the door on this new movement's access to that form of state funding. The government appeared eager, however, to fund a national cultural product and the collective was only too ready to accept state subsidies. So other forms of funding, at a federal level, came into play. So too did grants, prizes and awards which went part of the way to helping this new cinema. Two film schools were established, the German Film and Television Academy in West Berlin (DFFB, 1966), the Film and Television School in Munich (HFF, 1967). By 1971, after several years of making short films and a few feature films under considerable hardship, some of the film-makers decided to take on board the distribution and international sales of their films. They formed the Authors' Film Publishers and were particularly successful in selling films outside West Germany (as it then was) but less so within the country.

Perhaps it was the subject matter of their films that deterred home audiences, because as Kaes (1996: 617) points out, the Young German Film 'was a cinema of resistance – against the mass-produced entertainment industry of the Nazi period and the 1950s, against the visual pleasure of lavish productions, and against the ideology of the economic miracle'. This new cinema strove for authentic **documentary** and its style was one of grainy **realism**. The films of the first phase, in the main, explored the fraught relationship of Germany to its past (Straub and Huillet's *Machorka-Muff*, 1962; Kluge's *Yesterday Girl*, 1966; Schlöndorff's *Young Törless*, 1966). Respectively, the themes dealt with in these films range from the continuing power wielded by the German military during the 1950s, the inescapability of one's past, and the conformity of intellectuals during the Nazi era (for further details see Kaes, 1996: 616–7). Films of the second phase continued to be socially and politically motivated and examined not just the German-speaking countries' recent past but also the contemporary scene. Fassbinder's *Fear Eats the Soul* (1974), Kluge's *Strongman Ferdinand* (1976) and the collectively directed *Germany in*

*Autumn* (1978) take a hard look at contemporary Germany from the point of view, respectively, of racism, fascism and the state of the nation in general including political **censorship**. Herzog's films stand out as different within this movement in that they tend to be in the romantic tradition and historical in their settings (as with *Aguirre, Wrath of God*, 1972). In most of his films, Herzog blends documentary, ethnographic authenticity with a surrealistic vision to narrate the story of an individual who is either driven mad by his own aspirations to fulfil an impossible ambition or alienated by the society in which he finds himself. His films, often based on the real lives of historical personages, treat the extremes of colonialism – that is, racism and total disregard for otherness.

But that is not the whole story of this cinema. If the most famous film-makers were male and Munich-based there was also a radical West Berlin film culture, an important part of which was the group of women film-makers (*Frauenfilme*), but which has been mostly overlooked by histories of cinema – the exceptions being Thomas Elsaesser's book (1989), a special *Jump Cut issue* (no. 2, 1982), and more recently Julia Knight's book (1992), the two-volume edited *Gender and German Cinema* (Frieden *et al.*, 1993), and Sabine Hake's study *German National Cinema* (2002). Some fifty-six women directors have contributed films (shorts, experimental video or feature length) to this movement. They, like their male counterparts, were mostly born after the Second World War and were in the 1960s part of the new generation of film-makers. If the male film-makers encountered difficulties with the establishment, at least not so many doors were closed to them as to the women. In the 1960s it was difficult for women to get into film schools and mostly, if they did get in, they received very little by way of technical training. Unlike their male counterparts, they did not 'burst onto the scene' in the 1960s. Perhaps it is their late start that has made them less 'noticeable' to film historians.

Primarily their output started in the 1970s – a significant date since their emergence coincided with the feminist movement in Germany (as elsewhere in the Western world) – a movement to which many were firmly committed. Exemplary of this commitment was the founding in 1974 by Helke Sander of the first and only European feminist film journal *Frauen and Film* (*Women and Film*). The journal's major objectives were to analyse the workings of patriarchal culture in cinema and to develop a woman's cinema and a feminist aesthetics. Among the women film-makers whom we can count as better known abroad we should include Jutta Bruckner, Margarethe von Trotta, Doris Dörrie, Helke Sander and Helma Sanders-Brahms,

although obviously there are many others. Their 1970s' films tended to focus on real-life issues such as abortion (illegal in West Germany), domestic violence, the myth of the economic miracle of the Adenauer era of the 1950s, working conditions and the possibilities of social change. Sabine Eckhard's *Paragraph 218* and *What We Have Against It* (1976–7), Cristina Perincioli's *The Power of Men is the Patience of Women* (1978), Jutta Bruckner's *Years of Hunger* (1980) and Barbara Kasper's *Equal Wages for Men and Women* (1971) are, respectively, examples of these tendencies in the women's cinema in the 1970s. Later, in the 1980s, the tendency was to explore the issue of whether there is a feminine aesthetic and a different even disruptive, way of viewing the world (as in Ulrike Ottinger's *The Mirror Image of Dorian Gray in the Yellow Press*, 1984, or Helke Sander's *The Trouble with Love*, 1984). In any event, by the 1980s, West Germany, as Knight (1992: 13) points out, 'boasted a highly acclaimed women's cinema and a vibrant feminist film culture as part of its new cinema', a point that negates the assumption made by film historians that the New German cinema died in 1982.

Women film-makers associated with New German cinema continue to practise their art within Germany. Many of their male counterparts have, however, left and relocated in the USA (either in Hollywood or New York). This contestatory cinema of resistance has not therefore died as such but has become very much a minority production within an already minority national cinema. Amongst the women of that generation, Dorris Dörrie's *Happy Birthday Türke!* (1991) serves to remind us that there are still issues on the political agenda – such as the question of marginality and difference – that need voicing and constant vigilance. But so too amongst the younger generation of film-makers does the work of Wolfgang Becker, *Life is all you get* (1996) and Andreas Dresen, *Night Shapes* (1998). Thus the legacy of New German cinema lives on.

For further reading see Corrigan, 1983, Elsaesser, 1989; Hake, 2002; Kaes, 1996; Knight, 1992; Rentschler, 1988.

## HAYS CODE

In 1922, the Motion Picture Producers and Distributors of America (MPPDA) was established. It quickly became more popularly known as the Hays Office – after the MPPDA's first president, Will H. Hays (1922–45). The MPPDA (later to become the Motion Picture

Association of America) was established in response to public outrage at the sex scandals in **Hollywood** and the sexual contents of films. The MPPDA was a bulwark between state and federal governments on the one hand and the film industry on the other. Hays was politically powerful and had a strong moral reputation and his job was to prevent intervention and **censorship** being governmentally imposed. The MPPDA applied pressure on the film companies to control their **stars** and the content of their films – a form of self-censorship which more or less worked until 1930. In 1934, under renewed pressure from the general public (and the moral brigades), the MPPDA produced the Motion Picture Production Code which was to act as a guideline for the industry on taste and decency. However, by 1934 public reaction to the industry's products again became vociferous, particularly at the violence portrayed in **gangster** films, and so the production code became mandatory.

*see also*: **censorship**

## HEGEMONY

A concept devised by the Italian political thinker Antonio Gramsci to describe the winning of consent to unequal class relations. It is a more succinct term for the expression often used in its place: dominant ideology, which within the Western world, is taken to be a white, middle-class, male construct. That particular socio-economic group exercises leadership in such a way that the subordinate groups see that it is in the general interest to collude with that construct. The dominant groups (elites) make sense of the institutions through which they govern those not in power by showing that they (as elites) are but representatives of those institutions that govern us all. Thus they use consensual terms such as 'our government', 'our economy', 'our educational system'. Those who are subordinate to it, then, are not 'coerced' but their consent and collusion in being so dominated emanates from a desire to belong to a social-political-cultural system, to a nation – to have a sense of nationhood. Mainstream or **dominant cinema** functions consensually in its mediation of hegemonic values (the family, social mobility, etc.) and as such is inscribed within that hegemony. In its **transparency** on the class interests of the dominant group, cinema reveals them as 'natural', therefore unquestionable and desirable.

*see also* **ideology**

## HISTORICAL FILMS/RECONSTRUCTIONS

Authenticity is the key term where historical films are concerned, at least in terms of the production practices. From **setting**, costumes, objects to use of **colour** (once it was finally introduced in 1952), every detail must appear authentic. Hence the very high costs of producing such films. The **narrative** focuses on a real event in the past, or the life of a real person. Often highly fictionalized, the historical film invests the moment or person with 'greatness'. 'Authenticity' serves a different purpose in this context. In this respect, historical films have an **ideological** function: they are serving up the country's national history before the eyes of the indigenous people, teaching us our history according to the 'great moments' and 'great men or women' in our collective past – our heritage on screen.

*see also*: **epics**, **genre**, **costume drama**

## HOLLYWOOD

Known as the 'dream factory', Hollywood was originally an escape route from the controlling powers over film companies of the Eastern Trust (1909). The climate, the mountains and plains and low land prices of California made Hollywood an ideal and profitable place to set up film studios. Huge studios were built in the Hollywood neighbourhood as well as extravagant mansions for the stars in nearby Beverly Hills. Production techniques were unique. By the 1920s Hollywood was producing 90 per cent of the American film product, and exporting massively abroad so that it was the most important film industry worldwide. By the 1930s the Hollywood studios were totally vertically integrated (controlling production, distribution and exhibition). In the same period, Hollywood was making around six hundred films a year (six times the number of most Western nations at that time) and exercised a major influence over American **audiences**. All changed in 1948 when a Supreme Court decision put an end to the vertical integration of the Hollywood studios. Then came television, destined to be Hollywood's major rival. Thought of as an intrinsically American phenomenon, Hollywood is presently losing its all-American status and being bought up by multinational, primarily Japanese, companies.

*see also*: **classical Hollywood cinema**, **studio system**, **stars**

For details on all these issues see **studio system**.

For further reading see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985; Higson and Maltby, 1999; Neale and Smith, 1998; Vasey, 1997.

## HOLLYWOOD BLACKLIST

As a reaction to the Cold War, the United States was extremely preoccupied with the Red Scare ('Reds under the beds'), and the fear that its institutions were in grave danger of infiltration from communists or subversives. To track down subversives the House of Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) was established in 1947 and, under the leadership of Senator McCarthy, a witch-hunt was led to unearth people who had associations in any way with communism or subversive activities. People denounced people, people tried to protect people. And Hollywood was no different. It too came under HUAC's scrutiny and Hollywood, to protect itself against government intervention, blacklisted numerous people in the industry who had been accused or denounced as communists or subversives. Hollywood wanted to show that it was patriotic, but many careers were destroyed. Only ten members of the industry (known as the Hollywood Ten) refused to testify before HUAC and were sent to prison for their courage.

## HORROR/GOTHIC HORROR/HAMMER HORROR/HORROR THRILLER/BODY HORROR/ VAMPIRE MOVIES

This genre is not always easy to distinguish from science-fiction films; indeed some critics see sci-fi films as a sub-genre of horror – but that is arguably too limiting. And perhaps Bruce Kuhn's definitions separating the two are amongst the most helpful (1990: 321–2). Whilst acknowledging that both promote growth he argues they do it in different ways – a first difference being that the sci-fi movie addresses our conscious state more than the horror movie, which first addresses our unconscious. Naturally sci-fi can be a projection of our worst fears – but generally speaking these fears have their first articulation in the conscious state, only secondarily in the unconscious. The tendency of sci-fi, Kuhn tells us, is to 'extend into some hypothetical time and place the unexamined assumptions of the pre-

sent culture' (1990: 321) – in a sense we can take this to mean 'man' pursuing technology to its logical conclusions. We learn from experience that technology (our own invention) can bring us great harm as well as good. Whereas the 'direction in which the horror film leads its audience – into the unconscious and through the implications of evil and of dream – can prove beneficial to the audience' because it allows us to examine our unconscious (1990: 322). In other words, as an effect, in horror movies the monstrous is visited upon us for us to deal with whereas in sci-fi we explore our evolution or our monstrous potential – and it is here that overlap between the two genres occurs of course.

The horror movie has its origins in the late nineteenth-century Victorian Gothic novel although it does have earlier antecedents, most famously Mary Shelley's *Frankenstein* (1818), and also Dr Polidori's lesser-known *The Vampyre* (1819). It is for reasons of its English and European heritage that this genre is not necessarily solely a Hollywoodian one (unlike the **Westerns** which are based on and in US history). Indeed, in terms of the American horror products, many were made outside the official walls of Hollywood (e.g. the Miami-made gore movies of H. G. Lewis in the 1960s – see *Blood Feast*, 1963; Tobe Hooper's *The Texas Chainsaw Massacre*, 1974*;* Abel Ferrara's *The Driller Killer*, 1979). Furthermore, British cinema also had its heyday with this genre in the form of the Hammer Horror series. Even so, Hollywood has a long track record with this genre dating back to 1931 (in terms of **sound** movies) with films like *Dracula* (Tod Browning, 1931) and *Frankenstein* (James Whale, 1931) and the numerous sequels these two icons of horror have spawned.

As Neale (2000: 93–4) makes clear, other intertexts beyond the Gothic novel also influenced the conventions and **mise-en-scène** of this genre. First, theatrical performances of the Gothic novels established an initial tradition and frame of reference for the sets and décors; second, circus and freak-shows were used as a source of inspiration for characterization; third, early 1900s' cinema adaptations of the Gothic novel and 1920s **German expressionism** both contributed to the systems of narration as well as the principles of **lighting** and décor.

The earliest type of horror movie is the hidden monster – whether it lie within our own beings (as with *Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde*, 1908) or an unsubstantiable being such as the vampire. In this context we think of the myriad Count Dracula movies, but interestingly the first prototype was a female vampire made famous in Feuillade's *Les Vampires* series (1915–16), starring the music-hall actress Musidora as the

notorious Irma Vep (anagram of Vampire). Feuillade's series picked up on the earliest tradition of vampire stories which had women as the predatory beasts. Lesbian desire is **foregrounded** in this series (women/virgins swoon under Vep's advances before succumbing to her) rather than the more stereotypical representation of woman as vamp, the bloodsucking killer of men. This is not, however, the dominant tendency of the vampire film, which tends to centre on the male. There are literary reasons for this male predominance since the earlier vampire stories themselves underwent a regendering. The vampire was last 'seen' as a woman in Sheridan Le Fanu's novel *Carmilla* (1871) and was superseded some twenty years later by Bram Stoker's *Dracula* (1897). The rest is history. With one or two rare exceptions, the agent of vampirism is male (see Kuhn and Radstone, 1990: 243).

The vampire film had its heyday in Hollywood during the 1930s (mostly at Universal). The mise-en-scène at that time was influenced by German expressionism – more particularly by the lighting and sets of two German silent horror movies, Robert Wiene's *The Cabinet of Dr Caligari* (1919) and Friedrich Murnau's *Nosferatu: A Symphony of Terror* (1922). After the Second World War the vampire film tended to disappear – being replaced by other sorts of alien 'unnaturalness'. However, it made a brilliant and vigorous comeback in the United Kingdom under the name of Hammer Horror films (produced by Hammer Production Limited). These were made from the late 1950s to the late 1960s and starred Christopher Lee and Peter Cushing (for Hammer's policy and strategy see Cook, 1985: 44–7). During the 1970s, the acid-cold dinner-suited vampire hitherto so much in evidence gave way to the acceptable face of vampirism: the vampire became more romantic to the point of deserving love (flower-vampire) and the female vampire made a brief reappearance (as in *Vampire Lovers*, Roy Ward Baker, 1970, *Le Rouge aux lèvres*, 1970, *Vampyres*, 1974, and as late as Tony Scott's *The Hunger*, 1983). By the early 1980s vampire films all but disappeared doubtless due to their unsuitability in the face of AIDS. But Francis Ford Coppola came back with a *Dracula* (1992) supposedly faithfully based on Bram Stoker's original. And in 1994 Neil Jordan's *Interview with the Vampire* transformed vampirism into a sexual aesthetic not without homosocial/sexual overtones.

Vampire films, however, are not the whole or even the main canon of horror movies. As indicated they dominated 1930s horror but it also should be acknowledged that there were other monster-type horror movies during that decade such as *Frankenstein* and its sequels.

These were about man-made monsters returning to haunt us and as such can be considered cross-generic (horror and sci-fi).

Essentially horror is composed of three major categories: the 'unnatural' (which includes vampires, ghosts, demonology, witchcraft, body horror); psychological horror (for example *Peeping Tom*, Michael Powell, 1959; *Psycho*, Alfred Hitchcock, 1960); and massacre movies (for example *The Texas Chainsaw Massacre*, Tobe Hooper, 1974). All three categories are a distinctly post-Second World War phenomenon. Having said this it is important, as always, to note that there were precedents (as well of course as overlaps within the categories) and in this context, because they are the precursor to the psychological horror movie, it is worth recalling the series of B movies produced during the 1940s for RKO by Val Lewton beginning with Tourneur's *Cat People* (1942). Lewton's films mix the unnatural with the psychological but they also brought horror more into the realm of the 'real' by locating the narratives within the domestic sphere and playing on the notion that horror is more imagined than seen. Just to cite three of his most famous productions: in *Cat People* the central female protagonist (Simone Simon), a newly wed, is haunted by her sexual frigidity (!) and imagines that she is turning into a panther (!); in *I Walked with a Zombie* (Tourneur, 1943), an up-dating of *Jane Eyre* and set in the Caribbean, Rochester's wife is no longer mad but the victim of a voodoo spell – the aura is one of unremitting psychological fear and ambiguity; finally, in *The Seventh Victim* (Robson, 1943) Satanism penetrates Greenwich Village (New York) as a young woman searches for her suicidal sister.

### *The 'unnatural' horror type*

This pre-eminently takes the form of the body-horror movie that by and large has become associated in the first instance with 1950s era and the double fear of the Cold War and the post-nuclear world in which people found themselves. The sci-fi movie is where much of the paranoia films about the Cold War come into play, with aliens attacking from Mars and the like. But that was not its exclusive location. Thus, Hitchcock's thriller/horror *Vertigo* (1958) clearly has Cold War resonances (the whole question of identity – are people who they say they really are – links into the 'red-scare' mentality of America in the 1950s).

But back to the body-horror. Bodily mutation movies were very much a central preoccupation of the unnatural horror type movie. Of course, their message, that monsters can either appear out of normal

bodies or can be introduced into society, equally links them into representations of the Cold War fear. A classic is *The Blob* (Yeaworth Jnr, 1958) in which a nasty (red) blob of snot invades a small American town and proceeds to suck the life-blood out of every American institution (including a diner!). But see also Eugene Lourié's series of beast-monster horror movies *The Beast from 20,000 Fathoms*, 1953, *The Colossus of New York*, 1958, or the British produced *Gorgo*, 1961. In each of these films a monster is resurrected (often within an urban context, New York or London) and creates fear and destruction. But what is interesting is that, much like their earlier body-monster prototypes, to whom they (however indirectly) refer, *King Kong* (1933) or *Frankenstein*, they also draw our sympathy – sending a contradictory message: if only we can know our enemy we might see 'him' as less monstrous. Fear expressed in these bodily mutation films was also a reflection of the post-nuclear society. Bodily mutation from man (sic) to beast and back again had a forerunner in the 1920 film *Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde* (John Robertson) and was then as in the 1950s concerned with the psychological effects upon the human being of advances in science. But, by the 1950s, the concerns had moved on because of the very real reference point of the atom bomb. Mutilation, destruction or disintegration of the body that was at the core of these horror films emanated from a consciousness of the effects on the human body of real science (the dropping of the atom bomb on Hiroshima and Nagasaki). The Japanese produced holocaust films of these effects (for example *Godzilla*, Inoshiro Honda, 1955), and the Americans did not neglect them either (as with *Them*, Gordon Douglas, 1954).

During the 1970s, this incursion into horror-realism was dropped in favour of a re-entry into the realms of fiction. This did not necessarily mean films lost their political edge, particularly, starting with *The Night of the Living Dead* (George Romero, 1968) and culminating in David Cronenberg's 'body-as-host-to-mutants' films of the mid- to late 1970s (*Shivers*, 1974; *Rabid*, 1976; *The Brood*, 1979). In these films evil is seen to triumph over good. The zombies of the *Night of the Living Dead* attack and eat the 'normal' inhabitants of a small 'normal' farm town in 'normal' America and the community's reaction is everyone for themselves. Set against America's political context of the time of racism and civil unrest, Romero's message is a strong one: individual self-preservation and cowardice have made us corrupt–we are the living dead. Meantime, Cronenberg's films focus on the body in a different way as the centre of evil. His bodies become invaded by alien organisms which act to bring out our worst compulsions and expose our repressed nastiness. In his films bodies

are subjected to physical plagues that act metaphorically for the socio-sexual and political morass we have created. These plagues take the form, respectively, of slug like parasites turning humans into sex-mad zombies, a strain of rabies transforming its victims into a murderous community and, finally, an Institute of Psychoplasmatics letting its psychotic patients out on the loose, including an avenging mother on the rampage. Located in between these two types of politically motivated horror movies, but still in the realm of evil, stands the controversial film *The Exorcist* (Friedkin, 1973) and its story about the possession of a 12-year-old girl. It left audiences traumatized in the cinema theatres (literally being sick, going mad, and so on). Whilst it can also be classified as a psychological horror film, it is perhaps more readily identifiable as an unnatural horror type because of the way in which the girl's body is overtaken and invaded by the devil. The representation of dark powers in respectable upper-middle-class Georgetown (Washington, DC) gives the film a slight politicized edge, though not as strongly as Cronenberg's and Romero's work. It is more ostensibly about religious faith and the influence that evil (in the form of the devil) can exert on individuals. It makes evil visible but so too does it the heroic good (in the form of the two exorcists who are willing to give their lives to save the girl). As such then it is very much a battle between good and evil within the realm of religion. But this is not a stand-alone satanist horror film. Polanski's *Rosemary's Baby* (1968) pre-dates it by some five years and has a more complex contemporary message that reflects the unease America was feeling as the 1960s drew to a close. The narrative is as much based in sexual politics and urban paranoia as it is in one person's belief that her husband may be the devil incarnate who has impregnated her with an alien satanic child.

During the 1980s and 1990s the unnatural horror film has continued to express anxiety of the body (often, but not always male) as a diseased space (*The Thing*, John Carpenter, 1981; *Alien*$^3$, Ridley Scott, 1992). And it is not difficult to read into these films of the last three decades a preoccupation with the politics of health, a fear of invasion of un(fore)seeable substances (cancer, AIDS). This represents quite a shift from the earlier 'unnatural' category of films – especially the vampire films that were so clearly about sexuality and bourgeois conformity.

### *The psychological horror film and the massacre movies*

The psychological horror film and the massacre movies (also known as slasher movies) reveal, albeit in very different ways, a particularly

vicious normalizing of misogyny (see **naturalizing** and **psychoanalysis**). Hitchcock is often credited, with his film *Psycho*, as the filmmaker who perceived the idea of locating horror within the human psyche – thus melding the psychological thriller with the horror genre. One can always find antecedents to be sure, but it is certainly the case that this very disturbing film with its cutting knives and graphic scenes of murder (hinted at rather than seen, recalling Lewton) helped to bring about the slasher movie of the 1970s.

Very few of these movies fall short of being 'hate-women-movies' (the slasher movies in particular can arguably be interpreted as a backlash on the early 1970s feminist movements). By way of understanding this quite dominant trend in this cinema it is useful to look at what Richard Dyer has to say, in an article on Coppola's *Dracula* (*Sight and Sound*, January 1993, vol. 3, 1), about vampirism. He makes the point that nineteenth-century vampirism originates in a bourgeois society that has become aware that its concealed dependency on the working **class** (which came about as a result of the industrial capitalist democracy) is now being uncovered. In other words dependence of the stronger on the weaker *as it is about to be exposed* breeds an almost irrational fear which is registered through the body. The vampire assails bourgeois morality by seducing its virgins and drinking their life-blood (what chance the bourgeoise surviving the attacks of the mob?). Class issues are sexualized: the brute force of the working-class (bestiality) will undo (deflower or destroy) the future of middle-class capitalism. Similarly, in the psychological horror films and massacre movies, male dependence on the female for his **subjectivity** (sense of identity derived from his difference from the female) again becomes registered through the body. Female presence exposes the dependency. Thus penile instruments (phallus replacements or substitutes) such as knives or chainsaws are used to recastrate the phallic woman. Although the woman is hierarchically positioned as weaker, as is the working-class, none the less she is finally stronger since she holds the key to male identity through her difference. The killing therefore is an irrational response to the fear of exposure. *He* must kill *her* before the dependency is exposed.

Interestingly, as Mark Kermode points out (2003), much of the slasher-movie output since the 1970s heydays has been one of remakes – suggesting a form of self-cannibalization that would be funny if the films were not so 'horrid'. Thus, the 1980s and 1990s slasher movies (perhaps first triggered by the populist *Psycho*-imitated slasher *Halloween*, Carpenter, 1978) have emptied the radical political edge of gore cinema and replaced it with postmodern horror

pastiche – classic examples of which are *Friday the 13th* (Cunningham, 1980, and its sequels), *A Nightmare on Elm Street* (Craven, 1984, and its sequels) and *Scream* (Craven, 1996, and its sequels). These are remakes (incessantly pointing back to their earlier prototypes) whose only claim to renewal can be imputed to the special effects which lift them beyond the creaky effects of the 1970s or even 1950s masters. The current slew of remakes in the 2000s (e.g. *The Exorcist: The Version You've Never Seen*, Friedkin (remaking himself almost!), 2000; *The Texas Chainsaw Massacre*, Nispel, 2003) still suggests that, apart from the growth in effects offered by CGI which allow for the virtualization of even more implausible action, the genre is stuck.

This is not to say that we should be dismissive of the horror genre. Robin Wood, writing on the horror genre, is probably right when he says that because horror films are linked to the unconscious they can represent that which other genres repress (1979: 13). Thus the horror genre occupies a revelatory rather than a complacently reflective relationship to ideology, the forms and meanings of which can be summed up as follows: the horror film represents all that our society represses (including the Id drives); our anxieties about modern consumer culture, including our reliance on technology; our anxieties about the Oedipal trajectory, including man's fear of castration and 'horror' or fear of reproduction; society's fears of otherness (the female reproductive body, queer sexuality, ethnic otherness).

Cook (1985: 99) explains that, despite its popularity as a genre, the horror film did not achieve respectability in critics' circles until the 1970s. She attributes this change to the impact of psychoanalysis on film theory. To have taken the genre seriously prior to this time would have meant dealing with the suppression of the Id, a repression of certain unspeakable desires (sexual and psychological). It is instructive that until the psychological thriller of the 1960s, which suggested that the monster is repressed in us and not external to us (although Cocteau's *La Belle et la Bête*, 1946, certainly made this point 30 years earlier), our Id, our own 'other', took the form of an alien or monster outside of us – as if the genre itself could not face up to the suppression of the inner Id either. This would suggest that the **spectator**, beyond the thrill of being frightened by the terror and violence made visible before her or him, is also attracted by the implicit ambivalence inherent in the genre as to where it should locate sexual and psychological 'abnormalities'. In this context what do we make of *The Silence of the Lambs* (Demme, 1990) in which we almost come to like the charismatic Hannibal Lecter, the cannibalistic and cultured serial killer?

*see also*: **genre**, **science-fiction films**

For further reading see Chibnall and Petley, 2002; Creed, 1993; Humphries, 2002; Jancovich, 1992 and 2002; Kuhn, 1990; Hardy *et al.*, 1986; Neale, 2000; Paul, 1994; Tudor, 1989.

## ICONOGRAPHY

A means whereby visual motifs and style in films can be categorized and analysed. Iconography can study the smallest unit of meaning of a film, the **image**, as well as the largest: the generic qualities of the whole film. Iconography then stresses both **mise-en-scène** and **genre**. Iconography also refers to the dress-codes of characters in the film. Iconography is then historically marked – the icons of one period will not be icons for another – and so it points to the shift over time of the look of a particular genre. It also points to social and sexual changes. If there appears to be no change, that too merits investigation.

For illustrative purposes let's take the iconography of the **Western** and the **gangster** film. Both genres have their dress-codes and their 'tools of the trade' (Cook, 1985: 60). The horse, the six-shooter, the spurs, boots, waistcoat, neckerchief (etc.) for the Western; fast cars, automatic rifles, flashy suits for the gangster film. The Western's hero smokes a cheroot, the gangster a cigar. The gangster lives in urban spaces, mostly in dark enclosed environments – at least in the gangster movies of the 1930s and 1940s. Action takes place at night. In more contemporary gangster films action takes place day or night. In the Western the hero is mostly moving across vast plains or desert land, arriving in small towns, tying his horse up to the inevitable cross-bar in front of the saloon (or wherever else he is headed). What differentiates these genres primarily is that the Western almost 'never changes' – the iconography remains almost the same, even in Clint Eastwood's late films, despite their challenge to the ideological message of Westerns (as in *Pale Rider*, 1985; *Unforgiven*, 1992 – both directed by and starring Eastwood). Gangster movies' iconography does shift with the times. The special **lighting** effects of the 1930s and then 1940s **films noir** are no longer present in gangster films. Even the iconography of violence has 'evolved' – nothing is spared in its mise-en-scène. Part of the reason for this absence of change for Westerns has to do with **audience** expectation. The Western refers to a time gone by, but it is still part of the United States' cultural

history and, as part of the currency for the society for which it works, it must perpetuate the existing iconography. If it does not, it disturbs. Such is not the case for the gangster film. Audience expectation is quite the opposite. Urban violence is very much an everyday preoccupation in the United States, as is gang warfare. This might explain why a new form of the gangster genre, Black gangster films, has become so popular – speaking, as it does, to both the reality and the **myth** of Black urban violence (for example *New Jack City*, Mario Van Peebles; *Boyz 'n the Hood*, John Singleton, both 1991).

Iconography has connotative powers beyond the visual imagery. For example, dress-codes reflect more than just the historical period. Gangsters in 1930s films wear very flashy suits as opposed to the detective in his sober suit, connoting **excess** versus order. Women, in particular, 'say' a lot through their clothes: the power-dressing woman, almost masculinized in her shoulder-padded tailored suit (as in 1940 movies); the untrustworthy *femme fatale* in a long slinky gown – preferably with a slit thigh-high – and so on.

## IDEOLOGY

Ideology as a theoretical term comes from Marxism. Ideology is the **discourse** that invests a nation or society with meaning. And, since it reflects the way in which a nation is signified, it is closely aligned to **myth**. Ideology, then, is at the interface of language and political organization (the discourse, logos, of or on ideas). It is a system of ideas that explains, makes sense of, society. But the 'making sense', as Karl Marx points out, is predominantly the domain of the ruling classes, who assume their right to rule as natural. Thus, according to Marx, ideology is the practice of reproducing social relations of inequality. The ruling classes not only rule, they rule as thinkers and producers of ideas and so control the way the nation perceives itself and, just as importantly, they regulate the way other classes are perceived or represented. From this 'misrepresentation' (that is, the ruling classes' assumption of their natural right to govern and to determine the status of other classes) comes Marx's idea of ideology as false consciousness. But the subordinate classes also act with false consciousness, says Marx, if they accept that their position is natural, that is, if they accept the prevailing ideology as it makes sense of their subordination (see **naturalizing**).

Louis Althusser (1984: 37) takes issue with Marx's notion of false consciousness and makes the point that ideology is not just a case of a

controlling few imposing an interpretation of the nation upon the subjects of the state. He suggests that, in ideology, the subjects also represent to themselves 'their relation to those conditions of existence which is represented to them there' (1984: 37). In other words, they make ideology have meaning by colluding with and acting according to it. Why this consensuality? Because of the reassuring nature of national identity. The nation state gives people a sense of identity, status and pride. The state is *their* state, the governing body is *their* indigenous governing body, not some foreign ruler's, and so on. Ideology, then, is a necessity and it is produced 'by the **subject** for the subjects' (1984: 44). Thus society renders ideology material (gives it a reality) and so too do the subjects. Individuals recognize and identify themselves as subjects of ideology. Althusser's central thesis that 'ideology interpellates individuals as subjects' (1984: 44) – that is, that ideology constructs the subject, that the subject is an effect of ideology – has had profound implications for the theorizing of **spectator**-text relations. As we shall see, this recognition and identification process by which ideology functions is one that film readily re-enacts.

Ideology infiltrates everyday life and serves the ruling classes, collusion notwithstanding. The rulers are after all those who have produced and control the institutions in which we as subjects function and by which we understand our society. School, the family, the media, are obvious institutions that are permeated by ideology. However, even though dominant ideology serves the ruling classes (who put it there in the first place), ideology is not a static thing nor is it immutable. Within dominant ideology, because it is composed of so many diverse institutions and institutional practices, there are bound to be contradictions. So while ideology is dominant (and despite its 'naturalness') it is also contradictory, therefore fragmented, inconsistent and incoherent. Moreover it is constantly being challenged by resistances from those it purports to govern: groups such as the Black Power movement in the United States, the feminist movement in the Western world and some parts of the Eastern world, subculture groups like the punk movement – these are just some of the most obvious examples.

Where does ideology fit into a discussion of cinema? Cinema is an ideological **apparatus** by nature of its very seamlessness. We do not see how it produces meaning – it renders it invisible, **naturalizes** it. Mainstream or **dominant cinema**, in **Hollywood** and elsewhere, puts ideology up on screen. Hollywood's great subject, heterosexuality, is inscribed into almost every **genre**. So genre is a first place

to examine the workings of ideology. The other area is, of course, that of representation (class, race, **gender**, age and so on). Genres function ideologically to reproduce the capitalist system. They are hermeneutically determined, that is, there will always be closure, a resolution at the end. In this respect they provide simple common-sense answers to very complex issues, the difficulties of which get repressed. Already, however, we can see how generic convention is opening itself up as ideologically contradictory. Even though it is seemingly producing meanings that support the status quo, none the less, generic convention is quite distinct from the social reality which it purports to reflect. Social reality does not present easy solutions, life is not 'order/disorder/order restored' as the **classical narrative** system would have us believe. But because of the reality-effect which seamlessness produces, the spectator is easily stitched into the narrative (see **suture**), the process of recognition and identification is under way and so too the ideological function of film – which is why generic repetition works so well and we go back again and again to the movies.

Because ideology is contradictory, some films unintentionally show 'disjunctures in their relation to ideology' (Kuhn, 1982: 86), what Kuhn calls structuring absences (1982: 87). In other words, what gets repressed, left out, draws attention to itself by its absence. The much-quoted example is the **historical** biopic film *Young Mr Lincoln* (John Ford, 1939) which the *Cahiers du cinéma* group subjected to a detailed textual analysis (*Screen*, Vol. 15, No. 3, 1972). Although supposedly a historical film about a man of enormous political importance, it is precisely history and politics that are the structuring absences of that film. The question then becomes why? To 'imbue the figure of Lincoln with qualities of universalism – precisely to represent the man as outside history, and thus to elevate him to the ahistorical status of myth' (Kuhn, 1982: 87). Another reason could be the historical context. At the time of its release (1939), the United States was maintaining an isolationist policy as Germany began its war on Europe. It was choosing to stand out of history. So this was not the time for political history lessons, nor for statements (good or bad) about the nation state. As ahistorically positioned, the United States could not 'show' history, the 'reality' of Lincoln's time. Thus, it could not proselytize about the abolition of slavery or show the nation as politically divided (the Civil War). The need for a man (sic) of mythic status also points to a nation facing a contradiction or dilemma which it seeks to resolve through the very creation of that myth. Universalism implies being above all conflict. Finally, still

within the historical context, the *Cahiers* group's reading examined the film within its domestic political sphere and claimed that it mediated Republican values to counter Roosevelt's Democratic New Deal measures (1933–41) and to promote a Republican victory in the presidential election of 1940 (see **auteur**; and Cook, 1985: 189).

There are, then, films which show the contradictions inherent in ideology. Two of the earliest advocates of applying symptomatic readings to expose the ideological operations in film, Comolli and Narboni, put it succinctly when they say that such films contain an 'internal criticism . . . which cracks the film apart at the seams. If one reads the film obliquely, looking for symptoms, if one looks beyond its apparent formal coherence, one can see that it is riddled with cracks: it is splitting under an internal tension which is simply not there in ideologically innocuous film' (1969/1977: 7). **Melodrama** and **women's films** would seem to be just such innocuous films with their ideologies of romantic love, the family and maternity. But feminist readings against the grain have rendered visible the patriarchal ideology upon which these films feed and exposed the ideological contradictions inherent in that ideology (see **feminist film theory**).

*see also*: **hegemony** and **class**

## IMAGE

As a basic definition, the image is the smallest unit of meaning in a filmic text in the sense that it is composed of a single shot. The image lends itself to a series of readings depending on the type of shot. Volume and size of objects within the shot give a first denotative reading; the angle of the camera further informs the meaning or preferred reading at a denotative level. When one is considering the image, considerable importance must be given to what is called the iconography of the image, for this will yield a second-order or connotative reading.

*see also*: **shots**, **denotation/connotation, iconography**

## IMAGINARY/SYMBOLIC

These two key psychoanalytical concepts were first devised by Jacques Lacan to refine Sigmund Freud's theory on the child's uncon-

scious and conscious drives in the development of its subjectivity (sense of identity). Freud described these drives in sexual terms, referring to them as the mirror phase followed by the Oedipal phase. The merit of Lacan's theory was to place the discussion of this development more evidently in a linguistic rather than a purely sexual domain. And, although he focused primarily on the male and paid less attention to the female child, none the less, by frameworking subjectivity within language his theory greatly facilitated feminist theory in general and feminist film theorists in particular when discussing sexual difference and subjectivity (see **feminist film theory**). What follows is a brief outline of the earlier Freudian theory and the nuances brought to it by Lacan – after which its relevance to film theory will be explained.

According to Freud, there is a stage at which the child goes through the mirror phase. The mirror phase is, of course, an abstract concept and it is used to describe a first part of the process of achieving sexual and (for Lacan) social identity. The mirror phase normally occurs when the child is weaned from the mother (so the age of the child varies). Until that moment the child has had an illusory notion of unity with the mother – it feels as one with the mother. In Lacan's terminology this identification with the mother is the first stage of the Imaginary. Subsequently, the mother holds the child up to the mirror. The child now has an illusory sense of identification and unity with that image of her or his self in the mirror. This is the second stage of Lacan's Imaginary and what Freud referred to as the narcissistic moment in the child's development towards a subjectivity (sense of identity). It is at this juncture that the male child perceives his sexual difference from his mother, or the girl child her sameness with the mother. The child becomes aware of the illusory nature of his or her sense of unity with the reflected image in the mirror – it is not one and the same. Simultaneously, it senses the loss/absence of the mother (the loss of the breast, and the ensuing loss of a sense of unity with her).

The male child perceives that he is sexually different from his mother: that he has a penis and she does not (remember she is in the mirror too, holding him up to look at his reflection). According to Freud, the male child perceives the mother as lacking a penis and, as Freud explains, it is that lack that fills the male child with the fear of castration. The mother represents what he could lose. So she is potentially, in Freudian terms, a castrating mother. The female child meanwhile, says Freud, perceiving her sameness with her mother, wishes she had a penis – the notorious penis-envy **myth**. Lacanian

psychoanalysis does not challenge the idea of the castrating mother but does make the point that the child's subjectivity is dependent on the presence of the mother, the female other. Lacan is, of course, referring to the male child; he is less clear where the female child is concerned. Thus, male subjectivity is dependent on the (m)other. Without her, the sense of self as subject is not secure.

At this stage, the mirror phase, or the Imaginary, draws to a close. The male child now moves on to the next stage in his development: the Oedipal phase. Sensing his difference from his mother, but still desiring unity with her to assert his identity (that is, his difference, his subjectivity), the male child now wishes to bond sexually with his mother. According to Freud, the father must impose the sexual taboo – forbidding intercourse with the mother. The male child must seek to bond with a female who is not his mother. If he disobeys, the punishment he risks is castration, this time by the father. That is, he could realize his worst fear and become like his mother – what then of his identity?

Lacan gives a different emphasis to this stage, which he refers to as the Symbolic, by situating it in language. At the moment that the male child recognizes his desire for his mother, the father intercedes and imposes the patriarchal law. The father is the third member to enter the reflecting mirror. It is he who represents to the child the authoritative figure in the family. So the child imagines what the authoritative figurehead would say – the father is, therefore, a symbolic father. The father proscribes incest. This taboo is imposed linguistically through the 'No' that is defined by Lacan as the Law of the Father. Because it is based in language, patriarchal law is a Symbolic Order. The male child must then decide whether to obey. To obey means to repress desire. This repression founds the unconscious. However, in exchange for this repression, the male child enters into the Symbolic Order, becomes part of the patriarchal law, joins forces with the father and so perpetuates the Law of the Father (for more detail see **psychoanalysis**). By entering into the Symbolic Order the male child enters into language and becomes subject to it. Where he waspre-linguistic in the Imaginary he is now subject of language – patriarchal language. By entering into the Symbolic Order the male child conforms to the Law of the Father, acknowledges his misrecognition of the object of his desire, the mother, and seeks now to fulfil his Oedipal trajectory not through his mother but through a female other. His sexual security depends on it as does his subjectivity (remember that Freud and Lacan concur that the male child's sexual identity is reliant on his sense of difference from his mother, the female (m)other).

The whole notion of identity for the male child is then bound up with the question of sexual difference and language. What of the female child? First, she will never fully relinquish her desire for her mother because there is no recognition of it within the Law of the Father. Second, she will never fully enter into the Symbolic Order because the Law of the Father does not apply to her. She is then doubly poised both sexually *and* in relation to language. With regard to the first point, we recall that her subjectivity is determined by her sameness with her mother. She is then doubly desiring, first, of her own sex (the mother) and also the male sex (her natural trajectory is to desire the father, and, forbidden that desire by the father, she will then seek to fulfil it by finding a male other). In terms of language, again she is doubly positioned. On the one hand, she is pre-linguistic: because she can never be subject of patriarchal language she is always outside it. On the other hand, however, she is also *in* the Symbolic Order. Even though she is not subject of language (unlike the male child) but object of the Symbolic Order, she must be there in the patriarchal constructs of sexual identity: her reflection as (mother must be in the mirror for the male to recognize his difference.

### *Relevance to film theory*

These concepts can serve to illuminate, first the **ideological** operations at work within the film **diegesis** and, second, those taking place at the level of the spectator-text relationship. I will deal only with the first point here since the second is amply discussed in the entries on **spectator** positioning and **suture**.

Cinema has been widely acknowledged as revelatory of psychological states and mental experiences since before 1914 by film-makers and some critics. However, prior to the impact on film **theory** of Lacan's re-thinking of Freud, prevailing readings of films tended to be based not so much in psychoanalysis as in sociological and aesthetic interpretations. If psychoanalysis did motivate reading and theorizing on film – as it did in the 1920s and again in the 1940s and 1950s – then the focus, in the earlier period, was on film's ability to translate the workings of the unconscious on to the screen and, in the later period, on the **mise-en-scène** of a populist interpretation of Freud. The 1920s films of the **avant-garde** certainly addressed questions of subjectivity and male dependence on woman to provide that sense of sexual identity and in that respect predate Lacan. Conversely, the 1940s and 1950s films – many coming from **Hollywood** in the light of the popularization of Freud – produced **narratives** of mother/daughter relationships

which portrayed the mother as either self-sacrificing or as controlling and repressive (see Kaplan, 1992, for detailed analyses of mother/daughter relationships). Otherwise film narratives gave potted versions of (usually male) youth's dysfunctionality in the contemporary United States. In this instance it is the neglect of the father or the overpowering nature of the mother which brings about their offspring's tormented state.

However, it is in the new readings of film through Lacan and post-Lacanians (including Lacanian feminists) that we can begin to measure the helpfulness of these key concepts of the Imaginary and the Symbolic. This is particularly the case with recent readings of film noir and women's films (see melodrama and women's films). These readings have been able to demonstrate that the ideological operations at work, for example in the film noir, seek to disguise the fact that the *femme fatale* or 'woman who knows too much' must be punished because she is 'bad'. These new readings suggest also that she ends up victim, not only because she is 'bad' but because the male protagonist has been unable to assert his difference in relation to the female other and has failed therefore to complete his Oedipal trajectory satisfactorily. Woman threatens the male's sense of subjectivity because the assertion of his difference depends on the presence of the woman, of the (m) other reflected in the mirror. Indeed, she may refuse to be in the mirror. In this case the male protagonist often feels obliged to spy on her and follow her in a desperate attempt to make her comply with her assigned role in patriarchy. But that is not the only way in which woman threatens. She also threatens because she is the 'mother'. And the male knows he must move on to the Symbolic Order or face castration, because he may not make his mother the object of his desire. Because that threat points to the instability of his dependence on the 'other', and brings in its wake the apparently concomitant threat of castration, the male adopts two strategies: **voyeurism** and **fetishism**. Voyeurism places the woman under constant surveillance and is a way of controlling her (to the point of sadistic murder, as in *Psycho*, Alfred Hitchcock, 1960). Fetishism commodifies the woman's body by overinvesting parts of the body with meaning (breasts, legs, torso in slinky dresses) and thereby denies its difference: the male produces a masculinized female image that is phallic and therefore reassuring. In both instances, he neutralizes the threat. In both, however, we are in the presence of masculinity in crisis and the projection of the male's fears on to women – a **mise-en-scène** of a profoundly ambivalent attitude towards femininity. And it is in this respect that the perceived misogyny of film-makers (most notoriously Hitchcock but there are

plenty of others) can be seen in a far more complex and indeed more interesting light.

*see also*: **psychoanalysis, Oedipal trajectory, suture, apparatus, sexuality, spectator, subject/subjectivity**

For further reading on Lacan see Benvenuto and Kennedy, 1986; Grosz, 1990. For psychoanalysis and film see Kaplan, 1990; Penley, 1988 and 1989. For film readings see Fischer, 1989; Kaplan, 1980 and 1992; Kuhn, 1985; Modleski, 1988; Mulvey, 1989.

## INDEPENDENT AMERICAN CINEMA

A term that broadly spans a thirty-year period from the 1970s through to now. The first wave of so-called independent American film-makers were directors like Francis Ford Coppola, Martin Scorsese, Dennis Hopper and Paul Schrader, although of course they had antecedents in the form of the late 1950s director John Cassavetes – often referred to as the forefather of today's US indie cinema (see *Shadows*, 1959). This group emerged from what is known as the post-classical era of **Hollywood** and as such either set up their own production companies (Coppola's now-named Zoetrope in California) or got their work produced by independent producers and friends (Scorsese, Hopper). Scorsese is, of course, also famous for bringing East Coast film production to the fore (e.g. Taplin–Perry–Scorsese Productions for *Mean Streets*, 1973) and for foregrounding in particular an unglamorous edgy New York in full spin with the various political crises of the 1970s (starting with Vietnam; see *Taxi Driver*, 1976). Schrader, in a different way, investigates other aspects of political corruption in the form of working-class exploitation and union bosses' alliances with the mob. The raw-edge political nature of their films of that period (Hopper's *Easy Rider*, 1969, *The Last Movie*, 1971; Scorsese's *Mean Streets*, *Taxi Driver*; Coppola's *The Conversation*, 1974, *Apocalypse Now*, 1979; Schrader's *Blue Collar*, 1978) is a legacy that remains with subsequent waves of independent film-makers in that their films continue to address social and contemporary issues. For example, David Lynch's work closely examines the moral squalor of small-town communities. From his earliest *Eraserhead* (1979) via *Blue Velvet* (1986) and *Lost Highway* (1996) to *Mulholland Dr.* (2000) he explores the limits of decadence and human morbidity. The dreams of nightmares are his world, becoming morality plays that are almost familiar to us based as they are in a middle-America topography known to us all.

Independent cinema, as it devolves from the Cassavetes' heritage into the 1990s, is one that does not strive for perfection or the seamlessness of Hollywood; it is not the production values that count but the vision of the film-maker – indeed a good indie film will often show the poverty of its means of production, producing what could be termed a guerrilla or grunge cinema (reminiscent of some of the Latin American third cinema of the 1970s). Grainy images, jerky editing, improvised dialogue, sprawling narratives, long takes and flawed images go hand in hand with this kind of product – associated with some aspects of Hal Hartley's work (*Trust*, 1990, *Amateur*, *Flirt*, both 1995), Paul Thomas Anderson (*Boogie Nights*, 1997; *Magnolia*, 2000) or the one-offs (to date) Kevin Smith's *Clerks* (1994) or Darren Aronofsky's *Pi* (1998). But there is also the more polished indie product – one whose heritage is less Cassavetes and more Scorsese and Coppola and which also speaks to yet another cinema, that of the European art-house cinema. This is the one we associate with the work of Jim Jarmusch (*Mystery Train*, 1989); Steven Soderbergh, who once said about his *The Limey*, 1999, 'it's *Get Carter* made by Alain Resnais' (1999, 12); Quentin Tarantino; and Sofia Coppola. As another type there is the work of a number of film-makers (which includes the above category of film-makers), also very polished, which takes the myths of America and also the myths propagated by American cinema itself and turns them on their head. The Coen brothers (*Fargo*, 1995, *The Man Who Wasn't There*, 2001), John Sayles' films (*City of Hope*, 1991, *Lone Star*, 1995, *Sunshine State*, 2002) and Jim Jarmusch's *Dead Man* (1995) come to mind, as do two other film-makers who come more readily into this category of production but who also cross boundaries into **queer cinema**: Gus Van Sant (*Drugstore Cowboy*, 1989, *My Own Private Idaho*, 1991) and Todd Haynes (*Velvet Goldmine*, 1998).

What is interesting is that quite a number of these contemporary indie film-makers – like some of their 1970s antecedents (Scorsese for one, although he has had a tumultuous relationship with Hollywood) – have successfully crossed over into mainstream, most famously the Coen brothers, Soderbergh and Tarantino. (Perhaps it is also worth mentioning that many indies of this period have been financed by Hollywood offshoots.) Their motivations are either to cash in on their cachet and finance their independent personal projects or to try and work at change within the system. Some film-makers step in and out of Hollywood – like Van Sant who has successfully mixed this practice although he has only made two films with Hollywood: *Good Will Hunting* (1997, with Miramax), which won him two Oscars; and *Finding Forrester* (2000, with Columbia).

This has not prevented some critics from accusing him of selling out. However, he had already announced through his film *Psycho* (1998) – which had the appearance on paper of being a remake of Hitchcock that Universal were only too pleased to finance but which was a shot-by-shot deconstruction of the masterpiece – that he was on his way back to his independent ways! *Gerry* (2001), the style of which was inspired by the Hungarian auteur Belá Tarr, and the documentary-feel of *Elephant* (2003) confirmed this return.

Predominantly the work of these contemporary indie film-makers reveals to us the world of losers, nobodies, displaced people, confused and dysfunctional loners. The America Hollywood seeks to disguise if not hide. But what is of course remarkably absent from the above list of film-makers is, first, the presence of women indie film-makers – Sofia Coppola (*Virgin Suicides*, 1999, *Lost in Translation*, 2003) stands out virtually alone (Kathryn Bigelow struggles in mainstream) – and, second, black film-makers (men and women). With regard to the latter group an entry has been made under **Black cinema USA**. With regard to the former, that, regrettably, has yet to come.

Further reading see Hillier (2001); Holmlund and Wyatt (2005).

## INDEPENDENT CINEMA

This term refers to films made by film-makers independently of the dominant, established film industry. Because they are made outside mainstream cinema practices they tend to be **avant-garde** or **counter-cinematic**, and, even if not experimental, they all tend to give an alternative voice to dominant **ideology**. They are mostly low-budget films either privately financed or in certain countries partly subsidized by government.

The entry above focuses on one well-known form of independent cinema, **independent American cinema** (which is more of a practice than a specific movement), although of course there are many others, some of which are discussed under separate entries in this book, such as **cinema nôvo**, the various European **New Wave cinemas** (Britain, France, Germany) and, finally, some of the independent cinemas discussed under **Third Cinema**.

*see also*: **avant-garde**, **counter-cinema**, **underground film**

## INTERTEXTUALITY

Literally this expression means texts referring to texts, or texts citing past texts. Intertextuality is a relation between two or more texts which influences the reading of the intertext. This latter term refers to the present existing text which, in some part, is made up by reference to other texts. Most films are intertextual to some degree – a text referring to other texts, an intertext in whose presence other texts reside. For example, a film may be based on an original text, a novel or play. The shooting style of the film may be painterly, suggesting painted texts to which it might be referring. **Shots** or combinations of shots might refer back to earlier films (by way of a homage to earlier directors). Songs within a film are an intertext. Thus, if the **star** playing the central protagonist is also a well-known singer the **audience** will expect a song. That performance refers to another part of the star persona that has been developed outside of film-making and so refers to another text: the star as singer.

## ITALIAN NEO-REALISM

A film movement that lasted from 1942 to 1952. Even though critics credit Roberto Rossellini's 1945 *Roma città aperta* (*Rome Open City*) as being the first truly neo-realist film, Luchino Visconti's *Ossessione* (1942, *Obsession*) was really the herald of this movement. And in fact the scriptwriter of Visconti's film, Antonio Pietrangeli, coined the term *neo-realism* in 1943 when talking about *Ossessione*. The main exponents of this movement are Visconti, Rossellini and Vittorio De Sica.

Rossellini called neo-realism both a moral and an aesthetic cinema, and in order to understand what he meant we need to look at the historical context in which that cinema emerged. During the period of fascist rule under Mussolini the type of cinema that was being produced was divorced from reality and concerned only with promoting a good image of Italy. The government had decreed that crime and immorality should not be put on screen. The films primarily produced were slick middle-class **melodramas**, disparagingly called (after fascism) 'white telephone movies'. During the fascist government's control of the film industry, some 'good' did come about: the famous Cinecittà studios (Italy's answer to **Hollywood**) were built and the Italian Film School was established. And, perhaps more significantly, some film-makers took a moral and aesthetic stance against fascism.

Neo-realism, then, owes its existence in part to these film-makers' displeasure at the restrictions placed on their freedom of expression. And it is in this light that Visconti's 1942 film can be seen as the harbinger of neo-realism. But he too had precedents to his own film style. During the 1930s Visconti worked as an assistant with the French film-maker Jean Renoir: a significant apprenticeship, first, because of Renoir's association with the **French poetic realist** movement and, second, because he worked with Renoir on a film that historians perceive as the precursor to the Italian neo-realist movement, *Toni* (1934). Undoubtedly the social and pessimistic realism of poetic realism did cross-fertilize into neo-realism, but the point to make about *Toni* is that it was a film based on a true story of an Italian immigrant worker in France whose passion for a woman led him to murder. Renoir used non-professional actors, shot the film on location and kept to the original **soundtrack**. The film has a grainy, realistic look which the crackling sound-track reinforces in its **documentary** verisimilitude. Visconti's *Ossessione*, while not a true story, was loosely based on an American pulp fiction novel, James M. Cain's *The Postman Always Rings Twice.* The film was shot on location in northern Italy and tells the story of a labourer who becomes obsessed by a woman and agrees to her plan to murder her husband. Having accomplished the deed, she gets killed in a car crash ('naturally'!). With this tale of sordid obsessions and shots redolent with lust and sensuality, Visconti was deliberately defying governmental decrees of cleanliness and propriety on screen. The film was released, but in a heavily censored cut and Visconti did not make another film until 1948, *La Terra trema* (*The Earth Trembles).* However, the seeds for neo-realism were sown.

By 1943 fascist rule in Italy was coming to an end and in 1944 Italy was occupied by the Allies. The fall of fascism allowed for the truth to be told about the impoverished conditions of the working **classes** and of urban life. And this is precisely what a small group of film-makers did. They rejected the old cinema and its codes and conventions and went for the gritty reality. The basic tenets of this movement were that cinema should focus on its own nature and its role in society and that it should confront audiences with their own reality. These principles had implications for the style and content of this cinema. First, it should project a slice of life, it should appear to enter and then leave everyday life. As 'reality' it should not use literary adaptations but go for the real. Second, it should focus on social reality: on the poverty and unemployment so rampant in postwar Italy. Third, in order to guarantee this **realism**, dialogue and language

should be natural – even to the point of keeping to the regional dialects. To this effect also, preferably non-professional actors should be used. Fourth, location shooting rather than studio should prevail. And, finally, the shooting should be documentary in style, shot in natural light, with a hand-held camera and using observation and analysis. These are very exacting demands, and in fact only one film meets with all these tenets: De Sica's *Ladri di biciclette* (1948, *Bicycle Thieves*), although Visconti's *Terra trema* comes very close (it falls short because it is a literary adaptation) as does *Roma città aperta* (which used a mixture of professional and non-professional actors, including *the* fetish star Anna Magnani, and used three small studio sets).

*Roma città aperta* was based on real events that Romans lived through during the period 1943–4. This was before the Allied forces had arrived in the city and the Germans were still in control. The **narrative** is focused on the goings-on of the Italian Resistance during a three-day period. However, it is the difficulties of the production that give this film its authenticity. Rossellini had to use newsreel stock, which gave the images their grainy realistic look. Money and film stock were extremely difficult to come by. Virtually the whole film was shot in Rome. Resistance fighters die during this three-day period, but the impression given is that we have picked up on their story and that of others in the film and that these people's lives go on once the film has ended.

As film movements go, neo-realism was not particularly shortlived. It lasted ten years, even fourteen if we take into consideration that the last neo-realist film was De Sica's *Il tetto* (*The Roof*, 1956). In a sense, neo-realism was officially 'demised' in the early 1950s by the government when it appointed Giulio Andreotti as Director of Performing Arts and gave him extensive powers. Any films giving a bad image of Italy were denied screening rights in Italy and, because he controlled bank loans, Andreotti could go so far as to withhold money from films he considered too neo-realist in **motivation**. The Cold War mood of the early 1950s also contributed to governmental dislike of the **social realism** inherent in these films, which they perceived as politicized and of the left – even though of the film-makers concerned only Visconti was avowedly a Marxist.

Despite its demise, neo-realism had a huge impact on future film-making practices in Europe, the United States and India. The **French New Wave** widely acknowledged its debt to this movement, and resonances of its style are clearly in evidence in the **British New Wave**. A younger generation of Italian film-makers was also much

influenced by the neo-realists' work, in particular Emmanuel Olmi, Michelangelo Antonioni and Federico Fellini. And in India Satyajit Ray's films of the late 1950s are strongly marked with the tenets of neo-realism.

## JUMP CUT

The opposite of a match cut, the jump cut is an abrupt cut between two **shots** that calls attention to itself because it does not match the shots seamlessly. It marks a transition in time and space but is called a jump cut because it jars the sensibilities; it makes the **spectator** jump and wonder where the **narrative** has got to. Between sequences, the jump cut has quite the reverse effect of the standard cut. The narrative is transposed from one time and space to another without any explanation such as a shot or voice-over. This fragmentation of time and space can either produce a disorientation effect (within the **diegesis** and for the spectator) or put in question the idea that all lived experience can be explained by the comforting cause-effect theory. Those two effects can coexist. Jean-Luc Godard is undoubtedly one of the best exponents of this use of the jump cut (especially in his 1960s films). His characters appear disoriented in a world where reason seems incapable of imposing a logical order on events. Equally, the spectator is disoriented and troubled by the non-causality of the **images** and the narrative.

Within a sequence, the jump cut cuts two shots of the same person together, but neither the **30-degree rule** nor the **reverse angle shot** is observed. Thus, the impression of fragmentation is even more strongly felt, to the point where the brutality of this transition can suggest madness or, at the least, a state of extreme instability (as in Alain Resnais's films – for example *Hiroshima mon amour*, 1959; *L'Année dernière à Marienbad*, 1961). Certain sequences in Godard's *A bout de souffle* (1959) are quoted as illustrations of this disorientation effect. However, Godard (1980: 34) himself puts a question mark on the aesthetic intentionality of his use of the jump cut when he states (but is he pulling our leg?) that his film was an hour too long (as are all first films he adds) and he had to cut. The cuts included a lengthy dialogue scene between the two main characters, Patricia and Michel, as they drive through Paris. The dialogue scene was cut in such a way that one of the interlocutors was cut out and only one remained. The decision whom to cut was taken by tossing a coin (in the end it was Michel, played by Jean-Paul Belmondo, who was cut). Thus, we see

and hear only Patricia (played by Jean Seberg) at four different junctures in time and space as this scene unfolds. We first see and hear her and the backdrop is one part of Paris. Then there is a cut, we see and hear her speak again but what she says bears little or no relation to what she said before. Similarly, the backdrop of Paris has changed, showing some other part of the city. We are aware that time and space have moved on and that we have made a jump in time and space. However, nothing in the diegesis serves to explain how we have got there. The shots are edited together without a change in the camera position (the camera is in the back of the car focused on Patricia). Thus, each time we 'come back' to Patricia via the cut, we experience it as a jerky movement – as if the camera has jumped.

*see also*: **cut**, **match cutting**, **spatial and temporal contiguity**

## LIGHTING

This entry is in three parts: technology, practice, **ideology**.

### *Technology*

In the earliest cinema only natural lighting was used, most of the shooting was done in exteriors or in **studios** that had glass roofs or roofs that could open to the sunlight. As **narratives** became more complex (early 1900s) and as increased demand for products meant working to tight shooting schedules, clearly using ordinary sunlight was not satisfactory enough since it was not easily controllable. Thus, artificial lighting was introduced to supplement existing light. The first type of lighting was the mercury-vapour lamp (invented in 1901 by Peter Cooper-Hewitt). These lights (known as Cooper-Hewitts) look much like neon strip-lights – they were packed into units of nine strip-lights. These units were then fixed in pairs one on top of the other onto wheeled, goose-necked units (so as to create wall and overhead lighting) and placed along the three walls of the studio (some twelve units in all). This lighting was based on blue and green wavelengths which suited the then orthochromatic film stock. Orthochromatic stock was sensitive to the blue and green end of the spectrum, but not to yellow and red. Used in studios, this lighting gave a gentle and soft effect to the image which then had to be matched, for consistency's sake, by any 'outside' or real sunlight shooting through the use of light diffusers. While enor-

mously efficient, the mercury-vapour lighting system had one main drawback. It could not provide directional light and therefore could not achieve contrast or highlighting effects. Thus, while maintaining the diffused lighting effect provided by vapour lamps, other systems of lighting had to be developed for effects lighting and to give a greater **realism** to the filmed image. To achieve contrast and a greater naturalism, non-incandescent arc spot-lights (which gave a bluefish light) – known as Klieg lights (named after the Kliegl brothers who designed them) – were introduced (perhaps as early as 1905, but certainly by the early 1910s). It was at this point that **Hollywood** developed its three-point lighting system (key, fill and back-lighting).

After the First World War, another type of arc-light was introduced into the panoply of lighting devices: the sun-arc. Originally, the sun-arc had been a high-powered arc-searchlight used during the war to spot (among other things) enemy aircraft. This powerful carbon-arc lighting was as bright as sunlight – the range of these floodlights varied from 650 to 10,000 watts. It gave much more flexibility to shooting schedules, shooting at night became possible for example. While most of these carbon-arc lights have been replaced over time first by tungsten-filment lighting and later by tungsten-halogen lamps, the so-called Brute, a 225-amp carbon-arc spotlight is still used today for colour films and especially for creating sunlight. Carbon-arc lighting disappeared slowly, beginning in the late 1920s. Carbon-arc lighting was expensive to run both in terms of electricity costs and maintenance. When sound was introduced and with it panchromatic film, incandescent lighting had to become the chief source of lighting – carbon-arc lamps on their own produced too much blue light and were very noisy. Panchromatic film was a black and white film sensitive to all colours of the spectrum and so could provide more subtle shades of 'colour' in gradations of greys unlike the orthochromatic film which was sensitive only to blue and green and so produced, in the main, highly contrasted black and white images. (For more details on this period see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 270–5, 294–7; Dyer, 1997: 84–96.)

Colour film has worked with an association of tungsten and carbon-arc lighting. Whether black and white or colour, there are two basic systems for lighting: floodlight and spotlight. Floodlight gives diffuse illumination, while spotlight, as the name implies, focuses on a specific area or subject. As colour stock and lighting systems improve so a more natural image can be obtained for those film-makers whose drive is for realism. The latest development in

lighting technology is the HMI lamp. Originally introduced by Osram of Germany in the 1970s, this is a metal hydrargium medium arc-length iodide lamp. These lamps, though expensive and heavy to transport, yield three to four times more light than that produced by incandescent lights. HMIs were originally used for exterior key and filler lighting but are now being used for studio work. (For useful reference books on lighting terminology and use see John Alton, 1995; Richard Ferncase, 1995.)

### *Practice*

As far as Hollywood was concerned (and still is in the main), lighting should not draw attention to itself although it should be used for dramatic and realistic effect. In other countries' cinemas, however, lighting was used to aesthetic effect quite early in cinema history. For example, the low-angle and low-key lighting effects so closely identified with **German expressionist** cinema of the 1920s and the high-contrast lighting (called chiaroscuro) for signalling the mood and workings of the unconscious had already been used for emotional effect in Danish films as early as 1910.

These exceptions aside, lighting for dramatic effect became quite standardized by 1915 for probably two reasons: the predominance of studio shooting and the advent of the **star** system (both in Europe and the USA). As mentioned above, lighting became a three-point affair. It is one that is still in practice today albeit with the variations one would expect with technological progress. There are three primary positions for lighting: key lighting (hard lighting focused on a particular subject), fill lighting (extra lights) to illuminate the overall framed space fully), and back-lighting (normally used to distinguish the figure in the foreground from the background, and so known also as a separation light). This is the basic system of lighting and one of its first effects is to eliminate or greatly reduce shadows. The key light is placed to the front and side of the subject who is looking between the key light and the camera; the fill light is a soft light normally placed near the camera on the opposite side of the key, it is a soft light that fills in areas of shadow cast by the key light and thus decreases the image-contrast. The fill light can also be placed on top of the camera – this is known as an Obie, so-named after Merle Oberon for whom the light was designed to give maximum effect to her face in close-up (curiously this light fitting is also known as a basher!). The rover fill is – as the name suggests – a fill light mounted onto a dolly so that it can follow the subject. The back-light high-

lights the edges of the subject, it is aimed towards the camera from above and behind the subject; when in this position this form of lighting is known also as a hair light because it creates a halo effect on the head. Hair lighting was very much a feature of **classical Hollywood cinema** (1930s-1960s), but it was already in use as early as the 1910s. Back-lighting that comes from behind but to the side of the subject is known as a kicker or kick-light.

There are two types of lighting for a scene: high-key and low-key. High-key lighting refers to a brightly lit scene with very few (if any) shadows – and is often used in musicals and comedies. Low-key lighting refers to a scene where the lighting is predominantly dark and shadowy, the key light does not dominate. Low-key lighting is not the same as it often includes the concept of high-contrast lighting effects (also known as chiaroscuro) – a use of contrasting tones of highlight and shadow which is predominantly associated with **film noir**, **horror**, psychodramas and **thrillers**. Some film analysts are adamant that low-key lighting and high-contrast lighting must not be confused (Konigsberg, 1993: 191), precisely because they are not the same. High-contrast lighting means what it says – there is a strong contrast between light and shadow. Thus a film noir may have moments when the shooting is done with low-key lighting and at others with high-contrast – and it is perhaps worth keeping the distinction clear.

Day-for-night and night-for-night shooting are the last two elements of lighting practice that need mentioning (there are of course many more variations and fine details to lighting and Ferncase's book on lighting, mentioned above, is an invaluable reference tool). Day-for-night shooting is when night-time is simulated while shooting exterior scenes during the day. François Truffaut famously made a film entitled *Day For Night* (1973) which shows you exactly how this conceit is achieved. Essentially the day-for-night effect is achieved by shooting late in the afternoon, and most importantly through the use of underexposure (small tense aperture) and filters. Night-for-night means shooting exterior night scenes at night – often using very fast film stock.

With all this detail on lighting to bear in mind it is quite helpful to embrace Bordwell and Thompson's (1980: 82–4) useful identification of the three major features of lighting: quality, direction and source – since this little triumvirate neatly encompasses film lighting practice. Thus the quality of light can be hard or soft, the direction can be front, side, back, and occasionally under (the light comes from below the subject), the source will be key and/or fill.

### *Lighting and ideology*

As we have seen, classic Hollywood cinema frowns upon lighting that is not subordinate to the demands of the narrative, and adheres therefore to quite strict rules of dramatic lighting: the lighting should fit the situation but never supersede it to the point of artificiality or extreme abstraction which, it was believed, would create unease in the audience. The idea that cinema-going and watching must be safe, unchallenging and non-disruptive is a key ideological aspect of what we call the seamlessness of Hollywood and mainstream cinema. Lighting, in this context, colludes with an editing style that does not call attention to itself. The desired effect, realism, is of course totally artificial given that the cinematic apparatus is not presenting real-life to us – either through its images or its narrative. Use of lighting that does draw attention to itself is in some way challenging to this effect of realism and is, therefore, crucial in considerations of mise-en-scène precisely because it disrupts and distorts the reality effect. Thus, for example, frontal lighting on its own flattens the image and removes the illusion of three-dimensionality; it draws to our attention the fact that film is in fact two-dimensional and that perspectival space is an illusion (indeed, to some avant-garde film-makers, perspective is a bourgeois aesthetic that comes to film from painting). Side-lighting on its own highlights objects or people in a distorting and denaturalising way catching only one side of their volume. Similarly, back-lighting on its own disorients and distorts, bringing out menacing silhouettes for example. In each and every case we are made aware that lighting is at work.

Richard Dyer in his book *White* (1997: 82–142) makes some extremely valuable points about the ideological effects of lighting as it is practised in the Western world. Dyer points out how from very early cinema, lighting along with film stock and make-up has always assumed the construction of whiteness as its touchstone (ibid.: 90–1). He speaks of the white-centricity of the aesthetics of lighting that still prevails today (ibid.: 97). And he goes on to discuss what this implies in the filming of blackness and black faces. The history of light technology is one that has always privileged the white face. It has also been a device for highlighting gender differentiation. For the woman, light reveals her glowing whiteness and blondness (in all her purity). Differently marked by light, the dark-haired, dark-suited white male finds his face illuminated by a source of light (sidelight for example) that exposes his intelligence, virility or whatever – or indeed at times his own white face will be illuminated in a reflective way by the

woman whose face is the 'source of all light'. Back-lighting, while it is used to suggest depth to the different planes in the image, has ideological effects when it is used as a hair light which was very much the case of classic Hollywood cinema. It brings out the blondness of the white woman's hair signalling her great virtue. Dyer (ibid.: 91–2) explains how in early cinema when orthochromatic film stock was used, fair hair became black or looked dark unless special lighting in the form of back-lighting was used. Similarly, female stars had to wear extremely heavy white make-up so that their skin would show as white (almost pasty white to our contemporary eyes) on the screen. These white faces had to be arc-lit because tungsten lighting (with its red and yellow wavelengths) would have brought out those same colours in white faces thus making them look dark or black on the film stock. Under these fierce lights not only did make-up frequently melt and run, but the eyes suffered terribly from burning under the Klieg lights (the so-called 'Klieg eyes').

Neither film stock nor lighting has been significantly altered or evolved to take on board the representation of blackness on screen. Even when film directors speak of their attempts to shoot, correctly, black actors the process is represented as a problem (as Mike Figgis did in speaking about shooting *One Night Stand*, 1997). The assumption is hardly ever made that the technology might be the problem.

Dyer (1997: 102) argues carefully to show how 'movie lighting discriminates on the basis of race' and confines the black person to the shadows. Moreover, because movie lighting practice 'focuses on the individual' and 'hierarchizes' (it signals who or what is important and who or what is not), it is clear that in its inability to show blackness and therefore the black person as important and as an individual it 'expresses a view of humanity pioneered by white culture' (ibid.: 103).

## MEDIATION

Literally, acting as an agent for conveying information or meaning. Thus a film mediates, but so too do the characters mediate meaning. It is not, of course, a direct transferral of meaning. Meaning is encoded to give a **preferred reading**. Thus films have an **ideological** function in their act of mediation, as do the characters (as an extreme case, think of John Wayne, the **Western** and what those two media together mediate about America).

## MELODRAMA AND WOMEN'S FILMS

Melodrama's earliest roots are in medieval morality plays and the oral tradition. Subsequently the tradition found renewed favour in the French romantic drama of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries and the English and French sentimental novel of the same period. These dramas and novels based in codes of morality and good conscience were about familial relations, thwarted love and forced marriages (Elsaesser, 1987: 45). The melodrama coincides, then, with the rise of **modernism** and can be seen as a response to the French Revolution, the Industrial Revolution and modernization. In the early 1800s the post-Revolutionary bourgeoisie sought to defend its newly acquired rights against the autocratic aristocracy – including the *droits de seigneur.* According to Peter Brooks (quoted in Kaplan, 1992: 60), with the emergence of the bourgeoisie as a propertied **class** 'the ethical imperative replaces the tragic vision'. The melodrama focus is essentially on the family and moral values and not the dynastic and mythic deities (as it was in Greek tragedy). Thus, the melodrama – at least in these earliest stages – pitted bourgeoisie against feudalism. Many a tale related the ravishment of the middle-class maiden by the villainous rich aristocrat. In this respect, **class** conflict was repressed sexually and manifested itself via sexual exploitation or rape.

It is important to remember that, as a genre, melodrama also developed alongside nineteenth-century capitalism – and that capitalism gave rise to the *need* of the family to protect, through the inheritance system, the bourgeoisie's newly acquired possessions (including property). The family becomes the site of patriarchy and capitalism – and, therefore, reproduces it. The Industrial Revolution, for its part, placed the family under new and different kinds of pressures. It brought about the separation of the work from the home environment. Middle-class women withdrew from the labour market and working-class women and children entered the factories – leading to an increased urbanization of the proletariat (Gledhill, 1987: 20–1). This in turn led to the fear of the mob. The middle-class felt assailed on both sides, by the aristocracy and the working-class. In Europe, in particular, classes became increasingly polarized as opposed to hierarchized as they had formerly been. Since the United States denies, constitutionally, that it has a class structure, it would be fairer to say that its citizens were socio-economically constituted into different groupings. The early melodrama reflects these preoccupations. However, it is noteworthy that the cinematic melodrama, until

the Second World War and in some isolated cases until the 1950s, also reflected class concerns.

The end of the nineteenth century marked the birth of the consumer culture. It should be recalled that, prior to the existence of cinema theatres (the first appearing in 1906), one of the venues for cinema was the department store (both in Europe and the United States). The idea was that the film screenings would attract not just **audiences** but also customers. Film, then, was very early identified with consumerism. Because it was seen as an integral part of selling consumer culture, it quickly became evident that it was necessary to address a female audience as much as a male one since the woman is supposedly the arbiter of taste in the home – as opposed to the male who is the arbiter of justice outside the home (as in **Westerns** for example). A legacy of this targeting women through the melodrama is the high investment, if not over-investment, in **mise-en-scène** – a surplus of objects and interior décor. But this is not the only reason for excessive mise-en-scène (see below).

It is in its relationship to social change and upheaval that melodrama is such an interesting genre to investigate, particularly since it does not marginalize the woman (as do so many other genres). Having been derided for years, in the early 1970s melodrama finally became recognized, in terms of cultural history alone, as an important generic type to examine. Peter Brooks and Thomas Elsaesser, closely followed by Geoffrey Nowell-Smith, were pioneers, examining the genre from both a Marxist and a psychoanalytic point of view. By the late 1970s, given that it primarily foregrounded the female character, it was also taken on as a genre for investigation by feminist film critics (see **feminist film theory**). Laura Mulvey and Mary Ann Doane led the way, shortly followed by a host of feminist theorists (Kaplan, Mellencamp, Williams, Cook, Gledhill, LeSage, Kuhn, Brunsdon to name just a few).

Melodrama does two things in relation to the social changes and advent of modernization. It attempts to make sense of modernism, and of the family. To take the first point, modernism exposed the reality of the decentred **subject** caused by alienation under capitalism and technological depersonalization (see **modernism**). Melodrama becomes an attempt to counter anxieties produced by this decentring and the massive scale of urban change – hence the 'moral polarization and dramatic reversals' that structure this genre (Gledhill, 1987: 30). Bourgeois values are felt to be under threat – perhaps because they never had time to become fully established (unlike feudalism) – and, viewed in this light, the melodrama is quite paranoid. Thus, for the

bourgeoisie the social, which to them means firstly Victorian morality and what assails it, must be expressed through the personal (Elsaesser, 1987: 29). The everyday life of the individual must be invested with significance and justification (1987: 29). The melodrama as a popular cultural form takes this notion of social crisis and mediates it within a private context, the home (1987: 47). Melodrama, then, reflects the bourgeois desire for social order to be expressed through the personal. In this respect, we can also see how there is an over-investment in the family, how its starting point is in **excess** (Gledhill, 1987: 38). Because the social is internalized, there follows an externalization of the psychic states (Gledhill, 1991: 210). In the process of internalizing the former, the latter are pushed out into the open. And because the melodrama is focused on the family, its conflicts and related issues of duty and love, characters adopt primary psychic roles. They are more ciphers than developed personalities, they lack depth. As Gledhill (quoting Brooks) puts it, 'melodrama of psychology' is what you get (1987: 210). Dramatic action takes place between and not within the characters (1987: 210).

Melodrama serves to make sense of the family and in so doing perpetuates it, including the continuation of the subordination of the woman. However, there is a twist. In the melodrama, the male finds himself in the domestic sphere (home). So he is in the site no longer of production but of reproduction. The home represents **metonymically** the site for the **ideological** confrontation between production and reproduction. The alienation of the labour process becomes displaced (the man brings the experience of alienation home with him) and the family – especially the woman and children – is supposed to fulfil what capitalist relations of production cannot (Cook, 1985: 77). The cost of this displacement is repression (sexual) and woman's self-sacrifice. If, for the bourgeoisie of the nineteenth century, melodrama's ideological function was to disguise the socio-economic contradictions of capitalism, then in the final analysis it failed. Because it reproduces the family and within it the displaced sense of alienation, the melodrama makes visible, in the form of familial tensions, the exploitation and oppression differingly experienced by members of the family. Laura Mulvey (1987: 75) argues that 'ideological contradiction is the overt mainspring and specific content of melodrama ... its excitement comes from conflict not between enemies, but between people tied by blood or love'. Mulvey goes on to say 'there is a dizzy satisfaction in witnessing the way that sexual difference under patriarchy is fraught, explosive and erupts dramatically into violence within its own private stomping ground, the

family'. Finally on this point Mulvey (1987: 76) states that for 'family life to survive, a compromise has to be reached, sexual difference softened, and the male brought to see the value of domestic life'. The male is not in his typically ascribed space, in the work sphere, the sphere of action. He is in the domestic, female sphere which is the non-active, even passive sphere. In order to achieve a successful resolution to the conflict the male has to function on terms that are appropriate to the domestic sphere. In this way he becomes less male and in the process more feminized. And this is undoubtedly one of the reasons why the melodrama appeals to the female **spectator**. The female spectator also derives pleasure from seeing the ideological contradictions exposed on screen – they provide her with a mise-en-scène of her own experience. As for the male spectator, pleasure is derived from seeing the contradictions 'resolved'.

In this same essay, Mulvey develops these points by relocating melodrama in relation to sexual difference. She distinguishes between the masculine melodrama and its function of reconciliation and the female melodrama and its function of excess and unresolved contradictions. Because patriarchal culture, in its over-evaluation of virility is in contradiction with the ideology of the family, the male in the masculine melodrama has to achieve a compromise between the male and female sphere. In female melodramas there is not necessarily a resolution or reconciliation. Indeed it is 'as though the fact of having a female point of view dominating the **narrative** produces an excess that precludes satisfaction' (1987). What Mulvey is arguing is that the female point of view often projects a **fantasy** that is, in patriarchal terms, transgressive – and so cannot be fulfilled. Despite the fact that in the end the female protagonist loses out, the female spectator identifies with and gains pleasure from her behaviour during the unfolding of the narrative. The example Mulvey quotes is *All that Heaven Allows* (Douglas Sirk, 1955). A middle-class widowed mother ('past' the age of child-bearing, we are informed) falls in love with her younger male employee, a gardener. But she is only allowed to 'unite' with him once he has been rendered 'impotent' (and bed-ridden!) by a car accident. For fantasizing too far, she gets only half her man.

### *Codes, conventions and structures*

A first point is that whilst there are arguably two dominant categories of melodrama, (masculine and feminine), none the less as a genre it remains remarkably unfixed in that traces of its generic

make-up can be found in many other genres or sub-genres (such as the **musical**, the **thriller** – especially the **film noir** when the hero is pushed to wish his own death – and the gothic thriller of which Hitchcock's work is exemplary). Given that melodrama is quite unfixed and that it is also a fairly global phenomenon (not purely an American genre) it is perhaps surprising that until recently not a great deal has yet been made in theoretical film analysis about genre and questions of national identity (though see Dever, 2003). This section makes some general points about melodrama; the next deals specifically with the woman's film and female melodrama.

The melodrama focuses on the victim. The earliest scenarios staged persecuted innocence and the drive to identify the good and the evil. Alternatively, the melodrama offers a triangular setup, with the male tempted away from his family and all that is 'good' (and usually rural) by an 'evil' temptress or vamp living in a sumptuous city apartment. Variations include the 'fallen' woman, the single or abandoned mother, the innocent orphan, the male head of household as ineluctable victim of modernization. The two main driving forces behind the genre are Victorian morality and modern psychology (Gledhill, 1987: 33). For the most part, melodrama is nostalgic: it looks back at what is dreamt of as an ideal time of respectability and no anti-social behaviour. It dreams of the unobtainable – emotions, including hope, rise only to be dashed, and for this reason the melodrama is ultimately masochistic. Melodrama plays out forbidden longings, symptomatic illness and renunciation (*Imitation of Life*, John Stahl, 1934 has all of these). Before the advent of Freud in a popularized form to the cinematic melodrama in the late 1940s, masochism was displayed in the form of inner violence, the self-sacrificing mother or wife *(Stella Dallas*, King Vidor, 1937; *Mildred Pierce*, Michael Curtiz, 1945). In male melodramas the focus was less on masochism – unless the film was in the **gangster** and subsequently film noir tradition. In the 1930s they focused on the protagonist's unwillingness or inability to fulfil the **Oedipal trajectory**. French male melodramas of that period, in particular, exemplify this, especially the films starring Jean Gabin. The characters played by James Dean in his films of the 1950s certainly reflect an unwillingness to fulfil society's expectations of male adulthood.

The heyday of the melodrama as far as **sound** cinema and **Hollywood** are concerned is from 1930 to 1960. In the period after the Second World War, the genre became revitalized, thanks to the introduction of a popularized reading of Sigmund Freud. Interestingly, by the early 1950s the male weepie really came into its own

and the focus now became either the father-son relationship as conflict, or the middle-class husband or lover or father who has succumbed to social pressures. Nicholas Ray's *Rebel Without a Cause* (1955), and *Bigger than Life* (1956), respectively illustrate these representations. In male weepies, through a portrayal of masculinity in crisis, melodrama exposes masculinity's contradictions. The male either suffers from the inadequacies of his father (*Rebel Without a Cause*), or is in danger of extinction from his murderous or castrating father (as in *Home from the Hill*, Vincente Minnelli, 1959), or, finally, he fails in his duty to reproduce (the family), or simply fails his family (*Bigger than Life*; *The Cobweb*, Minnelli, 1955). (For more detail on male weepies see Grant, 1986; Schatz, 1981.) Numerous readings can be offered for this development. First, the change in women's lives that resulted from their entry into the workforce during the war gave them an unprecedented economic independence and created great unease for the returning menfolk after the war. Second, the feeling of paranoia generated by the Cold War, and the failure of post-war American ideology to deliver promises, left veterans wondering why they had fought the war after all. And, finally, the fairly dominant presence in the production of this genre of European immigrant filmmakers (Sirk, Max Ophuls, George Cukor, Minnelli) and those outside the Hollywood system (Ray) meant that the contemporary United States, and American masculinity in crisis, could be viewed from a distance.

Ideas about **psychoanalysis** were introduced into film melodrama, where they made women 'safe': women's behaviour was easily explained away through psychology so their psychosis was not a threat. They explained the newly emerging youth culture and revealed the male as victim, trapped in late capitalism. It did not vastly alter the narratives of this genre (so earlier prototypes can always be found), it simply provided open psychological interpretations and **discourses** to explain why clashes, conflicts and ruptures occur in the family. Thus, the father-figure is marked as more dysfunctional than in the earlier melodrama, he becomes transgressive as in madness (*Home from the Hill*) or completely ineffectual and unable to uphold authority (*Rebel Without a Cause*). The female is also represented as transgressive, but mostly quite differently from her male counterpart. She puts on display the conflicts at the heart of feminine identity between female desire and socially sanctioned femininity (Kuhn, 1990: 426). Socially sanctioned femininity – that is, motherhood, and integration into the family – means that she has in the end to resume that position or disappear (*All that Heaven*

*Allows*; *Imitation of Life*, Sirk's 1959 remake of Stahl's 1934 film; and, as an earlier example of the disappearing woman, *Christopher Strong*, Dorothy Arzner, 1932). The female rejoins her male counterpart in the melodramas that position her as suffering from some psychotic malaise: the major difference being that only a doctor – or at least a man – can help her resolve it (as in *Marnie*, Alfred Hitchcock, 1956 – with an earlier prototype, *Now Voyager*, Irving Rapper, 1942). However, for an interesting reversal of this plot line (e.g. woman doctor treats male neurotic) see Hitchcock's *Spellbound* (1945).

The melodrama is an oxymoronic product in that it has to produce dramatic action whilst staying firmly in place; this gives it an inherently circular thematic structure, hence often the recourse to **flashbacks** (Cook, 1985: 80). This circularity also signals claustrophobia. The melodrama is played out in the home or in small-town environments. Time is made to stand still, suffocating the child, teenager, young adult – especially women. Windows and objects function similarly to suffocate, entrap and oppress. The décor or mise-en-scène become an outer symbolization of inner emotions, fragility or torment (Elsaesser, 1987: 59). And the desire for the unobtainable object or other is just one final nail in the coffin of this claustrophobic atmosphere. The melodrama as a genre turns inwards for drama. So too do the characters, in the form of inner violence which can take the form of substitute acts (1987: 56). Aggressiveness by proxy or behaving in a way that is completely at odds with what is desired are forms of displacement-by-substitution (1987: 56). Elsaesser demonstrates how this principle of substitute-acts is Hollywood's way of portraying the dynamics of alienation. And he cites (1987: 64) the pattern of *Written on the Wind* (Sirk, 1956) as exemplary: 'Dorothy Malone wants Rock Hudson who wants Lauren Bacall who wants Robert Stack who just wants to die'.

Melodramas are often highly stylized. Elsaesser (1987: 53) points out that this is to do with the effects of **censorship** and morality codes – very much in effect until the 1960s. In this regard, style becomes used as meaning. In order to convey what could not be said (primarily on the level of sex and repressed desire), décor and mise-en-scène had to stand in for meaning. Curiously here, as Elsaesser (1987: 54) makes clear, the popular cultural form of melodrama has a modernist function. Given that the melodrama seeks to be grounded in realism and modernism does not, but wishes to signify through process and form and not content, melodrama, by signifying meaning (repressed desire) through style or form, finds itself making sense of modernism in a most unexpected way (see entry on **modernism**).

On this issue of realism and stylization, Nowell-Smith (1987: 73–4) talks about the syphoning off of unrepresentable material into excessive mise-en-scène and refers to it via Freud's concept of conversion hysteria – the return of the repressed ('if I can't have a phallus, I'll have a doric column'). According to Nowell-Smith, the repressed for the woman may well be female desire, but for the male it is the fear of castration. Acceptance of that fear or possibility is repressed in melodrama at the level of the story but reappears, returns through music or mise-en-scène (Nowell-Smith, 1987: 73–4). Gledhill (1987: 9) summarizes Nowell-Smith in the following succinct terms: 'if the family melodrama's speciality is generational and **gender** conflict, verisimilitude demands that the central issues of sexual difference and identity be 'realistically' presented. But these are precisely the issues realism is designed to repress'.

### *The female melodrama and the woman's film*

These two obviously overlapping categories of film have been subdivided by various feminists into different types. Doane (1987) defines four: the female patient, the maternal, the impossible love, and the paranoid melodrama. Kaplan (1992), focusing primarily on the mother melodrama, has three typologies: the sacrifice paradigm, the phallic mother paradigm, and the resisting paradigm. Modleski (1992) speaks of hysteria, desire and muteness as behavioural comportments of women in melodrama. Masochism is everywhere, except in the resisting paradigm – and even there it comes close.

Before going into further detail on these matters, it is useful first of all to consider that most of these melodramas were adaptations of female fiction – particularly those films produced during the 1930s and 1940s. This fiction embraces stories in women's weeklies, women's romance novels and women's historical romances. Second, apart from Dorothy Arzner in the United States, most film-makers making these films were men. Given that the novels at least were often very long, scriptwriters and film-makers went for stage adaptations of the fiction if they existed, or reduced the text to a narrative that held together and lasted around ninety minutes. The point here is that this leads to a density of *motivation* which in turns feeds into this notion of melodrama and excess (Elsaesser, 1987: 52). The gender shift from female author to male film-maker or *auteur* also poses some interesting questions. Traditionally, the male is used to working in the non-domestic sphere. Here, however, the film-maker finds himself in the very sphere in which he is expected to reach

compromise. Thus, not only is he reproducing the site of reproduction by the very act of filming, he is also functioning on terms that are appropriate to the domestic sphere. This potential feminization of the film-maker makes possible an unintentional opening up of gaps for moments of subversion within the filmic text and subversiveness in terms of spectator pleasure – including, of course, readings against the grain (see Modleski, 1988, and her readings of Hitchcock).

In the female melodramas, also known as weepies or tearjerkers, the central character is female and what is privileged is a female perspective. We are in the world of emotions not action. The appeal of the woman's film for the spectator (primarily female, but also male) is the mise-en-scène of female desire. It thematizes female desire, it produces, therefore, female subjectivity. It puts woman's *jouissance* (unspeakable pleasure) up on screen. Of course, the genre also destroys her for this, in the end. One way or another she is reinscribed into her 'Lawful' place as (m)other (see **psychoanalysis**). In this respect, it comes as no surprise that women's films function ideologically as repression of female desire and reassertion of the woman's role as reproducer and nurturer. Or, if she is incapable of resuming or assuming that role, then she must stand aside, disappear, not be. The tears come because of the ultimate unfulfillability of desire – the spectator sees only the dream. The dream-fantasy stands for the real (Fischer, 1989: 101).

Women's films then reproduce the scenarios of female masochism (Doane, 1984: 80). As Doane explains, female masochistic fantasies are de-eroticized. This is particularly evident in the impossible love melodrama. Lucy Fischer (1989: 101) examines Max Ophuls's *Letter from an Unknown Woman* (1948) as an example of masochistic fantasy functioning not as a vehicle 'for sexuality but *instead* of it'. The woman in the film, Lisa, is seduced as a young woman by a 'brilliant' pianist. He abandons her, she bears his child. Even though she never meets him again, at least not until it is too late, she devotes her life to him. She lives her life through her fanciful desire for him. An entire life for one night. She survives on imaginary **images** of her lover, thereby substituting fantasy for eroticism (1989: 101). Melodrama reproduces here, unquestioningly, the assumption that a woman's main concern in life is love. The woman in love is the one who waits and as she waits she fantasizes *he* who is absent (1989: 95). Desertion of the man is a frequent trope in this type of melodrama and until recently this meant being left with nothing, including financial support. However, these latter considerations seem never to enter Lisa's fanciful world.

A similar de-eroticization takes place within the paranoid woman's film, often also referred to as the gothic woman's film. This latter typology includes *Rebecca* (Hitchcock, 1940) and *Gaslight* (Cukor, 1944). In both films the woman is entrapped in the house. Doane (1984) talks of these films as 'horror-in-the-home' melodramas where marriage and murder are brought together in the female protagonist's mind. After an often hasty marriage (why, one wonders?) the wife fears that her husband has murderous intentions – she even hallucinates them. However, because the actual narrative assumes that this fear is based in female frigidity, fear of sex or even rape, it is evidently a male fantasy that is up on screen. As Doane says (1984: 79) this has consequences for the **gaze** and **subject** positioning. She argues that a despecularization and hence deeroticization takes place because it is supposedly the woman's point of view but it is a male fantasy. This two-way 'gazing' cancels out real **agency** and similarly empties the gaze of knowledge. A first point, then, is that what gets taken away is female desire. But the question arises: does not the female spectator identify with the female protagonist and get commodified up on screen? Thus we too get positioned masochistically. Further, the 'investigating' gaze may well be female but since we too are positioned in it there occurs a doubling of the fear factor (good suspense tactics if you are Hitchcock, though it says much about his own pathologies!). The twist of course, as we have just noted, is that even though she appears to agence the gaze, she does not really understand what she sees. She misreads the information, often because part of the picture is proscribed her. In these films the home becomes the body (Doane, 1984: 72–3) which the female investigates (remember that in film noir it is usually the male who gets to investigate the female body). This is far too dangerous for patriarchy to countenance. Thus, the male contains a secret space of his own, a final space the woman is not allowed to see (1984: 80). This space is either within the house (usually a room in the attic) or mentioned by name (so contained within patriarchal law) – as by De Winter in *Rebecca* when he talks of the boathouse. In the end, although she sees, the woman understands nothing. What she sees will only have meaning once the male respecularizes it for her – as De Winter does at the end of the film.

Women's films point to Hollywood's capacity to produce a female **subjectivity** and then destroy it. This occurs even more strikingly in patient melodramas. Here, female subjectivity, female desire, is rearticulated on to the body as a site of symptoms and illness. Conversion hysteria functions to transfer desire not on to objects or mise-en-scène

but on to the body itself. Women suffer from some sort of psychosis. This is induced either by their own sense of guilt, unfulfilled love or transgressive behaviour or by the effects on the psyche of a dominating, aggressive 'phallic' mother. In the first instance, this illness is a 'punishment'. In the second, the illness so cripples the daughter that she cannot entertain 'normal' relations with men. In these films the gaze shifts away from the woman and becomes relocated in the eyes of the male, usually a medical expert who investigates the problem and, naturally, resolves it. Hysteria can cause muteness as in Joan Crawford's case in *Possessed* (Curtis Bernhardt, 1947) and she can be brought to speak only by the administration of a special drug injected (!) into her body by the doctor. We come to understand what traumatized her through the flashbacks which only the all-knowing doctor can induce. Language then is the 'gift' of the father – he is the **Symbolic** Order into which she may step at his say-so (see **Imaginary/Symbolic**). (See Doane's excellent analysis of muteness, 1984: 76–7 and Modleski, 1992: 536–48.)

In phallic mother scenarios, as for example in *Now Voyager*, again it is the male, a psychiatrist this time, who releases the victimized daughter and 'castigates' the bad, possessive mother for oppressing her daughter. Even untrained psychiatrists can dabble in the art, as does the rich businessman Sean Connery in *Marnie*, or the detective in *Mildred Pierce.* The point is that they represent the all-seeing, all-knowing male. The point is also that, under the medical or pseudo-medical gaze, the female body is de-eroticized. But, as Doane says (1984: 80), in patriarchal society 'to desexualize the female body is ultimately to deny its very existence'. It is of course also to deny the woman the epistemological gaze; effectively 'a body-less woman cannot see' (1984: 80). The point is, finally, that in this way any threat to male dominance is safely contained.

Quantitatively speaking, the melodrama since the advent of sound cinema is not as prolific a genre as other more identifiably male genres. As we have seen, it has produced a great volume of research into its typologies and to its systems of repression. This entry ends on a brief consideration of two types of resisting paradigms to this predominantly repressive genre (primarily of women's desire, but also on occasion of male sexuality). The first type, convincingly argued and analysed in detail by Kaplan (1992: 149–79), is that of the 'modern' or 'liberated' woman. I will focus on just one of Kaplan's examples: Katharine Hepburn in *Christopher Strong* (1932). The second is that of the Gainsborough costume melodramas of the 1940s, analysed in an exemplary fashion by Harper (1987: 167–96).

The Hepburn vehicle is an Arzner film. But, as Kaplan states, Arzner should not be taken for a feminist. She was, it transpires, 'sympathetic' with her hero (rather bizarrely since he is far from 'strong' and quite a cad really). Kaplan argues that the 'film contains an ironic subversion of its surface meanings' (1992: 150). The story concerns Cynthia (Hepburn), an independent woman aviatrix who falls in love with Strong, a married man. He urges her to give up flying. She succumbs to this request; but she also becomes pregnant by him. She decides in the end not to tell him. She bases this decision mostly on his spineless behaviour towards her after their sexual encounter – basically, he gets cold feet and clings to his wife. Crucially, when she asks him 'what would you do if I were pregnant?', he answers 'it'd be my duty to marry you and take care of you first'. Duty is not the word she wants to hear. She takes the fateful decision to attempt an altitude record, thereby ensuring her death – but not without the possibility of Strong discovering the reason. She writes him a note: 'I am breaking my promise to take no more risks; you will know why when I don't come back. Courage conquers everything, even love'. Having given up her desire for self-fulfilment in the public sphere, she now resumes it and the ultimate recognition of her bravery will be the monument erected in her honour.

Cynthia never perceived love and work as a conflict, but patriarchy does. 'Patriarchy can barely permit the coexistence of female erotic desire and female achievements in the public sphere . . . but even less can it tolerate *motherhood* outside of marriage' (Kaplan, 1992: 156). Significantly, once her affair is consummated she gives up flying. But what is also significant is that both the affair and her pregnancy reduce her power. She becomes progressively silenced, a passive object to Strong's subject. Her only way to reassert her power is to refuse those positionings (so typical of patriarchy). In returning to flying she reasserts her self against the 'prevailing maternal discourse that threatens to confine and reduce her' (1992: 157). We would also add that she rejects the patriarchal discourse as well – even if to do so means death at her own hands but on her own terms.

As far as the Gainsborough costume melodramas (made in Britain in 1944–6 in the Gainsborough Studios) are concerned, the standard definitions of melodrama do not operate. There is no family melodrama – only sexual melodrama. These melodramas were based on novels originally written for the middle-class female reader. However, the films were targeted towards a working-class female audience. The timing of these dramas, during the Second World War,

was also fairly crucial to their unexpected success. Beyond the attraction of the female and male stars, the costumes themselves were equally a very important factor for audience pleasure. Clothes couponing was introduced in the United Kingdom during the war (primarily to oblige the labour force to move into munitions); thus pleasure was derived from looking at the stylized, sometimes flamboyant, clothing on screen. These dramas also responded to popular taste in another way, given their historical context. They helped women to be patient about the war, gave them a form of escapism from the real conditions of that time of extreme uncertainty (Harper, 1987: 171). These films were about surplus, excess. There was excess in costume, sexual behaviour and class power, including aristocratic surplus (1987: 172). Aristocracy, gypsies, aggressive women alike all 'exhibit exotic energy' which the audience is invited to take pleasure in (1987: 172). Indeed it is primarily women who are the site for this sexual excess and, of course get punished for it in the end. But only after the audience has seen a movie full of female excess. Pleasure in identification indeed! Retribution for excess can wait until the last frames.

Major references for this entry include Elsaesser, Mulvey, Nowell-Smith, Harper and Gledhill, all in: Gledhill 1987; Cook, 1985; Feuer, 1982; Doane 1982, 1984 and 1987; Kaplan, 1983 and 1992; Modleski, 1988 and 1992.

*see also*: **genre**

For further reading see also Bratton *et al.*, 1994; Brooks, 1976; Dever, 2003; Harper, 1994; Kuhn, 1982; Mayne, 1984; Rosen, 1973; Thomas, 2000.

## METALANGUAGE

*Meta* is Greek for 'with' or 'after', thus metalanguage means literally a language with or after a language, a language that refers *after* another language – that is, a language about a(n)other language. Metalanguage is an articulated **discourse** on other discourses, that is, a speech act or text about other speech acts and texts. In this respect, film **theory** is a metalanguage: it is a language about film texts or discourses.

However, metalanguage does not refer just to languages that are outside but about another language. Texts and speech acts can produce their own metalanguage from within. An example is a **narra-**

**tive** that refers to its own narrative procedures: in its self-referentiality it is producing a metalanguage. Film texts when self-referential (pointing, say, to how they are made) serve as their own metalanguage. Embedded narratives – narratives about other narratives in the text – are metalanguages, more commonly termed metanarratives. The effect is often to problematize the **spectator**'s reading of a film. The interrelatedness of the different levels of narration at work in the text function to reposition the spectator – it is not intended for there to be a 'safe' or single reading. Alain Resnais's films are remarkable exemplars of this sustaining of multiple metanarratives, but mainstream cinema of course uses these practices just as widely. The film starring Clint Eastwood, *In the Line of Fire* (1993), is an excellent example of embedded narratives. In the film Eastwood is responsible for the security of a presidential visit. However, Eastwood's deadly enemy, played by John Malkovich, reminds him over the telephone how some thirty years earlier he failed to protect John Kennedy from being assassinated. We even see Eastwood embedded in the real footage of the Kennedy assassination (thanks to virtual technology). His enemy threatens to reproduce the same failure, and thereupon hangs the plot. The earlier narrative informs and comments upon the present one: will Eastwood catch his man this time and save the president?

## METHOD ACTING

A style of acting that was adopted by the Actors Studio, founded in 1947 in the United States and which was derived from the Soviet actor and director Konstantin Stanislavsky. The method was to act completely naturally, to so infuse one's own self with the thoughts, emotions and personality of the character that one became that character. Simultaneously the actor must draw on her or his own experiences to understand what motivates the character she or he is to play. Often the performance is understated – certainly never in **excess**. The method is seen as totally realistic and is best exemplified by the actors Marlon Brando (although apparently he only went once to the Studio and did not like it!), Montgomery Clift, James Dean, Rod Steiger and Julie Harris (see, for example, *A Streetcar Named Desire*, Elia Kazan, 1951; *From Here to Eternity*, Fred Zinnemann, 1953; *On the Waterfront*, Kazan, 1954).

*see also*: **motivation**

# METONYMY/METAPHOR

According to the linguist Roman Jakobson, metonymy and metaphor are the two fundamental modes of communicating meaning. Although they are separate in function, they are examined together here as two sides of a coin.

### *Metonymy*

From the Greek *mesa*, 'change' and *onuma*, 'name'. So a first meaning is that metonymy is a substitution of the name of an attribute for that of the thing meant (for example, 'crown' for 'queen'). In speech and writing it means the application of a word or phrase that belongs to one object or subject on to another with which it is normally related (for example, the cleaning person is referred to as the 'daily'). Jakobson also includes under the heading of metonymy the term *synecdoche* – that is, the use of a part standing for the whole (for example, the 'sail' for the sailing ship). In this way, metonymy has come to mean, first, a word representing another word (that is absent but implied) and, second, a term that, although only a part of the term to which it refers, stands as meaning the whole of that term. Thus in film, metonymy can be applied to an object that is visibly present but which represents another object or subject to which it is related but which is absent. Thus, in Orson Welles's *Citizen Kane* (1941) the toboggan named Rosebud functions metonymically for the mystery that surrounds Kane – an enigma which the journalist tries desperately to unravel. Or the series of objects accumulated on François's mantelpiece, in *Le Jour se lève* (Marcel Carné, 1939) act as metonyms for his past life to which they refer. They stand as substitutes for the events that have pushed him to kill a man (Valentin). The photograph of a cyclist points to the dream he will never fulfil of going with his beloved Françoise to the sea to collect lilac and mimosas. The teddy bear, which was Françoise's but which he took home with him after being rebuffed for his sexual advances, stands for him (Françoise remarks on how the two resemble each other, with one sad eye and one happy). It also refers to the potential happiness (the happy eye) he could have had with Françoise had not fate or his own melancholic defeatism (the sad eye) pushed him to destroy that happiness. Finally, the brooch, which is the token of exchange between his rival (Valentin) and the women he has seduced (among them, Françoise), refers to the reason why he killed Valentin.

An opening or credit sequence can function metonymically for the whole of a film (the **shots** refer to the unravelling **narrative** to come) – for example, the credits and opening sequence of Alfred Hitchcock's *Vertigo* (1958). The credits come up over an extreme close-up of a woman's face. In fact the credits are formed out of spirals that emanate from her eyes! In the opening sequence there is a chase over some rooftops. Two policemen, one uniformed, the other (we assume) a plain-clothes detective, are in pursuit of a third man. The detective loses his footing and holds on for grim life as the policeman returns to help him. In his attempt, the policeman falls to his death. The title of the film refers to this incident, which incapacitates the detective from properly investigating a case involving a woman who hallucinates (remember the spirals) and makes suicide attempts by running to the top of towers intent on throwing herself off. The detective's vertigo prevents him from following her.

### *Metaphor*

Literally, the transference or application of a name or descriptive term to an object to which it is not in real fact applicable (for example, to go or be green with envy). Similes are types of metaphors (for example, to run like a rabbit). The metaphor then substitutes the known for the unknown, or rather it communicates the unknown by transferring it into terms of the known. In film, metaphor applies when there are two consecutive shots and the second one functions in a comparative way with the first. Take, for example, a lovers' embrace that is followed by a shot of a train running wildly through a tunnel! The second shot communicates the meaning of the embrace – which is unknown, because unseen, at least to the **spectator** – and transfers it into known terms: speed of the train equals rush of emotion, tunnel equals excitement of penetration, and so on.

With metaphors, we come to understand the unknown through reference to the known, through associative relations. In this respect, metaphors function paradigmatically. That is, the unknown gets explained by being inserted into a paradigm – a framework or pattern, or, in the case of cinema, an image – that is new to it, but known to us. In cinema, an image when used metaphorically functions as a substitute for the real meaning.

Metaphors, then are very visible. They draw attention to themselves. Metonyms are not. And this is why the two terms can be seen as two sides of a same coin. Metaphors render the unknown visible,

make the unknown have presence. Metonyms represent what is absent, stand as part of the whole story to which they refer, which is why they work invisibly. In these examples, you can see how metonyms are understood to be such only when the story to which they refer has been told. Until then they seem natural, unnoticeable (see **naturalizing**). However, they are only one part of a whole, and what if another part of the whole were given? Would the meaning of the story to which it refers change? Metonyms, then, are encoded, they organize meaning in a precise way. Metaphors have to be decoded. The juxtaposition of shots has to be read, understood by the spectator.

A useful way of distinguishing metonyms from metaphors is to understand that metonyms work syntagmatically and metaphors paradigmatically. By paradigmatically what is meant is a system of substitution: an **image** will act as a substitute for the real meaning and convey that meaning clearly even though it is a substitute (see above on metaphor). By syntagmatically what is meant is that a story is constructed from the part that is given. For example, the fact that we all experience finishing someone else's half-completed sentence; or, in Hitchcock's *Strangers on a Train* (1951) we know that the broken spectacles belong to the woman who has been murdered: we saw her wearing them earlier, they now refer to her dead body but it is we who supply that part of the story. Metonyms have syntagmatic value: there is a story to which they refer. In film, which works in ways similar to our psyche, metonyms often get the combination of meanings to which they refer played out. Thus, in the example of *Le Jour se lève*, each object gets explained, has a story woven around it through a series of **flashbacks** which the protagonist has as he looks at them, picks them up in turn.

## MISE-EN-ABÎME

This occurs within a text when there is a reduplication of **images** or concepts referring to the textual whole. Chinese boxes or Russian dolls are concrete examples of mise-en-abîme – the outer shell being *the* full-size *real* thing, those within a constant referral to the original. Mise-en-abîme is a play of signifiers within a text, of sub-texts mirroring each other. This mirroring can get to the point where meaning can be rendered unstable and in this respect can be seen as part of the process of **deconstruction**. Some examples taken from films will make these points clear.

The film within a film is a first example of mise-en-abîme. The film being made within the film refers through its **mise-en-scène** to the 'real' film being made. The **spectator** sees film equipment, **stars** getting ready for the take, crew sorting out the various directorial needs, etc. (as in François Truffaut's *La Nuit américaine*, 1973). The **narrative** of the film within the film may directly reflect the one in the 'real' film (as in Karel Reisz's *The French Lieutenant's Woman*, 1981). **Voyeurism** gets ruthlessly mise-en-abîme in Michael Powell's *Peeping Tom*, 1960 – at the same time as it is a mise-en-abîme of cinema itself (for clarification of this point with regard to this film see **foregrounding**). Mise-en-abîme can also function at the level of characterization: objects serve to reflect the basic nature of a protagonist – for example, games or toys collected by and played with by an adult (male) protagonist point to an inherent childishness, to an unwillingness to complete the **Oedipal trajectory**.

## MISE-EN-SCÈNE

Originally a theatre term meaning 'staging', it crossed over to signify the film production practices involved in the framing of shots. Thus, first it connotes setting, costume and lighting, second, movement within the frame. It became endowed with a more specific meaning by the *Cahiers du cinéma* group (established in 1951) who used it to justify their appellation of certain American film-makers as auteurs (for further clarification see **auteur**). Given that these directors were working under the aegis of **Hollywood** they had no control over the script but they could stage their shots and so be deemed to have a discernible style. Mise-en-scène is the expressive tool at the film-maker's disposal which a critic can read to determine the specificity of the cinematographic work. That is, the critic can identify the particular style of a specific film-maker and thereby point to it as an authorial sign.

## MODERNISM

Modernism is most easily understood as an art movement, although it does have socio-political resonances as explained below. You will note from the entry on postmodernism that it is difficult to pinpoint where modernism ends and postmodernism begins. It is better to think in terms of an overlap between the two – an overlap that

occurs, first, because not all aspects of art became postmodern simultaneously and, second, because there is not often full agreement, among critics and theorists, on the categorizing of a particular cultural artefact. Thus a novel, say, might find itself being termed a modernist text by one critic but a postmodern text by another. This happens with the novels of Samuel Beckett. This inability to insert a dividing line points to the fact that, to a certain – if not considerable – extent, postmodernism reacts less against the conventions of modernism than we might believe, even though we are aware that it must in some way be different, because it comes after (post)modernism. A useful analogy might be drawn with industry. We are acutely aware that we could not now be a post-industrial society if we had not originally possessed an industrial one. Vestiges of our industrialization remain, but they no longer carry the same meaning they once did. Take, for example, the railway systems of the United Kingdom and the United States. These were once heralded as heroic and pioneering in their engineering exploits. Now, in the interest of capital, they have been reduced to a shadow of their former self and face what appears to be permanent decline.

Modernism finds its roots in the Enlightenment period of the eighteenth century and man's (sic) belief in the supremacy of human reason over all other considerations. It was a period that marked the end, or rather decline, in Western society of a theocratic (God-centred) interpretation of the world. As evidence of this belief in the power of human reasoning to understand the world, this age was also termed the Age of Reason. This belief in human reason meant that man (sic) could achieve clarity or enlightenment in scientific thought and natural philosophy (that is, natural science – maths, astronomy and physics); he would come to understand the way things really are in the universe and thereby be able to have control over nature and make the world a better place. Jeremy Bentham's enlightened prison reforms came from this spirit – including his concept of the panopticon as an alternative to cell emprisonment and the cruelty of prison treatment. The panopticon was an imagined building wherein everyone could observe everyone else – a using of the **gaze** as a system of total surveillance. But, as we shall see, the outcome of total surveillance is far from benign.

As such, then, the Enlightenment represented an optimistic belief in progress. Science and technology were man's tools whereby he could implement change. Science, or scientific thought, was the only valid thought, and facts the only possible objects of knowledge. In philosophy the task was to discover the general principles common to

all the sciences and to use these principles as guides to human conduct and as the basis of social organization. Man controlled nature and all procedures of investigation had to be reducible to scientific method.

Not all was optimism, however. Even during that period some philosophers expressed disquiet at the totalizing effect of this positivist philosophy of science. Thus a strain of pessimism exists alongside the waves of optimism, a pessimism with which we have to concur if we look at the end of the eighteenth century in France and its bloody Revolution, particularly during the Reign of Terror. Writers of that time pointed to the ends to which man could go. The Marquis de Sade's writings are but one extreme. But consider also the 'humane' invention devised to kill off all those who fell victim to the Revolution: the guillotine. Designed by Dr Guillotine to make death more swift and efficacious and therefore more humane, in the end it allowed for the acceleration of executions because it was so swift. In other words, it became an instrument for mass-execution.

The industrial age of the nineteenth century was a logical continuance of the Enlightenment's belief in science and technology, and represents the optimistic strain of belief in progress. Art, however, echoed the other, pessimistic, strain of the Age of Reason and signified as a counter-culture to scientific thought, producing, first, romanticism (a nostalgia for what was lost) and, second, **realism** (a desire to show the mostly negative effects of technological progress). The Enlightenment then produced two strains, and modernism, as its natural heir, continued in the same vein. Modernism perpetuates the belief in scientific research and the pursuit of knowledge. It believes in the positing of universal truths such as progress of which science and technology were its major proponents. However, it also expresses profound disquiet at those beliefs which it perpetuates.

As a movement we could loosely say that modernism begins at the end of the nineteenth century and 'ends' at the end of the 1960s, when **post-structuralism** heralded the arrival, if not the existence already, of postmodernism. Modernism was born as a reaction against realism and the tradition of romanticism. As a movement it is often also termed the avant-garde. However, it is truer to say that the **avant-garde** is part of the modernist aesthetic – not all modernist art is avant-garde, but avant-garde art is modernist. In its vanguardism and perception of itself as an adversary culture, modernism is 'relentless in its hostility to mass culture' (Huyssen, 1986: 241). It believes that only high art can sustain the role of social and aesthetic criticism. In this context, modernism's belief in progress means also a

belief in modernization – including belief in the 'perpetual modernization of art' (1986: 238) – a constant renewal of that role of art as critique, therefore.

Modernism eschewed the seamless verisimilitude of realism and sought to reveal the process of meaning-construction in art. Formal concerns were, therefore, paramount. To give a couple of examples: with the realist novel, plot and character construction lead us through a **narrative** where the process of narration does not directly draw attention to itself – we are stitched into the narrative (see **suture**); a modernist novel, however, deliberately draws attention to its process of meaning-construction from the very first reading – compare a Jane Austen novel with one by Virginia Woolf for example. In painting, the realist aesthetic seeks to create the illusion of 'truth' before your eyes, as in a Constable painting, say. This illusion starts with the principle of perspective which gives a sense of three-dimensionality. A modernist cubist painting removes perspectival space and transposes the three-dimensions 'truthfully' on to a flat two-dimensional surface. So, in a Picasso portrait, the eyes are flattened out on to the canvas and the nose is placed to the side of the face and not between the eyes. Similarly, just as the novelist draws attention to her or his own mode of meaning-production, modernist painters draw attention to the materials they use (for example Georges Braque, Jackson Pollock). In that respect, modernism is highly self-reflexive (art referring to itself).

As we know, the modernist movement and the avant-garde are closely associated with modernization and as such espoused a belief in its tools and an investment in self-reflexivity that was deliberately counter-illusionist. None the less, not all its proponents were of the optimistic vein. Indeed, many expressed a mistrust of science and technology – even though, as we have already noted, they were inextricably part of it. This mistrust was characterized by a deep pessimism about the modern world and came about as a result of the brutal effects of science and technology on human life in the First and Second World Wars. The wanton destruction of human lives through chemical warfare, bombs of mass extinction, the using of technology and architecture to create a final solution – as in the case of the Holocaust – all these were products of man's reason. It may not be possible to see fascism purely as a formidable crisis of modernist culture (Huyssen, 1986: 268). However, it is not impossible to see it as a logical end to the principles of modernism taken to their extremes of anti-humanism. In this respect, then, modernism embraces the two strains evoked in the case of the Enlightenment. The tragedy, and thereby the paradox, for the modernist artist is

being part of the culture and age that she or he in some regards despises: 'I am part of this age of self-reflexive formalism that can also build the technology for mass destruction.'

It is here that we can see a first set of paradoxes inherent in this movement (as we would in any movement of course). The paradox is this: in its self-reflexivity and focus on the individual, modernism seems quite anti-humanist. Yet, in its mistrust of science and technology, it has all the appearances of a relative humanism. This is further compounded when we consider that the modernist age evolved alongside, and in certain domains was part of, modern industrial technology. If we consider architecture we can make this point succinctly. Modernist architecture believed in drawing on all materials possible – especially modern materials, such as reinforced concrete – to construct buildings heretofore unimaginable. And yet – and here is the anti-humanist aspect of this movement – in its belief in the functionality of cheaply produced materials and their being put to use in the building of community spaces in a rationalized and standardized fashion (as with Le Corbusier's ideal concrete village) it has left many countries with a legacy of concrete jungles and towers which, though inhabited, are essentially uninhabitable. Belief in the unending potential of its materials led modernist architecture to profoundly anti-humanist practices.

Another, related and important, aspect of modernism that needs explaining is the mood of alienation and existential angst that pervades this movement and which comes about as a result of the climate of pessimism generated by the two World Wars. This mood of alienation emanates from a sense of fragmentation of the self in the social sphere and a concomitant inability to communicate effectively with others. This fragmentation of the self, in turn, raises the question of identity: 'who am I in all of this?' In terms of its manifestation in modernist art, this tendency can best be illustrated by the novel. In the modernist novel, there is no traditional narrative of beginning, middle or end, nor is there an omniscient protagonist. Character definition is mostly, if not totally, absent. In its place, an interior monologue or stream of consciousness explores the subjective experience of an individual. The coincidence of the beginning of this movement with the emerging importance of **psychoanalysis** – especially in the work of Freud – cannot be sufficiently stressed. It is clear that it had a significant impact on modernism and made possible the exploration of the inner self as a way of, if not responding to, then at least describing the effects of alienation on human individuality. In this regard, then, modernism is again very self-reflexive.

Lastly, in its belief in a unified underlying reality modernism once more shows its debt to the Enlightenment. However, as we have already made clear, this leads to conceptual strategies that end up having **ideological** implications in that modernism can help to legitimate structures of domination and oppression – as in the use of technology in war-time mentioned above. In this regard, we can perceive other structures that it has served to legitimate – structures of **class**, binary structures around sex and race, and so on. Modernism's belief in a rationalistic interpretation of the world found its acme in the 1950s within critical **theory** and philosophy. The whole concept of structuralism can be seen as an attempt to provide a reassuring set of underlying structures that are common to all: be it in the domain of the human brain, language, cultural artefacts, social organization and so on. Structuralism was to have an important impact on film theory and, albeit to a much lesser degree, on film itself. (For further details on this last point see Gidal, 1989.)

If we now consider cinema's place in the modernist period we come up against a first apparent contradiction. Technologically speaking, the camera, although a modernist artefact, is seen as an instrument for reproducing reality and, as such, it is more readily associated with realism than modernism. The entire cinematic **apparatus** is geared towards creating the illusion of reality and it achieves this primarily through the very seamlessness of its production practices. Second, as John Orr (1993: 60) points out, the camera as a technological instrument has grown up as part of the culture of surveillance. It is also part of war technology – for example the wide-angle lens, which made **cinemascope** possible, is a product of First World War technology, produced as it was for tanks' periscopes to give a 180-degree view. War technology turns the weapon, the camera, into a gaze. 'Knowledge of the image becomes a form of potential capture of the symbolic, seizure of the **image**, and as we know the human gaze is part of this quest for knowledge, including self knowledge, a form of mirroring' (1993: 60). The camera is also extremely self-conscious, not just because it reflects itself but also because someone (film-maker, **spectator**) has to watch what the camera is watching for it to have any 'meaning'. In its self-reflexivity the camera has built into it the very essence of modernism which it could exercise provided production practices do not render its operations invisible. But, of course, this is precisely what mainstream narrative cinema does.

However, as with all other art forms, cinema also has its avant-garde – although, unlike other modernist art forms, it is not explicitly

hostile to mass or popular culture. In fact, many avant-garde film-makers wanted their work to reach mass **audiences**. Modernist cinema should be seen, therefore, as a global term that includes the work of film-makers of the avant-garde – which, depending on the period in history, can mean **surrealist** cinema, **counter-cinema** and **underground cinema** (to name but the most obvious). The work of these film-makers explores and exposes the formal qualities of film. Modernist cinema, in privileging formal concerns, is one that makes visible and questions its meaning-production practices. In this regard, modernist cinema questions the technology it uses, questions its power of the gaze, questions its power to represent (among other things reality, **sexuality**, and, just occasionally, the female body). It questions *how* it represents and *what* it represents. Modernist cinema turns the gaze into a critical weapon, turns the camera as an instrument of surveillance upon itself, starting with the fragmentation, destruction or **deconstruction** even of **classical narrative** structures.

Modernism focuses on questions of aesthetics and artistic construction. And much of modernist cinema follows that trend. Formal concerns are **foregrounded** over content. Certainly, the **Soviet cinema** of the mid-to-late 1920s espoused the modernist principles of meaning being produced from style – principally from **editing** styles. And the **montage** effects, produced by fast editing, of Sergei Eisenstein's films (such as *Strike* and *Battleship Potemkin*, both 1925) influenced other European cinemas of the avant-garde. The avant-garde and surrealist cinema in France of the 1920s is another early manifestation of this modernist trend. Film-makers of this generation in the early 1920s, were interested in the visual representation of the interior life of a character, that is, a formal rather than narrativized projection on to screen of the character's subjective imaginings and fantasies – dreams even (as in *Fièvre*, Louis Delluc, 1921, about female **subjectivity**, hallucination and desire). This subjective cinema gave way by the mid-1920s to a concern with the plasticity of the medium and its temporal and spatial qualities. The intention was to create a pure cinema where film signified in and of itself through its rhythms and plasticity (for example Jean Epstein's *Photogénies*, 1924; René Clair's *Entr'acte*, 1924). Later in the 1920s a third avant-garde was conceived out of the earlier two modes. Under the influence of surrealism, this avant-garde cinema became interested in how the temporal and spatial properties of film as well as its plasticity could be employed to reflect the workings of the unconscious – especially its suppression of sexual obsessions or desires. Germaine Dulac was,

arguably, the first to combine surrealist and avant-garde preoccupations in her film *La Coquille et le clergyman* (1927).

The various American avant-garde movements of the 1930s and 1940s pursued the French avant-garde tradition, particularly in its latest manifestation. Maya Deren's haunting *Meshes of the Afternoon* (1943), is an exemplary film in this respect. Deren stars in this film of paranoid dream fantasies. Her experimental play with time and space is just one way by which she achieves this sense of paranoia. By using a loop system (a single piece of film that is continuously repeated) with a sequence of a young woman fearfully coming down an anonymous street, traditional notions of time and space are eroded – instead we feel the urgency and inescapability of the woman's fear as well as the timelessness in which it is felt.

The American avant-garde of the 1960s to the mid-1970s, when it more or less died out (see also **underground cinema**), tends to echo the middle period of the French avant-garde with its notion of pure cinema. It produced, among other cinemas, a minimalist cinema – where the pro-filmic event (that which the camera is aimed at) is reproduced on screen and becomes, simultaneously, the filmic event (Gidal, 1989: 16). These films were either performed events involving the film-maker or a static camera standing outside a building for hours on end. In each case, time itself is being filmed. Andy Warhol's film *Empire* (1965) is an extreme case. He left his camera running for eight hours outside the Empire State building. Generally speaking, Warhol was more contained, shooting in single takes of thirty minutes (for example *Kitchen*, 1965). The plasticity of the film was also explored by either painting on to it or scratching it and by the use of tight compositional editing (as in Carolee Schneeman's *Fuses*, 1964, which uses all three modalities to provide an intimate portrait of a couple's sexual relationship).

As we indicated above, some modernist cinema, within its formal probings and experimentation, also addressed questions of subjectivity and sexuality. However, it is not a cinema that is readily associated with politics per se. That being said, at certain points in history, aesthetics and politics do combine to produce a political cinema, particularly in Europe. Jean-Luc Godard, in the mid-to-late 1960s talked about making a political cinema politically. By that he meant making political films through a political aesthetics of film. As with the other, primarily aesthetic modernist cinema, the process of meaning-production is exposed. The difference here lies with the non-subjective intentionality of this political cinema and the greater degree of fragmentation of meaning-production. In the first instance we are privy

no longer to the inner workings of the mind but, rather, as to how ideology constructs us. In the second instance, fragmentation, the gaps between signifier (the meanings produced) and the signified (the modes and means of production) are opened up and the relationship between the two is exposed. The illusion of realism and its ideological resonances are made transparent. The film as **sign** and as **myth** is deconstructed before our eyes. Godard, Agnès Varda and Margarethe von Trotta are exemplary film-makers of this second tendency of modernist cinema – a political aesthetic cinema, what is also known as counter-cinema.

A summary of episodes in Godard's film *Pierrot le fou* (1965) can serve as an illustration. Near the beginning of the film Ferdinand (alias Pierrot), who is in the advertising business, is obliged by his Italian wife to attend a cocktail parry. He turns up with her, an unwilling guest. This seemingly 'innocent' beginning is in fact a reference to the state of the French film industry which, in order to compete against **Hollywood** products, had found itself since the mid-1950s obliged to make co-productions with Italy. At the party, the entire shooting of which is through a pink filter, women and men talk to each other in advertising-speak – but this advertising-speak is also **gendered**: women, therefore, talk in advertising-speak about bras and hair products, men about cars and the like. At one point Ferdinand asks an American film-maker, Sam Fuller, 'what is cinema?' To which he gets the answer: 'film is like a battleground: love, hate, action, violence, death, in a word, emotions'. At the end of this sequence, Ferdinand picks up a huge piece of angel cake and throws it at a woman's face. He then runs out of the party and dashes home only to elope with his former lover of five years past, Marianne, who just 'happened' to be the babysitter for the evening.

Sam Fuller, then, speaks in the same clichés as the rest of the guests. Hollywood is as empty and full of air as the advertising-speak and the angel cake (a cake that is particularly American). Marianne, the symbolic name of France, might just rescue Ferdinand/Pierrot from the 'hell' in which he finds himself. In other words, the French film industry might just be able to avoid going under as an indigenous industry in its own right not only by foregoing co-productions with Italy but also by refusing to follow the candy-floss practices of Hollywood (hence the pink filter) and refusing to opt for the safe classic Hollywood narrative (as exemplified by Fuller's clichés) but choosing to run with its own talent (the eloping with Marianne). Of course the ending of the film, where both protagonists die, makes it clear that this is ultimately a utopian scenario. And, as recent figures

show, Hollywood is in an even more dominant position in France than it was at the time of the making of this film (in a twenty-year period, 1981–2001 the American share of the market in France has grown from 35 to 63 per cent).

But Godard does not confine his political statements to the celluloid war. *Pierrot le fou* is his first ostensibly political film and several international crises get similar parodic treatment, namely, the Algerian crisis and the Vietnam War. Let's take a look at the latter. Much later in the film, Ferdinand and Marianne – who have escaped Paris to some idyllic island in the sun – find themselves strapped for cash. They take a boat over to the mainland where they know they will encounter some American tourists and be able to fleece them thanks to their brilliant storytelling skills (incidentally, we have already seen that Ferdinand, at least, is not particularly successful at this). Marianne 'disguises' herself as a Vietnamese woman (she actually looks more like a geisha girl) and Ferdinand dons an American sailor's cap and blazer. Their audience is composed of two or three American sailors. Ferdinand and Marianne then act out a sketch, in a Punch and Judy style, that purports to reflect the United States/Vietnamese conflict. The actual filming of the sketch is very flat, giving the screen a comic-strip appearance and the colour is extremely hard (during his 1960s period Godard almost invariably used Eastman Kodak colour, which allows, in its processing, for the primary colours to be singled out, thus giving a harshness and violence to the image). The sketch shows Ferdinand/'Uncle Sam' dominating Marianne/'Uncle Ho' through brutal if senseless words: 'Hollywood, YAH! New York, YAH!' he yells as he swigs at a bottle of American whiskey – Marianne/'Uncle Ho' meantime crouches, cowed, mumbling in pseudo-Vietnamese. Ferdinand/'Uncle Sam' also holds a 'pretend' pistol which he continuously aims at Marianne's/'Uncle Ho's' head.

Godard's prescience is extraordinary here. It is noteworthy that in the mid-1960s, American opinion was very much behind the sending of its troops to Vietnam. By the late 1960s and early 1970s, however, opinion was wavering and was in the end radically changed thanks in part to television coverage. The then president, Richard Nixon, believed that television coverage might galvanize waning support for the war effort. It did precisely the opposite. One image in particular – the holding of a gun to a Vietnamese civilian's head and blowing his brains out – was crucial in turning public opinion against American intervention in Vietnam. The sketch in Godard's film ends with a matchbook made into an aircraft which is on fire and about to crash.

Ferdinand holds the matchbook in his hand so that it also looks as if his hand is on fire – a clear allusion to the use of napalm in the war (recalling another image of a little Vietnamese girl running down a road with her back on fire). The Americans, throughout the sketch, respond with stupid, vapid comments: 'Hey, I like that!', 'It's really good' – when the sketch is patently not good but embarrassingly crude.

By placing such an internationally crucial issue within the context of evidently inappropriate cultural texts, the comic strip and Punch-and-Judy vaudeville, and filming it in elemental and violent colour while simultaneously flattening the image, Godard achieves, through visual parody and irony, a far more virulent satire than he would have done through a straightforward polemic. Nor should it be forgotten that the presence of Sam Fuller at the beginning of the film now has a further resonance: Fuller is *the* American film-maker most associated with the spate of Cold War movies made during the 1950s and his films, set in Korea, were notorious for their extreme violence (see **war films**). Viewed in this light, Fuller's words uttered at the beginning of the film now take on different dimensions.

*see also*: **postmodernism**

## MOTIVATION

Motivation functions on a number of levels within a film to give the **diegesis** verisimilitude; it is a cinematic convention designed to create **naturalism**. David Bordwell (in Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 19) defines four types of motivation which serve to give a film unity and make the film's causality seem natural (see **naturalizing**): compositional, realistic, **intertextual** or generic, and artistic. Compositional motivation means the arrangements of props and specific use of **lighting** if necessary as well as the establishing of a cause for impending actions so that the story can proceed. For example, a dimly lit room in which only one object, the telephone, is highlighted suggests that the phone will ring and the protagonist will answer it and take action as a result. Realistic motivation concerns **setting**. The decor must be motivated realistically. So, in an **historical reconstruction** attention goes into every detail (costumes, sets, objects, etc.) to ensure that verisimilitude prevails. Realistic motivation also includes **narrative** plausibility. Motivation for actions must appear realistic. Generic motivation means that all **genres** have

**codes and conventions** which they follow. Thus, although a **musical** is intrinsically not compositionally or realistically motivated, within its own specificity the singing and dancing are entirely justified. Intertextual motivation, the complement to generic motivation, refers to the justification of the story as it relates to the conventions of other similar texts. Bordwell (1985: 19) quotes the **Hollywood** film narrative: 'we often assume that a Hollywood film will end happily simply because it is a Hollywood film'. Or the **star** can be the source of intertextual motivation: if she or he is a singer as well, the audience will expect a song. If she or he leads in real life the life she or he is portraying on screen, that again is a form of intertextual motivation (guaranteeing authenticity as well as **realism**). Finally artistic motivation appears when the film calls attention to its own aesthetics. With Hollywood this happens particularly when the technical virtuosity of film-making practices is highlighted, as in the studio spectacular.

For more detail see Bordwell in Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 12–23 and 70–84.

## MUSIC

Curiously music (as distinct from the musical genre) has only recently become an area of interest to film theorists and so is very much new territory within film studies. What follows is a general outline of the functions of music. First, music is, generally speaking, specially scored for a film. This is not to say that music scoring for films is not **intertextual** – clearly it will be. Obviously early sound music borrowed from theatre melodrama as a prototype (to imitate), and also from light orchestra music and of course theatre musicals. In this arena of intertextuality part of a film's music score may take as a deliberate quotation the music of others. Think, for example, of Mahler's Fifth Symphony for *Death in Venice* (Visconti, 1971); or popular songs already familiar to audiences – for a spectacular and anachronistic use, Baz Lurhmann's *Moulin Rouge!* (2001) is hard to surpass. On the whole, however, original scores are what predominate. Second, the musical score must have a form. Very much like a building, music acts as one of the narrative frameworks of the film. For example, certain musical themes will return throughout the film – each appearance refers back to the earlier one and recalls for us the emotions we experienced at that time (think, for example, of the screeching violins in *Psycho*, Hitchcock, 1960). Third, the score has

to fit the film – but not slavishly – for its purpose is to bring the film alive and to help seal the spectator–screen relationship. When at its best, in this context, the score works with the image in a delicate tension. If the music is too slavish then it takes the mystery out the film itself and encodes the preferred reading; it becomes too descriptive and thereby too prescriptive emotionally (the swelling of chords as someone is left heartbroken is a good example). What has been overlooked is that the image is not the music and vice-versa and so needs to hold itself in counterpoint to the image. As such, music becomes something more than just a reflection of a character or an action or mood. In this regard, music comes in one of three ways. Either it is composed beforehand (the composer has a certain idea of the script and works from that), or it is composed alongside the shooting of the film (the composer watches the rushes and adapts the musical score to what is seen), or finally it is composed afterwards. It is in the second instance that we can see how a composer is the most likely to influence the nature of what the film-maker is trying to achieve. But it is also the case that a score composed to the film once it is cut can greatly influence the feel of a film. One of the most intriguing cases is Miles Davis' spontaneous scoring of Louis Malle's *Ascenseur pour l'échafaud/Lift to the Scaffold* (1956); Davis improvised as the edited film rolled by; Malle for his part said that, thanks to Davis, his rather banal film was transformed into an interesting one. Fourth and finally, many aspects of a film score respond to fashion and taste, or more interestingly can be the initiators of fashion and taste. In this latter regard it is worth recalling Bernard Herrmann's scores for Hitchcock's movies, most famously *Psycho* and *Vertigo* (1958). In these two films (as in others) Herrmann brought modernist music to lay audiences. Herrmann, like many of the most famous music score composers for film, was classically trained. The modernist music of Schoenberg and Berg deeply influenced his own compositional practice, and elements of this can be found in his work for Hitchcock amongst others. So watching these films entailed listening to quite avant-garde music if the audiences did but know it. In this context, we are reminded that early, silent cinema (of the 1910s and 1920s) used classical composers' music to legitimate their products for middle-class consumers. Thus, the music of Saint-Saëns, Hindemith and Schoenberg gave cinema its authentic cachet as a seventh art – assuring its spectators that they were indeed conforming to good 'taste'. This practice of using classical composers still prevails today, a good example being Michael Nyman's work for Peter Greenaway's films of the 1980s.

In terms of effects, music can tell us about a character, reflecting deep even unconscious human qualities. Although there are many composers we could cite in the European context (for a change), Georges Auric as a prime example of this ability to reveal the state of the unconscious. Auric composed 125 scores for cinema. During the 1930s, along with several other important composers (Darius Milhaud, Maurice Jaubert, Arthur Honegger), he was part of the wave of composers who served to bring an aura of quality to French cinema in the light of the advent of sound. Moreover, along with Jaubert in particular, he was a significant contributor to the pessimistic and introspective 'feel' of the late 1930s **French poetic realist cinema**. He was also a significant composer to Jean Cocteau's films (*La Belle et la Bête*, 1946, and *Orphée*, 1950) – and no one could go more into the unconscious than in his work! This notion of film composers working with particular film directors gives us a number of famous duos within Western cinema. We have already mentioned a few to which we must add Nino Rota who worked with Fellini and Coppola. Amongst his huge output (around 150) of inventive but derivative (often self-plagiarized) scores, he gave us the music for *The Godfather* (1972) and *The Godfather: Part II* (1974). His music is often used to ironic effect (for example, the waltz in *The Godfather*) and draws on a huge range of styles. Often he scores films without seeing the script or film, thus creating a feeling of detachment between music and image (Dyer, 2004: 44). In this way the music can 'argue' against the image, creating dissonances or contradictory signs which of course opens up gaps and challenges us to understand what we are hearing and seeing with greater depth. It is noteworthy, especially in his scoring for Fellini, that a queer sexuality often emanated. Fellini was fascinated by homosexuality (see especially, *Satyricon*, 1969 and *Casanova*, 1976) and Rota supplied the essentially queer music to match (Dyer, 2004: 45). Howard Shore and David Cronenberg have worked together for over twenty years (e.g. *The Brood*, 1979 to *Crash*, 1996) – and the range of music created goes from aggressive terror to more suggestive and ambiguous tonalities, often pointing to an unclear subjectivity (think of the twins in *Dead Ringers*, 1988; or the cross-dressing in *M. Butterfly*, 1993). Another famous duo is Ennio Morricone and Sergio Leone of spaghetti Western fame. Moreover, he used an eclectic tonal palette ranging from harmonica to whips, electric guitars to trumpets and full orchestra. The music becomes almost a character – perhaps the alter-ego of Leone with its plaintive effect that is nostalgic and revelatory of an obsession with death. A final note in this context: despite the fact that they scored for other film-

makers, composers like Morricone tended to get associated with a particular genre. In this vein, mention should also be made of John Barry who became associated with a particular film type – namely the Bond movies (ten of which he scored, from the 1960s through to the 1980s).

Music also can tell us about gender. In its stylized form it can fix gender (soft romantic score-lines for the woman, harder ones for the male). But just as it can fix, so too it can unfix. If we compare the Western's music, with its huge optimistic sweeping landscape type music (à la Aaron Copland), with that of the nervy edgy urban (sometimes jazz-like) music of the **film noir** we can easily see how the former speaks to virile (fixed) masculinity and the latter to a masculinity in crisis (unfixed). In this regard we can see how music also relates to sexuality. We have already mentioned Shore's music. But see how sexual obsession and uncertainty abounds in the scores of Herrmann's music for Hitchcock. Just consider this in relation to *Psycho*. Originally Hitchcock wanted the shower scene without music, but was eventually persuaded by Herrmann that it needed the music score to give it the vicious relentlessness and sexually pathological edge. Brian Easdale's music for Powell's films works well to evoke the psychological edge of sexual repression that drives its protagonists (female and male alike) to pathological behaviour. We need only mention three of his most famous films – *Black Narcissus* (1946), *The Red Shoes* (1948) and *Peeping Tom* (1960) – to get the idea. What is worth noting too, in the case of these three films alone, is the queer sub-text that also prevails. In the first film, the nuns, unnaturally isolated, either scream out for male congruence or, it is suggested, find relief with each other. In the second, the young dancer is driven delirious by her ambition to succeed at the expense of a sexual life, but more significantly the impresario/male dancer homosexual relationship remains only just hidden. Finally, the repressed photographer of *Peeping Tom* displaces onto the women he kills his own sexual neurosis brought about by his father, with whom he can never find sublimation. As a last example let us consider David Raksin's music for Preminger's *Laura* (1944) – especially Laura's theme which is used to reveal the detective Mark's progressive falling in love with the dead woman (namely Laura). The music allows us to witness Mark becoming increasingly uncomfortable with his feelings about her as he struggles to regain control. The overriding feeling is of his inner conflict: how can he desire a dead woman who lives on only as a portrait? (See Burt, 1994: 168–85 for a detailed analysis.)

*see also*: **musical**

For further reading see Burt, 1994; Dickinson, 2003; Donnelly, 2001; Inglis, 2003; Kalinak, 1992; Kassabian, 2000; Powrie and Stilwell, 2005; Reay, 2004; Wojcik and Knight, 2001.

## MUSICAL

This entry is in two parts: a schematic history of the genre and an overview of its structures and strategies.

### *History*

The musical is seen as a quintessentially American or **Hollywood** genre, in much the same way as the **Western**. Unlike the Western, however, it is a hybrid genre given its descent from the European operetta (particularly Austrian) and American vaudeville and the music-hall. Although Alan Crosland's *The Jazz Singer* (1927) is generally accepted as the first **sound** film, the first all-talking, all-singing, all-dancing musical was the *The Broadway Melody* (1929, directed by Harry Beaumont). It is a noteworthy musical for a number of reasons, not least its title, which generated three further *Broadway Melodies* in the 1930s alone. Noteworthy too because its title refers topographically to a major source of Hollywood musicals, New York's Broadway. Furthermore, it established the tradition of the backstage story as an integral part of the musical. This tradition developed also into the sub-genre of the backstage musical (generally speaking a less expensive model to produce) – of which *Singin' in the Rain* (Stanley Donen, 1952) is arguably the best exemplar. *The Broadway Melody* also brought the lyricist Arthur Freed to the attention of the MGM mogul Louis B. Mayer who by the mid-1930s had finally agreed to give him a relatively free rein as producer. Freed was responsible for a major shift in the conventions of the musical, which during the late 1920s and early 1930s had been fairly conservative. He was also responsible for convincing MGM of the need for a stable of musical **stars**.

MGM is the studio most readily associated with this genre. However, one of the first all-time great musical pairings – Fred Astaire and Ginger Rogers – was with RKO. In 1933 Astaire and Rogers were paired up as a supporting team to the main story in *Flying Down to Rio* (1933). **Audience** response was such that they became an overnight success, and during the 1930s they were regularly RKO's best

box-office hit and the ideal romance couple (at least on screen). Traditionally they played the roles of the man-about-town sophisticate and the girl next door and their story was set in contemporary times. The other famous romance pair of that period, Jeannette MacDonald and Nelson Eddy, figured for the first time together in 1935 in an MGM production, *Naughty Marietta* (directed by Woody Van Dyke). This romantic couple appeared mostly in costume operettas and often the roles were reversed, MacDonald being the woman with **class** and Eddy the penniless prisoner (as in their first film) or in the role of some kind of out-of-society type (as in *New Moon*, 1940).

Musicals at this time had a fairly naive plot and were primarily perceived as vehicles for song and dance. However, it is worth considering just what this means. First of all, the **narrative** did incline towards simplicity – and was based on the Cinderella/Prince Charming **myth**. Often it was a case of 'boy meets girl, boy hates girl/girl hates boy', but because there was such an undoubted attraction they come together in the end: 'boy gets girl'. It is in this respect that, as Richard Dyer (*The Movie 75*, 1981, 1484) says, the musical points to its generic and **ideological** function as a 'gospel of happiness'. But, as far as the singing and dancing were concerned, routines and performance were a far more complex affair. Some of the greatest names from Broadway – lyricists and composers – were brought in by Hollywood: Cole Porter, Irving Berlin, Ira and George Gershwin, Jerome Kern, Rodgers and Hart, a bit later Oscar Hammerstein. The reason for bringing such talent in was twofold. In the early 1930s the musical genre was experiencing a slump, much like the rest of Hollywood, because of the Depression. To bring some excitement and panache into the musical and thereby attract audiences, Hollywood decided to buy in Broadway hits. In referring to Broadway, Hollywood also sought to bring artistic clout to its own productions.

These great names of American popular music did much in the 1930s to shape the look of the musical. At first, because they were commissioned to package songs for the films, the song and dance routines were worked through more like items in a review show. The songs paid little attention to plot and characterization. Indeed, characters seemed to burst into song and dance in an artificial and arbitrary way. Alternatively, the breaking into song and dance was given a rational explanation – for example, tapping a rhythm or something tapping a rhythm, or using a specific word or expression that necessarily introduces a song. However, once Fred Astaire had broken into the big time this changed and, because of his meticulous planning of his dance routines, composers were brought into closer alliance with

the actual production practices. For example, Astaire's work in collaboration with Irving Berlin and Jerome Kern certainly produced some of the best musicals of the late 1930s. Astaire insisted on full **shot** photography with no cutting away for his dance routines, whether solo or with Ginger Rogers (with whom he made nine films during the period 1933–9). This meant that music and choreography had to be worked out in the minutest detail. Music and dance informed each other (as, for example, in *Top Hat*, 1935; *Follow the Fleet*, 1936; *Carefree*, 1938).

The other move in the 1930s to counter the slump brought on by the Depression came with the highly stylized films of Busby Berkeley – the master of drill precision with his fanciful and abstract approach to dance routines using hundreds of chorus 'girls' to create geometrical patterns through their movements under the eye of the camera. His 1930s films (made for Warner Brothers) were almost pure spectacle with little attention to narrative but full focus on the capacity of the human form to exude an erotic sensuality. To this effect he used a single camera that roved over the human formations through either tracking or crane shots. Berkeley was the first to put female nudity into the musical (*Roman Scandals*, 1933); he is equally famous for his 'crotch shots' (*Gold Diggers of 1933*). As Altman (1989: 257) puts it, Berkeley offered sex through the **gaze** – with the camera acting as the eye – in his spectacles 'the show's power (was mainly) identified with the woman's lure'.

By the end of the 1930s the musical was on the wane again. Ginger Rogers had split from Fred; MacDonald and Eddy were very faded stars indeed. Several strategies were adopted. At MGM, thanks to Freed's insistence that talent should be nurtured amongst the contract actors and thanks too to his success in producing *The Wizard of Oz* (Victor Fleeting, 1939), a new musical formula was introduced. This combined youth and music in the form of the 'kids putting on a show' musical. The star vehicles were Judy Garland (launched by *The Wizard of Oz)* and Mickey Rooney (already a star for his Andy Hardy series). Together they made four musicals in this vein (*Babes in Arms*, 1939; *Strike up the Band*, 1940; *Babes on Broadway*, 1941; *Girl Crazy*, 1943). At Universal, child actors were used as well, but this time as a vehicle for bringing popular classics into the musical arena. Thus Deanna Durbin sang her way through *One Hundred Men and a Girl* (1937) and managed to persuade the great conductor Stokowski to conduct an out-of-work orchestra. By the 1940s other, new formulas were introduced. To the classic musicals and putting-on-a-show musicals were added composer biographies (*Yankee Doodle Dandy*,

1942; *Rhapsody in Blue*, 1945; *Till the Clouds Roll By*, 1946; *Night and Day*, 1946; *Words and* Music, 1948) and biographical musicals of 'stars' with a showbiz background (*Lillian Russell*, 1940; *Incendiary Blonde*, *The Dolly Sisters*, both 1945).

Of these three traditions it is the last, the 'life-stories' of performers, that fared best in terms of continuation. They went on well into the 1950s and indeed into the 1970s as with *A Star is Born* (1954); *I'll Cry Tomorrow* (1955); *Lady Sings the Blues* (1972); *The Rose* (1979). What is interesting is that it is mostly the biography of female performers that 'fascinates'. Generally speaking their story is one of an unprecedented rise to success followed by a slow decline through drugs, alcohol and self-neglect – even though they carry on singing. Implicitly fame is too hard or hot for them to handle. Ironically (since it was the opposite of the real-life situation), of the four films quoted above only *A Star is Born* is an exception – with the husband (played by James Mason) of the emerging star (played by Judy Garland) being the one to fall into alcoholic decline. It is worth matching this prurient concern with falling or failing female performers with the counter-practice of a literal White-washing of a male composer's biography: Cole Porter's in *Night and Day*. Porter, a bi-sexual, is portrayed in the film as a straight male (played by Cary Grant). But then little in the other composer's biographies was true either!

It was, however, Freed's conception of the musical that was greatly responsible for revitalizing the genre and marking it out as an MGM product, particularly during the 1940s and 1950s. His idea was that song and dance should move the narrative on, that there should be nothing arbitrary about the introduction of song and dance – indeed that the progression from speech to song to dance should be a natural one (see **naturalizing**). Apart from Judy Garland, Gene Kelly (who had been signed up from Broadway in 1940) was another star vehicle of this period to carry out Freed's conception of a greater **naturalism**. To this effect, Kelly was instrumental in introducing the contemporary urban musical such as *On the Town* (1949), which closely integrated song, dance and story and which was partly shot on location. Similarly, *An American in Paris* (made in 1951, but for which the music had been written in 1937 by George Gershwin shortly before his untimely death) portrayed the vitality of the musical scene in Paris in the late 1930s with the heavy influence of jazz and contemporary music. By the mid-to-late 1940s contemporary music in musicals, under the influence of Glenn Miller and Duke Ellington (to name but two), also included Big Band Swing (see *The Glenn Miller Story*, 1953).

Freed's other smart move was to bring the Broadway director Vincente Minnelli to MGM. With a reputation for lavish and stylish musicals on stage, Minnelli was none the less also a firm believer in the integrated type of musical Freed advocated. His first film musical was with an all-Black cast, *Cabin in the Sky* (1943). He then went on to work with Judy Garland and together they produced some of their best work: *Meet Me in St Louis* (1944), *Till Clouds Roll By* (1946) and *The Pirate* (1948).

By the late 1940s, Astaire was persuaded out of early retirement by MGM and enjoyed felicitous dance pairings with Judy Garland and Cyd Charisse. He also joined the studio that housed his only 'real' rival, Gene Kelly. Their styles are so different, however, that rather than considering them as rivals – at least with hindsight – we might better see them as exemplary of the two dominant tendencies of the musical as it relates to the American cultural system: that is, to selling marriage (Altman, 1989: 27). On the one hand, there is the stylized inventive elegance of Fred Astaire; on the other, the brash energetic experimentation of Gene Kelly. Astaire is the witty, cool man about town who gets his woman. Kelly, with his edgy over-insistence on his virility, remains a man-child who is not too convinced about marriage. In terms of a legacy it is fair to say that between them and with Garland and Charisse they helped to revitalize the musical and became part of the heyday of the 1950s **colour** musical that also included other great musical stars such as Frank Sinatra and Bing Crosby.

The period 1930–60, despite some severe dips, marked the great era of the Hollywood musical. By the 1950s, the studio system was on the decline and there was an increasing need to target audiences more systematically. Popular Broadway hits still made it on to the screen (for example, *Oklahoma*, 1955; *The King and I*, 1956; *South Pacific*, 1958, and – imported from Britain – *My Fair Lady*, 1964). But dwindling audiences meant that new strategies had to be developed. Thus, Hollywood linked up with the record industry as a means of targeting a new audience: the youth class. So a spate of teenager musicals was produced, mostly starring Elvis Presley – who if he could not act could certainly sing and dance. Presley, literally, sold sex through his song and dance routines (arguably his most famous rock musical is *Jailhouse Rock*, 1957). Britain briefly imitated this trend, primarily in the Cliff Richard series of musicals (such as *Expresso Bongo*, 1959; *Summer Holiday*, 1963). However, these solo star performances – at least in the United Kingdom – were soon superseded by pop group musicals in the form of the Beatles *(A Hard Day's Night*, 1964; *Help!*, 1965).

The trend in the so-called 'hip sixties' was also for a greater **realism** in the musical and non-musical stars. *West Side Story* (1961) is exemplary in this respect. Set in Manhattan, it tells the story of rival gangs (Whites versus Puerto Ricans). A modern *Romeo and Juliet* narrative, the film treats racism, juvenile delinquency and young love in a serious fashion. It is also one of the first musicals to create a more believable world and to end in tragedy. This greater realism in the musical gets carried into the 1970s with the disco-dance musicals of *Saturday Night Fever* (1977) and *Grease* (1978), both with John Travolta (the former film made him into a star – for a while).

The 1970s saw a profusion of rock musicals that ranged from documentary types (*Woodstock*, 1970) to realism (the Jamaican film *The Harder They Come*, 1972) to fantasy-cum-flower-power (*Godspell*, 1973; *Jesus Christ Superstar*, 1973; *Hair*, 1979). But the early tradition of the 1930s did not disappear – *the* exemplary star vehicle for the traditional musical was Barbra Streisand. Just a few of her films serve to show not just how prolific she was, but how her range goes from comedy to tragedy to performer-biography and so incorporates the heritage of the traditional musical from 1930 to 1960: *Funny Girl* (1968); *Hello Dolly!* (1969) (performer-biographies); *On a Clear Day You Can See Forever* (1970) (comedy); *The Way We Were* (1974) (tragedy); *Funny Lady* (1975), and so on. Indeed, even after its heyday, the musical – albeit on the decline – never fully abandoned its traditional values. For example, Robert Wise, who directed *West Side Story*, went on to direct *The Sound of Music* (1965) – a sweetly sugary musical that in the final analysis sells marriage. And in France, Jacques Demy had a brief stab at the genre, combining realism with sweet sugariness, with *Les Parapluies de Cherbourg* (1964) and *Les Demoiselles de Rochefort* (1967).

As a genre, the musical has been very much on the wane since the 1980s and just occasionally reappears in fairly unextravagant forms such as the backstage musical, for example *Fame* (1980). Dancing or **road movie** musicals that use contemporary songs for their musical soundtrack represent another inexpensively produced form of musical. John Travolta resurfaces in *Staying Alive* (1983) to dazzle us with his disco-dancing technique. What is interesting, however, is that the genre, since the 1990s, has in some ways moved out of its Hollywood orbit and gone transnational – each product seeking to challenge the pre-existing codes and conventions (see below). The Australian filmmaker Baz Luhrmann looks like he has been itching to make a full-on musical ever since his *Strictly Ballroom* (1992) which sets a teenage love story within a ballroom dancing contest. His *Moulin Rouge!*

(2001) in this regard is a tour de force. Another Australian filmmaker, Stephan Elliott, brings camp to the musical in explicit style with the very gay and very funny *Adventures of Priscilla, Queen of the Desert* (1994). In the European context, Lars Von Trier offers his own macabre idea of a musical with *Dancer in the Dark* (2000). For further discussion of the impact of this transnational revival see the end of the next section.

### *Structures and strategies*

(In this section I refer to several useful and important studies on the genre: Dyer, 1977 and 1986; Feuer, 1982; Altman, 1989.) The musical is extremely self-referential; it spends most of its time justifying its existence – as, for example, with the putting-on-a-show musical (one of the most common generic types) – 'the show must go on!' In this type of musical there is a double referentiality pointing to the narcissistic and exhibitionist nature of the genre. Apart from the sombre-ending musicals, the general strategy of the genre is to provide the **spectator** with a utopia through the form of entertainment. The entertainment is the utopia. So again self-referentiality is at work.

According to Dyer (1977a: 3) there are five categories functioning within this utopian sensibility: abundance, energy, intensity, transparency and community. All are related to the ideological strategies of the genre: selling marriage, **gender** fixity, communal stability and the merits of capitalism. Abundance starts with the décor and the costumes – it insists on the United States' wealth and well-being. Energy is the dance and song routine, but also the camera-work – it is also the hallmark of (White) America's pioneering spirit. Intensity derives from the sense of intimacy that the spectator takes pleasure in when watching the body perform – literally, the body 'putting-itself-on-show'. Transparency refers to the reflection the musical purports to give on the American way of life of which the folk community is an essential ingredient. Altman (1989: 25), for his part, talks of the musical as an 'ode to marriage' and the marrying of riches (as exemplified by the male) to beauty (in the form of the female). The musical must also be seen in the light of its contextual relationship with social moments (such as the Depression) and structures of pleasure – especially since it is not always the female form that we enjoy watching dance. For example, Gene Kelly and John Travolta provide, albeit in somewhat different ways, visual pleasures that have more in common with each other – starting with the insistence on virile sexuality – than the visual pleasure offered by Astaire.

Altman (1989: 27) makes the point that cause and effect are fairly tenuous in the musical and that it is less a case of chronology or psychological **motivation** than one of paralleling stories in a comparative mode. He is of course referring to the classic period of the American musical (1930–60) – although his reading still holds true for the reprise classic musical (the happy love musical) that persists after 1960. In that it reconciles terms that seem irreconcilable (starting with sexual difference), the musical 'fashions a myth out of the American courtship ritual' (1989: 27). The musical then is based on the principle of duality or pairings, of male/female oppositions, which it ultimately resolves. Thus the paralleling serves to set up a series of binary oppositions, starting with the one based in gender. Each of the two characters embodies the opposite of the other and it is those oppositions that must be resolved for marriage to occur (1989: 24). These oppositions are what Altman calls dual-focus structures (1989: 19). They generate a chain of oppositions: sexual, background, national origin, temperament, age, colour of hair. Thus, for example, in *Gigi* (Vincente Minnelli, 1958) characters are paired: Gigi with Gaston, and Gigi's grandmother with Gaston's uncle. Settings, locations, trips and songs are paired. Roles and activities are paired: Gigi is the girl-child about to emerge into womanhood; Gaston is an established businessman, she is frivolous, he serious. However, as their story develops he takes to fun and she to being more serious. Their marriage then becomes a merging of adult and child qualities as well as a containment of the generational problematic and its potential incestual value. Gaston is after all a generation older than Gigi – a gap mirrored, in reverse, in the uncle/grandmother love affair (see Altman, 1989: 22–7).

Opposites eventually attract and can be melded. Even Gene Kelly, who is an interesting exception to the dual-sexuality focus, is eventually brought into the community: which means marriage, children and so on. We mostly remember Kelly dancing alone, the child-like clown and self-centred show-off who in the end has to grow up. In this way, says Altman (1989: 57), Kelly embodies an American dream – he keeps the 'good' of his childlikeness and also matures. In this respect only, he is also in the vein of the female child role rather than the serious mature male role. Opposites are, then, finally reconcilable, and this applies to all the binary oppositions that the musical generates. This includes the work/entertainment opposition which is often a strategy of the backstage musical. This type of musical opposes the 'real' with 'art'. The real world of work is drab and ordinary; that of the stage is ideal and one of beauty. In *Silk*

*Stockings* (Rouben Mamoulian, 1957) – a remake of *Ninotchka* – Cyd Charisse is the serious (that is, dull) businesslike Soviet representative and Astaire the happy-go-lucky (that is, fun-loving) Hollywood director. Charisse comes to learn that entertainment is in fact good business. This type of opposition can generate a slightly different one if both characters represent different types of 'art'. Thus, in a musical one character can be a musician or ballet dancer, the other a music-hall entertainer or tap-dancer. The former sees her or his 'art' as high art and therefore serious work and, conversely sees the other's work as entertainment, not serious – therefore hardly work at all, and certainly low art. In reverse the entertainer sees the other as a snob who has not lived. By the end of the musical both come to see the merit of the other's work (see *An American in Paris*, or, on a slightly different tangent of opposing theatre worlds, *The Barkleys of Broadway*, 1949).

The musical therefore functions ideologically to resolve the fear of difference. In this way, it functions as a text which disguises one of society's paradoxes. By extension, of course, this means that it makes invisible the other sets of paradoxes that are inherent in society, thereby ensuring society's stability. Thus the musical also makes safe the notion of the community as *the* place to be. Musicals that fall into this category are typically called 'folk musicals', and implicitly deal with the American folk. Small town or agricultural communities are common in this type of musical (as in *Oklahoma* or *Seven Brides for Seven Brothers*, 1954). Central to these musicals are home and the family. Family groupings, the extended family – all work towards the well-being of the community. To this effect, this 'joyous' folk musical nearly always gets threatened by a baddie or gang warfare – the 'other' outside who threatens the stability of the community. Although they are less present, even large cities are represented as a coherent community. For example, St Louis in *Meet Me in St Louis* is humanized to the level of a small-town community (Altman, 1989: 275).

This same levelling also occurred for all-Black-cast musicals (directed and composed by Whites) – of which in the heyday of the musical genre there were only a few. Apart from the first all-Black-cast musical, *Hallelujah* (Vidor/Berlin, 1929), *Cabin in the Sky* (Minnelli/Duke) and *Porgy and Bess* (Preminger/Gershwin, 1959) are the two most often quoted. These latter two films contain the Black characters within a safely boundaried community (Catfish Row and Kittiwah Island for *Porgy and Bess)* and give a White-eyed version of the Black folklore. Similarly, *Hallelujah* contains the Black characters

within the family household consisting of shanty houses and the cotton fields. This film, however, is based not on the traditional oppositions evoked above for all-White musicals but on the opposition chain of religion/**sexuality**, virtue/sin (!). In terms of Black folklore, it includes a further opposition, this time in relation to 'Black' music – or rather the Whites' perception of it: church music and jazz, where the former is associated with 'virtue and goodness', the latter with sin and woman-temptress. Other than these full-blown White-eyed visions of Blackness (to which we can add the minstrelsy plantation musical *The Green Pastures*, William Keighley and Marc Connelly, 1936), there is the isolated presence of Paul Robeson playing a slave on a cotton farm in *Show Boat* (Whale/Kern, 1936), in which he sings *Old* (sic) *Man River*, or an ennobled African helping the White man (*Sanders of the River*, Alexander Korda, 1935; *King Solomon's Mines*, Stevenson, 1937, in both of which he sings African songs). In all cases he is contained within a White colonialist environment. As a last measure of this levelling and **normalizing**, tap-dancing which is a Black tradition, is totally recuperated into White musicals with no acknowledgement of its Black origins until the 1970s when tribute is finally paid to that heritage in *Black* Joy (1977) and *Thank God it's Friday* (1978).

Altman (1989: 32ff.) isolates four key functions of the cinematic **apparatus** in the musical construction: **settings**, **iconography**, music, dance. A key technique for settings was to use repetition for comparative purposes, to underscore the duality of the sexual oppositions. Therefore, work and home spaces have similar settings or décor; or the two spaces in which the protagonists move (and dance) – be they work or home – mirror each other. Similarly, the proliferation of other couples serves as mirrors to the main couple or pair. In terms of iconography, what dominates is the duet and the solo shot. But even in the presence of the solo shot the spectator fills it in because she or he knows that the coupling is pre-ordained (1989: 39). Similarly with the music. The duet is there for the maximum tension and climax of the narrative. However, the solo carries most of the musical and, as with the solo shot, the spectator fills it in with the missing other (1989: 40). Finally, dance: the camera dances with the characters. It either adopts the position of a watching audience and is, therefore, static and panning left to right; or it is fluid using tracking or crane shots (as we saw with Busby Berkeley). As with the other key functions, the camera catches solo, duet or group dancing. In order to invest these shots with energy – particularly when the camera is static – the tendency is to cut up the shooting with

close-ups on feet, hands and faces. The exception to this rule is, as we have seen, Astaire, who insisted on full shots for his routines – whether solo, duet or ensemble.

Dyer (*The Movie* 75, 1981, 1484) speaks of a standard model for a genre as having three periods: primitive, mature, decadent. We have seen how the musical has had a checkered career, reflecting partly audience taste, partly finance (the musical is a very expensive genre to produce), partly due to social conditions (emergence of a youth class, greater choice of leisure pursuits, periods of economic recession). This entry has mostly talked about the first two periods, so a brief word is necessary on the last. By the decadent phase Dyer means that the time in the genre's development has come when its **codes and conventions** can be questioned. Until the 1960s and 1970s the musical did not question itself – as we have seen it indulged in narcissistic auto-satisfaction. Arguably, the rock musical of the 1960s started the questioning of the codes and conventions of the genre. It is interesting to note that some critics qualify *Easy Rider* (Dennis Hopper, 1969) as a rock musical – even though there is no on-screen singing and dancing, just a soundtrack of rock music – whereas most see it as a **road movie**. The point in this debate is not really what genre it is but rather that it typified, for some, a definite change in the orientation of the musical because the message of the film was politicized in its counter-cultural aspirations and because the use of contemporary songs on the soundtrack was a break with copyright law. Similarly, Blacks started putting their own culture and music up on screen in films like *Shaft* (1971) and *Superfly* (1972) – which in some ways backfired because Hollywood co-opted their work in a series of blaxploitation movies (see **Black cinema**).

A film-maker often quoted in the context of the decadent period of the musical is Bob Fosse. *Sweet Charity* (1969) and *Cabaret* (1972) are exemplary of his challenge to Hollywood. He mixes elements of art cinema with movie entertainment – the influences of Federico Fellini and Bertolt Brecht respectively are felt in these films. High and low art are therefore reconciled from the beginning. Dance style goes from the fluid to the ugly and brash. The camera-work similarly goes from the fluid to the vertiginous. And there is 'no such thing as happiness'. Nor, incidentally, is there any such thing as the good all-American folk community, or the merits of capitalism. All is either a bit seedy, decadent or just plain vulgar. No 'Nice, nice Miss American Pie' here. But perhaps the musical to end all musicals is Robert Altman's *Nashville* (1975). Nashville, the so-called heart of country and Western music and all-American folk, literally disintegrates

before the spectator's eyes. Altman's musical goes nowhere, comes from nowhere, it tells you nothing, it is *not* about country and Western music, no one mirrors anyone, and, finally, what pairing there is remains dysfunctional from beginning to end. Nothing is reconciled and the film ends in a solo performance.

As we mentioned at the end of the history section, since the 1980s, the musical has re-manifested itself under new guises – albeit on a very small scale. The Australian Baz Luhrmann has taken the musical by the scruff of its neck and shaken it into something new, highly entertaining and zestful at the same time as offering new challenges though his own interpretation of the musical. First, he brings the musical back to spectacle and makes it an attraction that directly addresses youth audiences. He began this with *Strictly Ballroom*, continued it with *William Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet* (1996) – a fabulous modernization of Shakespeare's story about the thwarted and doomed lovers told in a pop-video style – and brings this effort to renovate to full-blown excess in *Moulin Rouge!* Second, he is completely unafraid to use music in a postmodern fashion: picking out songs of any period to match the mood he wants to convey despite the fact that, as for example with *Moulin Rouge!*, his film is set in the past (Paris of the Belle Epoque in this instance). As he rightly comments (2001: 16) this anachronistic use of song is not new: 'it's very common for musicals to utilize music that people have a previous relationship to'. In *Moulin Rouge!* there is only one new song – all the rest are borrowed and/but it is the clever placing of them that alters them, at the same time as we sense them as familiar. Indeed, this whole film is an essay on the intrinsically 'borrowed' nature of genre in general and the musical in particular – and of course its starting point are the earlier film versions of *Moulin Rouge!* themselves (E. A. Dupont, 1928; Sidney Lanfield, 1934; John Huston, 1952). Yet in his **mise-en-abîme** of **intertexts** (musicals, melodramas, classical era cinema and early primitive cinema) he makes something new happen. He takes the backstage/putting-on-a-show musical and fills it with excess. The plush, rich mise-en-scène is everywhere, even the tacky artificiality of the city-scape backdrops is self-consciously excessive, as too is the play with gender and sexuality in the secondary or chorus roles. Thus, on the one hand, everything points to the non-natural effects of the musical genre – especially the richness of décor being brought into a backstage musical (which generally speaking is about the poverty of the means of production) – and to the pleasure we receive in viewing this excess. But on the other hand, Luhrmann also takes our pleasure

away. The camera-work is full of energy, dashing all over the place during the song and dance routines – almost as if on a trapeze wire itself. Yet, just as soon as a routine begins (in both the show routines and the backstage ones), the camera cuts away. We know that in a musical the camera can mingle in with the dancers, follow them around (it is one of the conventions) or stay at a distance and follow the movement as would a spectator watching a stage performance. Luhrmann's camera-work does both but neither – it begins then pulls away. So we never get to see our main protagonists (or indeed much of the rest of the cast) in a protracted sense dancing for us, the camera consistently cuts away. And this is Luhrmann's other big challenge to the genre: his camera-work functions to undermine the very concept of the musical. Rather than show it all and give us the pleasure of bodies moving in full view, it frustrates our pleasure by what it conceals: Nicole Kidman is never on the trapeze long enough for us to look; she never does a proper dance routine with Ewan McGregor (and so on). In essence the film is chaotic. It is also painterly (just like the source it draws on, Toulouse-Lautrec's *Belle Epoque Paris*) and as such the space is cut up in unusual ways. It has something for everyone: songs for all generations, it rocks like a pop-video and – for the younger ones – there are special effects dotted throughout (courtesy of the Australian company Animal Logic). A truly postmodern, transnational high concept, high-camp spectacle it appeals to young audiences as much as older generations – do we seriously mind not getting it all?

With Luhrmann, then, there is still pleasure in the withdrawal of pleasure – we cannot have it all but we can have some. Such could not be said of Lars Von Trier's revival of the genre with *Dancer in the Dark* which is so unremittingly about loss and lack of plenitude – the bleak narrative of the sacrificial good mother who ends up going to the gallows brings it closer to a Janáćek opera than a musical. And yet, in its daring, it too makes some important contributions to our thinking about this genre. Whilst Luhrmann asks us to ponder the self-reflexivity of the genre by excessively layering its inherent richness (colour, music, décor, etc.), Von Trier goes in the completely opposite direction. Colour is filtered down to a dowdy green and brown, narrative is stripped down to a bare sketch-line, and a sense of improvisation overrides any notion of strong choreography or actor direction. In all these ways, including the hand-held camera work for the acting scenes, we can see how Von Trier has brought the Dogme manifesto, with its vow of chastity in cinema practice, into the musical genre as a way of creating a new kind of realist musical (not

seen since *West Side Story* perhaps). Significantly also, working against the genre's predominant trope of selling the idea of community, in Von Trier's film there is no sense of community. The mother, Selma (played by Björk), is loved by one other person only (a factory worker, Kathy, played by Catherine Deneuve). But Selma loves only her son for whom she will do everything to protect (including commit murder). The musical in effect is hers alone, and in her head. As an escape-mechanism from the terrible existence she is subjected to, she sings herself into a space of fantasy, making excursions into song and dance where no one and no thing, including her advancing congenital blindness (hence the title of the film), can assail her. Perhaps this is why, for these 'musical' scenes, Von Trier reserved his one moment of excess. He positioned one hundred cameras around the set to capture, from every angle, Selma's song and dance routines. The idea was to keep away from anything artificial (such as the camera weaving in and out or holding a 180-degree perspective on the performance as with theatre). By recording these performances of Selma's mind in this way, Von Trier lets Björk reveal the deep authenticity of this beleaguered woman. Deep inner processes are not something we normally associate with the musical; therein lies the challenge of Von Trier's film. We are no longer in the realm of music and dance functioning to build a character or story (the traditional functions of a musical), but of a character building her own inner self before us, formulating her identity through her own song and dance (appropriate in a way since Björk composed the music and wrote all but one of the songs). By dancing in the dark, she asserts her self. Almost as if – to recall the title of Dick Hebdige's famous 1988 study about sub-cultural practices of resistance to dominant ideology – she is hiding in the light.

*for Bombay musicals see* **Bollywood**; *see also* **genre**, **studio system**

For further reading, beyond authors mentioned in the text, see Cohan, 2002; Knight, 2002; Marshall and Stilwell, 2000.

## MYTH

Myth has become a key concept in semiotics to refer to the way in which reality is represented. Roland Barthes is the main philosopher associated with this concept, the principles of which he set out in his book *Mythologies* (1957). Having shown how myth operates to produce

meaning (see **denotation/connotation**), he proceeds to analyse certain aspects of popular culture and explain how these cultural artefacts produce meaning. Cultural artefacts have a mythic function, they are just so many ways by which we understand the culture in which we find ourselves. Myth mediates reality. Myth is a concept that primarily refers to a process of signification by which any given society 'explains' its history and culture. Myths are part of everyday life and change across time. History and culture inform myth but, equally, myth serves as a way by which history and culture are 'explained' as a natural process. Myth, then, is part of the **ideological** process of **naturalization**. The **structuralist** and anthropologist, Claude Lévi-Strauss argued that 'a dilemma or contradiction stands at the heart of every living myth. The impulse to construct the myth arises from the desire to resolve the dilemma' (quoted in Cook, 1985, 90). We can see how this concept of myth is at the heart of **classical narrative cinema**'s discursive strategy of order/disorder/order-renewed. **Dominant cinema** seeks always to resolve a dilemma. In terms of film as a cultural artefact, Barthes's assertion that film is a sign system that functions mainly on the level of myth – which then loses all tangible reference to the real world – equally refers to mainstream cinema and its desire for the 'reality-effect'. Mainstream cinema spends a lot of effort disguising the fact that what it is showing is pure illusionism.

*for more detailed discussion see* **denotation/connotation**, **semiology/semiotics**

## NARRATIVE/NARRATION

Narrative involves the recounting of real or fictitious events. Narrative cinema's function is storytelling not description, which is, supposedly, a part function of the **documentary**. Narrative refers to the strategies, **codes and conventions** (including **mise-en-scène** and **lighting**) employed to organize a story. Primarily, narrative cinema is one that uses these strategies as a means of reproducing the 'real' world, one which the **spectator** can either identify with or consider to be within the realms of possibility. Even **science-fiction** films have a narrative with which the spectator can identify (for example, forces of good fighting it out with those of evil). The **motivation** of the characters moves the story along to make a 'realist' narrative. In mainstream cinema it is traditionally the male who

is the prime motivator of the narrative – that is, it is his actions that set the narrative in motion. However, female characters can also act as prime motivators of the narrative even though they mostly remain as object. For example when the woman is at the centre of the enigma around which the film revolves, as is often the case in **film noir**, she is still, usually, object not **subject** of the narrative. She is the object of investigation, since it is her 'enigma' or story that must be probed, investigated and finally resolved by the male protagonist (for a classic in this mode, see *Laura*, Otto Preminger, 1944).

Because narrative exists in so many cultural forms (novel, film, theatre, mythology, painting, etc.) it appears 'as natural as life itself' (Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 129). And it is this naturalness, or **naturalizing** process that film theorists have sought to contest, at least since **structuralism**. Narrative structures and narrative analysis of film first became an area of theoretical investigation as part of the structuralist debates on cinema. The study of the spheres of action and narrative functions in fairy tales by Vladimir Propp (1920s) and the structure of folk narratives by Claude Lévi-Strauss (1950s) were systems applied by film theorists to film narrative (see Metz, 1972 and Heath, 1981). Structuralist narratology looked for common structures underlying the diversity of narratives – as if seeking a grammar of narrative. Theorists currently interested in this approach are now turning to the work of Gérard Genette (1980) because he makes clear and useful distinctions between three types of narration, allowing one to speak of film as a narrative function, the narration going on within the film and the narrating of the film itself. Thus, he distinguishes between narrative, **diegesis** and narrating. He uses *narrative* to refer to the undertaking to tell an event. Where film is concerned narrative would refer then to film as a narrative statement, to its function as a narrative text. His second term, *diegesis*, refers to the succession of events and their varied relations that make up the particular story. Thus, with film, diegesis refers to the story we see projected up on screen and refers, therefore, to both the storyline and the visual mise-en-scène His third term, *narrating*, refers to the act of **enunciation**. In film this third term refers, first, to the acts of utterance within the film, the 'act of producing a form of words which involves a human subject' (Hawthorn, 1992: 57). It refers, therefore, to the characters whose utterances motivate the narrative. In the second instance, enunciation refers to the **spectator**–text relations. In other words, the narrative is being narrated to us. We are witnessing the act of narrating.

A primary focus on narrative by Anglo-Saxon film theorists, however, has been on classic narrative cinema as exemplified by **Hollywood**, especially the cinema of the 1930s to the 1950s. The classic narrative, for the most part, negates the female point of view and is predominantly based on male **sexuality**; thus films tend to be Oedipally over-determined (that is, there is a dominance of Oedipal narratives). Narrative in cinema tends to follow a fairly standard set of patterns which can be defined by the triads order/disorder/order and order/enigma/resolution – often referred to as disruption/resolution. These triads often, but not exclusively, trace the successful or unsuccessful completion by the male protagonist of the **Oedipal trajectory** – that is, simply put, to enter successfully into the social conventions of patriarchy, find a wife and settle down. In this way the narrative achieves closure. In order for these triads to have a cohesive structure, the film narrative is structured on the principle of another strategic triad: repetition/variation/opposition. To keep the film diegesis tight, visual or discursive elements get picked up again during the unravelling of the narrative (repetition) and/or altered somewhat (variation) and/or, finally, shown in a completely contradistinctual way (opposition). A good example of this strategy, which all films use to varying degrees, can be found in the various car sequences that punctuate *Thelma and Louise* (Ridley Scott, 1991). Compare the first car sequence, where the characters escape from the drudgery of their humdrum existence (one form of a life sentence), with the final one, which represents an exhilarating assertion of their right to an alternative resolution to their predicament than that of a life sentence in prison.

*see also*: **classical narrative cinema**, **diegesis**, **dominant cinema**, **Oedipal trajectory**

For further reading see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985; Bordwell, 1986; Branigan, 1992; McMahon and Quin, 1986.

## NATURALISM

A term closely associated with realism. Naturalism first came about in the theatre of the late nineteenth century with the work of, among other dramatists and theatre directors, the Frenchman André Antoine. Antoine's **theory** was to get the actors to move away from the theatrical **gesturality** so prevalent at the time. To do this he created the principle of the fourth wall, which meant that the actors would not

address or acknowledge the **audience**. They acted as if the audience was not there. In this regard, the proscenium arch of theatre is effectively abolished and the audience feels as if it is witnessing a slice-of-life realism; it as if viewers are literally dropping in, unseen (a fly on the fourth wall!), on the goings-on of the people on stage. To sustain this effect the décor is realistic, the subject matter contemporary and dialogue delivered naturally – 'they speak just like us'. Actors enter the personae of their characters rather than represent them. They impersonate their characters and reveal their complexity from within. This form of naturalistic acting would later become labelled **method acting** (interestingly, the French talk of actors as 'encamping' their roles).

Antoine went on to direct films and took this principle of naturalism with him, adapting it to the cinema. He insisted on location shooting, the use of a multi-camera point of view (which he believed would parallel the effect of the fourth wall) and an **editing** style that would involve the **spectator** in the narrative (through identification with the mediating camera). He was, incidentally, the first to show female nudity in **narrative** cinema (*L'Arlésienne*, 1922).

Naturalism as an effect, then, places the spectator voyeuristically. We take up the position of the mediating camera. The characters seem so natural, their dialogue or verbal interchanges so real, the **setting** and **mise-en-scène** so totally realistic that an easy identification takes place. We are there alongside the characters. Take, for example, *On the Waterfront* (Elia Kazan, 1954) and the use of the **diegetic** audience to place us as one of the protagonist's entourage (Marlon Brando as Terry Malloy). The reality of what we see before us, with which we identify, stitches us into the illusory nature of the representation so that it appears innocent, natural. In this way, naturalism has an ideological effect much like **naturalizing**. It purports to show reality but in fact has little to do with the representation of the contradictions which underlie social structures and political processes. It gives, therefore, a surface **image** of reality.

*see also*: **realism**

## NATURALIZING

A process whereby social, cultural and historical constructions are shown to be evidently natural. As such, naturalizing has an ideological

function. Thus, the world is 'naturally' shown in film (and in television in much the same way) as White, bourgeois, patriarchal and heterosexual. These images of Western society are accepted as natural. Naturalizing, then, functions to reinforce dominant **ideology**. Naturalizing discourses operate in such a way that **class**, race and **gender** inequalities are represented as normal. **Images** construct woman as inferior and object of the male **gaze**. Black **sexuality** is represented as potent and, therefore, dangerous and to be contained. The working-class gets fixed as naturally subordinate (intellectually and economically) to the middle-classes. And so on. Very slowly resistances to this naturalizing process are emerging through the work of a handful of film-makers. An exemplary film which takes on board the naturalizing of inequalities and exposes the ideological function of such a process is Mike Leigh's *Ladybird, Ladybird!* (1994).

*see also*: **ideology**

For further reading see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: chapter 5; Neupert, 1995.

## OEDIPAL TRAJECTORY

The term 'Oedipal trajectory' is a concept used in film psychoanalytic theory to refer to a convention of classical Hollywood cinema whereby the male protagonist either successfully or unsuccessfully fulfils the trajectory through the resolution of a crisis and a movement towards social stability. In other words, after much difficulty (depending on the film **genre**), he finds a woman and 'settles down'. In psychoanalytic terms, the cinematic concept of the Oedipal trajectory is based in Sigmund Freud's conception of the Oedipal complex or crisis and Jacques Lacan's account of the mirror stage. In referring to the Oedipal myth, Freud seeks a means whereby he can explain a child's acquisition of 'normal' adult sexuality. Freud was primarily concerned with the male child's Oedipal phase. The Oedipal phase is also, with Freud as with Lacan, the latter stage of the mirror phase. The male child who at first is bonded to his mother (through the breast) imagines that he is a united whole with her. However, once he is held up to the mirror by his mother, he perceives his difference from her. He becomes aware of the illusory nature of his unity with his mother and yet still desires

unification. The desire for the mother is now sexualized because of his awareness of difference. He is, however, aware of the father whom he currently hates because he has 'lawful' access to the mother, and he, the child, does not. The male child now reads his difference from his mother as one of castration. That is, to his (un) informed eye the mother is castrated. She is not like him, she does not have a penis. To identify or to seek unity with the mother would mean that, in both instances, he would be without penis: in identifying with her he becomes like her, in uniting with her he runs the risk of punishment from the castrating father since he assumes that the father has the power to castrate. How else would the woman/mother lack a penis? So he now moves to identify with the father and sets about to complete his socio-sexual trajectory successfully by finding a female (m)other – that is, someone who is just like his mother (i.e. a female other). The Oedipal trajectory thus involves identification with the father and objectification of the mother. The male child can now move towards social stability by becoming like his father.

In terms of cinema **narrative** the male protagonist moves, through the resolution of a crisis, towards social stability. In mainstream cinema, the female is a stationary site (that is, passive object) to which the male hero travels and upon which he acts (that is, he is the active **subject**). If he fails to achieve this trajectory, as is often the case in **film noir**, then it is possible to talk about masculinity in crisis. He fails to find social stability by failing to marry the female other (in a film noir, for example, either he or she dies). It is interesting to note that the other genre in which the male hero does not 'settle down' is the **Western**. But in this instance the failure to complete the trajectory is often read positively. Implicit in the Western, with its assertion of the **myth** of the West (frontiersmanship, etc.), lies the notion that the cowboy or gunslinger or Western hero cannot yet settle down: the West is still to be won.

From a psychoanalytical perspective, cinematic narratives that embrace the Oedipal trajectory articulate how the threat of castration (as represented by the woman who lacks) is dispelled and the masculine role of the patriarch is assumed. Two strategies are employed to contain the threat: **voyeurism** and **fetishism**. These strategies form part of the narrative. Thus, with the first strategy, the woman is objectified through the **gaze**, is voyeuristically placed as object of surveillance and therefore containable, safe. The male gaze probes and investigates her. She cannot return the gaze because she is not subject. She is the object (the mother) in the mirror that reinforces or

confirms the male's subjectivity. And the male, in recognizing his difference (his subjectivity), asserts his superiority over the female (m)other. The alternative strategy is to fetishize the female, to construct her as a fetishized object, to deny her sexual difference. By a fragmentation of her body and an over-investment in parts of the body (breasts, legs, etc.), the woman becomes commodified as a whole and unified body. The body is fetishized and denied its difference. The body is rendered phallic, a masculinized female image (tight slinky black dresses, high heels and painted fingernails are good examples of this). Both strategies reinforce the notion of a naturally stable male subjectivity and reaffirm the naturalness of the patriarchal order to which the female must comply through her passivity and, of course, to which the male complies through his activity (see **naturalizing**).

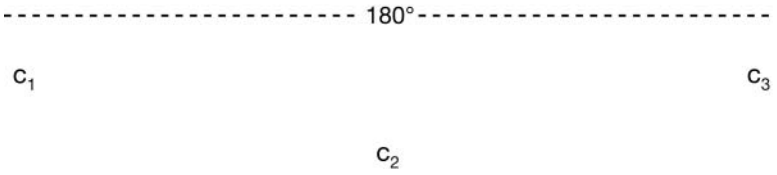
The female Oedipal trajectory is only just coming into focus as an issue in film **theory**. And it is particularly in relation to women's films and **melodrama** that it is being investigated in terms, partly, of mother/daughter relations but also, subliminally, lesbian relations. Clearly the female child is never completely free from desiring her mother. Because of their sameness, there is unity in identification. As with the male child, the mother is her first love-object. But there is no perceived difference, so there is no fear of castration. What then will motivate her to turn away from her mother and desire the father? Freudians argue that she turns away through penis envy. The mother cannot provide her with a penis so she will turn to the father for him to provide her with it in the form of a child. Lacanians, at least feminist Lacanians, argue that since she must enter into the social order of things – that is, patriarchy – she will be obliged to turn from the mother even though she will never fully relinquish her desire of the mother. To fulfil her Oedipal trajectory and enter into the social order of things, the female child must function to confirm male subjectivity. To withhold such confirmation means punishment – either through marginalization or death. In classical narrative cinema, independent women eventually 'come to their senses' and marry the guy (if it's **comedy**), or are 'brought to their senses' (if it's a film noir or **thriller**).

*see also*: **classical Hollywood cinema**, **Imaginary/Symbolic**, **psychoanalysis**, **suture**

For further reading see Kaplan, 1992; Krutnik, 1991; Modleski, 1988: 42–55; Penley, 1989.

## 180-DEGREE RULE

Also known as the imaginary line, this is a 'rule' that ensures consistency of the **spectator**'s perspective. Essentially, when shooting a scene, cameras should stay on one side of this imaginary line, otherwise the spectator would get disorientated as the diagram illustrates. The three cameras are on one side of the line pointed at the object on the line. As the film unravels on screen, the spectator takes up any of those three camera positions depending on which **shot**-position has been chosen at any given time and edited into the final cut (camera 1, 2 or 3). There is perfect logic in this perspectival **gaze** for the spectator. But what if a camera went the other side of the line? The spectator's perspective would be reversed: she or he would be seeing things back to front. If the object was two characters in a conversation (a two-shot), their positions would be reversed. Character A would be in character B's position.




*see also*: **30-degree rule**

## PORNOGRAPHY

There is general agreement on the view that pornography in film can be described as any set of images that exist solely for the purpose of sexual arousal and features nudity and explicit sexual acts. Originally the word, coming from Greek antiquity, meant the writing of harlots – which suggests that women as much as men did the writings or made the images to stimulate sexual excitement. Now of course it is seen very much as the domain of the male author or film-maker intent on exploiting our need for arousal.

In terms of pornographic film, whilst it is known to have been around since at least the 1920s (which suggests it was there beforehand), it is only with the lifting of **censorship** in the West (late 1960s to mid-1970s) that it has become more 'out there'. The lifting

of censorship in the USA in the late 1960s meant that very quickly porn movies could now come out – albeit with an X-rating. Although *Deep Throat* (Damanio, 1972), starring Linda Lovelace, is *the* notorious porn film, the first important porn film in USA film history is *Behind the Green Door* (Mitchell Bros, 1971). Apart from the USA, where the porn industry was big business during the 1970s, France is worth a mention because of the extraordinary situation the lifting of censorship created for the film industry globally in the mid-to–late 1970s. For a period of four years (1975–9), the X-certificate French pornographic movie constituted nearly half of the nation's total film production – which meant that, in terms of levies and taxes to which this cinema was subjected, the porn movie was supporting the French film industry to the tune of 14 per cent of its total budget. No mean feat as far as money shots go!

By the late 1970s, however, the expansion of video meant that the porn industry once more went underground (so to speak). Video cut away from the expense of film productions, to say nothing of draconian taxes and levies imposed by various governments on this particular category of film. It is in this light of porn's disappearance as a film form proper that we can understand P. T. Anderson's *Boogie Nights* (1997) and its nostalgic evocation of the permissive 1970s, including its porn industry. As Howard Hampton (2001: 40) points out, however, Anderson's film – with its film within a film structure – reflects a nostalgia for a cinema that never got made: high porn. The closest anything got to high porn was porn chic with, in the European context, Bernardo Bertolucci's *Last Tango in Paris* (1972, an Italian–French co-production), and, within the US context, Paul Schrader's *Hardcore* (1978). But because video-porn is a multi-billion industry, Hollywood has had to find strategies to compete, and this it has done through its stretching of the R-certificate (which only means restricted viewing) to cover films that come very close to porn in their sexual graphicness – but many of which are distributed as part of Hollywood's A-list. By the mid-1980s in response to the challenge represented by the video-porn industry, Hollywood had created its own erotic thriller, a hybrid genre of film noir and porn – its first most famous prototype being *Fatal Attraction* (Lyne, 1987). Did Veronica Rocket's 1983 *Smoker* – a porn film that answered back with ball-breaking sexual terrorism – send Hollywood down this path of film production where women seemingly have **agency** and fight back? Films in this category include *Final Analysis* (Joanou, 1992), *Basic Instinct*, *Body of Evidence* (respectively, Verhoeven and Edel, both 1993). Although these erotic thriller females may have more power

than their passive sisters in the porn world, this is hardly an argument for a progressive view of women. Giving women the power to fight back, and even kill, is still a male fantasy and a projection of their flirtation with the death drive (and thereby also a way of controlling it – since the man mostly wins in the end). It is hard to see in these narratives a 'taking hold of the patriarchal fantasy apparatus', as Douglas Keesey argues (2001: 47). Giving agency does not mean having agency.

Since the late 1990s, however, hard-core sex scenes have made it into the mainstream in a different way – generally with critical value – and once again it is to the French context that we must turn. Arguably, Catherine Breillat's work, which has consistently dealt with female sexuality (dating back from the mid-1970s incidentally), is one that has pioneered this development. Her *Romance* (1999), a young woman's journey into and investigation of her sexual self, figures hard-core porn star Rocco Siffredi and includes real intercourse. Her *Anatomy of Hell* (2004), again starring Siffredi, is an artful take on sado-masochistic liaisons where the woman controls the narrative that will eventually bring the male protagonist to leave his brutally macho posturing and find his emotional self. These films challenge the effects of porn. In a sense Breillat's work, because it shows us what ultimately is the 'unwatchable' (remember that censors outside France have consistently cut the rape scene from her film *A ma soeur*, 2001), obliges us to recognize that, conversely, adult porn is about showing the watchable. It is in this regard – as Breillat's critique demonstrates – that porn becomes, bizarrely, normalized with the effect that it is written on every woman's body ('porno' 'graphy'). Breillat's work then does take hold of the patriarchal fantasy apparatus and turn it around. And this is perhaps why she defended the right to mainstream screening of Virginie Depentes and Coralie Trinh Thi's controversial revenge road-movie *Baise-moi* (2000). It is nasty in its hardcore as it is nasty in its revenge killings – but it is correct in that it turns around the mirror to men to face themselves in all their pornocratic imaginings around women (that women are flesh to be penetrated and objects to be discarded at will).

Sadly this kind of critical take on pornography is not one that looks like diminishing its exploitative practice. Nowadays porn is everywhere. We can obtain it on video and bring it home to watch. We can download it from the web. We can even have interactive porn on the internet if we so wish – all within the safe walls of our own domestic sphere. Is mediated sex bliss?

Debates over pornography in terms of its definition and its supposed effects diverge into two radically opposed critical camps. A

first, perhaps liberal, view holds that pornography gives greater visibility to more and varied sexualities and helps towards a greater tolerance and understanding. As Brian McNair says (1996: 49), it permits 'the affirmation or strengthening of minority or subordinated sexual identities'. Conversely, a conservative view and indeed one held by many feminists (albeit for different reasons) asserts that pornography is a 'fundamentally amoral/immoral category of representation, deeply implicated in negative social phenomena' (ibid.).

Whereas the 'anti-pornography' camp dismisses all pornography as 'bad', the 'pro-pornography' camp takes care to establish differences between various forms of pornography (primarily: hard, soft, child) and, in that distinction, to make clear that while some versions are unacceptable (particularly child pornography), other forms can be liberating. Pornography aimed at women, lesbians and homosexuals can serve to assert their respective sexualities as meaningful, as subjectivized not objectified. Female or marginalized sexualities can also appropriate the dominant form of heterosexual pornography and adapt it to their own readings (that is, read it against the grain). As McNair says (ibid.: 129), 'in the private worlds of fantasy and sexual relationships ... women have increasingly used pornography – subversively decoding male-orientated material on the one hand, consuming material produced by women for women on the other'.

The 'anti-pornography' camp falls into two categories in the main. First, certain feminist groups who see pornography as degrading to the female and as reinforcing patriarchal ideology (for detailed discussion see Dworkin, 1991; Griffin, 1988; Itzin, 1992). Pornographic films, the claim goes, lead to violence against women. The second category, the conservative (moral majority view), condemns pornography for entirely different reasons. Not as a protest against the degradation of women, but as a protest against what this group perceives as an attack on family values and marital sex (McNair, 1996: 49).

For further reading see authors cited in the text and *see also*: Baird and Rosenbaum, 1991; Dines *et al.* 1998; Easton, 1994; Ho, 2002; Rodgerson and Wilson, 1991; McNair, 2002; Segal and McIntosh, 1992; Stevenson, 2000.

## POSTCOLONIAL THEORY

The following outline sets out the basic concepts of postcolonial theory. References for further reading are supplied at the end of this

entry but a useful starter reader is Padmini Mongia's *Contemporary Postcolonial Theory: A Reader* (1996) and Ashcroft *et al.*'s *The Post-Colonial Studies Reader* (1995) and *Key Concepts in Post-Colonial Studies* (1998). There are two ways of spelling 'post-colonial', one with the hyphen and one without, and considerable debate surrounds how it should be spelt. One way of distinguishing the usage is to say that the spelling post-colonial refers to the historical concept of the post-colonial state (it refers then to the period after official decolonization). The spelling postcolonial refers to varying practices that in some way are influenced by or relate to the post-colonial moment. Thus postcolonial refers to theory, literature, cultural practices in general, to ways of reading these different cultural practices. It refers too to the postcolonial subject. But clearly one type of post-coloniality does not exist without the other, thus some authors/critics use both spellings simultaneously. Bearing this in mind, the spelling postcolonial is opted for here except where it is clear that the reference is to the historical moment of post-colonialism. Where both concepts are implicitly co-present, both terms will be used.

Edward Saïd's book *Orientalism* (1978) is one of the key texts in postcolonial theory. In fact, it launched many of the debates in the West that have subsequently come to dominate postcolonial theory. The postcolonial debate is not limited to the West, however. Indigenous African and Asian intellectuals have been part of this (after all) global debate. And it is important to remember that the first major writer on the question of colonialism and post-colonialism was Frantz Fanon, whose texts of the 1950s and early 1960s form the foundation of this theory. Fanon was a psychiatrist working in Algeria during the years of the struggle for independence (1950s). His writings on colonialism and racism, *Black Skin, White Masks* (1967) and *The Wretched of the Earth* (1968), studied the effects of colonialism on the psyche of the colonized people. In *Black Skin, White Masks*, Fanon argues (through his famous neo-Freudian question 'What does the Black man want?') that the colonized seeks only to occupy the place of the colonizer. Thus, once the country has obtained independence, the colonized elite class (the intellectual class) will only mimic what the White colonizer has already done. Later, in *The Wretched of the Earth*, he explores more fully what this means and what the real function of the colonized elites must be once independence is achieved. He goes into great detail about the role of the native poet (the educated intellectual) who must give over his (sic) being to both reviving the past – the bleached-out history of the colonized, the

memories of traditions whose importance and signification colonialism has attempted to belittle, demean and wipe out – and to helping his people towards a national consciousness. In this process of freeing the wretched of the earth the native poet helps them build the nation anew. In other words, the poet must draw from the past (pre-colonial times) to help make the future, a new national culture. He must help in the forging of a third way that is neither stuck in old traditions that cannot now be reinstituted, nor in the colonialist/post-colonialist moment since that would merely represent a new form of oppression and enslavement.

Fanon's writing held enormous sway in the USA during the forming of its own Black consciousness (1960s and 1970s). And by the 1980s issues of race, identity, colonialism and nationhood, and the problem of representation had been brought very much to the foreground of theoretical thinking in the West thanks to the works of Saïd, Stuart Hall, Gayatri Spivak and Homi Bhabha. During the 1980s the question of post-colonialism/postcolonialism was also being debated in Africa – particularly in the works of Kwame Appiah and V. Y. Mudimbe. Debates here focus on the transition of African societies through colonialism. Questions of the following order arise. Where is the space of post-coloniality – the 'imagined' cleared after-space that 'post' implies – in African nations and cultures to be found? What does postcoloniality/post-coloniality mean to the nations the West so easily describes as post-colonial? Who are the practitioners of this postcoloniality/post-coloniality (politicians? ordinary Africans in their respective nations?) and what does it mean to be a postcolonial/post-colonial subject? In fact what is being raised here is the whole problematic of the term postcolonial/post-colonial and the concept of postcolonial theory. Whose term is it? As Mongia asserts (1996: 6) 'postcolonial theory's provenance is greatest ... in First World academies'. Who voices it? Not just 'authentic' voices from the Third World now working in Western academic institutions, although they are, arguably, the major agencies of this discourse. Finally, what are the dangers inherent in the use of this word and the application of this theory? A new kind of totalizing theory that places all 'post-colonial' nations and their cultures on a par? Clearly there is no stable fixed definition even if the West were to try to establish one – and certainly not from within the nations themselves. The identities of the nations (and thus the postcolonial subject) are diverse and not to be seen as a homogeneous whole.

Saïd's analysis in *Orientalism* begins to raise some of the above questions. He shows how the Orient was and still is simultaneously a

construction (as an imaginary exotic other) of the West and constructed (discursively fixed as a homogeneous real geographical space) by the West. In both instances the West is able to exert power over the Orient. Orientalism is a Eurocentric/Occidental view that dominates the Orient through its exercise of knowledge over and about the Orient. It interprets the Orient through its Western applied sciences of anthropology and philology/linguistics and in so doing it achieves 'knowledge' of the other which endows it with authority over the other. That knowledge is the source of the West's power over the Orient. And of course it is this relationship of power that has been evidenced, in the past, by Occidental imperialism/colonialism.

Although colonialism of a geographical kind may be over for the West, none the less this relationship of power is still one that is practised in cultural terms. Saïd makes the point that the study of the Orient (through anthropology, linguistics, etc.) permits a fixing – in homogenizing 'scientist' discourses – of the already constructed other. This erasure of identity (through homogenization) again makes the practice of imperialism a very 'untroubled' one for the West. This practice of Orientalism is not limited to the 'Orient' but occurs in all territories colonized by the West (Africa, New Zealand, Australia). And this practice still prevails today in Western studies of the former colonies. It is in this context of 'knowledge of the other imposed from outside' that we can measure the enormous significance of the theory of negritude put forward, in the 1930s and 1950s, by the native poets Léopold Sédar Senghor (from Senegal) and Aimé Césaire (from the former French West Indies) in which they argued for an African subjecthood and aesthetic in their own right. This was the first important movement along with that of the Harlem Renaissance – the African-American diasporic movement (of the 1920s in the USA) – to assert African claims to cultural distinctiveness. Later in the 1950s, Latin America, particularly in its literature of magic realism (which later became transposed into its cinema), would lay equal claim to its right to be understood from within.

Postcolonial theory seeks, in a dialogic process (coming from many points of view), to expose this 'natural' linking of Western knowledge with oppression (i.e. imperialism/colonialism) and to re-think the very way in which knowledge has been constructed. Western **modernist** thinking, emanating from the Enlightenment of the eighteenth century, has created closely aligned terms which are perceived as interrelated on a one-to-one basis. These terms are

democracy, nationalism, citizen-subject. However, this perception of the relationship between the citizen-subject and the nation-state is far too narrow and it suggests a homogeneity that certainly does not prevail today. There is not a unified (single) citizen-subject any more than there is a unified (single) nation-state and there is not a one-to-one relationship between the two concepts. For a start such a conceptualization of the relation excludes issues of race, ethnicity, **gender** and **sexuality** – in other words it excludes all 'othernesses' or multicultures. Postcolonial theory seeks, then, to question and critique the historicism of the West which has posited Europe as its theoretical subject. This European historicism is what is known as Eurocentrism (see Shohat and Stam, 1994). It is a position that 'naturally' assumes that 'history is the West' and that all the rest is 'subaltern' (Spivak, 1985). Subaltern is a term which Gramsci coined to mean the silenced history of those subjected to the ruling classes. It was adopted by South Asian Studies to refer to the 'lost' history of the subaltern cultures of the Asian peoples. In other words, colonial study and indeed some forms of post-colonial study, in their focusing only on the elite cultures of the colonized, have neglected – or reduced to silence – other subaltern voices (peasants, workers, women, and so on).

Postcolonial theory is not a single theory any more than the colonization before it was one homogeneous event with single characteristics. Colonialism is not one and the same and does not produce equal effects. And that is part of what postcolonial theory tries to unravel. It does not seek to impose a grand narrative (obviously that would be to fall into the same trap, or snake-pit, as the historicized, Eurocentric approach before it). Thus care must be taken not to impose the Eurocentric concept of 'history-as-chronological "progress"' onto the three key concepts that post-colonial theory investigates: pre-colonialism, colonialism and post-colonialism. These are syncretic terms. They always already co-exist. When we speak of the subaltern's history we cannot speak of a history that is linear.

The most difficult area to date (in terms of agreement between theoreticians) is how to locate the postcolonial subject. One of the main proposals forthcoming is that the postcolonial subject is hybrid, that he or she occupies a space between – or in-between – two cultures. This term avoids being limited to the use of binary terms of opposition self/other or centre/marginal and allows for a subject position that is not defined in relation to a hierarchical notion of subjectivity (such as the speaking subject and

the silent/silenced native). This in-between space is one of contradictions and ambivalences – in the first instance because the two cultures do not match, they are distinct. This in turn makes clear that there is no unified culture per se. And that the location occupied by the postcolonial subject is also by its very nature hybrid. This in-between space is, then, a third space (it is neither the first nor the second of the two interdependent cultures whose hybridization makes up the postcolonial subject). Thus the postcolonial subject occupies a third space from which his/her identity is enunciated (see entry on **enunciation**). However, and this is the crucial point, by occupying this third space, the postcolonial subject is occupying a place of potential resistance. And this is why. By the very nature of his or her location the postcolonial subject *embodies* the contradictions and ambivalences of the two cultures; thus, he or she makes possible the exposure of those very same contradictions and ambivalences inherent in and between each culture. By so doing the postcolonial subject 'invalidates' the rhetoric of imperialism and colonialism. Namely, at the same time as he or she shows how Western historicism and discursive fixity function, the postcolonial subject exposes the fact that there is no discursive fixity, that Western knowledge cannot fix the 'other' and thereby exercise power and authority over it.

The hybrid nature of postcolonial culture is then the conceptual tool that can prise open rational modernist discourses that make secure an a priori knowledge of the world of the 'other'. Hybrid identity is not fixed but is 'an unstable constellation of discourses' (Shohat and Stam, 1994: 42). Thus syncretism and transculturalism are manifestations of hybrid culture. Syncretism refers to the bringing together of many diverse cultural traditions into one performative text (film, theatre, whatever) (see **Third World Cinema** entry where this concept is explained in more detail). Transculturalism or transculturation refers to a cross-fertilization effect between two cultures whereby cultural traditions 'migrate' from one culture into another culture. The contact between the two cultures is mediated by the hybrid culture and refashioned to produce a third text (an easy illustration of this process is the re-appropriation of oil drums to make steel-band drums, the band in turn produces a performance – the music of that performance in its turn will most likely be syncretic, drawing on many musical traditions).

The notion of hybridity is not without its own set of problems. And it has been criticized for emanating from **post-structuralist** discourses of fragmented subjectivities. The problem becomes that

the hybrid subject (as described by Bhabha and others) is such a scattered and fragmented entity that it runs the risk of lacking specificity, of being unrooted in history or space (what is the imagined third space after all?). Furthermore, critics have argued that the cultural hybridity occupied by this subject is specific to the migrant intellectual living in the West from where he (sic) 'comes to signify a universal condition of hybridity' that is superior in understanding to both cultures 'he' represents (Ahmad, 1996: 286). The major criticism levelled at such migrant intellectuals is that they become 'Truth-Subjects' (ibid.). Furthermore, or perhaps worse still, in that this play with identities de-centres the subject (through its aspecificity and ahistory) it also detaches it from any attachment to nation, class or gender (ibid.: 287). This does not mean, however, that we should lose sight of the term hybridity; for reasons explained above it has great subversive value. What this criticism makes clear, though, is that as a concept it is not 'enough'. It too excludes and therein also lies its usefulness. Through its very exclusion it makes visible what also needs to be addressed. Such is the case for the position of women in these debates as well as questions of class and caste. Feminism has made clear that there is not a single category of colonized (see Spivak, 1985 and Suleri, 1992). Indeed, women are subjected to a double colonization or oppression, nor does that oppression evaporate post-colonially (as indeed some Third World women and men film-makers have made evident – see, for example, the Palestinian Michel KIeifi's *Marriage in Galilee*, 1987 and the Tunisian Moufida Tlatli's *The Silences of the Palace*, 1994).

Presently, the issue of the speaking subject and his/her location remains unresolved in critical postcolonial theory. However, a part answer to the question of agency – of who is the speaking postcolonial subject – has been to invoke Gramsci's notion of the subaltern (see above). Again it is not an unproblematic term – it runs the risk of essentialism and of creating a binary between elite/subaltern within the concept of the other (that is, the 'other' is made up of 'elite/subaltern' subjects). This in turn risks continuing the modernist train of binarism around subjectivity (self/other). Subaltern is a useful term though. It can and does refer to the voices – especially oral voices and cultural traditions – of those who are seemingly even more disempowered than the elite postcolonial subjects (Guha, 1982). It reminds us that there are other multiple voices to be thought about, listened to. It also reminds us that their discourses of representation are not necessarily grounded in colonial or post-colonial discourses –

even though, if they are to be heard as resistant voices, the subalterns' speaking position can only be defined by its difference from the elite.

Postcolonial theory when applied to cinema studies helps us to read (through a non-Eurocentric eye, hopefully) films emanating from postcolonial/post-colonial countries as well as films from the diaspora. These films which explore questions of representation, identity and location politics (i.e. who is the speaking subject and where is he or she speaking from?) question the centre/margin binaries imposed by Western thought. Models of colonialist discourse are exposed, as are the practices of dependency theory (the way in which global capitalism functions to maintain the impoverishment of the economically colonized Third World). The legacy of the exploitation of the colonized body is explained through a demonstration of how the diasporic movements, generated by slavery, are later matched by the ecological imperialism of the formerly colonizing nations. That is, for example, how Europe's need for immigrant labour replaced the earlier 'transportation' of slave labour to various colonies (see Gilroy, 1993). The colonized raced body was a commodity through which colonialism operated its power, and yet without that body colonialism could not have remained propped up – therein lies the paradox of colonialism (its major contradiction). But this is not the only cinema that postcolonial theory examines. It is used also to analyse products made by the West – both during the colonialist era and in the post-colonial moment – which either directly or indirectly display their Eurocentrism.

*see also*: **Black cinema – USA, Black cinema – UK, cinema nôvo, Third Cinema, Third World Cinema**

For further reading see texts referred to in entry and see also: Ahmad, 1996; Appiah, 1992; Bernstein and Studlar, 1997; Bhabha 1994; Childs and Williams, 1997; Fanon, 1967 and 1968; Gilroy, 1993; Guha, 1982; Low, 1996; McClintock, 1995; Malik, 1996; Mudimbe, 1988, 1992, 1994; Naficy and Gabriel, 1993; Saïd, 1978; Shohat and Stam, 1994; Shohat, 2003; Spivak, 1985 and 1987.

## POSTMODERNISM

This term entered into critical discourse in the late 1960s. As a concept it was seen as exemplifying a counter-position to modernism, especially modernism in its latest manifestation as total theory:

structuralism. And for this reason it is a term often associated with post-structuralism, to which it is, arguably, connected. Although the two concepts do indeed co-exist, some critics feel that postmodernism – also known as the postmodern – refers more to an age, particularly the 1980s and 1990s, than to a theoretical movement to which, of course, post-structuralism belongs. There appears to be no easy definition of postmodernism. Indeed there are many different ways in which it is perceived. These are never totally contradictory readings but, depending on the positioning of a particular thinker, writer or theorist, it can be given a different interpretation. This of course points to its pluralism as a concept and is something to be welcomed after the strictures of modernism and structuralism. It is also a reason why postmodernism gets aligned with post-structuralism, which is similarly pluralistic in its approach. Post-structuralism is more readily concerned with opening up the problematics in modernism and as such constitutes a critical theory of modernism. Postmodernism is perceived more as an historical condition within which are contained social, political and cultural agendas and resonances. These are interpreted, depending on the positioning of the writer or theorist, either as reflective of a mentality of 'anything goes', therefore nothing works, or of a questioning of the modernist ideals of progress, reason and science. In the first instance, theorists claim that the postmodern condition signals the death of **ideology**. In the second, it heralds a new scepticism about the modernist belief in the supremacy of the Western world, the legitimacy of science to legislate the construction and function of **gender**, and the advocacy of high art over popular culture.

Ultimately, then, postmodernism is a vague term. However, in its eclecticism lies its power to be non- or anti-essentialist, it neither has nor provides a fixed meaning; in its pluralism lies its ability to be read either positively or negatively.

### *A first set of readings – mainstream postmodern culture and oppositional postmodern culture*

Some critics see the postmodern as an effect that is a reaction against the established forms and canons of modernism. In this regard it takes issue with modernism's positive belief in progress and a unified underlying reality. Postmodernism reacts against modernism's optimistic belief in the benefits of science and technology to human kind. But, as the entry on modernism makes clear, this optimism is only part of the picture: certain modernists did not share

this optimism but mistrusted science and technology. Viewed in this light, then, postmodernism continues the pessimistic vein that already prevailed in modernism. According to Fredric Jameson (1983), postmodernism, as an effect, also represents the erosion of the distinction between high art and popular culture. The postmodern does not really refer to style but to a periodizing concept 'whose function is to correlate the emergence of new formal features in culture with the emergence of a new type of social life and a new economic order' (Jameson, 1983: 113). In other words, it is a conjunctural term at the interface between artefact and the new moment of capitalism. This new moment of capitalism is varyingly called post-industrial or post-colonial society, modernization, consumer society, media society. The artefact is what is produced by and within that moment in capitalism. What is significant is that the term *postmodern* is consistent with the way in which Western contemporary society defines itself – that is, in relation to the past (postcolonial), but also in relation to social practice (modernization, consumer) and technology (media). In its consistency with Western definitions, the postmodern looks back, is retrospective, is not defined as other, but as *post*modern, as coming after. In its lack of history (defined only in relation to the past), it rejects history, and because it has none of its own – only that of others – the postmodern stands eternally fixed in a series of presents. This reading places postmodernist culture as ahistorical.

According to this view, the postmodern era has little of the optimism of post-structuralism. It is more akin to a cult than to a movement. Although Anglo-Saxon theorists refer to this concept as postmodernism or postmodernity, it is instructive to note that the country whence the term emanated, France, deliberately omits the 'ism': *le postmoderne.* This very omission warns us that this is a non-collective phenomenon and that, by implication, it focuses on the cult of the individual (a position not all critics agree with; see below). Curiously, this contemporary hedonism recalls the aesthetic culture of the symbolists at the end of the nineteenth century – particularly in France. The *fin de siècle* mood of that time – a direct reaction to the political, intellectual and moral crises taking place – manifested itself in a neo-romantic nihilism wherein the individual artist became a cult figure. The death of ideology at that time left the artist in the presence of a spiritual void. How to fill the abyss of nothingness? The response was aestheticism, art for art's sake, as an end in and of itself which led to a self-sufficient formalism. In other words, only form, not content, could fill the void.

It is this pessimistic vein which finds its heritage first in the tragic modernist and later in the ahistorical postmodernist cultures. Both are traumatized by a technology that has created ideological structures of suppression and domination never seen before. Modern technology allowed **images** of this technology at work to be recorded (by the camera) and be brought to our attention. If there was not much footage of the First World War shown publicly, archival film shows enough of the horrors of trench warfare. More recently, images of the apocalyptic events of the Holocaust and the dropping of the atomic bomb have left modernist and postmodernist alike with seemingly unanswerable questions. How to invent, comes the cry, when invention can lead to such wholesale destruction of humanity? In answer to this daunting set of questions, modernism in its pessimistic mode presents a world as fragmented and decayed and one in which communication is a virtual impossibility. In its response to these same questions, according to theorists providing the ahistoric reading of postmodernity, postmodern culture, which can see itself only in relation to the past, bifurcates. The majority tendency is unoppositional, a unidirectional reflection towards the past, providing a conservative cultural production – that is, mainstream culture. The minority is avantgarde and oppositional.

In relation to the contemporary cultural aesthetic, then, the postmodern adopts two modes. In its mainstream mode, it manifests itself through mannerism and stylization, through *pastiche* – imitation of what is past. In its oppositional mode – that is, in its despair at the nothingness of the abyss – it turns to *parody*, an ironization of style, form and content (as in Samuel Beckett's plays and novels). Whether mainstream or oppositional, the postmodern aesthetic relies on four tightly interrelated sets of concepts: simulation, which is either parody or pastiche; pre-fabrication; **intertextuality** and bricolage. What separates the two tendencies is that the oppositional postmodern aesthetic experiments with these concepts and innovates through subverting their **codes**, whereas the mainstream postmodern aesthetic merely replicates them. Hence the need for two distinguishing terms for the first concept, simulation: 'parody' and 'pastiche'. Parody is the domain of oppositional art. Pastiche pertains to the symptomatic in that it imitates previous **genres** and styles, but, unlike parody, its imitation is not ironic and is therefore not subversive. In its uninventiveness, pastiche is but a shadow of its former thing (parody). Postmodern art culls from already existing images and objects and either repeats or reinvents them as the same. To make the

distinction clear, we could turn to the world of fashion and say that punk is parody, chic-punk is pastiche.

The three remaining concepts, then, are either played out in a parodic or pastiche modality. As you will see, there is considerable overlap between the concepts. In postmodern cinema, images or parts of sequences which were fabricated in earlier films are reselected. In much the same way that pre-fabricated houses are made up of complete units of pre-existing meaning, so the visual arts see the past as a supermarket source that the artist raids for whatever she or he wants. A film could be completely constructed out of pre-fabricated images (and even sounds). This is particularly true for mainstream postmodern cinema. For example, a film-maker wanting to insert a song and dance routine could select Gene Kelly's dance routine of the title song in *Singin' in the Rain* (1952), for a **flashback** she or he could clip in the beginning of *Sunset Boulevard* (Billy Wilder, 1950), and so on. Robert Altman's *The Player* (1992) makes reference to this pastiche culture of pre-fabrication (two studio scriptwriters discuss a possible script which they describe as *Out of Africa* meets *Pretty Woman*).

In this context of pre-fabrication, note how clever Quentin Tarantino's films are. While they appear to be a **mise-en-abîme** of filmic quotes, the orchestration of the quotes is so brilliantly achieved that what appears pastiche is in fact parody. He selects the quotes and then brutally overturns them. Take, for example, *Reservoir Dogs* (1991). The ten-minute torture scene in the empty warehouse, which is horrendous in its horror, is also excessively comic because the torturer, the psychopathic Mr Blonde, dances to a 1970s song, 'Stuck in the Middle with You' – a song that relates to a paranoid if not drugged perception of 'reality'. Meantime as he slices up his victim he asks, in tune with the song, 'was that as good for you as it was for me?' According to Tarantino, the filmic quotes are Abbott and Costello monster movies which combine the comic with the horror *(Sight and Sound*, Vol. *2*, No. 8, 1992). They also, in their seemingly gratuitous violence, recall many a Scorsese scene of violence (for example *Taxi Driver*, 1976). This scene, as with other quotes in the film, also pulls from the **B-movies**. Again they are pushed to their limits. This particular torture scene derides the false bravura of cops and gangsters who 'shoot it out' – here ears are cut off, faces are slashed (before even a gun is shot!), and people torched – all to the sound of music and dancing. Not even *The St. Valentine's Day Massacre* (Roger Corman, 1967) or *The Godfather* (Francis Ford Coppola, 1972) could match

these extremes of violence-in-excess. It is precisely in scenes like this one that the film achieves the parodic. Through this use of violence, Tarantino exposes the spectator–film relationship as one of sadomasochism. We might bleed with Mr Orange as he lies in the warehouse dying, but we also find ourselves dancing with Mr Blonde. Compounding the parodic is Tarantino's expressed intention of making us brutally aware of the manipulative hand of the director – 'he can shoot scenes like this' – and our collusion with him 'we choose to watch'. In this respect, Tarantino's work must be seen as oppositional. This makes the point that oppositional culture, postmodern or otherwise, can reach mass audiences. Tarantino is one of today's successful postmodern film-makers who can dissolve the divide between high art and low art without reducing his film to pulp, that is, to a mere series of good images.

Intertextuality, which in many respects can be seen as closely aligned with mise-en-abîme and as overlapping with pre-fabrication, is a term which refers to the relation between two or more texts. All texts are necessarily intertextual, that is, they refer to other texts. This relation has an effect on the way in which the present constructed text is read. All films are, to some degree, always already intertextual. Within mainstream pastiche cinema, the most obvious intertextual film is the remake. Within the parodic mode and of the more contemporary and popular film-makers, Tarantino's films are exemplary in the way that they refer to other texts. *Pulp Fiction* (1994), for example, refers in many of its décors to the paintings of Edward Hopper – so in part the intertext is composed of painterly texts. Tarantino readily acknowledges his references to the film texts of Jean-Luc Godard. And certainly *Bande à part* (1964) with its own references to the American **musical** – which Godard reinscribes in a parodic mode – is a text to which *Pulp Fiction* refers. Tarantino talks about his film being based on three storylines that are the oldest chestnuts in the world, filmic **narratives** based on pulp fiction: a member of the gang taking out the mobster's wife whom he must not touch; the boxer who is supposed to throw the fight; gangsters on a 'mission' to kill *(Sight and Sound*, Vol. 4, No. 5, 1994, 10). Characters within film can also be intertextual of course. Again to cite Tarantino's film: Butch, the boxer, is an intertext of the character of Mike Hammer in *Kiss Me Deadly* (Robert Aldrich, 1955) and the look of the actor Aldo Ray in *Nightfall* (Jacques Tourneur, 1956).

Finally among these concepts comes bricolage. This is an assembling of different styles, textures, genres or discourses. In oppositional

postmodern art this takes the form of replicating within one discourse the innovations of another. For example, the deconstruction of time and space that occurs in the *nouveau roman* is replicated in the films of Marguerite Duras, Alain Resnais and Alain Robbe-Grillet through a use of **montage** that disorientates. The most common replication in cinema of other textural mediums is the plasticity of video and painting which can be found in many of the 1980s film-makers' work – both mainstream and oppositional.

In mainstream postmodern cinema genres are mimicked and not renewed. In terms of subjects, themes and style, the spectator of today is reviewing either images of modernist cinema or mediatic images of its own age. With a few exceptions there are no social or political films (Stephen Frears, Neil Jordan and Dennis Potter are a few who come to mind in the British and Irish environment). Some of the major issues of the 1980s and 1990s go unheard. This dearth of subjects coincides with a cinematographic mannerism which manifests itself in at least three ways. First, by a prurient (necrophiliac?) fixation with genres and images of a bygone cinema – nostalgia at its worst. Second, by a servile simulation of television visual discourses. And, finally, by manipulating and elevating virtual reality and computer graphics to the status of real. It is in this sense that mainstream postmodern film-makers of today display a disdain for culture with a capital C. All culture, 'high' and 'low', is assimilable or quotable within their texts so that the binary divide is erased. The dissolution of the divide would be a good thing, but the result still has to have meaning. Instead, in their formalism and mannerism they aim purely and simply for the well-made image – 120 minutes of good publicity clips. They invent nothing. John Orr (1993: 12) points out that this cinema of pastiche lends itself to a double reading or, rather, contradictory readings. This cinema will appeal to right and left, Black and White. *Forrest Gump* (1994) is an excellent example, since both the left and the right have found it consonant with their own ideologies. As Orr says (1993: 12), this cinema, while so patently empty is also potentially dangerous – schizoid, as Orr puts it.

### *A second set of readings – negative versus positive readings of the postmodern*

(Here I am drawing on the useful and illuminating analyses to be found in Bruno, 1987; Hawthorn, 1992; Huyssen, 1990; Kuhn, 1990; Nicholson, 1990.) In terms of current writing about postmodernism, there are at least as many positions as there are areas of concern. What

follows is a summary of those positions as they affect readings of postmodern cinema. There is of course some overlapping or cross-fertilization but it is worth spelling them out if only to reiterate the pluralism of postmodernism. Postmodern discourses have been elaborated with reference to architecture, human sciences and literature, the visual arts, technology, cultural theory, social, economic and political practices, feminism and gender. As has already been mentioned, these discourses generate either positive or negative readings of the postmodern.

Negative readings tend to focus on what is perceived to be the essential schizophrenia of postmodernism: a schizophrenia which can, for example, be detected in contemporary architecture's random historical citations which have been pasted or pastiched on to so many postmodern façades (Huyssen, 1990: 237). Roman colonnades are mixed with Georgian windows, and so on. Jameson believes that this schizophrenia comes about as a result of a refusal to think historically (Kuhn, 1990: 321). Baudrillard sees this post-industrial society as the society of spectacle that lives in the ecstasy of communication (Bruno, 1987: 67). This society, he believes, is dominated by electronic mass media and is characterized by simulation (Kuhn, 1990: 321). Baudrillard explains that this post-industrial society is one of reproduction and recycling, so rather than producing the real it reproduces the hyper-real (Bruno, 1987: 67). By this he means the real is not the real, is not what can be reproduced but, rather, that which is always already reproduced which is essentially a simulation (1987: 67). The hyper-real, then, is a simulacrum of the real. Perfect simulation is the goal of postmodernism; thereby no original is invoked as a point of comparison and no distinction between the real and the copy remains (1987: 68). In this implicit loss of distinction between representation and the real, Baudrillard perceives the death of the individual (note how this is the 'direct' opposite of other postmodern critics' readings of the individual as central, see above).

In order to make this point clearer it is useful to compare the effects of the industrial machine on the individual (the **subject**) versus those of the post-industrial one. Whereas the industrial machine was one of production, the post-industrial one is one of reproduction (1987: 69). In the former case, the industrial machine leads to the alienation of the subject – the subject no longer commands the modes of production. In the latter, the post-industrial machine leads to the fragmentation of the subject, to its dispersal in representation (1987: 69). It has no history, is stuck in the ever-present. It is in effect without memory. According to Jacques Lacan, the experience of temporality and its representation are an effect of

language (1987, 70). If, therefore, the subject has no experience of temporality, has no link with the past or the future, then it is without language – that is, it lacks the means of representing the 'I'. This creates a schizophrenic condition in which the subject fails to assert its **subjectivity** and fails also to enter the Symbolic Order. Therefore it is stuck in the Imaginary, perhaps even in the pre-Imaginary (see **Imaginary/Symbolic**). The question becomes 'who am I?' – even 'who made me?' It is remarkable that the past decade or so has witnessed a spate of monster films on screen and that the question of reproduction has been central to the narrative (for example *Jurassic Park*, Steven Spielberg, 1993; *Mary Shelley's Frankenstein*, Kenneth Branagh, 1994) and identity (*Interview with the Vampire*, Neil Jordan, 1994). An analysis of these films would doubtless produce the missing link between past, present and future – that is, the figure of the mother who is so pre-eminently absent from these films as site of reproduction, the reproduction machine of post-industrialization (male technology) having reproduced her (genetic engineering).

Postmodernism, as we know, refers to a general human condition in the late capitalist (post-1950s) world that impacts on society at large, including ideology, as much as it does on art and culture. Certain theorists, amongst them so-called neoconservatives (Huyssen, 1990, 255), see postmodernism as a dangerous thing both aesthetically and politically. In terms of aesthetics, the danger resides in the popularization of the modernist aesthetic which, through the dissolution of the divide between high art and low art, promotes hedonism and anarchy. It promotes anarchy because it removes the function of modernist art as critique – 'anything goes' – and hedonism in that it takes the subjective idealism of modernism to the point of solipsism (Hawthorn, 1992: 110). That is, the individual subject becomes the only knowable thing. Politically speaking, because it reacts against modernism's belief in knowledge and progress, postmodernism rejects meaning in the sense of believing that the world exists as something to be understood and that there is some unified underlying reality. Ideology becomes distinctly unstable in this environment.

Postmodernism is not necessarily perceived negatively, particularly by those living in it – primarily the youth generation, but also other groupings (as I will explain). Postmodernism in its positive mode celebrates the present and is far more accepting of late capitalism and technology. It also celebrates the fact that mass communication and electronics have revolutionized the world (Hawthorn, 1992: 111). Postmodernism delights in and is fascinated by technology. The Internet represents the height of communication in the present

through mass technology. Virtual reality can 'let me be there' without moving. Late capitalism means a dispersal of the productive base: commodities are produced where it is most advantageous, the labour market has become internationalized and fragmented. But it has also produced multinational corporations, which means that capital itself is concentrated in the hands of the few. For example, the world is so small that Reebok or Nike can have their central office in New Jersey or Eugene, Oregon but not have a factory outlet anywhere in the United States. The factories are placed in parts of the world where labour is cheapest.

To the criticism that postmodernism has lost the edge of art as critique and that, in its art-for-art's-sake positioning, it resembles the *fin de siècle* mood of the nineteenth century, postmodern art appears – within its celebratory and playfully transgressive (of modernism) mode – to reject this function of art or proposes that popular culture is just as capable of offering a critique as high art. In this latter respect, the populist trend of postmodernism (as exemplified by pop art and its reference to comic-strip culture, and by pop music: rock, punk, acid) – in its deliberate counter-culture positioning – challenges modernism's hostility towards mass culture (Huyssen, 1990: 241). It also rejects modernist belief in the 'perpetual modernization of art' (1990: 238) and questions the exploitation of modernism for capital greed and political need. To explain: during the 1940s and the Cold War of the 1950s, modernism, in the form of abstract expressionism (as seen in the paintings of Willem de Kooning), was a school virtually 'invented' and subsequently institutionalized as canonical high art by the United States (read: the CIA and art critics). This was done for propagandistic and political ends. The intent, successfully carried out, was to move the centre of the art world out of Europe (and the threat or taint of communism) and to make New York the world capital (in both senses of that word) of art.

Postmodernism's effect of dissolving the binary divide between high and low art has, domino-style, generated others. The positive side of 'anything goes' is that dichotomies no longer function tyrannically as exclusionary. Modernism had represented a masculinization of culture, due in part to a bohemian lifestyle that excluded most women at least at first (Hawthorn, 1992: 109), but due also to the primary areas of modernism: architecture, painting, film, theatre (the modernist novel coming, arguably, later in the 1930s). Thanks to its creative relationship between high and low art, postmodernism has made space for minority cultures, has brought about a fragmentation of culture that is positive. Thus, where **gender** and race are con-

cerned, this dissolution of binary divides and de-privileging of a meritocracy within dichotomies have led, first, to a pluralism within the question of subjectivity and, second, to a questioning of defining one group in relation to the concept of 'otherness'. In its rejection of universal norms, postmodernism refutes generalizations that exclude, and advocates a plurality of individualized agency (Nicholson, 1990: 13). In this respect, therefore, gender and race are no longer dichotomized. Postmodernism represents, then, a cultural liberation.

Small surprise that for some groupings – particularly those who had previously been excluded by the high principles of modernism – postmodernism is seen as liberating and celebratory. Voices from the margins, minority cultures, are finding spaces within contemporary culture. In the Western world this has meant hearing, among others and in differing degrees of volume, the voices of Blacks, women, women of colour, gays, lesbians, ecologists, animal rights supporters, disabled people and so on. Some of these voices are finding their way on to film. Since the 1980s, for example, there has been an emergence of Black men and women film-makers and Black **stars**, gay and lesbian film-makers are coming on mainstream – marking the beginnings of a pluralism therefore in this highly competitive arena.

This pluralism has extended into film theory perhaps with greater speed than into the film-making practices themselves. And this is due in part to postmodernism's impact upon or coincidence with developments in cultural studies towards a mapping of our cultures – seeing culture as pluralistic (starting in the 1960s with Raymond Williams *et al.*). It is also due to its conjuncture with feminism. Feminist criticism exposed the masculine determinations of modernist art and culture and as such, albeit through a differing optic, echoed the postmodern position. In its critique of the normalizing function of patriarchy, feminism joins up with postmodernism's critique of the modernist belief in knowledge and its use of 'master narratives' to legitimate scientific research and the pursuit of knowledge (Kuhn, 1990: 321). In the name of knowledge, modernism has presented a very dislocated and partisan view of the world – one that excludes more than it includes, one that belongs to a particular gender, class, race and culture (Nicholson, 1990: 5). Feminism rejects modernism's belief in reason and objectivity and its concomitant belief in total theory. Feminism opposes, therefore, all generalizations because they exclude.

Because feminism raises the questions of identity, identification and, ultimately, history (or lack of it where woman's place is concerned), postmodernism seems, then, a natural ally to feminism (although not all feminists agree; see Nicholson, 1990). Counter to

modernism's construction of the individual as a single subjectivity in relation to the 'other', postmodernism and feminism make possible the notion of a 'plurality of individual agents' (Nicholson, 1990: 13). For example, there is no longer a single standard norm wherein gender, identity and sexual orientation are fixed as heterosexual (1990: 15). Furthermore, it becomes possible to talk in terms of gender- and race-based subjectivities (Huyssen, 1990: 250). (For further detail see **feminist film theory**.)

The importance of this concept of pluralism for film theory is clear. The construction of subjectivity through the cinematic **apparatus** can be examined. This in turn generates questions around the **gaze** and leads to its investigation: who owns it, is it exclusively male? The whole debate around sexuality on screen gets opened up. The issue of spectator-text relations now becomes yet another way by which the filmic text can be understood as an ideological operation. Thus gender issues are no longer reduced to an 'either/or', but discussed within frameworks of gender fluidity resistance to gender fixing, whether on screen or in connection with the spectator and the text.

*see also*: **modernism**, **structuralism/poststructuralism**, **theory**

## PREFERRED READING

In mainstream cinema, **images** and films as a whole are encoded in such a way as they are given a preferred reading. They are meant to mean what they say. The narrative triad ('order/disorder/order'), the filmic **codes and conventions** germane to a particular **genre** (for example, the **lighting** and décor in **film noir**), characterization (for example heroic active male, scheming female, passive female victim), the **iconography** of the image – all these become just so many ideological operations of the cinematic **apparatus**, the internal workings of the film text which create a closed text, one where the meaning is encoded from the outset. Of course the **spectator** may not necessarily accept that preferred reading. Indeed, feminist critics have been busy in the last ten to fifteen years making readings against the grain (or oppositional readings) – particularly of the film noir and the **melodrama** (see **feminist film theory**).

*see also*: **classical narrative cinema**, **dominant cinema**, **ideology**

## PRODUCER

The individual responsible for the financial and administrative aspects of a film production (through all the stages from production through to distribution, including advertising). In the studio days of **Hollywood** and film industries in the West (up until the late 1950s and early 1960s), the producer was, generally speaking, attached to a studio. Since that time producers have mostly functioned as independents and so are responsible for attracting money to a film project. Typically, the producer will be presented with an idea for a film project and will then set about trying to find finance for it (by submitting it to a studio or going to various groups and individuals to obtain financing). The producer manages the entire production and works in close collaboration with the director/film-maker. The producer sorts out locations, studios, schedule of production, controls the management of budgets, the hiring of stars, **cinematographer**, screenwriter, and special effects studios.

*see also*: **director**, **studio system**, **vertical integration**

## PSYCHOANALYSIS

What follows is a mapping of the major debates in psychoanalysis as they have been introduced into and developed in film **theory**. For the sake of clarity and easy reference, major concepts in psychoanalysis and film are given their own full development under separate entries, which are cross-referenced in this synopsis. However, it seems useful to list immediately these major key concepts: **absence/presence**; **apparatus**; **enunciation**; **fantasy**; **feminist film theory**; **gaze**; **Imaginary/Symbolic**; **Oedipal trajectory**; **scopophilia**; **shot/reverse shot**; **spectator**; **subjectivity**; **suture**; **voyeurism/fetishism**.

Although psychoanalysis is not such a new phenomenon in literary theory, it is relatively new to film theory. Literary theory took up psychoanalysis in the 1930s and 1940s, but it did not fully enter into film theory until as late as the early 1970s. This might surprise, given that cinema is a contemporary of Freudian psychoanalysis (both emerging at the end of the nineteenth century). And in fact in the early, experimental **avant-garde** theorizing and film-making of the 1920s (in France) there was considerable debate around the notion of the subjective camera, and film-makers strove to give visual expression to

the representation of the unconscious. The delay might also surprise since cinema is so readily associated with fantasy and dreams. Again, although film theory has been in existence since around 1910, on the whole formal, authorial and sociological considerations tended to dominate (see **auteur**). It would take the coincidence in the late 1960s of two occurrences in theoretical thinking to bring about the entry of psychoanalysis. On the one hand, the late 1960s witnessed a reaction against the effects of **structuralism** and its 'total theory' strategy. This reaction was exemplified by **post-structuralism**. On the other hand, this period saw a widening of the debates in Freudian psychoanalysis thanks to the writings of Jacques Lacan. These were subsequently taken up in critical theory in general and film theory in particular.

There are predominantly two strands of psychoanalysis, particularly on the question of subjectivity, that have found their way into film theory: Freudian and Lacanian. And they have so far been applied in three main areas of investigation: the film texts themselves; the **apparatus–spectator** relation which later evolved into text-spectator relations; and **fantasy**. Of course these applications have been refined and reviewed, refuted even, by theorists working in this area of film criticism. This means that psychoanalytic theory has developed significantly in film theory since its earliest applications. Despite the conviction with which some theorists have taken up psychoanalysis, particularly feminists (for reasons that will become clear), it is noteworthy that not all film theorists are confirmed adherents to the merits of psychoanalysis – so the debate remains an active, not to say controversial, one.

### *Freud's theory of the subject*

Sigmund Freud's psychoanalytic approach was to investigate, to probe the psychological functioning of our human psyche and the relations we form with the outside world. Freud believed that we strive to fulfil our needs and desires (including, especially, sexual ones) and suffer pain if we are unable to do so. We also feel guilt for our desires, particularly if they cannot be fulfilled, and become self-critical, even self-hating. Freud maintained that, generally speaking, we repress these feelings of frustration and self-disgust into the unconscious. The unconscious does not remain perpetually buried, and can resurface in dreams or through projection. In the former case, dreams represent a return of the repressed so they are the vehicle for that which re-emerges from the unconscious. In the latter case,

we impose, project our frustrations on something or someone external to us (for example, driving a car too fast or picking an argument for no ostensible reason with a loved one).

Freud determined three parts to our psyche: the id, ego and super-ego. The id is the uncontrolled, repressed part of the psyche which the ego, as the consciousness, attempts to control. The super-ego, as the term suggests, attempts to act as a higher-order authority over the id and the ego by trying to gain a greater critical conscience in relation to the workings of the psyche and to understand them. The super-ego is also identified with the 'parental' voice within the psyche. Where the boy-child is concerned, the super-ego represents an internalizing of patriarchal authority – that is, he accepts the suppression of desire (of the mother) in order to gain access to the same rights as his father. Thus patriarchy regenerates itself.

Freud distinguished between two ego-types, the realist and the narcissistic. The regulating ego mentioned above is the realist type. It mediates between the pleasure-seeking id and reality. That is, it satisfies some of the id's desires while conforming to social expectation. The narcissistic ego is far less heard of in relation to Freud – unsurprisingly, considering that it is the direct antithesis to the realist ego which presumes improvement, even the perfectability of the ego (Grosz, 1990: 31). It is, however, this ego that Lacan developed in his own analysis, so it is relevant to explain Freud's concept. The realist ego type was, Freud conceded, too simplistic in its definition. If it was the mediator between the id and reality, this meant, essentially, that it took care of its ego instincts (satisfying some of the id's desires but conforming to social norms) but apparently ignored its own sexual instincts. The question becomes, if it is moderating between the id and its needs and reality how can the realist ego type take part in its own sexual instincts, be part of its subjectivity? How can it be a unified subject if it is the rational moderator standing outside, aloof, from the notion of desire?

In his account of the narcissistic ego, Freud attempts to answer these questions. This ego is linked to early infant narcissism, which means that the ego takes itself as the object of its own libidinal drives. So the ego is both the subject and the object: the subject desiring the mirrored or narcissistic object or other. In this respect, then, the ego is not the unified subject (as it appears to be in the form of the realist ego) but is divided. This concept of the divided self is one that Lacan developed in his own investigation of subjectivity.

The second important point Freud makes, and which Lacan later developed, concerns Freud's description of this narcissistic ego in

terms of a libidinal reservoir. According to Freud the narcissistic ego is the boundary around the libidinal reservoir (Grosz, 1990: 30). And it is for this reason that it can invest in itself as one of its libidinal objects (1990: 30). It does of course invest in external objects other than itself. This ego changes shape depending on how much it has invested outside into the external objects (object-libido), including its own body, and how much it has retained within itself (ego-libido). Grosz (1990: 29) refers to this mutation as hydraulic or amoeba-like. But, and here is the crucial point, because the ego's primary relationships are libidinal, they are based in pleasure not in reality (1990: 29). Furthermore, the ego has an object relation with itself, in that it can invest in its body as one of its libidinal objects (1990: 30). So from what source does the self assert its subjectivity, its identity? Whereas the realist ego was a self-contained entity that acted (and, therefore, had **agency**) as a rational mediator between the id and reality, it is evident that the narcissistic ego – in that it has no direct relation to reality – is not an entity, has no agency, but is 'constituted by its relationships with others. Indeed, its self-identity is ... always mediated by others' (1990: 29).

These two central points, in so far as they concern first Lacan and then film theory, will be picked up when we come to discuss Lacan. In terms of film theory, however, Freud's account of subjectivity was important in at least one further, significant way. This part of the account concerns his notion of the Oedipal complex. The dyadic mother/child relationship, although a precursor to entry into the social, is none the less narcissistic in its mutual identification and desiring. For growth to take place into a plurality of relations and into the order of civilization and culture the child must be removed or severed from its imaginary unity with the mother. This dyadic structure must give way to a third term. This moment is what Freud terms the Oedipal complex or crisis. The father intervenes, forming a triangular structure, forbidding the child sexual access to the mother. The male child renounces his desire for his mother for fear of castration. He notes that his father has the phallus and his mother does not. He assumes that his mother is castrated and that, therefore, his father – he who possesses the phallus – has the power to castrate him. Both mother and father carry the threat of castration for the male child: he could become 'she who is without' if he disobeys either parent's prohibition (in this respect Alfred Hitchcock's *Psycho*, 1960, at first sight appears to offer a classic scenario of the castrating mother). The male child obeys the father, enters into a pact with him in that he renounces his mother momentarily until it is time for him

to find his own female and accede in his turn to 'paternal' status which is the reward for renouncing the mother. The question of the female child gets less attention in Freud (and for that matter Lacan). That issue will be dealt with below

The Oedipal crisis for the male child, then, manifests itself by this renouncement of the mother, what Freud terms primal repression. This moment of primal repression marks the founding moment of the unconscious. In other words, those unspoken sexual drives and desire for narcissistic union with the mother are repressed. The male child must repudiate his mother and become like his father in terms of masculinity, but not like his father in terms of his love object – it cannot be the mother (although, as Freud points out, it ultimately always is the mother). And it is here that we have the basis for the so-called Oedipal trajectory that has been associated with **classical narrative cinema**. The protagonist must successfully complete his trajectory through first resolving a crisis, usually of a triangular nature (rivalry for a woman, for example), and then attaining social stability.

### *Lacan's theory of the subject – including his concept of 'jouissance'*

Since the entries on **Imaginary/Symbolic** and on **subjectivity** go into Lacan's theories of the subject in considerable detail, what follows is a brief synopsis of the key issues and a quick indication of their impact on film theory. (For more detailed explanation see also **apparatus**, **feminist film theory** and **suture**.)

What of Lacan and his development and rethinking of Freud's theory of the subject? First, he shifted the frame of reference away from Freud's preoccupations with the sexual drives and looked to language as the site for the construction of the subject, of subjectivity. This shift is justifiable in a number of ways, starting with the fact that Freud himself posits the Oedipal complex at an age when the child can talk. In other words, the speaking subject comes into being at the moment of the primal repression (of the desire for the mother). At the same time as the male child enters into the Oedipal complex, Freud notes that he turns his attention to objects other than his mother in order to compensate for the fear of her loss. Freud talks about the child's *fort da* game. The child throws a reel of cotton away and, in retrieving it, emits the sound 'da'. The cotton reel, according to Freud's reading, is a substitute for the mother, the game a way of coming to terms with the loss of the mother (that is, of being separate from her, abandoned by her). The game and the word become a way of mastering her absence. That absence and

control of absence is marked in language: 'da'. For Lacan, the game represents the child's entry into language and the reel functions as a symbol standing in for what is missing. It signifies lack. According to Lacan, the child is born into the experience of lack and spends the rest of his/(her) life trying to recapture an imagined entity which is the moment he associates with pre-lack – the imagined unity with the mother.

A second reason for Lacan turning to a linguistic model follows closely on from the above and concerns the child's shift, thanks to the mirror stage, from the Imaginary into the Symbolic. The mirror stage is a kind of 'half-way house' between the Imaginary and the Symbolic. It belongs to the Imaginary domain, but moves the child from the dyad with the mother into an identification with its own specular image. Prior to the mirror stage, the child has no sense of separateness from the mother and, therefore, imagines itself as one. It is only after the mirror phase that it knows its difference and/or separateness from the mother. By this time, however, it has entered the Symbolic Order which is based in language – that is the 'Law' of the Father. Until this mirror phase, the child is pre-lack and pre-linguistic. Entry into the Symbolic is entry into language. It is also entry into lack. Language, therefore, becomes indissolubly based in and bound up with the concept of lack. Born into the experience of lack, the child as-speaking-subject is lack. What does this mean?

Primal repression for Freud is, as we have seen, the founding moment of the unconscious. Lacan, referring to this repression as primary, perceives this moment as an opening up of the unconscious, by which he means that the unconscious emerges as a result of the repression of desire. Lacan explains this occurrence in the following manner: the speaking subject comes into existence only because of the repression of the desire for the mother who is now lost. The child has relinquished its illusory/Imaginary identity with the mother and entered the Symbolic. Thus every time the child enunciates 'I am' she or he also enunciates 'I am lack'. As Toril Moi (1985: 99–100) felicitously explains this *difficult* idea:

> The speaking subject that says 'I am' is in fact saying 'I am he (she) who has lost something' – and the loss suffered is the loss of the imaginary identity with the mother and the world. The sentence 'I am' could therefore best be translated as 'I am that which I am not' according to Lacan. ... To speak as subject is therefore the same as to represent the existence of repressed

desire: the speaking subject is lack, and this is how Lacan can say that the subject is that which it is not.

Entry into language signifies both the birth of desire (the child recognizes it) and the repression of desire. Entry into language means entry into the social order, but it also means experiencing lack even further because desire can never be fully satisfied. Thus starts the unfulfillable search for the eternally lost object, what Lacan calls *l'objet petit-a* ('little "a"', *autre* meaning 'little "o"' other, the mother).

A final reason for Lacan's choosing the linguistic model lies in the similarity between the signifying system of language and that of the subject. Words do not have pre-determined intrinsic meanings, nor does the subject. Sign and referent are not and do not mean one and the same thing. For example, the word 'tree' refers to tree but it does not *mean* tree. Similarly, when the child looks into the mirror, unity with the mirror image is illusory. Furthermore, words can only be defined in relation to one another. The unified self (as Freud has shown, and Lacan makes clearer still) does not exist and subjectivity cannot be defined in a vacuum but only in relation to others.

According to Lacan there are three determining moments concerning the child's development as it moves from the Imaginary to the Symbolic – which is the necessary progression for development into the social order. The three moments are the mirror phase, accession to language and the Oedipus complex. I have already talked to some extent about the latter two moments in the discussion of the *fort da* game and submission to the Law of the Father, so I will be brief on those two points. But first let's examine the mirror stage which the child goes through around the age of six to eighteen months. When the mother holds the child up to the mirror it assumes that the reflection it sees in the mirror is itself. In this respect, it begins to develop a sense of identity separate from the mother. This is the moment in which the child sees itself as a unified being at the centre of the world. It experiences a moment of pure *jouissance* (jubilation) in this narcissistic identification. The body is taken for the love-object. The child *sees* itself as whole, whereas in actual terms until now it has sensed itself as fragmented and uncoordinated. It sees in the mirror image the ideal image, the unified/whole. This narcissistic moment of self-idealization produces misrecognition in identification. It also produces alienation. This imaginary mastery over the body anticipates what is not yet there, actual mastery of the body. This ideal image is also the one the (m)other is

holding up to be seen – she holds up the ideal image. So the child also identifies with what it assumes is the mother's perception of it. The child moves from the utterance of misrecognition, 'that's me', to that of alienation, 'I am another'. That alienation has a double edge. That is, the child senses it is not that unified co-ordinated image in the mirror ('I am another') and because the perception with which the child identifies in the mirror is that of the mother's (she holds up the ideal image), the image is conditioned by the mother's look ('I am who my mother desires me to be').

Alienation occurs, then, because the image can signify as real only because of the presence of the (m)other – what Lacan, as we have seen, terms *l'objet petit-a* – and identification is possible only in relation to another. This exposes the gap between the idealized image and the subject. This means there can never be a unified self, only a divided subject. The child is a divided self between, on the one hand, the ideal image (the ego-ideal) and the false sense of unity with the self and, on the other, the need for its subjectivity to be confirmed by another.

We can see here how Lacan has reworked two key ideas in Freud's concept of the narcissistic ego: the divided self and the mediation of self-identity by others. Lacan's account of the next moment, accession to language, is also based in Freud: the *fort da* game. According to Lacan, this game represents the child's entry into language. However, Lacan also makes the point that because the other (the mother) is already present in the mirror stage so too is the notion of the Symbolic Order – that is, language. To explain: the self only signifies because of the signifying presence of the other (in this instance the mother); the other is constituted by and in the Symbolic Order, that is to say, in language. Therefore, the Symbolic is already always present in the Imaginary Order because of the presence of the (m)other. When the child enters into the Symbolic, it enters language but it also succumbs to the Law of the Father, laws of society, laws that are determined by the Other (with a capital O). The Other is a term which is coterminous with the Symbolic Order, language and the Law of the Father. Lacan's use of the term Other allows him to formulate clearly the distinction between the Imaginary and the Symbolic orders. Thus in shorthand form he can refer to the capital O as distinct from the little o which refers to the imaginary relations with the other that take place within the Imaginary (the mirror-image, the mother). The capital O represents, then, the Law of the Father and the danger of castration – in these terms decapitation (being decapitalized from O to o).

In order to obtain a social identity, the child has to suppress its desire of the mother. Again, Lacan's version of the child's Oedipal phase has much in common with Freud's; but the difference is the use of a linguistic model rather than a purely bio-sexual one. This is what Lacan defines as the Symbolic Order. At the moment that the male child recognizes his desire for his mother, the father intercedes and imposes the patriarchal law The father is the third member to enter the reflecting mirror. It is he who represents to the child the authoritative figure in the family. So the child imagines what the authoritative figurehead would say – the father is, therefore, a symbolic father. The father proscribes incest. This taboo is imposed linguistically and is defined by Lacan as the Law of the Father. Because it is based in language, patriarchal law is a Symbolic Order. In the Oedipal phase, then, the male child imagines himself to be what the mother lacks and therefore desires – that is, the phallus. However, this is proscribed by the Law of the Father, the patriarchal 'No'. Prohibition of fulfilling the incestual drive is marked in language. And the child will comply for fear of castration by the father. The male child enters into the Symbolic and adopts a speaking position that marks him as independent from the mother. Poor mother! In the pre-Oedipal phase it is she who has the power (to feed, to nurture) and, because she has the power, she is the 'phallic' mother. The post-Oedipal mother is powerless.

The male child conforms to the patriarchal law, upholds it and thus perpetuates it for generations to come – he follows in the 'name-of-the-father' so that when he says 'I' it comes from the same authorized speaking position as the language of the father, the Other. He becomes the subject of the Symbolic. However, as we know, his desire for the mother does not disappear, it gets repressed and enters into the unconscious. This means that his identification with the mother's object of desire, the phallus, does not disappear either, not altogether. For example, Lacan notes how the fetishist articulates this relation to desire around fetishistic objects such as women's shoes and bits of clothing. These are symbols of the mother's/woman's phallus in so far as it is absent and with which the fetishist identifies. We are reminded that in **film noir** the *femme fatale is* commodified in a fetishistic way (slinky black dress, high-heeled shoes, painted fingernails), but we could also consider François Truffaut's films with their constant figuration of women's legs. The transvestite similarly articulates this desire for the phallus in that he identifies with the phallus-as-hidden under the mother's dress. In other words, he identifies with a woman who has a hidden phallus. Fetishism, as we also know, is a

strategy of disavowal faced by the fear of castration: the fetishist 'completes' the female body and in so doing denies difference, denies the lack. A reading of *Psycho* in this light shows not only to what degree Norman Bates had fetishized his mother for fear of castration but also how unable (unwilling) he was to forego his desire to become or identify with his mother's object of desire, the phallus. He plays both fetishist and transvestite.

The subject represents itself in the field of the Other (language), that is, it represents itself through that which is outside of the self. A sense of fragmentation occurs which gets compounded by the fact that the subject can never fully be represented in speech since speech cannot reflect the unconscious. The subject, in representing the self, can only do so, then, at the cost of division (conscious/unconscious; self/Other). As the (conscious) subject seeks to represent the self in the field of the Other, it does so at the expense of coming after the fact or word, by which time the (unconscious) subject is already not there but becoming something else. The conscious subject utters 'I' and becomes situated as 'I': the spoken subject becomes presence. However, the unconscious subject is already beyond that 'I' and becoming something else: the spoken subject now becomes absence. As the spoken subject fades, becomes lack, so the subject will attempt to recapture itself as a unified being, the idealized image (ego-ideal) of the Imaginary. But, as we recall, this image is an external one, the subject as seen from outside, the subject as it imagines others (starting with the mother) see it. Lacan reasons that this is where the subject confronts the divided notion of the self – the image of the self is accurate but delusory. It is the same and other. The subject (mis) recognizes itself both as itself and as other. The subject is decentred, lacking and fading (for further detail see **enunciation**).

The two orders, the Imaginary and the Symbolic, are, as we have seen, always co-present (sutured as Lacan puts it). The Imaginary is the field of fantasies and images associated with the mirror phase and it never disappears because it involves the **mediation** of self-identification through another. It is, therefore, always already present in adult relationships. The Symbolic is the field of social and cultural symbolism. It is through this Order, which is based in language, that the subject can be represented or constituted. It is through this Order that the subject can articulate its desires and feelings. There is, however, a third Order of subjectivity, what Lacan calls the Real. The Real Order refers to what is outside the subject, what is 'out there', what the subject bumps up against but does not make sense of immediately – because it cannot or it will not. The Real Order is

what subsists outside symbolization, what has been expelled or foreclosed by the subject. If something gets excluded from the Symbolic it appears in the Real. It is what the subject is unable to speak, so it is like a hole in the Symbolic Order. Only through reconstruction can the Real be understood. The Real Order is not repression but foreclosure – it is the disaffirmation (rejection) that something exists for the subject. The Real is often experienced as an hallucination and, unsurprisingly, is linked with death and sexuality – what is 'the beyond of desire'. Thus, for example, the trauma of weaning is not understood then as such by the child but is signified in an hallucinatory form by the child making sucking noises. Fear of castration cannot be symbolized by the child, so it gets expelled into the Real Order, hallucinated say as a cut finger. The primal scene is hallucinated as the father brutalizing, perhaps even killing, the mother. The Real then is that which is prohibited the speaking subject (the subject inscribed into the Other, the Symbolic Order). Language in its first manifestation to the child is marked by the phallic signifier – the patriarchal 'No'. To break that prohibition means castration, death, lack. To enter into it means to adopt the same speaking position, that is, to be subject of that language that prohibits. This means that death and *jouissance* – because they are 'the beyond of desire', because they violate what the Law of the Father prohibits – must remain unspoken.

The key concepts we need to bear in mind when considering the impact of psychoanalysis on film theory, then, are: the construction of subjectivity and most particularly the notion of the divided self; the three orders of subjectivity, the Imaginary, the Symbolic and the Real; and, finally, the unconscious and the repression of desire. These terms of reference will be briefly elaborated upon below, but first a word about female subjectivity. (For more detail see Benvenuto and Kennedy, 1986; Grosz, 1990; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988.)

### *Psychoanalysis and the female subject*

So far in this entry, little or nothing has been said about the female subject. Freud devotes two essays to the matter but Lacan does not examine it in much detail. Indeed, for Lacan the woman does not exist as subject, she is 'not being', 'not all', she is the other of the phallic function ('*l'objet petit-a*'). Lacanian feminists and feminist theorists do, however, investigate female subjectivity and argue that there is such a thing as a female Oedipal trajectory (see **feminist film theory** and **Oedipal trajectory**).

As far as Freud is concerned, the female child enjoys a pre-Oedipal relationship with the mother that is similar to the male child. Freud sees the Oedipal complex for the girl as dynamically different from the boy (see Freud's essay: 'Female Sexuality', Freud, 1931). According to Freud, the girl sees herself as born in lack so she rejects the mother and turns to the father to get herself a penis (in the form of a baby). That desire for the father gets transferred on to a male other (who ultimately is the father). Successful completion for the female is, then, motherhood (getting a penis in the substitute form of a baby). However, Freud argues that because there is no castration fear, the female child never fully gives up the Oedipal complex and that she is thus always bisexually poised.

Freud and Lacan concur (in different terms) that the libido is masculine. For Lacan this is because sexual difference is inscribed in language only in relation to the phallus. Freud talks of the riddle of femininity, asks the question 'what does woman want', speaks of her as the 'dark continent'. Lacan perhaps tells us something of what is going on in this phallocratic **discourse** when he says that women do not have the fear of castration, that they enjoy something that men cannot, in that they can have the phallus in intercourse – which a man never can (not even a homosexual). Lacan states that male desire is linked to enjoyment of the phallus but at the expense of sexual enjoyment. The phallus is the signifier of the Symbolic, but it is also the reminder that one is not a unified self. Phallic enjoyment is achieved in language, that is in mastery: control, not abandonment. Lacan speculates that women derive *jouissance* (jubilation) from sex, an unspeakable enjoyment (Benvenuto and Kennedy, 1986: 185–93). This sounds very much like an assertion of the unfathomability of female **sexuality**. Whatever the case, if it is unspeakable then it is something that cannot be symbolized. If this is so, then female sexuality, to some degree or another, has been expelled to the Real Order. We know that sexuality and death are in the realm of the Real; in the realm of the inexpressible. *Jouissance* is also in the realm of the Real, it is what is forbidden the speaking subject, because it too is 'the beyond of desire' (1986: 180). Thus female sexuality becomes perceivable as hallucinatory because unspeakable, as close to death because of her surplus of enjoyment (*jouissance).* This will prove interesting when we come to consider film theory.

But for now what of the female subject and what of her Oedipal complex? Lacan is much less, if at all, clear about the girl child than Freud. When she perceives her sameness with her mother, she experiences her lack as being non-phallic. She discovers that she, like

her mother, is castrated – is already what the male child most fears. Her sexual drives impel her towards the truly phallic, the father. The father must once again impose the Law of the Father and forbid her sexual access. When the girl child says 'I' the question becomes, whose 'I' is it? She cannot be subject of the Symbolic in the same way as the male child can because the authorized speaking position is that of the father, and language is marked by the phallus. If she cannot be subject then she must be object of the Symbolic (that is, language); and if she is object of the Symbolic then she must also be the object rather than the subject of desire (she is fixed by language since it is not hers).

The whole notion of identity for the male child is bound up with the question of sexual difference and language. As for the female child, first, she will never fully relinquish her desire for her mother because there is no recognition of it within the Law of the Father. Second, she will never fully enter into the Symbolic Order because the Law of the Father does not, in the final analysis, apply to her. And it is here that the questions surrounding female subjectivity become of real interest for feminists, because, as such, the female child is then doubly poised both sexually and in relation to language. With regard to the first point, we recall that her subjectivity is determined by her sameness with her mother. She is then doubly desiring, first, of her own sex (the mother) and also of the male sex (her 'natural' trajectory is to desire the father and, forbidden that desire by the father, she will then seek to fulfil it by finding a male other). In terms of language she is doubly positioned. She is pre-linguistic. Because she can never be subject of patriarchal language she is always outside it. She is not subject of language (unlike the male child) but object *of* the Symbolic Order. However, and here is the paradox, she is also *in* the Symbolic Order. As we have seen, she must be there in the patriarchal constructs of sexual identity because her reflection as (m)other has to be in the mirror for the male to recognize his difference.

It is clear that the male child has a vested interest in obeying the father and entering the Symbolic. However, it is equally clear that the female child does not have that same interest. She is never completely free from desiring her mother. Furthermore, because of their sameness, there is unity in identification. As with the male child, the mother is her first love-object. But because there is no perceived difference, there is no fear of castration. We do know, however, that in order to fulfil her Oedipal trajectory and enter into the social order of things, the female child must function as the other that

confirms male subjectivity. To withhold such confirmation means punishment through one form or another of marginalization from the social order. To provide it is not without its problems either. Whose perception of the subject is she confirming? We must not forget that the image in the mirror is also conditioned by the mother's look. The male child identifies not just with his own image but with what he assumes is the mother's perception of him. His subjectivity is, to his mind, conditioned by the (desire of the) (m)other's. How can the female other hope to replicate that!

### *Psychoanalysis and film theory*

In the 1970s film theorists (primarily French: Metz, Bellour, Baudry, all 1975), recognizing the limitations of a 'total theory' structuralist approach, turned to psychoanalysis as a way of broadening the theoretical framework. Drawing on Freud's account of the libido drives and Lacan's of the mirror stage, they sought to explain how film works at the unconscious level. By establishing an analogy of the screen with the mirror, they discovered a way of talking about spectator–screen relations. They argued that at each viewing there is an enactment for the spectator of the move from the Imaginary to the Symbolic Order, that is, an enactment of the unconscious processes involved in the acquisition of sexual difference, language and subjectivity. In other words, each viewing represents a repetition of the mirror and the Oedipal stages. Bellour makes the point that cinema functions simultaneously for the Imaginary (as mirror) and as the Symbolic (through the film discourses). And the spectator is in a constant state of flux between the two. We have already noted how, in terms of subjectivity, the two Orders are always co-present (to clarify this point further see **suture**).

According to these early theorists, in that cinema functions simultaneously for the Imaginary and the Symbolic, it follows that the cinema constructs the spectator as subject. In so far as the spectator is positioned voyeuristically by the filmic apparatus, the spectator is also identified with the look, with all that that connotes in terms of visual pleasure. The projector functions as the eye, and that eye is all-seeing. Thus visual pleasure is also bound up with the principle of lawless seeing (unwatched by those on screen, the viewer watches). Going to the cinema implies the desire to repeat pleasure in viewing. But, because viewing also involves a re-enactment of the Imaginary narcissistic identification with the image and lawless seeing, it implies that there is a desire to repeat the experience of *jouissance* (which we

know is 'the beyond of desire'). Given this identifcatory process, it is not difficult to see why Metz would speak of cinemagoing and viewing as a regression to childhood.

Metz argues that it is not just the process of voyeurism that is involved in film-viewing, but also that of fetishism. Fetishism and voyeurism are, as we explained, the two strategies adopted to disavow difference. Fetishism occurs on screen within the **image**, as in the case of the fetishizing of the body of the *femme fatale* in film noir. But, says Metz, fetishism operates also at a far more basic level. The image as image and the cinematic apparatus as apparatus are both fetish, because they stand in for, make present, what is absent. As such, they disavow what is lacking, they disavow difference. Similarly the spectator, in watching cinema, is disavowing lack, difference. The spectator knows that presence is absence, that what is there is not there, that what is being seen is lack (absence). Yet the spectator, says Metz, disavows it and the apparatus in its seamlessness disguises this absence, it sutures the spectator into that disavowal (see **suture**).

It is in these investigations into cinema's relation to voyeurism and fetishism and its relation to the Imaginary and Symbolic Orders that these early years of psychoanalytic film theory made their greatest inroads into the advancing of film theory. Cinema was seen to embody psychic desire. The screen became the site for the projection of our fantasies and desires, that is, for our unconscious. In this way, it was presumed that the cinema positioned the spectator as desiring subject, therefore, as subject of the apparatus – starting with the camera, with which the spectator identifies. These first theorizings were not entirely unproblematic, however. Indeed, they presented at least three problems, not least of which was the exclusively phallocratic reading of cinematic practices. These issues were picked up by feminist film theorists – starting with Laura Mulvey (1975). The identified problems were, first, that in this reading it is assumed that the spectator-screen relation is only one-way; second, that the subject is male in its positioning; and third, that film texts are organized in such a way as to give a **preferred reading**.

Feminist film theorists, while acknowledging that psychoanalysis as a discourse oppresses women, none the less insisted that it was for that very reason that it was important to investigate it seriously, not simply to understand it but to be able to expose the phallocentric construction of subjectivity – starting with Freud's notion of penis envy and Lacan's assertion that our subjectivity is determined in relation to language and its signifier, the phallus. To understand how women have become positioned as they have, the argument goes, is

to make possible a **deconstruction** of that construction. In terms of film **theory**, the film text in this context stands as a dream, a fantasy or the analysand, and the critic or theorist takes on the role of the analyst. Thus, for instance, feminist critics have managed to look at 'themes (such as mother/daughter bonding or Oedipal triangles) in order to understand how *patriarchal signifying systems have represented such systems*' (Kaplan, 1990, 15, her stress). Furthermore through this deconstructionist approach they have been able to give readings against the grain, that is, readings that are not the encoded, preferred reading.

During the 1980s and 1990s, therefore, problems brought about by a phallic-centred reading of cinema have been largely debated and that reading has been contested. As a result, psychoanalytic film theory has developed considerably in the areas of spectator viewing and textual analysis. Spectator positioning is now seen as more heterogeneous or pluralistic (across **gender**, **class**, race, age, sexuality, nationality and creed). The spectator-subject is as much constituting of as constituted by the filmic text (see **ideology**). So the spectator–screen relation is at least two-way. Finally, the Oedipal trajectory of the classical narrative is no longer perceived as exclusively male – particularly within film genres that are not evidently all-male, such as **melodrama** and **film noir**. The female Oedipal trajectory is now being investigated in terms, first, of mother/daughter relations and, second, of lesbian relations (even if subliminal).

I want to conclude this entry on another related issue with regard to the female Oedipal trajectory, this time in its relation to desire. Whilst from the very beginning of the introduction of psychoanalysis into film theory considerable attention had been paid to the male Oedipal trajectory *and* desire, it was not until recently that this question, as it concerned the female, came into focus. Barthes, in his book *Le Plaisir du texte* (1973), makes the distinction between pleasure and *jouissance*. He is talking primarily about literary texts, but the distinction holds good for other texts, including the bodily text. Pleasure is what the reader derives from the closure offered by realist texts. Conversely, *jouissance* is derived from modes of narration that do not provide closure. Barthes speaks of *jouissance* occurring in reading a text when his body follows its own ideas. *Jouissance* is experienced corporeally not linguistically He encounters his enjoying body: *corps de jouissance* is his term. In this way he experiences an erotic investment in the textual object. Barthes seems to be echoing Freud's notion of the narcissistic ego here. Both pleasure and *jouissance*, says Barthes, can be experienced within the same text. We can

now see that pleasure is experienced in the Symbolic Order (social order, control, closure) and can be enunciated in language. Conversely, *jouissance* is experienced within the Imaginary (since the term refers to when it was first experienced as that moment of imaginary unity with the self as reflected in the mirror). As such it remains unspoken. Since pleasure and *jouissance* can both be experienced within a same text it follows that both the Imaginary and the Symbolic can be experienced within a single text as well. The Imaginary and the Symbolic, in reading as elsewhere, are always co-present.

But let's pick up this question of *jouissance* and female desire. We recall that *jouissance* is, of course, extra-discursive. *Jouissance* is, first, that imaginary moment in the mirror phase when the image and the self are united in fusional bliss. *Jouissance* is before language, what remains unspoken. Henceforth, upon entry into the Symbolic – now that the child can speak – *jouissance* joins the realm of the Real Order of subjectivity and becomes associated with that which cannot be spoken: death and desire. We noted above that, according to Lacan, woman is both 'not all/not being' and the site of *jouissance.* We have also noted that she is sexually and linguistically doubly positioned. On the one hand, she is desiring of the Other or father and as such is *in* but not *of* the Symbolic Order. On the other, she is both pre-Oedipal and pre-linguistic. She can, therefore, experience *jouissance* far more readily than the male for whom such unspeakable enjoyment is prohibited by the Law of the Father. Viewed from this phallocentric point of view, *jouissance* is represented as woman's 'natural' realm. This is her 'deep and dark mystery'.

*Jouissance* stands for the fusional pleasure of the Imaginary: the moment of narcissistic identification with the ego ideal. It stands also for what the subject always already desires: the desired fusion with the lost object – '*objet petit-a*' – the (m)other. This would suggest that the female subject can experience what the male subject cannot: unification with the self *and* with the mother. She has something that the male subject does not. Significantly, beyond the already existing lesbian overtones in this unification, when the woman experiences childbirth for herself she identifies with, becomes her mother as well as being mother herself. She is reunited with her mother's body at the same time as she is giving birth to her self. Lesbianism, reproduction and narcissism unite in unspeakable enjoyment: *jouissance.* Equally important, since the female subject, according to this phallocentric view, can experience *jouissance*, she is 'naturally' represented in the Real Order. This means that, in terms of her sexuality, she has been expelled or disaffirmed by

the male subject – he who is constituted by language which is marked by the phallic signifier. She is outside symbolization. Her sexuality remains unspoken – in phallic terms it remains a hole in the Symbolic Order, the male subject rejects that it exists. We recall that the Real is often experienced as an hallucination and is, of course, closely aligned with sexuality and death. So the male subject, in foreclosing the female subject's sexuality into the Real Order as *jouissance*, is in fact experiencing it as an hallucination, as 'the beyond of desire', as death.

It is not difficult to see that a phallocentric world will construct the female subject in such a way that she will not derive power from this. And it is noteworthy that her experience of desire, as in *jouissance*, is mute and biologically, not linguistically, based. Significantly, 'bad' motherhood gets considerable exposure in films as much as in other media. Take for example the wicked mother of Joan Crawford in *Mommie Dearest* (Frank Perry, 1981), the over-zealous mother as the eponymous *Mildred Pierce* (Michael Curtiz, 1945) who is 'punished' by one of her daughters for her over-maternalizing behaviour, or the self-sacrificing but ambitious mother in *Stella Dallas* (King Vidor, 1937) who will relinquish her bond for the sake of her daughter's upward mobility. Cyborg-reproduction movies like *Alien*[3] (Fincher, 1992), *The Fly* (David Cronenberg, 1986) and *Coma* (Michael Crichton, 1977) attempt either to punish the woman for having sole rights to reproduction organs or to show that they are not necessary after all. And films that have men as reproducers, as in the Schwarzenegger movie *Junior* (Ivan Reitman, 1994), although silly, none the less say much about male fantasies and their fear of female occupation of the unknown territory of *jouissance*.

Women in film noir are frequently punished for their refusal to conform to patriarchal signifying systems. Rather, they are first constructed as being in control of their own sexuality and then punished for it. In other words, the film noir as a genre puts on screen the 'unspeakable', feminine *jouissance*. It represents the unrepresentable, the Real Order. It is interesting to note that the male protagonist is usually unclear and confused about what is happening in the narrative – as if he is partly blinded, or as if he is hallucinating (as in *Double Indemnity*, Billy Wilder, or *Murder My Sweet*, Edward Dmytryk, both 1944). Arguably the film that best illustrates the male subject's hallucination of female subjectivity is Otto Preminger's *Laura* (1944). The male protagonist, the detective Marc McPherson, is obsessed by a portrait of a woman he believes is dead, Laura. He is obsessed to the point that he literally hallucinates her. He also pursues

women whom he momentarily misrecognizes as her – only, finally, to come face to face with her, alive.

As far as film noir is concerned, we can also see that this **mise-en-scène** of the Real Order, at least where female subjectivity is concerned, makes possible a playing out of the fear of castration. Here the strong 'phallic' woman is represented as sexually armed and dangerous. The fact that she is fetishized through her dress-code should not, however, escape our attention. It tells us that she is after all contained by the male and that, although she may behave transgressively throughout the film, she none the less will be put in her place by the end (for example *The Woman in the Window*, 1944; *Gilda*, 1946; *Kiss Me Deadly*, 1955).

For a sample reading of applications of psychoanalysis to film see Doane et al., 1984; Doane, 1992; Kaplan, 1980, 1983, 1990 and 1992; Krutnik, 1991; Kuhn 1982 and 1985; Lebeau, 1994 and 2001; Lurie, 1980; McGowan, 2004; Modleski, 1982 and 1988; Mulvey, 1989; Rose, 1986; Zizek, 1999.

## QUEER CINEMA

Queer cinema has been in existence for decades although it lacked a label. Films of Jean Cocteau and Jean Genet in France in the 1930s and 1950s (such as *Le Sang d'un poète*, Cocteau, 1934, and *Le Chant d'amour*, Genet, 1950) are cited as the forefathers (sic). It is a cinema that is identified with **avant-garde** or **underground** movements (for example Anger and Warhol 1960s films in the USA). In the avant-garde world of cinema, lesbian film-makers' presence is quite strong too (for example Ulrike Ottinger, Chantal Akerman, Pratibha Parmar). Although we could go on listing names for this heritage of Queer cinema, another of the greats has to be Rainer Werner Fassbinder (working in the 1970s and early 1980s) – even in his seemingly mainstream (European art) films he was taking genres to task and re-interpreting them through a gay and queer sensibility (see: *Fear eats the Soul*, 1974; *The Marriage of Maria Braun*, 1979). And it is fitting perhaps that his last film, *Querelle* (1982) – based on Genet's 1947 novel – is fully about gay and queer desire. And, finally on this list, what could be queerer and braver than the Brazilian film-maker Hector Babenco's 1985 film *The Kiss of the Spiderwoman* in which the macho arch-revolutionary succumbs to the charms of the flamboyant queen in his prison cell?

Queer cinema itself was introduced as a concept, in 1991 at the Toronto Festival of Festivals, to refer to a spate of films (beginning in the late 1980s) that re-examined and reviewed histories of the image of gays. These films proposed renegotiated subjectivities, men looking at men, gazes exchanged, and so on. They also took over genres previously considered mainstream, subverting them by bringing the question of pleasure onto screen and the celebration of **excess**. In certain cases, these films reinscribed the homosexual text where previously it had been elided. See, for example, Derek Jarman's historical film *Edward II* (1991), or Tom Kalin's murder/crime **thriller** *Swoon* (1992). The latter is a 'remake/retake', setting the record straight (!) of two earlier versions of the true story of a murder committed by two young men of a 14-year-old boy in Chicago in 1924. The first version was the Hitchcock film, *Rope* (1948), and the second a Richard Fleischer film, *Compulsion* (1959). Both films completely elide the homosexual dimension of the two killers' relationship.

Always a cinema of the margins, only in the 1990s, in the light of the tragedy of AIDS, has Queer cinema become a more visible cinema. Indeed, the New Queer Cinema, as this cinema is also labelled, has presently become a marketable commodity if not an identifiable movement. One of the leaders of the American Queer cinema is Gus Van Sant (*My Own Private Idaho*, 1991, *Even Cowgirls Get the Blues*, 1993). New Queer Cinema was a term coined in a 1992 *Village Voice* article by B. Ruby Rich to describe the renaissance in gay and lesbian film-making represented by the Americans Todd Haynes, Jennie Livingstone, Gus Van Sant, Gregg Araki, Laurie Lynd, Tom Kalin and the British film-makers Derek Jarman and Isaac Julien. Queer cinema is not a single aesthetic but a collection of different aesthetics – what Rich delightfully refers to as 'Homo-Pomo'. It is a cinema that takes pride in difference. Queer cinema is above all a male homosexual cinema and focuses on the construction of male desire. Some lesbian film-makers have made films that come under this label and it is instructive that they have made films that address not just their **sexuality** (as in *Go Fish!*, Rose Troche, 1994) but that of their male counterparts (*Paris is Burning*, Jennie Livingstone, 1991).

Queer as a politics has not resolved lesbian invisibility. There exists still (as within the heterosexual world of the film industry) an inequality of funding for lesbian film-makers as opposed to gay film-makers. Gay is perhaps more cool than lesbian at present, and one does wonder – cynically perhaps – if *Philadelphia* (Demme, 1993) would ever have been financed by Hollywood if the New Queer Cinema had not come along at the beginning of the 1990s and

enjoyed the success it did with mainstream as well as gay audiences. Having said that, there are some lesbian feature films, although for the most part, they pre-date New Queer Cinema – an exception being Patricia Rozema's beguiling *When Night is Falling* (1995). Of the 1980s' films we can count *Born in Flames* Lizzie Borden, 1983, *Desert Hearts*, Donna Deitch, 1985, *I've Heard the Mermaids Singing*, Patricia Rozema, 1987. Due to lack of financing, most lesbian film-makers have opted for video to develop their **counter-cinema** in an unfettered way much as other marginal cinemas before them have done – such as women's cinema, and cinema nôvo as it developed into garbage cinema (see Sadie Benning, *Jollies*, 1990, Pratibha Parmar, *Khush*, 1991, Shu Lea Cheang, *Fresh Kill*, 1994).

It is quite probable that Queer cinema as a term came about by identification with trends in critical theory begun in the mid-1980s, namely, Queer theory. Queer theory can be seen as a desire to challenge and push further debates on gender and sexuality put in place by **feminist theory** (amongst others) and also as a critical response to the numerous discourses surrounding AIDS and homosexuality. Queer theory is, arguably one of the first truly **postmodern** theories to be born in the age of postmodernism. In its practice it is extremely broad. It is a concept that embraces all 'non-straight' approaches to living practice – including, within our context, film and popular culture. As a politics, it seeks to confuse binary essentialisms around gender and sexual identity, expose their limitations and suggest that things are far more blurred (for example, think of the **spectator** pleasure derived from watching Robbie Williams wearing a dress and singing one of his many hit songs – as he did in one of his video promos). It is more than a subversion of straightness, it is also more than an exposing of the fact of hegemonic homosociality and the hypocrisy of denial. It is in fact far more celebrative than that. In a sense it challenges everyone's assumptions about gender and sexuality. It shows how you can queer-read ('queried') virtually everything as just one other, equal not subordinate, way of reading the texts. Queer readings go 'against the groin' (Verhoeven, 1997, 25). Queer theory examines queer at work, that is, the making or writing about gayness by authors and film-makers. Doing queer work can be done by all sexualities. Thus, straights, bisexuals, transexuals, transgenders, gays and lesbians who are writing or making texts about gayness are performing, enacting Queer[ly]. Queer theory can open up texts and lead us to read texts that seem straight, differently – or view them from a new and different angle. Thus a queer reading can reveal that you are watching (reading) something far more complex than you

originally thought you were (think of **buddy films** for example). The actor or film-maker does not have to be queer, but the text or performance may offer itself up for a queer reading (Joan Crawford as the cross-dressing gun-toting but butchly feminine Vienna in *Johnny Guitar*, Nicholas Ray, 1954).

New Queer Cinema is unconcerned with positive images of queerness, gayness or lesbianism, but is very clearly assertive about its politics – starting with the expression of sexuality as multiplicity and not as fixed or essentialized. Thus stereotypes of queerness get reappropriated and played with. True camp (not the appropriated camp of straight cinema) privileges form over content but with a purpose. Queer camp is about trashing stereotypes with flash and flounce and dress in excess. It is about ridiculing consumer passivity through deliberate vulgarity. It is about (as in the original French sense of the word *camper:* to play one's role) assuming fully and properly one's performative role. In terms of stereotypes, camp itself and narcissism get some royal send-ups in *The Adventures of Priscilla, Queen of the Desert*, Stephan Elliott (1994) and in *Go Fish!* Queer cinema challenges the view that homosexuality and lesbianism must have value ascribed to it (as good or bad) – it just is. There are political implications about homosexuality and lesbianism, but so too are there about race – as indeed black gay and lesbian film-makers make clear *(Looking for Langston*, Isaac Julien, 1988). In Queer cinema and theory, the **gaze** as well as questions of visual pleasure come under scrutiny. Since the relays of looking are different within the screen, so too must they be outside the screen and in the spectator's eyes. More pleasures can be experienced by the spectator as he or she adopts different positionalities within the **narrative**. In some ways this is not so new if we think of **pornography** and the pleasure in viewing for the spectator (male or female) of the typical triad set-up which includes a lesbian scene or two to get things warmed/hotted up. But it may be that Queer theory makes us feel more comfortable speaking about it. Interestingly pornography as a critical debate within film studies has only truly emerged in the 1990s – perhaps coming on the heels of the effects of Queer theory.

Queer Cinema has crossed over into mainstream and not all of it is made by gay or lesbian film-makers. And this in a way is the point. It is not that it has been co-opted, although some critics' responses to Wachowski's lesbian neo-noir *Bound* (1996) warn us how difficult it is to be clear on this. However, I would argue that this crossover is more a case of queerness being a recognized state-of-being amongst others. In 1998–9 alone, there were six very ostensibly queer films (at

the very least), two of which were made by women and all of which were box-office successes: *Being John Malkovich* (Jonze, 1999), *Boys Don't Cry* (Peirce, 1999), *Gods and Monsters* (Condon, 1999), *High Art* (Cholodenko, 1998), *Love is the Devil (Study for a Portrait of Francis Bacon)* (Maybury, 1998), *The Talented Mr Ripley* (Minghella, 1999). None of these films gloss over on what it means to have a queer identity, nor indeed the difficulties this can represent in terms of social acceptability. Only the first film has a light outcome with a lesbian relationship asserting itself after a series of fun-filled adventures entering into the mind and eye's view of John Malkovich. *Gods and Monsters*' study of the career of the gay film-maker James Whale (he directed the 1930s *Frankenstein* movies) gives us a sense of what it was like to be queer in Hollywood at a time when hetero-normativity was very big. The other four films, it has to be said, however, are quite dark, either because death is the outcome of the intolerance of others (*Boys Don't Cry*; *The Talented Mr Ripley*), or because they unflinchingly show the harder side of lesbian and gay society (*High Art*; *Love is the Devil*).

Queer Cinema advocates multiplicity: of voices and of sexualities. Multiplicity in a generic sense also: vampire films and comedy, thrillers and musicals. Unstick the queer from the moribund representation to which much of mainstream cinema has confined 'it'. Queers are neither the depressed anomics nor the serial killers some film-makers would have us believe (see Winterbottom's offensive *Butterfly Kiss*, 1994). To rewrite Foucault: 'Queer is everywhere'. The signs of queer globalization are there to see. Almodovar's work is an obvious first citation in terms of Europe. But Asian queer is also on the scene (Chen Kaige's *Farewell My Concubine*, 1993, Zhang Yuan's *East Palace/West Palace*, 1996, Wong Kar-War's *Happy Together*, 1997). It is no longer a case of having to find it, but 'to connect'.

For further reading see Bad Object-Choices, 1991; Bristow, 1997; Burston and Richardson, 1995; Creekmur and Dory, 1995; Dorenkamp and Henke, 1995; Dyer, 1977b, 1990; Fuss, 1992; Gever *et al.*, 1993; Gill, 1995; Grossman (2000); Hanson (1999); Horne and Lewis, 1996; Jackson and Tapp, 1997; Kuzniar (2000). Mell-Metereau, 1993; Russo, 1981 and 1987; Weiss, 1990; Whisman, 1995; For a documentary film of Queer, see *The Celluloid Closet*, Rob Epstein and Jeffrey Friedman, 1995.

## REALISM

The term realism comes from a literary and art movement of the nineteenth century which went against the grand tradition of classical idealism and sought to portray 'life as it really was'. The focus was on ordinary life – indeed the lives of the socially deprived and the conditions they had to bear. As far as the film camera is concerned, it is not difficult to see why it is perceived as a 'natural' tool for realism, since it reproduces 'what is there' (that is, the physical environment). Film as cinema makes **absence** presence, it puts reality up on to the screen. It purports to give a direct and 'truthful' view of the 'real world' through the presentation it provides of the characters and their environment. Realism functions in film on both the **narrative** level and the figurative (that is, pictorial/photographic). In this regard, physical realism marries into psychological realism via the narrative structures. Generally speaking, realist films address social issues. However, because the narrative closure of these films tends to provide easy solutions, this form of realism on the whole serves only to naturalize social problems and divisions and not provide any deep insight into causes.

There are, arguably, two types of realism with regard to film. First, seamless realism, whose **ideological** function is to disguise the illusion of realism. Second, aesthetically motivated realism, which attempts to use the camera in a non-manipulative fashion and considers the purpose of realism in its ability to convey a reading of reality, or several readings even. As far as the seamless type of realism is concerned, film technique – supported by narrative structures – erases the idea of illusion, creates the 'reality effect'. It hides its mythical and **naturalizing** function and does not question itself – obviously, because to do so would be to destroy the authenticity of its realism (see **myth**). Nothing in the camera-work, the use of **lighting**, **colour**, **sound** or **editing** draws attention to the illusionist nature of the reality effect. The whole purpose is to stitch the spectator into the illusion – keeping reality safe.

Conversely the realist aesthetic, first strongly advocated by French film-makers in the 1930s and subsequently by André Bazin in the 1950s, is one that recognizes from the start that realist **discourses** not only suppress certain truths, they also produce others. In other words, realism produces realisms. And, although due caution must be exercised when making a realist film, this multiplicity of realisms means that a film cannot be fixed to mean what it shows – as occurs in seamless realism. The realist aesthetic recognizes the reality-effect

produced by cinematic **mediation** and strives, therefore, to use film technique in such a way that, although it does not draw attention to itself, it none the less provides the spectator with space to read the text for herself or himself. In other words, technique functions in this instance so as not to provide an encoded **preferred reading**. Rather, it seeks to offer as objectively as possible a form of realism. So this type of realism uses location shooting and natural lighting. Most of its cast is composed of non-professional actors. It employs long **shots** using **deep-focus** cinematography (to counter manipulation of the reading of the image), long takes (to prevent the controlling effects of editing practices) and the 90-degree angled shot that, because it is at eye level, stands as an objective shot.

After the Second World War, the American public wanted a more realist view of the country, which it found in the spate of **films noir**. In Italy economic necessity as much as a desire for a non-manipulative realism produced **Italian neo-realism**, which picked up on realist traditions already in place in French and Italian cinema of the 1930s. Indeed, Jean Renoir – one of the major advocates of a politically motivated socio-realist cinema – is credited with making the first film of this kind, *Toni* (1934). In the 1960s France, for its part, pursued its interest in politically motivated realist films, albeit on a small scale, with the **cinéma-vérité** and documentary works of such film-makers as Jean Rouch. Finally, from the late 1950s into the 1960s, new wave cinemas emerged from Britain, France and Germany and provided the slice-of-life realist cinema (see **British New Wave**, **French New Wave**, **New German Cinema**).

*see also*: **documentary**, **naturalism**, **socio-realism**, **suture**

For a full discussion of the debates around realism see Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 157–80; Williams, 1980.

## ROAD MOVIE

Road movies, as the term makes clear, are movies in which protagonists are on the move. Generally speaking, such a movie is **iconographically** marked through such things as a car, the tracking **shot**, wide and wild open spaces. In this respect, as a genre it has some similarities with the **Western**. The road movie is about a frontiersmanship of sorts given that one of its codes is discovery – usually self-discovery. The **codes and conventions** of a road movie

have meant that until fairly recently this genre has predominantly been a **gendered** one. Generically speaking, the road movie goes from A to B in a finite and chronological time. Normally the **narration** of a road movie follows an ordered sequence of events which lead inexorably to a good or bad end (compare the bad ending for the travellers in *Easy Rider*, Dennis Hopper, 1969, with the reasonable solution for the protagonist in *Paris, Texas*, Wim Wenders, 1984). Genderically speaking, the traveller is male and the purpose of the trajectory is to obtain self-knowledge. However, women have occasionally been portrayed as the travellers (as in *Thelma and Louise*, Ridley Scott, 1991) – and in this we can perceive a readiness to subvert or parody the genre. *The Adventures of Priscilla, Queen of the Desert* (Stephen Eliot, 1994) ironizes the macho-masculinity of the genre in a different way – this time a dancing troupe of drag-queens sets off across the Australian desert and all find fulfilment in one way or another.

*see also*: **genre**

For further reading see Cohan and Hark, 1997.

## SCIENCE-FICTION FILMS

These are considered by some critics to be a sub-genre of the **horror** movie (see Cook, 1985: 99); by others as a **genre** distinct from horror films (see Kuhn and Radstone, 1990: 355); by others yet again as a sub-genre (along with horror movies) of **fantasy** films (Konigsberg, 1993: 303). These varied critical positions point to the difficulties in demarcating and categorizing genres in general and this one in particular. Interestingly, the French use all three categories *fantastique*, *horreur* and *science fiction* to distinguish between films which other countries might be satisfied to lump under one label, namely horror.

Science fiction as a literary genre came about in the mid-to-late nineteenth century in response to advances in science and technology. Two exemplary authors of the genre, Jules Verne and H. G. Wells, from opposing positions, described science's prowess in making possible what up until the turn of the century had seemed impossible (for example submarines and space craft). Film, in so far as it can make visible what is invisible, seems a natural medium for this kind of narrative. However, science-fiction films have been more erratic in

their appearances on screen than most other genres. For example there were only a few produced during the silent era and it could be said that as a genre it came into its own only after 1950 (for reasons that become clear below).

The earliest examples of science-fiction movies date back to Georges Méliès with his *films fantastiques* that portrayed voyages to the moon and to the centre of the earth (1902). These, however, were benign comic narratives of humans encountering a series of adventures with strange phenomena which none the less ended 'happily' – marked by a return to safety (that is, the earth's surface). Apart from Méliès's work, which was very loosely based on Verne's writing, films in this genre have tended to be grounded more in the Wellsian fear of science outstripping our understanding and taking us over. Science-fiction films produce a futuristic vision where we are no longer in control of what we have created (this curiously assumes that we currently do control science). This genre relies on the **audience**'s willingness to suspend disbelief and does so by playing on our fears of science. The few science-fiction films made before 1950 tended to focus on technology as the science-demon that would destroy humanity.

After 1950 the trend was for humanity to be at risk from alien intruders that either invaded the earth or caught up with humans in outer space in a spacecraft or on an alien planet (upon which the humans unquestioningly had the greater right to be, it would appear). It was not until this period that this genre or sub-genre became identified as a Hollywood genre. Up until then, apart from the *Flash Gordon* serials (1936–40), what little science fiction had been produced in Western culture was of European origin – the most remarkable example being Fritz Lang's *Metropolis* (1926) with its futuristic city, and William Menzies' space fantasy *Things to Come* (1936). However, the 1950s was *the* period of the Cold War at its highest. 'Reds under the bed', McCarthyism and the House Un-American Activities Committee's witch-hunt of supposed communists, the threat of the nuclear deterrent (albeit only the Americans ever used it, in WWII against Japan: Hiroshima and Nagasaki), the threat or fear of totalitarian regimes – all of these elements fed into the American political culture of the 1950s and found a steady reflection in contemporary film production. Aliens came in their droves from outer space on to the American screen (*Invaders from Mars*, *War of the Worlds*, *It Came from Outer Space*, all 1953 films, and *It Conquered the World*, 1956, etc.).

The American paranoia and neurosis at alien threats (real or imagined) was differently expressed in Britain during the 1960s –

probably because, like the rest of Western Europe, the country found itself uneasily and weakly positioned between the two super-powers (USA and former USSR). The dominant fear in the British sci-fi context was the ability, to say nothing of the capacity, of these two giants of nuclear weapons of mass destruction to blow the world apart. Although cheaply made, the first of these films was Val Guest's *The Day the Earth Caught Fire* (1961) in which nuclear-bomb testing causes the earth to tilt on its axis and heat up. Kubrick's *Dr Strangelove: or, How I Learned to Stop Worrying and Love the Bomb* (1964) is of course better known and portrays the levels of insanity to which power (especially total power in the form of the bomb) can push leaders.

The next watershed year in Hollywood terms is 1968, producing two strands of science-fiction movies, the one slightly more optimistic than the other but where technology and aliens are far more ambiguously portrayed in terms of their threat to humankind. During this period of the less 'black-and-white' take on technology and aliens, issues of conscience were raised. We need to recall that the political mood in Europe and the USA was one where authority was being challenged, questions being asked (for example about America's presence in Vietnam). In the European context – as part of these films of contestation – we could mention Tarkovsky's *Solaris*, 1972. But British-produced Stanley Kubrick's *2001: A Space Odyssey* most clearly posits the question of man's responsibility as the maker of the technology – as indeed Hal, the computer aboard the *2001* spaceship, reminds us. Although Hal is destroyed because of his severe life-threatening malfunctioning, it is never resolved whether he is friend or foe. This ambiguity surrounding Hal is mirrored in the representation of the alien in science-fiction films of late-1970s and early 1980s (*The Man who Fell to Earth*, Nicholas Roeg, 1976; Steven Spielberg's *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*, 1977 and *E.T.*, 1982). This type of alien is generally unthreatening (once you get to know 'him') and often offers us a lesson in humility before departing (presumably back whence it came).

However, in terms of narrative, the above was not always the outcome. Films also revealed how intolerance, chauvinism and racism continued to reign. This is much of the tenor of the *Planet of the Apes* series, begun in the late 1960s through to the early 1970s: mankind seems doomed, not because of technology so much, but because of his inability to embrace tolerance. In Schaffner's 1967 *Planet of the Apes*, astronauts crash onto what appears to be an unknown planet only to discover that they have crash-landed back in

time into the world at a more primitive stage along the evolutionary scale – or maybe not, because it is mankind who is now subjected to laboratory experiments by the apes. In the sequel, Ted Post's *Beneath the Planet of the Apes* (1970), a tribe of human mutants (buried beneath a post-apocalypse New York) worship the atom bomb. Humankind fails to improve with knowledge it would appear. Later in the series the apes become mankind's slaves – *Conquest of the Planet of the Apes* (Thompson, 1972) – and eventually they all slug it out in *Battle for the Planet of the Apes* (Thompson, 1973). Could it just be that it is the human who is the alien after all, living in his/her world? We had to wait for the *Matrix* series to get that answer! Before that, however, it was the turn of the *Star Wars* series which, beginning with the 1977 George Lucas film of that name, changed everything. Special effects, controlled by Lucas with his own Industrial Light and Magic (ILM) studios, set the bar very high and saw the birth of the first sci-fi blockbuster. But, sadly technophilia failed to disguise a very passé indulgence in comic-book adventure-culture and a deep nostalgia for boys-own stuff – and with it a return to a far more mysoginistic world-view. Bizarrely, with this nostalgic world-view slapped right in the midst of sci-fi imaginings, it is as if we have been returned to the past and safe middle-America has been conjured back. And (without Lucas possibly knowing it) how prescient this title was of the next decade of middle-America values sold to the population by President Reagan with his Reaganomics and his stock-piling of high-technology ballistic missiles in readiness for his own brand of Star Wars in which good (USA) would fight evil (the communist bloc).

The more open and critical mood of the early 1970s sci-fi movie had by now long passed and by the late 1970s rumblings of nastiness were about. So by the time we get to Ridley Scott's *Alien*, made in 1979, technology, humans and aliens are now to be feared equally – nay, might even be present in one and the same thing as this film and its three *Alien* sequels (to date) make clear, although in a very specific way. For all its appearance of promoting woman, this *Alien* quadrology ultimately, in a backlash way, addresses the effects of feminism on patriarchy and male **sexuality**. Thus, rather than a political culture feeling under threat (as in the 1950s), it is now (White) male sexual culture that feels threatened. In *Alien*, men give birth to alien babies; by *Alien*$^3$, the only remaining woman is implanted (artificially inseminated) with an alien egg – and kills herself to save human kind. Foolishly as it transpires. By the time of *Alien Resurrection* (Jeunet. 1997) she is cloned back into life and made human just in time for

the aliens to re-commence their dreaded attacks once more. Reproductive technology is here (cloning, artificial insemination) – man has made it and as such threatens women's reproductive rights, to say nothing of organs. Although this is not the first series of science-fiction films to attract feminist critics to the genre, it sums up why this genre is of interest to them: because it shows the danger of science and technology, explores the underlying social anxieties regarding experiments in reproduction technology, and the ideological effects of this genre which often construct female sexuality as monstrous (Kuhn and Radstone, 1990: 356).

By the turn of the century and into the new millennium sci-fi seems to be solidly embedded in the technics of fear. We are now in an age of genetic engineering, ecological destruction, and formally labelled 'weapons of mass destruction'. How interesting therefore that the sci-fi genre should now produce movies that are about pre-crime, post-memory and the pre-world. Namely, all that is not quite there. Spielberg's *Minority Report* (2002), and the *Matrix* series come to mind. In some ways it is as if we are back to the paranoia of the 1950s – but then at least the threat to the West was the communist bloc of the East. It was a palpable, geographically located 'other' – even though 'they' could 'look just like us' (as so many US propaganda documentaries of the time declared). Now of course, the enemy is invisible, possibly even virtual. We see 'him' speak in video-recordings we take to be true but we have no idea where he is, how many followers he has. He is known as the 'axis of evil' or the Al-Quaida, but neither of these things exist (except in name only). Small surprise therefore if *The Matrix* (Larry and Andy Wachowski, 1999) speaks to this virtual rhetoric of the current political climate in the West. This film has people imprisoned in a computer-generated world. The world that they perceive is a digitally created one piped into their brains. As if it was not enough to take over female reproductive organs and make man of man (i.e. from technology), now technology has taken over the mind as well! What a surprise, until we consider that the culture of fear that so dominates President Bush's America and which threatens to engulf Europe if we are not careful is, to all intents and purposes, the one described and inscribed into *The Matrix*. The Matrix is an artificial intelligence that controls the world. But this Matrix is in fact a minotaur (a devourer of human flesh), for the citizens are converted into food and energy to power the Matrix itself. Thus mankind is preserved, protected and endlessly re-cycled, digitally re-composed, by this mega-computer. But hold on a minute. If we look in the dictionary we learn that matrix pre-

sently means a mould for casting type – in other words it is the original first mould from which stereotypes can be reproduced at will and in any number. We learn also that its original but now obsolete meaning is the womb, the space of breeding. How clever man is. Since he fears his own obsolescence (as is evidenced in the Bush rhetoric about ridding the world of the axis of evil), but cannot see his enemy, what better thing to do than, first, have complete control of the man-making machine and guarantee to have the numbers of bodies to survive all eventualities; and, second, to render the female – womb and all – obsolete because she cannot possibly be counted upon to reproduce at the speed and with the efficiency necessary (she might also refuse). *The Matrix* makes a strong statement to the effect that we are the food that megalomaniacs feed on and off for their own power (World War I was a classic example).

But what is also interesting here is how little the mistrust of the female has shifted over time. What, in the final analysis, separates the projection of female barrenness (intellectual and sexual) through the evil robot Maria in *Metropolis* from the drive to rid the world of the need for the womb as exemplified by *The Matrix* and many other films that precede it? We could cite the numerous cross-genetic nasties and womb fantasies made by David Cronenberg (*The Brood*, 1979; *The Fly*, 1986; *Dead Ringers*, 1988) amongst just so many others that wish eternally for the womb to remain absent (*Jurassic Park*, Spielberg, 1993; *Mary Shelley's Frankenstein*, Branagh, 1994). Curiously, too, we have come back to robots – but this time to boy robots (and not just the 'boy' robot Schwartzenegger of the *Terminator* series). We have the boy robot of Spielberg's *A.I.* (2001) who rivals the real boy for the love of his mother – and guess what, for a while he wins. What do we make of a mother who bonds with the robot-child whilst her own son is temporarily put on ice (literally in the hope that a cure can be found for his congenital disease)? Here the robot exposes just how untrustworthy a mother can be.

This rather makes the point that science fiction is about a projection of man's (sic) worst fears in relation to science and the future it holds for us. But it is also of course about man's fear of his own death – hence the drive to supplant the womb and create life himself (or life-like robots). The fear is too that we cannot control that technology intrinsically for what it is (even as we conveniently forget that we forged it) just as much as we fear those who believe they do have control over that technology (heads of state, scientists) for we do not necessarily perceive them as being the wisest people to have that control. In reality, then, sci-fi is often the expression of a deep

malaise we feel about the present but which we disguise as some sort of future-imperfect or hide under the wrappings of a futuristic imaginary moment or world. And of course the way in which we can be made to feel better about this malaise is through the destruction of that futuristic world – whatever its shape (hence the horror felt by Charlton Heston, at the end of *Planet of the Apes*, when he realizes that the world he thought was alien was in fact his own, his sci-fi trajectory has not brought him relief, quite the opposite).

The science-fiction film, then, *is* politically motivated but for the most part not in a challenging sense. In general, the genre functions to assert the status quo (destroying the enemy, getting home to safety, etc.). Its ideological effects are mostly (albeit not exclusively) hegemonic. Sadly, because technology *should* be questioned and attitudes to outsiders *should* come under scrutiny. But this is rare, as a quick gloss over the three main categories of films discussed below will show. The three types within this genre are: space-flight, alien invaders, futuristic societies. Lang's *Metropolis* is the prototype of this last category. But it also set the agenda for a critique of futuristic urban spaces by challenging the 1920s **modernist** belief in technological progress as a source of social change – a challenge still apparent in Jean-Luc Godard's *Alphaville* (1965), Ridley Scott's *Blade Runner* (1982) and Luc Besson's *The Fifth Element* (1997). Space-flight films, on the other hand, have traditionally devoted more energy to exposing the virtuosities of film technology and as such have functioned as a vehicle for prowess (in real terms for the film industry, and **metaphorically** for the space industry) until the arrival of Kubrick's 1968 film *2001*, which placed grave question marks on man's faith in and assumed superiority over technology. Finally, alien invader films, because they are probably the most prolific of the three categories and, arguably, the most conservative – in that they point at otherness as threatening to life and/or social mores – represent the most 'worrying' category of all with their innate potential for misogyny, racism and nationalistic chauvinism.

*see also*: **genre**

For further reading see Brosnan, 1991; Bukatman, 1993; Featherstone and Burrows, 1995; Hardy *et al.*, 1996; Jancovich, 1996; King and Krzywinska, 2000; Kuhn, 1990 and 1999; Sobchack, 1993; Telotte 1999.

## SCOPOPHILIA/SCOPIC DRIVE/VISUAL PLEASURE

Literally, the desire to see. Sigmund Freud used the term scopic drive to refer to the infant's libidinal drive to pleasurable viewing. As such, it is closely attached to the mirror phase and the primal scene. In Lacanian **psychoanalysis** the mirror phase refers to the moment of recognition by the male child of his difference from his mother. And the primal scene, first identified by Freud, refers to the moment when the male child, unseen by his parents, views them copulating. In psychoanalytic film theory (in the 1970s) scopophilia was adapted to elucidate the unconscious processes at work when the **spectator** views the screen. This spectator-screen analysis revealed that a double phenomenon occurs: first, cinema constructs the spectator as **subject** (the beholder of the gaze – that is, at the moment of the mirror phase); second, it establishes the desire to look (the drive to pleasurable viewing – that is, at the moment of the primal scene). Thus, as Metz (1975) stated, at each film viewing there occurs a re-enactment of the unconscious processes involved in the acquisition of sexual difference and, simultaneously, a **voyeuristic** positioning of the spectator (the viewer watches unseen in a darkened room or theatre).

At this juncture (early 1970s), the meaning of the mirror stage (fear of castration at the sight of sexual difference with the mother) and the implications of scopophilia for masculine erotic desire and the male **fetishizing** gaze were never brought into question. This would not occur until the mid-1970s, when the issue of **gendered** spectatorship finally got addressed, first by Laura Mulvey (1975), then by other feminist critics. They developed a theory to describe the pleasure derived from the gaze (usually male) of the character whose point of view it is within the film and, also, the pleasure derived by the spectator gazing upon the female body (whether nude or not). This gaze fixes the woman and in so doing fetishizes her, makes her the object not subject of desire. It fixes her, attributes meanings to her that are derived from another (male) perception or reading of the female bodily text. To this effect the woman has no **agency**.

Cinema functions through its **codes** to construct the way in which woman is to be looked at, starting with the normally male point of view within the film. The source of pleasure offered by that point of view to the male spectator (through identification) is clear. What, however, of the female spectator? Mulvey argues that for her to derive pleasure she must adopt the masculine point of view. Later feminist critics (Doane, 1982) nuance this masculinization of the female spectator, arguing that there are two viewing places: that of

the female masochist identifying with the passive female character and that of the transvestite identifying with the active male protagonist or hero. Later still, Bergstrom (1985), Studlar (1985) and Modleski (1988) propose positioning the female spectator bisexually. In this position she can identify with the female character's predicament caught within socio-economic and sexual structures that make her 'victim'. But this identification can then lead to a regendered position that allows for a critique of such structures to take place.

*see also*: **gaze**

For further discussion see **feminist film theory**, **spectatorship** and **suture**.

## SEMIOLOGY/SEMIOTICS/SIGN AND SIGNIFICATION

Semiology was a term coined by the Swiss linguistician Ferdinand de Saussure, in his lecture series on structural linguistics (1907–11), to refer to the study of signs within society, which he believed should be possible thanks to the application of structural linguistics to any sign system. Semiotics, coined a little earlier by the American philospher C. S. Peirce, is the term that has most currency in English speaking countries and also refers to the study of signs. However, in general, the term semiotics refers more to Saussure's theories than to Peirce's. And since Saussure's theories have had the greater impact to date in film theory we will limit this discussion to his (those interested in the adoption of Peirce's theories should see Wollen, 1972).

Saussure's structural linguistic theories, which were to remain 'unknown' until Roland Barthes brought them into the limelight in the late 1950s (in his book *Mythologies*, 1957), gave birth to a new theoretical system known as **structuralism**. In his *Cours de linguistique générale* (published posthumously in 1915) Saussure set out the base paradigm by which all language could be ordered and understood. The base paradigm, *langue/parole*, was intended as a function that could simultaneously address the profound universal structures of language (*langue*) and its manifestation in different cultures (*parole*). Saussure made the vital point that the governing conventions in relation to this sign system are very arbitrary and that there is no necessary correlation between the word (the signifier) and the object or idea being designated (the signified). This arbitrariness is manifest in the differences between languages. It is also this arbitrary relationship between sig-

nifier and signified which makes it possible for this linguistic system to function as a general science of signs – meaning that it can address other sign systems, can examine other sign systems as operating like a language. Just to clarify the meaning here: semiotics, in that it studies the social production of meaning through linguistic sign systems, stresses that language as a cultural production is societally, not individually, bound. Given that there are social or cultural productions *other than language* which produce meanings (for example sport, games), that is there are other sign systems, semiotics became a useful tool with which to analyse the process of meaning production in such sign systems as literature, cinema, television and advertising and, ultimately, other forms of popular culture (pop songs, dress-codes and so on). Barthes (1957), for example, used semiotics to examine popular cultural artefacts of the 1950s and the language of mass culture.

Saussure broke new territory in the study of language which, until his new approach, had been limited to philology, that is, to how language has evolved rather than to how language works, produces meaning, which is what interested Saussure. Meaning, he argued, could not exist independently from a system which, in the case of language, meant *langue* (that which *can* be uttered) and *parole* (that which *is* uttered). Language functions as a system of signs but not in a simplistic one-to-one relation (that is, language does not acquire meaning by referring to things). According to Saussure the linguistic sign was not a name that could be attached to an object but a composite of signifier and signified (word and concept). Because it is not a case of a one-to-one correspondence, language does not therefore reflect reality. Rather, language becomes a signifying system that sets 'reality' before the ears. It constitutes, **mediates** reality and as such has an **ideological** function. It is not **transparence** that it signifies, but **myth**. And it is this latter point (actually refined by Lacan) along with one other crucial one that made semiotics – especially in its structuralist formation – a fertile theoretical field to be worked by film theorists. The other crucial point is that semiotics reopened the debate around cinema as language (a debate initiated in the 1920s but closed or shut out by the *Cahiers du cinéma* group's polemical writings privileging the **auteur** as producer of meaning). Although cinema could not, in the final analysis, be seen as analogous to the base *langue/parole* paradigm, it was none the less a sign system that produced meaning, and in that respect could, like all other social or cultural productions, be seen as a language (see discussion of Metz's work in this context under **structuralism**).

Semiotics analyses the structural relations, within a system, that function to produce meaning. Signs can be understood only in relation to other signs within the system, and this occurs, in the first instance, in two ways. A sign derives meaning simultaneously by what it is not and by what it is in combination with. Saussure referred to paradigmatic and syntagmatic axes to explain this concept. The paradigmatic axis is vertically connected to the horizontal, syntagmatic axis. The former refers to the choices available, to the possible substitutes (thereby pointing to what the sign is not – man not woman, boy, girl; cat not hat, mat). The latter refers to the combination of elements actually present and how that combination functions as a signifying chain to produce meaning (the cat sat on the mat, the boy sat on the mat). In this respect meaning is produced out of differences (by what is present in relation to what is absent). A second way by which signs produce meaning is in relation to their referential reality. The term Saussure used for this concept was signification. Although Saussure had identified the concept, it was Barthes (1957) who developed it more fully in his analysis of the way signs work in culture. Within what he terms the semiological system, Barthes identifies two orders of signification, **denotation and connotation**, which in turn produce a third – ideology (actually, although Barthes identifies this last order, it is Hartley (1982: 217) who suggests calling it the third). At the first level is denotation: a simple first order of meaning, the surface literal meaning. At the second level, signs operate in two ways: as connotative agents and as mythmakers. This second order of signification occurs when the first order meets the values and **discourses** of the culture (1982: 215). Connotation, as the word implies, means all the associative and evaluative meanings attributed to the sign by the culture or the person involved in using it – and as such is always sensitive to context. Myth is the way in which we are enabled to understand the culture in which we find ourselves. At this level of signification, signs activate myths, provide cultural meaning.

By way of illustration let us take a photograph of Marilyn Monroe. At the denotative level this is a photograph of the movie star Marilyn Monroe. At a connotative level we associate this photograph with Marilyn Monroe's star qualities of glamour, **sexuality**, beauty – if this is an early photograph – but also with her depression, drug-taking and untimely death if it is one of her last photographs. At a mythic level we understand this sign as activating the myth of **Hollywood**: the dream factory that produces glamour in the form of the **stars** it

constructs, but also the dream machine that can crush them – all with a view to profit and expediency.

This second order of signification reflects subjective responses but ones which can only be motivated by the fact that they are shared by the community of a particular culture, a sharing that Fiske and Hartley (1978: 46) refer to as intersubjectiviry. This intersubjectiviry works in two ways and it is in this respect that we can see the third order of signification coming into operation: ideology. 'This intersubjectiviry is culturally determined' (1978: 46). Thus on the one hand our individual response is affected or influenced *by* the culture in which we find ourselves and, on the other, that response signifies our appertaining *to* that culture. This dynamic is a prime way in which ideology functions. Ideology inserts itself at the interface between language and political organization and as such is the discourse that invests a culture (nation) with meaning. Louis Althusser (1984: 37) – echoing Gramsci (Althusser is quoted rather than Gramsci because of his influence on film theory during the 1960s and 1970s) – makes the point that ideology is not just a case of a controlling few imposing an interpretation of the nation upon the subjects of the state, but that in ideology the subjects also represent to themselves 'their relation to those conditions of existence which is represented to them there'. In other words, they make ideology have meaning by colluding with it and by acting according to it because of the reassuring nature of national identity or cultural membership. To return to our earlier example, the photograph of Marilyn Monroe and its ideological function, the reading we now get is as follows: the film industry as exemplified by Hollywood is a powerful, rich, organized industry, in which one can succeed only by conforming to the preordained role assigned to one. Deviancy (booze, drugs or sexuality) will not be tolerated. In other words, Hollywood is about reproducing the institution, culture or ideology of the White middle-class United States to which all should aspire, or, if they do not, they will perish. Almost a Taylorization of national identity (a compartmentalized assembly-line approach)!

Semiotics in film theory, then, by opening up filmic texts in the way illustrated above, showing how they produce meaning, has served among other things to uncover, make explicit the **naturalization** process of realist, mainstream cinema. Latterly as it has become inflected with other theories (**psychoanalysis**, Marxism, feminism) it has broadened its frame of reference not just to address the filmic text as producer of meaning but to examine **spectator**-positioning and the spectator's role in meaning-production. By unravelling how meaning

is produced, other questions can be raised such as the way in which the inscription of sexual difference in the images is 'taken for granted'.

*see also*: **structuralism**

For fuller analyses and greater examination of the evolution of the semiotic debate see Andrew, 1984; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988; Stam, 2000; Stam *et al.*, 1992. In terms of applying the theory see Fiske and Hartley, 1978 (although it addresses television and not film it is a very clear text for initiates to semiotics); for analyses of representation and sexuality see De Lauretis, 1984; Kuhn, 1985.

## SEQUENCING/SEQUENCE

A sequence is normally composed of scenes, all relating to the same logical unit of meaning. For this reason, the length of a sequence is equivalent to the visual and/or **narrative** continuity of an episode within a film (sequences can be likened to chapters within a novel). It is useful when studying film to be able to segment out a film into sequences since this gives the student or **spectator** a sense of the formal structure of the film as well as the relations between the sequences. Since film is (notionally) constructed around the Formula of repetition/opposition/variation, to be able to perceive this structurally gives a first reading to the filmic text. On average a film has twenty-three or twenty-four sequences if it is a mainstream or **Hollywood** film; European cinema tends towards a lower number (eleven to eighteen). Traditionally the opening sequence of a film is composed of establishing **shots** to orientate the spectator safely, and in this respect the beginning of each sequence functions to reorientate the spectator (alternatively, the closing shot or comment in the previous sequence sets up what is to follow). The closing of a sequence is marked by some form of transition: a **fade**, **wipe**, iris or a **cut**. (In an 'iris' the image is phased in or out in imitation of the opening and shutting of the camera lens.) These transitions serve to make the film easy to read. Conversely, **jump cuts** or **unmatched shots** are two procedures used to counter the safe orientation provided by traditional transition markers. These transitions are like punctuation marks, so they will also be found within sequences. The fade and iris are soft transitions. Wipes and cuts are hard. The former are more readily associated with earlier cinema, although contemporary films do make use of them (sometimes as a homage to the

cinema heritage). These soft transition markers can serve to denote a lapse in time, states of mind and the subconscious, so they are less likely to be found within a sequence but rather between sequences. Of the hard transitions, the wipe is hardly ever seen nowadays. A cut between sequences can imply a direct link between the two, in either narrative or chronology. Cuts within a sequence serve to give a rhythm (fast or slow, depending on how frequently they are used) and also allow relations of space to become clear to the spectator (so long as the various degree rules are 'obeyed': see **30-degree rule** and **180-degree rule**). If cuts are not used conventionally within a sequence they point to the idea of fragmentation or separation.

*see also*: **editing/montage**

For more detail on how sequencing functions throughout a film, see **editing**.

## SETTING

Part of the total concept of **mise-en-scène**. The setting is literally the location where the action takes place, and it can be artificially constructed (as in studio sets) or natural (what is also termed location shooting). Certain film movements are readily associated with a type of setting: the distorted settings of **German expressionist** films, the dimly lit rainwashed streets and empty cold interiors in **films noir**, the natural settings of Italy's cities and countryside in **Italian neo-realism** films.

## SEXUALITY

Cinema is one structure among others that constructs sexuality. Until the impact of **feminist theory** (1970s) this was 'normally' taken to mean White male sexuality. This sexuality was constructed as heteronormative and active as opposed (in the first instance) to White female passivity. That is, women were perceived or constructed as sex symbols, sex goddesses (objects to be desired, rather than desiring **subjects**). Equally, sexuality was 'normally' taken to refer to heterosexuality and, although this pattern still dominates, a few gaps have opened for representations of 'otherness' (albeit

limited). Clearly, sexuality and **gender**, generally speaking, are strongly coded by film **genre**. For example, the sexuality of characters in a **musical** differs from that of characters in a **Western**. At the very least the hero of the musical is looking to settle down and marry. His sexually desiring body action is, meantime, displaced into song and dance routines – in duets of course (!). The hero of the Western, however, will satisfy himself with a brief affair and then move on – much of his sexually desiring body action getting displaced into 'shootin' 'n' fightin''. Needless to say, it is when the coding seems to slip that it becomes really interesting.

Debate around sexuality in film studies came about largely as a result of feminist theorizing on structures in general which position or construct woman as other in patriarchal society (see **scopophilia**). Claire Johnston (1976: 209) makes the point that while the earliest stereotyping of woman in the cinema (as vamp or virgin) has changed very little, the image of man has been privileged with greater differentiation. Early silent cinema required fixed **iconography** for audiences to follow the narrative, so characters were stereotyped (villain, hero, etc. for men; fallen woman, victim, etc. for women). But once cinema **codes** became familiar it was felt that this stereotyping of the male contravened 'the notion of character' and should be opened up to a broader more complex characterization (1976: 209). In this respect, Johnston argues, **Hollywood**'s conventions around sexuality reflect dominant (by which she means patriarchal) **ideology** that stereotypes men as active and therefore part of history and women as passive and therefore 'ahistoric and eternal' (1976: 209). Thus, within mainstream cinema especially, but not exclusively, stereotyping is not questioned. Masculinity and femininity as constructs were 'taken for granted' and their representation was not questioned – that is until the 1970s.

Annette Kuhn (1985: 5) acknowledges the usefulness of two French philosophers thinking on representation: Barthes' (1957) **semiotic** and **structuralist** readings of specific **images** and Althusser's (1984) work on ideology (the way it functions to position the subject). However, she also points to their 'gender-blindness', to which we should add colour-blindness. The feminist and Black movement and cultural studies debates of the 1970s and 1980s, as well as the incorporation of **psychoanalysis** into theory in general and film studies in particular, have meant that the issue of sexuality has broadened from its somewhat narrow (White) male/female binary opposition. Discussions around **spectatorship**, which is not a single entity but composed of so many dif-

ferent 'types' (male, female, Black, Asian, White, lesbian, gay and so on) and classes, have elucidated the limitations of this binary construct because pleasure in viewing can be derived without reference to this binary paradigm's implicit White heterosexuality. This means that representation is not limited to a reproduction of the patriarchal order – it does that but it does more. It reproduces the dominant ideology but it also reflects those who are inside and those who are outside the culture or **hegemony** as well as the shifting relationships, depending on how close to the centre of the culture they are. For example, in mainstream Hollywood and Western cinema, the White female has more power than the Black female; and, generally speaking, she has more power than the Black male in terms of the **gaze** (imagine the threat that loss of the gaze could pose to White heteronormativity).

The following comments should serve by way of illustration of how the binary opposition paradigm functions in relation to sexuality within **classical narrative cinema**. Clearly, the central positioning of the White male as the site of truth and the natural assumption (or acceptance) of the predominance of the male point of view means that any other **subjectivity** is occluded. Therefore, White masculinity can be defined as more than just 'his sex'; femininity much less so – and if it is (that is, more than just her sex), it is usually transgressive or excessive (see **excess**). Woman becomes other or object to the male's subject – she is defined in relation to his centrality, his point of view. As such she is fixed as an object of his desire, but an object whose sexuality is also perceived by him as dangerous – and therefore to be punished or contained (through death – or its equivalent – or marriage, respectively).

From these early discussions of sexuality and power relations the debate on sexuality by the 1990s had evolved and come to be closely identified with gender (including cross-genderization and/or sexual disguise), the representation of sex and desire (heterosexuality, homosexuality, lesbianism, transvestism, transsexualism), including its referent (male, female, **class**, race, age, cross-dressing), the historical and social contexts, and the relationship of the spectator to that representation. This does not mean, however, that there have been great sea-changes in terms of representation in mainstream cinema. The notion of fixity mentioned above also applies to others whose subjectivity is denied by the dominant practice of centring the White male. Queer sexuality is one – gays and lesbians on the whole have a hard time being seen or given a space in which to be understood. Black sexuality is another key victim of this foregrounding of

the White male sexual imperative. We see very few Black couples, let alone inter-racial ones. Presently the Black female has no major role in Western mainstream cinema and the Black male, although more readily present, can hardly be said to be on-screen in a widespread way.

In many mainstream film narratives, racial difference, especially in the person of the Black male, is linked with heightened sexuality and thereby connected to sexual danger, not just for the White female but also for the White male. He is perceived as other, as an object of fascination (with colour or potency) but also of danger. Oddly, however, he is positioned much like the White woman and as such must be contained or punished. The origins of this **fetishization** of the Black male are not, however, the same as those surrounding the White female. They are fixed, first, in colonizing history and then slave history – what Jane Gaines (1988) refers to as 'racial patriarchy' – a different order of otherness. And it is in relation to those histories that the Black male is punished or contained. Thus, mainstream cinema constructs Black male sexuality against a different set of histories from that of the White male. But these histories are those emanating from White hegemony – the White version of colonial and slave histories. So the Black male is doubly fixed: as other by the White male gaze and as 'less' by White male history. This ideological construct is exemplified by the film industry which, in its **mise-en-scène** of male blackness, pulls on those histories to construct him. D. W Griffith's *Birth of a Nation* (1915) is the very first film to do this, but Steven Spielberg's *The Color Purple* (1986) also plays on the myth of the bestiality of the lustful Black man. Equally, Sidney Poitier's films of the 1950s and 1960s, which might seem to address blackness in an 'enlightened' manner, are just as problematic. Poitier's image of urbane civility does less to counter images of Black male sexual potency and more to point to the civilizing process of American education (read: 'he (Black Sidney Poitier) can be "just like us"'). Nor has that myth disappeared. The depiction of Blacks playing by White rules and losing still persists (for example, the Eddie Murphy films; *A Soldier's Story*, Norman Jewison, 1984). It is true that certain, more **auteur**-based film-makers, have provided Black actors with stronger more complex roles and a current star who stands out in this regard is Denzel Washington (from *Philadelphia*, 1993, to *The Manchurian Candidate*, 2004 – both by Jonathan Demme). Furthermore, this mythification and reification of blackness has, since the 1990s, begun to be challenged and countered by **Black**

**cinema** (in the US and the UK). It is the case, though, that the representation of the Black woman and her sexuality has still a long way to start! Currently, within the West, it remains fairly stereotyped – if it is present at all. Very few contestatory voices are creeping in. Interestingly, although not that of Black women, there is now a cinema, coming from North Africa, which presents challenging questions about female sexual identity within a very male-dominated Arab world. The Arab female gets to speak of herself in films such as Yasmina Benguigui's *Inch'allah dimanche/Long Live Sunday* (2001), Moufida Tlatli's *Silence des Palais/Silence of the Palaces* (1994) and *La Saison des hommes/The Season of Men* (1999).

Since the late 1990s, within the European context (in terms of production) there have been some challenging insights into White female sexuality within more mainstream cinema. Some have been more positive than others it has to be said. Woman's need for sex to feel alive is the subject matter of Patrice Chéreau's *Intimacy* (2000). Whilst his film foregrounds sex in a graphic and detailed manner (with 35 minutes of explicit sex), it is the erotic value of this sex for the woman that we are made aware of in particular (even though in the original text by Hanif Kureshi the focus is far more on the male's mid-life crisis). Catherine Breillat's *Romance* (1999) and *A ma soeur* (2001) expose the traps of conventional heterosexual sexuality and femininity. Brutal though their encounters with sex are, her female protagonists refuse to be victims. Sadly the same cannot be said for Jane Campion's exploration of female masochism in *In the Cut* (2003, based in New York, but UK/New Zealand produced). And, finally, female sado-masochism gets an unhealthy airing in Virginie Depsentes' and Coralie Trinh Thi's rape-revenge film *Baise-moi* (2000). Whatever we might feel about these films, they are more than sexploitation, because they open up more widely than ever before the concept of the complexity of White female sexuality and fantasy. Certain ideological constructs – such as those discussed at the beginning of this entry (wherein female sexuality was overridden in favour of male sexuality) – should now no longer be possible, removed as they so obviously are from the truth of the matter. However Hollywood regularly persists with fixity. And if we despair of how long it will take mainstream cinema to give fuller representation to women, imagine how much longer still it is going to take for women of colour. And what of mixed-race relationships? How little we ever see of them. And, finally, what of the representation of still other sexualities that are as yet singularly unvoiced?

*see also*: **queer**, **stereotype**

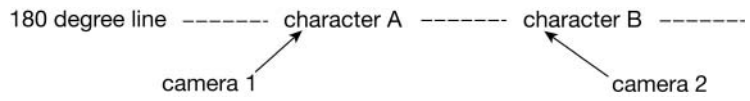
For further reading see Dyer, 1986; Grosz and Probyn, 1995; Kuhn, 1985; Manatu, 2003; *Screen*, 1988 and 1992.

## SHOT/REVERSE-ANGLE SHOT

Also known as shot/counter-shot, this is most commonly used for dialogue. Two alternating shots, generally in medium close up, frame in turn the two speakers. Normally these shots are taken from the point of view of the person listening – as the diagram below should make clear.

In the clearest instances the shoulder and profile of the listener are just distinguishable in the foreground of the frame and the camera is focused on the face of the speaker. But the **spectator** can assume the presence of both interlocutors even if the listener is not **foregrounded** because of the series of reverse angles. This type of shot follows visual logic (character *A* is framed as she or he speaks – cut to character *B* framed as she or he speaks). Alternatively, but less usually, the camera can frame the listener (particularly if she or he is under threat). In these two types of reverse-angle shots the position of the spectator shifts. In the first type the spectator becomes the privileged viewer of the **image** in so far as the shot permits identification with the position of the listener (the spectator assumes the position of the one being talked to). In the second, the spectator can be far more ambiguously positioned since he or she assumes the position of the speaker and, in this respect, has more power than is possible (after all, the spectator cannot actually speak into the film). The result can be to make the spectator aware of the collusionary role he or she plays as voyeur of the image. This creates a distancing effect (see **scopophilia**).

*see also*: **180-degree rule**, **suture**



## SHOTS

In terms of camera *distance* with respect to the object within the shot there are basically seven types of shots: extreme close-up, close-up, medium close-up, medium shot, medium long shot, long shot, extreme long shot or distance shot. In addition the terms *one-*, *two-* and *three-shots* are used to describe shots framing one, two or three people – usually in medium close-ups or medium shots.

*Close-up/extreme close-up (CU/ECU)* The subject framed by the camera fills the screen. Connotation can be of intimacy, of having access to the mind or thought processes (including the sub-conscious) of the character. These shots can be used to stress the importance of a particular character at a particular moment in a film or place her or him as central to the **narrative** by singling out the character in CU at the beginning of the film. It can signify the **star** exclusively (as in many **Hollywood** productions of the 1930s and 1940s). CUs often have a symbolic value. For example a character looking at her or his reflection in a mirror or in the water can have connotations of duplicity (what we see is not true) or death (as in the dream or **myth** of Narcissus). CUs can be used on objects and on parts of the body other than the face. In this instance they can designate imminent action (a hand picking up a knife, for example) and thereby create suspense. Or they can signify that an object will have an important role to play in the development of the narrative. Often these shots have a symbolic value, usually due to their recurrence during the film. How and where they recur is revealing not only of their importance but also of the direction or meaning of the narrative.

*Medium close-up (MCU)* Close-up of one or two (sometimes three) characters, generally framing the shoulders or chest and the head. The term can also be used when the camera frames the characters from the waist up (or down), provided the character is right to the forefront and fills the frame (otherwise this type of shot is a medium shot). An MCU of two or three characters can indicate a coming together, an intimacy, a certain solidarity. Conversely, if there is a series of two and one shots, these MCUs would suggest a complicity between two people against a third who is visually separate in another shot.

*Medium shot (MS)* Generally speaking, this shot frames a character from the waist, hips or knees up (or down). The camera is sufficiently distanced from the body for the character to be seen in

relation to her or his surroundings (in an apartment for example). Typically characters will occupy half to two-thirds of the frame. This shot is very commonly used in indoor sequences allowing for a visual signification of relationships between characters. Compare a two-shot MS and a series of separate one shots in MS of two people. The former suggests intimacy, the latter distance. The former shot could change in meaning to one of distance, however, if the two characters were separated by an object (a pillar, a table, even a telephone for example).

Visually this shot is more complex, more open in terms of its readability than the preceding ones. The characters can be observed in relation to different planes, background, middle ground and foreground, and it is the interrelatedness of these planes which also serves to produce a meaning.

*Medium long shot (MLS)* Halfway between a long and a medium shot. If this shot frames a character then the whole body will be in view towards the middle ground of the shot. A quite open shot in terms of readability, showing considerably more of the surroundings in relation to the character(s).

*Long shot (LS)* Subject or characters are at some distance from the camera; they are seen in full in their surrounding environment.

*Extreme long shot (ELS)* The subject or characters are very much to the background of the shot. Surroundings now have as much if not more importance, especially if the shot is in high-angle.

A first way to consider these shots is to say that a shot lends itself to a greater or lesser readability dependent on its type or length. As the camera moves further away from the main subject (whether person or object) the visual field lends itself to an increasingly more complex reading – in terms of the relationship between the main subject and the décor there is more for the **spectator**'s eye to read or decode. This means that the closer up the shot the more the spectator's eye is directed by the camera to a specified reading. André Bazin (1967: 23ff.), in his discussion of depth of field, greatly favoured what he termed the objective **realism** of the **deep focus** shot – generally found in a MLS or LS. Shots, therefore, in and of themselves have a subjective or objective value: the closer the shot, the more subjective its value, the more the meaning is inscribed from within the shot; conversely, the longer the distance of the shot the more objective its value, the greater the participation of the spectator or reader in the inscription of meaning. To avoid confusion with terms such as *sub-*

*jective camera* it is better to think and speak of shots as being more or less open (MS to ELS) or closed (MCU to ECU) to a reading.

Other factors influence the readability of a shot – primarily the angle of a shot. A high or low camera angle can denaturalize a shot or reinforce its symbolic value. Take, for example, an ELS that is shot at a high angle. This automatically suggests the presence of someone looking, thus the shot is implicitly a point of view shot. In this way some of the objective value or openness of that shot (which it would retain if angled horizontally at 90 degrees) is taken away, the shot is no longer 'naturally' objective. The shot is still open to a greater reading than a CU, however; although the angle imposes a **preferred reading** (someone is looking down from on high). In terms of illustrating what is meant by reinforcing symbolic value, the contrastive examples of a low- and high-angle CU can serve here. The former type of shot will distort the object within the frame, rendering it uglier, more menacing, more derisory; conversely, when a high-angle CU is used, the object can appear more vulnerable, desirable.

These are of course preferred readings or readings that adhere to the **codes and conventions** of traditional cinema. Film-makers do not necessarily abide by these rules, however. And it is in their 'breaking', bending or subverting of cinematic rules regarding film-making in general (shots, editing, **soundtrack**, etc.) that their films can be said to have their individual hallmarks.

*see also*: **image**, **match cut**, **jump cuts**, **shot/reverse-angle shot**, **unmatched shots**

## SOCIAL REALISM

Although it is argued that the advent of **sound**, in 1927, brought about a greater realism in film, the realist tradition was in evidence in cinema's earliest productions, as for example in France whose cinematic practices were very much inflected by literary adaptations, especially those of the socio-realist novelist Emile Zola. Social realism in film refers, as it does in literature, to a depiction of social and economic circumstances within which particular echelons of society (usually the working and middle **classes**) find themselves. The earliest examples of this tradition in sound cinema, however, date back to 1930s Britain and John Grierson. It is his work in **documentary** that is generally credited with the introduction of the social-realist

aesthetic into **narrative** cinema. Grierson, who was primarily a producer and theorist, held that documentary should be in the service of education and propaganda for the greater social good – with an insistence on quality and good taste. Grierson surrounded himself with a group of like-minded film-makers and organized a loosely formed documentary movement that was to impact on several film movements after the Second World War. There were three basic principles to which the group adhered. First, cinema should be taking slice-of-life-reality rather than artificially constructing it. Second, everyday ordinary people should act themselves in real settings. Finally, cinema should strive to catch the spontaneous or authentic gesture and uncontrived or natural speech (see Armes, 1974).

Although there are examples during the 1930s of individual films that exemplify these principles (such as Jean Renoir's *Toni*, 1934; Carol Reed's *The Stars Look Down*, 1939), it was after the war that actual socio-realist film movements could be discerned. There are three movements in cinema's history that in some way are indebted to this social realist aesthetic – all of which produced what have been termed social-problem films. First, the **Italian neo-realism** movement of the late 1940s. Then the **Free cinema Britain** and the **British New Wave** of the late 1950s; and, finally, the loosely formed **cinéma-vérité** group in France during the 1960s.

## SOUND/SOUNDTRACK

Before the soundtrack was introduced to cinema audiences in 1927, film was accompanied by a musical score played by an orchestra or an organist or pianist (depending on the luxury and means of the cinema theatre). Although sound on film dates from 1927, the technology for putting it in place pre-dates the 1920s by at least a decade if not more (depending on which film historian you read). At that time there was no sense of urgency to go to the costly lengths of implementing a sound system, since cinema was proving sufficiently profitable in its silent mode, France, Germany and the United States had been competing almost since the beginnings of the film industry to synchronize sound and **image**. The first breakthrough occurred in 1911 when the Frenchman Eugène Lauste, working for the American Edison, demonstrated the first sound-on-film movie. This particular system was greatly improved in 1918 by German technicians. Systems of sound on disc synchronized to film, Phonofilm and Vitaphone, were but the latest perfections in the mid-1920s of work

started in 1900. Gaumont had been working on a series of processes of synchronized sound since 1902, only to perfect it by 1928. And so on. In the end it would be the American Western Electric and the German Tobis-Klangfilm which, between them, carved up the sound market.

*The* moment in sound is Alan Crosland's *The Jazz Singer* (starring Al Jolson) produced by Warner Brothers in 1927. Competition and economic exigencies represent a first reason for the launch of sound at this time. Warner Brothers was desperately seeking a way to enter into stronger competition with the then four majors (see **studio system**). The launching of this film shot Warner into the status of a major. In terms of economy of scale, US **audiences** were dropping – because of the impact of the radio and access to other leisure activities – at the very moment that the film industry had invested massively in luxury grand film theatres. Sound was intended to attract the **spectator** back. Sound also made possible a bringing together into one unit elements of vaudeville with filmed images which previously had been two disparate entertainment forms in silent cinema spectacles. In the case of **Hollywood** this produced a new **genre** – the **musical**. However, it also put an end to other generic types, such as the gestural, slapstick **comedy** associated with Chaplin and Keaton. Conversely, it created a new type of comedy: the fast repartee comedy with snappy dialogue (as with the Marx brothers and W. C. Fields) and screwball comedy – usually based on the 'battle between the sexes' with stars like Clark Gable and Cary Grant pitted against the likes of Claudette Colbert, Katharine Hepburn and Rosalind Russell (as in *It Happened one Night*, Frank Capra, 1934; *Bringing up Baby, His Girl Friday*, both by Howard Hawks, 1938 and 1939).

The consequences of sound for cinema were not just generic. It affected the careers of actors. It also impacted on the **narrative**. When the spoken element came in, some actors did not survive and went out because their voice did not match up to their image (this was particularly the case for Hollywood actors); other actors with theatre experience left the boards and ascended on to the silver screen. As for narrative, prior to the soundtrack, sound had not been perceived as necessary nor as a crucial element to the registering of authentic reality. Now sound cinema was touted as being closer to reality. Since there could be dialogue, it was argued, there was greater space for social and psychological reality within the narrative. In the event, all critics (whether for or against sound) had to admit that once sound was improved (which it was by the early 1930s) it did

permit narrative or **diegetic** economies – for example, dialogue could move the film's narrative along more speedily than inter-titles. In its earliest days, however, sound was more of a regressive step for cinema because it severely limited camera movement. The new cameras fitted with sound recording systems were heavy bulky affairs and could not be moved around. Similarly, at first, a single microphone was the only means of recording sound, so actors could not move around (for an amusing send-up of the beginnings of sound see *Singin' in the Rain*, Stanley Donen, 1952). In both instances visual **realism** was lost. If this problem was quickly resolved, thanks to technical improvements, sound, as a result of these same improvements, reduced options. Renewed camera mobility and the use of the boom microphone or indeed post-synchronization of the soundtrack gave visual and aural depth to film, but improvised shooting and experimentation decreased. The consequences of sound for the film industry were that it became more labour-intensive (requiring dialoguists and sound engineers): a costly affair that was carefully regimented. The standardization of equipment – due to the cartel on the technology (predominantly Western and Tobis) – meant a standardization in production practices.

From the 1930s until the early 1950s sound was single-track and was recorded optically. Optical sound is a system whereby light, modulated by sound waves, is recorded on to film. In the 1950s magnetic tape was used to record sound which was then transferred on to the optical track of the film, and, as with the earlier system, sound was generated by the film passing through a light sensor as it was being projected (a process still used today). This evolution was a natural response to the needs of widescreen cinema: with such a large screen, stereophonic sound was clearly essential.

In the 1970s Dolby sound, a four-track stereo system that also reduces background noise, replaced the earlier stereophonic system. This four-track stereo system is made up of more than fifteen separate tracks that are used to record dialogue, sound effects and music. These tracks are then transferred on to the optical track of the film (the magnetic track could be placed on to film but the cost of re-equipping film theatres would be too high). Dolby-surround, as its name implies, is a system whereby sound can be separated out and reproduced through speakers from different parts of the theatre. Currently, in the pursuit of ever greater fidelity and purity, digital sound is being exploited in post-production. This is a system whereby sound is stored in a computer (through numbers so the sound stays clean!) and can be recreated in any combination of those

numbers. Its greater potential for fragmentation means that sound can be even more than surround. It can be separated out far more clearly still and dotted more purely around the cinema theatre. Thus a single sound (say of a footstep) can be selected out and played through a speaker directed behind the spectators' head – but in such a way as it feels 'right behind you' and therefore even more scary (for fuller details on this new technology, see Sonnenschein, 2001).

Until these two most recent developments, sound was very closely related to the image. Films today that are not equipped with Dolby or Digital sound still create the same illusion. And the *audience* remains in collusion with this relationship. We pretend, accept that it comes straight from the screen; if it is not in synch we notice it and do not particularly like this instance of sound drawing attention to itself and pointing to the fact that what we are seeing up on screen is an illusion. Now, however, that Dolby sound is used in much of mainstream cinema, we do not object to sound drawing attention to itself (especially the wrap-around version). Its realism is not even questioned, so the collusion continues – almost in reverse. That is, we collude with its artificiality and purity.

There is a scarcity of theoretical writings around the **ideological** effects of sound, almost as if the naturalizing effect has passed unheard (but see Altman, 1992; Chion, 1982 and 1985; Lastra, 2000; and *Screen*, 1984). However, over the span of sound cinema a few radical film-makers have addressed the issue. Among radical film-makers who have attempted to show the importance of the soundtrack in relation to the image, we can cite Jean-Luc Godard's work during the 1960s (for example *Le Mépris*, 1963; *Pierrot le fou*, 1965). In his **deconstruction** of the two elements into two separate entities he showed the ideological problems inherent in this invisibilization process whereby image and sound are seen as one and as representing reality.

For a very full but succinct review of the development of sound technology and film see Konigsberg, 1993: 331ff.; see also Abel and Altman, 2001; Altman, 1992; Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 298ff.; Chion, 1985; Lastra, 2000; Sonnenschein, 2001.

## SOVIET CINEMA/SCHOOL

This term refers to a loosely knit group of film-makers who, after the Bolshevik Revolution of October 1917, experimented with film style and technique. As a result of their work they had brought the

cinema of the Soviet Union to worldwide attention by the mid-1920s. This experimentation did not occur in isolation. The effect of the Revolution was to bring in its wake experimental foment in all branches of the arts. The beginnings of this experimentation date back to the Russian **futurists** (1912) who adopted an experimental and innovatory approach to language. This was to filter through into the post-Revolutionary movement of constructivism. The pre-Revolutionary futurist movement, influenced as it was by the abstract forms of European **modernist** art, believed in technique and the evacuation of fixed meanings. After the Revolution, the constructivists, seeing in technology the huge potential for change, advocated a new order in which art, science and technology in tandem with workers, artists and intellectuals would combine and work together to produce a new vision of society. Art and labour were seen as one. This notion of art as production was eagerly embraced by the newly emergent Soviet cinema of the 1920s and admirably suited the political exigencies of post-Revolutionary Russia, which needed the propagandizing effect of cinema to spread the message that all workers were pulling together to secure the national identity of the new Soviet Republics.

Lenin and Stalin were well aware of cinema's propagandistic and educative value. This was particularly the case with silent film, which was the ideal visual medium to educate the masses, a great proportion of whom were illiterate and spoke in different dialects. The earliest example of this propagandistic move was during the 1915–21 civil war, when film-shows were delivered all around the country on what were called 'agit-trains'. Incidentally, it was in this area of production practices that many of the famous Soviet film-makers (such as Lev Kuleshov and Dziga Vertov) started their careers. The purpose of the film-shows was to consolidate communist power over the Soviet Republics by telling of the heroic proletarian struggle that made hardship worthwhile and the civil war worth winning for the Revolutionary cause. Trains went out into the country bringing with them **documentary** footage of the goings-on in the major cities, including the activities of the Bolshevik leader Lenin. Film-makers out in the country on location with these trains took footage of the peasants at work and the rural life in these times of great physical hardship. They then immediately developed this footage and screened it to the assembled audience of workers whom they had just filmed.

A second move to secure cinema in its **ideological** function was the nationalizing of the industry in 1919 and the establishment in that year of a State Film School headed by Vladimir Gardin. The two

most famous nationalized film studios were based in Moscow: Mosfilm and Mezhrabpom-Film. But at first the effects of nationalizing the industry were disastrous. Many of the previously independent producers left the country and took their equipment with them. In fact the industry did not gain any stability until 1922 when a central co-ordinating company was established: Gaskino, renamed Sovkino in 1925. By 1929 the industry had become such a tightly centralized structure that it was able to dictate the future trends of Soviet cinema. Indeed, in 1928 an All-Union Parry Congress on Film Questions decreed that films must eschew pure formalism and focus on content and socialist realism. The experimental wave that had brought Soviet cinema to the aesthetic forefront of world cinema gave way to the edicts of socialist realism: that is, to a representation of life as it *will* be. Congress decreed that Soviet film was to be a medium of communist enlightenment and committed to organizing the masses around social reconstruction. In effect this decree brought a slow end to Soviet montage cinema (see below).

But to return to the heydays of the Soviet cinema of the silent period (1924–29). Until 1924, apart from the *agitki* (the films shown on the agit-trains), documentary films and newsreel series (called *kino-pravda* – film-truth – beginning in 1922), production was at a very low level indeed, primarily because new film stock was virtually unobtainable (due to an export embargo imposed by the West but also to the hoarding of raw film stock by private production companies operating in Moscow and Petrograd who resisted nationalization). The *kino pravda* series was made possible by the effect of Lenin's New Economic Policy (1921) which permitted private companies to operate once more. Production companies released their stock and equipment and a few conventional feature films were also made as well as the state-endorsed newsreels. The situation was so parlous, with production at a very low level, that in 1922, Lenin sanctioned the importation of foreign films to help raise money for home production. In that year there were 278 foreign and 28 Soviet films. By 1924 however state production had risen to 69 and by 1926 reached 100, and in 1930 Soviet products outnumbered foreign imports. This figure lasted until 1933 when the effect of internal censorship under Stalin reduced the numbers once more to below the magical 100 figure (this figure was not reached again until 1956, 4 years after Stalin's death).

By 1924, the state-controlled Sovkino and its regional outlets in the various Soviet States had full monopoly over all aspects of the film industry. During this early period of a nationalized Soviet

cinema, new film-makers emerged eager to participate in and propagate the new revolutionary culture advocated by Lenin and Stalin. They were determined to produce an ideological cinema for the proletarian classes – one which de-individualized the actor (the proletarian classes would be the hero) and which relied upon collective authorship (see **auteur** entry). In 1924, Sergei Eisenstein and Lev Kuleshov established the Association of Revolutionary Cinematography (ARC) which included amongst others Dziga Vertov and (the woman film-maker) Esfir Shub. Over the years, however, different tendencies and indeed disagreements on what constituted a revolutionary cinema brought about a divergence of groups and practices. The most radical split came with Vertov who was a major campaigner against the new Soviet cinema fiction film (as produced by Kuleshov and Eisenstein). He left the ARC and established his own *Kinoki* group (the cine-eye group). His films are strongly in the constructivist vein, they are documentaries celebrating industrialization and the worker (see his radical documentary *Man with a Movie Camera*, 1929, which best exemplifies this ethos). Despite divergences, however, what all film-makers shared in common was a concept of a particular revolutionary film style. A style that is known as Soviet montage. How it came about makes for interesting reading.

The effects of the early hardship in the aftermath of the Revolution brought about this cinematic style that has henceforth been indelibly associated with Soviet cinema: montage cinema. Because film stock was in such short supply, the only way forward was to re-edit old films. Thus, in **1918,** the Moscow Film Committee established a special Re-Editing Department. Although Lev Kuleshov is credited as being the 'inventor' of Soviet montage, it was in fact the head of the State Film School, Vladimir Gardin who (in 1919) – basing his ideas on this economic necessity of re-editing – advocated montage as a fundamental practice of a new film aesthetics. The use of montage was seen as being in touch with the ideology of the Revolution (rapid and energetic change) and the aesthetics of constructivism (technology and labour as the producer of art). Kuleshov's experiments led the way in this so called new revolutionary cinema, closely followed by Sergei Eisenstein. Kuleshov's principle started from the idea that each **shot** is like a building block (a brick) and that each shot derives its meaning from its context (i.e. the shots placed around it). Thus if the context of a shot is changed, by placing it in a different sequence, then the whole meaning of the shot and the sequence changes. From this principle, Kuleshov developed the idea that juxtaposition must be inherent in all film **signs**. That is, a film

shot acquires its meaning in relation to the shots that come before and after it. Shots, like building blocks, acquire meaning when juxtaposed. The famous example taken from Kuleshov's experiments is where he juxtaposes several shots taken from different pieces of film which he then edited into a sequence. These shots comprised a close-up still shot of the actor Ivan Mozzhukhin (Mosjoukine) with three others (a plate of soup, a dead woman in her coffin and a child playing). The effect of the juxtaposition for the **spectator** is that the actor's face changes expression (which in essence it cannot since it is a still shot). In other experiments Kuleshov created what he terms 'creative geography' by splicing together bits of action taken from other films and re-editing them as one piece of uninterrupted action. In 1920, he assembled five separate bits of action and created an experiment he called *The Created Surface of the Earth* in which a man meets a woman (in Moscow), he points, they look off-we see a shot of the White House (in Washington), and then the last shot shows them ascending the steps. This creative geography through montage is one that will later influence Vertov's imagined city-scape of *Man with a Movie Camera*.

Eisenstein's view of montage was more radical than Kuleshov's. A committed Marxist, he came into film-making from engineering (which, it could be argued, makes him a natural ally with the principles of constructivism). For him, montage is based on the principle of collision and conflict – not just juxtaposition. Conflict occurs within the shot as much as between shots. Shots must collide creating a shock for the spectator (a montage of attractions was Eisenstein's term for this interaction between screen and spectator). To this effect, Eisenstein's shots were staged for maximum conflict (visually, emotionally and intellectually). Eisenstein was an advocate of intellectual montage. He saw the shot as the raw material which film-makers *and* the spectator use to construct meaning. For him, montage is a political aesthetics, a visual form of Marx's dialectical materialism. That is, he sees montage as possessing a dynamic of conflict that creates a third meaning whose relevance bears directly on the revolutionary history of Soviet Russia. This third image is the one that is synthesized by the spectator thus making him or her as much a producer of meaning as the film-maker.

Kuleshov's principle of montage had an enormous influence on contemporary film-makers, the most famous of whom are Sergei Eisenstein, Vsevolod Pudovkin and Alexander Dovzhenko. Some, those who formed the FEK group (the Factory of the Eccentric Actor), went on to develop, from Kuleshov's system of montage, the

principle of alienation (more readily associated with Bertolt Brecht). By placing objects or people in unfamiliar contexts, they sought to alienate the spectator and oblige her or him to reflect on the meaning of the **image** (see **distanciation**).

Kuleshov's other significant contribution to the new Soviet cinema was in the realm of acting. He introduced a new style. One that was distinct from theatre acting. Indeed, he discouraged the hiring of theatre-trained actors, preferring to develop a style of acting suitable to the screen. His new model was one that eschewed psychology in favour of a performance based on reflexes and the mechanics of acting. He advocated selecting actors for their type – whose look and performance style would match the role required. He established an acting laboratory to train his actors into the appropriate style. Kuleshov believed in social forces activating performance, not psychology. After all, securing the New Revolutionary Soviet Union was about dealing with social forces not psychological ones. Thus, in his view, the surface (the exterior, not the interior) of the actor's body was the site of performance, and gesture and movement were primary. The body, then, becomes the site where social forces impacted on the revolutionary hero and it was the reflexes to those forces that constituted the acting. Again this model was followed by many film-makers, but not significantly by Eisenstein. Eisenstein went for a more radical concept still of the protagonist and performance. He would use, in massive numbers, non-actors to create a collective proletarian hero, playing down individualism (see *Battleship Potemkin*, 1925). Pudovkin followed Kuleshov's principles of naturalistic characterization and montage, and produced popular narrative films (such as *Mother*, 1926). Pudovkin's character's are individuals with feelings and separate identities. The plot line is, in many ways, indistinct from **Hollywood**'s own 'good' versus 'bad', although this time it is based in Russia's own Revolutionary history. Indeed, it should be recalled that Soviet audiences very much enjoyed Hollywood film products and its **stars** (Mary Pickford, Douglas Fairbanks and Charlie Chaplin were great favourites). Dovzhenko, for his part, also continued in the Kuleshov vein and in particular focused on rural Russia by showing individual idealism and effort overcoming the landed peasantry's resistance to Stalin's collectivizing programme for farms (see *The Earth*, 1930).

Kuleshov's impact was less strong in the Soviet cinema's construction of new genres although he did introduce a different kind of detective-action-comedy (a hybrid of Chaplinesque humour with Soviet ideology, see *The Extraordinary Adventures of Mr West in the Land of the Bolsheviks*, 1924). By the mid-1920s, stage-screen hybrids

(popular during pre-Revolutionary days) had been to a great extent transcended by the completely new genre, the historical revolutionary epic whose greatest exponents were Eisenstein, Dovzhenko and Pudovkin. Within the context of fiction film and epic revolutionary cinema, two basic trends evolved. The first, exemplified by Eisenstein advocated an intellectual montage cinema – one that was closely aligned with Marx's dialectical materialism (see below); the other, exemplified by Dovzhenko and Pudovkin, was the so-called emotional or lyrical-symbolic montage cinema (a cinema that was heavily based on image-symbols). Otherwise another trend – more in the documentary vein – was that exemplified by Vertov and, in a slightly different way, Esfir Shub. Vertov was strongly opposed to fiction film (including stage-screen hybrids, the epic and literary adaptations), believing the only true revolutionary cinema was one that subscribed to a cinema of facts. His films aimed at catching life as it was, in a style that can best be described as a cross-fertilization of **cinéma vérité** and montage. Shub's documentary work was based on compilations of earlier footage. In some ways her work represented the earliest form of new Soviet cinema of making a new film through re-editing footage from old ones. In this way she compiled three feature length films on contemporary Russian history (1912–28).

Eisenstein is the film-maker most readily associated with this period in Soviet cinema, at least within the Western world, possibly because he obtained international recognition at the time. Although as the above makes clear, he was far from unique (there were many other film-makers around). Nor was he always the pioneer he was made out to be by history – even though, as we saw, he pushed the meaning and function of montage into a new political aesthetics. His film *Strike* (1925) was awarded a prize at the Paris Exhibition that year. In fact he was much admired and more successful outside the Soviet Union than in it. He lectured all over the Western world: France, Germany and the United States (he also went to Mexico where he made *¡Qué viva México!*, 1932). Doubtless the other contributing factor, over time, is the huge legacy of theoretical writings he left and which were translated into English and other languages. Eisenstein advocated a materialist theory of cinema. He saw cinema as the modality for expressing and representing revolutionary struggle. He believed that a revolutionary country should be given a revolutionary culture (cinema in his case) in order for the masses to obtain a revolutionary consciousness (small wonder Grierson admired Eisenstein's ideological educative fervour). For him, montage meant intellectual montage to make the

spectator think. In this light he is close to Kuleshov's thinking. He believed in the symbolic counterpointing of human beings with objects or other animate forms to create meaning. Thus in *Strike* the slaughter of a bull is counterpointed symbolically with that of the strikers. Eisenstein eschewed characterization and went for symbolic ciphers, what he called 'typage'. The actor was but one element in a film. Thus, the proletariat was the hero of the film, not a particular individual.

Eisenstein's most famous film, *Battleship Potemkin* (1925), was commissioned by the Central Committee. It is exemplary of his radical view of film as an assault on audiences to shock them into political awareness. The film was commissioned to commemorate the unsuccessful Russian Revolution of 1905. Eisenstein focused on one incident, the mutiny on the battleship *Potemkin* and the subsequent slaughter, on the Odessa steps by the Tsarist militia, of the masses cheering and trying to bring food to the mutineers. In 1927 Eisenstein was again commissioned to make a film, this time in commemoration of the successful 1917 Revolution. His project, entitled *October*, was to prove the beginning of his falling foul of critics and the state. The film was due to come out in 1927 with other commissioned projects for the Revolution's Jubilee (which included Pudovkin's populist-montage film, *Mother*). However, Eisenstein's film had to be massively recut because of the expulsion of Trotsky from the party (mainly manoeuvred by Stalin). When the film was finally screened, in 1928, it was criticized for its formalism (although it contained superb ironizing of Kerensky, the provisional head of the Revolutionary government of 1917). In fact, because it had to be so drastically recut, the film made little sense to audiences either as an intellectual montage film or as a commemoration of the 1917 Revolution. In any event, by 1928 the state had decreed that the time for montage cinema was over. The need was for morale-lifting and positive post-Revolutionary discourses of socialist realism. Eisenstein made only two more intellectual montage and formalistically experimental films in the Soviet Union (*The Old and the New/The General Line*, 1928; *Bezhin Meadow*, 1937), after which he was subjected to public humiliation for his use of formalism over content and was obliged (or felt obliged) to denounce his former practices. In 1938 he was commissioned to make the patriotic film, *Alexander Nevsky*, which, while it was undoubtedly an attempt to bolster Soviet national identity against the imminent threat of fascism, lacked the earlier brilliance of his film techniques even though it was the first of his films to have popular appeal with the Soviet audiences.

For further reading see Taylor and Christie, 1994a and 1994b; Taylor and Spring, 1993.

## SPACE AND TIME/SPATIAL AND TEMPORAL CONTIGUITY

Within **classic narrative cinema** space and time are coherently represented in order to achieve the reality effect. Shots reveal spatial relationships between characters and objects and as such implicate the viewer as spectating **subject**. That is, shots are organized in a specific way so that the **spectator** can make sense of what she or he sees. The way in which space is carved up within a shot (size and volume of objects or characters) also provides meaning. Equally, given that mainstream classic cinema assumes an unfolding of the traditional narrative of 'order/disorder/ order-restored' (or enigma and resolution), time is implicitly chronological and so must be seen to run contiguously with space. **Art cinema** has disrupted this notion of temporal and spatial continuity through, for example, **jump cuts**, **unmatched shots**, flashforwards, looping **images** and so on. Interestingly, **dominant cinema** has adopted many of these techniques, even though they do not serve the same disruptive function but seem to function more like cinematic jokes which the spectator can enjoy (see, for example, Robert Altman's *The Player*, 1992).

## SPECTATOR/SPECTATOR-IDENTIFICATION/ FEMALE SPECTATOR

The issue of spectatorship was first addressed 'theoretically' in the early to mid-1970s as a result of the impact of **semiotics** and **psychoanalysis** on film **theory**. The relationship between cinema and the unconscious is not a new concept however. Cinema as the mediator for unconscious desire, the suitability of the screen as the projection-site for the inner workings of the psyche, had been discussed by earlier theorists in the 1920s and 1930s – as had the similitude between the mechanisms of dreams and the unconscious to those of film. But it was not until the 1970s that full consideration was given to the effect of the cinematic experience upon the spectator.

Spectatorship theory has gone through three stages. In stage one, 1970s film theory, Baudry, Bellour and Metz wrote about cinema as an **apparatus** and an imaginary signifier to explain what happened to

the spectator as he (sic) sat in the darkened theatre gazing on to the screen. In stage two, post-1975 feminist film theory, the 'natural' assumption, implicit in those first writings, that the masculine was the place from which the spectator looks and the 'natural' acceptance that each viewing was an unproblematic re-enactment of the **Oedipal trajectory** were strongly contested (in the first instance) by the critic and film-maker Laura Mulvey. In stage three, 1980s (mostly feminist) film theory, Mulvey's writings provoked further investigations by theorists who sought to widen the debate by bringing in theoretical approaches other than psychoanalysis. What follows is a brief synopsis of those three stages and the debates surrounding them.

### *Stage one*

Baudry, Bellour and Metz drew on Freud's analyses of the child's libido drives and Lacan's mirror stage to explain how film works at the unconscious level. Drawing on the analogy of the screen with the mirror as a way of talking about the spectator-screen relation, these authors state that at each film viewing there is an enactment of the unconscious processes involved in the acquisition of sexual difference, language and autonomous self-hood or **subjectivity**. In other words, each viewing represents a repetition of the Oedipal trajectory. This in turn implies that the **subject** of classic narrative cinema is male (Mayne, 1993: 23). Let's unpick this.

According to Baudry (1970), the cinematic apparatus produces an ideological position through its system and mechanics of representation (camera, editing, projecting, spectator before the screen). The position is ideological because dominant **narrative** cinema practices hide the labour that goes into the manufacturing of the film and the spectator is given the impression of reality. This seamlessness gives the spectator a sense of a unitary vision over which he (sic) believes he has supremacy. The spectator believes he is the author of the meanings of the filmic text and in this respect colludes with the idealism of the cinematic 'reality-effect' – all of which gives evidence to what Baudry calls the 'spectator as the transcendental subject' (as having supremacy). In reality, argues Baudry, the opposite is true: the spectator is constructed by the meanings of the text. As such, therefore, the cinematic apparatus interpellates the subject as effect of the text. Later, Baudry (1975) moved away from this anti-humanist interpretation of the cinematic apparatus and its ideological connotations and, adopting a more Freudian approach, focused on cinema's ability to embody psychic desire. He also recognized the implicit regres-

siveness (back to the child) in that particular positioning of the spectator as desiring subject – a point Metz would develop more fully.

Bellour (1975) talked about cinema as functioning simultaneously for the Imaginary (that is, as the reflection, the mirror) and the Symbolic (that is, through its film discourses as language). As the spectator enters into the filmic experience he (sic) first identifies with the cinematic apparatus: the projector functions as the eye. Second, he has a narcissistic identification with the image and then, as he moves from the Imaginary to the Symbolic, he desires the **image**. Implicit in Bellour's definition of the spectator-screen relation, which is one-way, is the notion of voyeurism and lawless seeing.

Metz (1975), echoing Bellour, talked about spectator positioning and the voyeuristic aspect of film viewing whereby the viewer is identified with the look (see **gaze**). Drawing on the analogy of the screen with the mirror, Metz perceived spectator positioning as pre-Oedipal, that is, at the moment of imaginary unity with the self. However, through his discussion of cinema practices as the imaginary signifier, he introduced the complication of the **absence/presence** paradigm. Cinema makes present (signifies) what is absent (the Imaginary) – that is, it shows a recording of what is absent. This play on absence/presence means that we are confronted with the imaginary completeness of the absent image of the child in the mirror (Lapsley and Westlake, 1988: 82). The spectator is made aware of the illusionism of the imaginary unity with the self and as such is confronted with the sense of lack. This process, Metz argued, has similar properties with that undergone by the child at the mirror stage. The male child looks into the mirror, sees his image, has a momentary identification with the self (narcissism) then perceives his difference from his mother as 'she who lacks a penis'. He then responds in two ways. First, he desires reunification with the mother and his desire is sexually motivated. Second, he denies difference and through that disavowal of difference – because of his own fear of castration – seeks to find the penis in woman (fetishization). In cinema, this Oedipal trajectory is re-enacted within both the narrative and the spectator-text relation (again it was taken for granted by Metz that the subject of the gaze is male).

### *Stage two*

Numerous problems arise out of this first stage of theorizing the spectating subject, starting with the assumption that speculation is only a one-way system (spectator to screen), that it is exclusively

male in its positioning and that film texts are organized in such a way as to give a **preferred reading**. These issues did not become clear until after the impact of Laura Mulvey's ground-breaking essay ('Visual Pleasure and Narrative Cinema', 1975) which sought to address the issue of female spectatorship within the cinematic apparatus and psychoanalytic framework established by the authors discussed above. Mulvey's essay represented a turning point in film theory in that it was the first to introduce emphatically the question of sexual difference as a necessary area for investigation. Indeed, she intended it to act as a catalyst – she readily admits that the essay was intentionally polemical (1989). In her essay she examined the way in which cinema functions through its **codes and conventions** to construct the way in which woman is to be looked at, starting with the male point of view within the film and, subsequently, the spectator who identifies with the male character or protagonist. She describes this process of viewing as scopophilia – pleasure in viewing.

In her analysis Mulvey made clear the implications of the dual response, as described by Metz, of the male unconscious (desiring and fetishizing) for both narrative cinema and the spectator-text relation. For this sexualization and objectification of the female form that the male gaze confers upon it is not just one of desire but also one of fear or dread of castration. She demonstrated how, as a first unconscious response to this fear, the camera (and the spectator after it) fetishizes the female form by drawing attention to its beauty, its completeness and perfection. But, in making the female body a fetish object, the camera disavows the possibility of castration and renders it phallus-like (since it no longer represents lack) and therefore reassuring. Mulvey demarcated the voyeuristic gaze as the other male unconscious response to this fear. This gaze represents a desire to control, to punish the (perceived) source of the castration anxiety, even to annihilate woman. (Mulvey mentioned film noir in this context, but for an extreme example see *Peeping Tom*, Michael Powell, 1960.)

Mulvey then went on to ask, given that the narrative of **classical narrative cinema** is preponderantly that of the Oedipal trajectory and since that trajectory is tightly bound up with male perceptions or fantasies about women (difference, lack, fear of castration and so on), what happens to the female spectator? How does she derive visual pleasure? Mulvey could only conclude that she must either identify with the passive, fetishized position of the female character on screen (a position of unpleasure, her lack of a penis signifying the threat of

castration) or, if she is to derive pleasure, must assume a male positioning (a masculine third person).

### *Stage three*

Mulvey's polemic met with strong response by feminist critics (as she intended) and the ensuing decades have seen extensive work on revising, reworking and extending Mulvey's propositions. In an attempt to refute the phallocentrism of Mulvey's argument, Silberman (1981) and Studlar (1985) described the cinema as an essentially masochistic structure in which the viewer derives pleasure through submission or passivity. Doane (1984), following on from these writings, argued that the female spectator's positioning was twofold. She adopted either a masochistic positioning (identifying with the female passive role) or that of a transvestite (identifying with the male active hero). Mulvey (1989) in her afterthoughts on her earlier essay warned against this kind of binary thinking. And, indeed, already feminists were considering the possibility that the spectator was not so rigidly positioned in relation to sexual identity but that it was possible to postulate the bisexuality of the spectator's positioning whereby she or he would alternate between the two – suggesting a fluidity and heterogeneity of positioning rather than an 'either/or'. Modleski (1988: 98) made the point most succinctly in relation to the bisexuality of the female spectator. The female spectator is doubly desiring because when going through the mirror phase the girl child's first love object is the mother, but, in order to achieve 'normal femininity' she must turn away and go towards her father as object of desire. However the first desire frequently does not go away. So, the female spectator's bisexual positioning is central to the mother/daughter nexus. The male spectator, much as the male character up on screen, for the most part suppresses his femininity (often projecting it on to the female and punishing her for it). However, as Modleski (1988: 99) argued, he can find himself bisexually positioned if the male character fluctuates between passive and active modes.

The contiguous question of spectator-as-subject in relation to meaning-production has equally been broadened. The spectator is not a passive interpellated subject of the screen. She or he holds a position of power and makes sense of the images and sounds (in fact the effect of **sound** renders the screen/mirror analogy somewhat incomplete or unsound). Even though it is a construct of cinema to endow the spectator predominantly with more knowledge than the characters (at least with mainstream narrative cinema), it does not

follow that the spectator occupies only one position in relation to those characters (as the apparatus reading would have it). Cowie's (1984) discussion of film as **fantasy** made this clear. In her rethinking or revamping of Laplanche's and Pontalis's three characteristics of fantasy (the primal scene, the seduction fantasy and the fantasies of castration), all of which are a **mise-en-scène** of desire, she made the point that the spectator, as subject *for* and *of* the scenario, can occupy all those positions. As such, she or he is not monolithically placed but can in fact occupy contradictory positions. As an example take *Fatal Attraction* (Adrian Lyne, 1987) – a film in which it is possible to occupy at different times within the narrative the positions of the mistress, the husband and the wife. It should not be forgotten that Glenn Close (who plays the mistress) expressed deep shock and disappointment at the audience cheering the end of the film when she is shot to death by the wife. She had assumed (naively) that sympathy or identification with her character would occur.

Essentially these three stages of the debate around spectator-positioning and identification show how there has been a shift away from the early monolithic view of the spectator (as subject of the apparatus), to a more heterogeneous one. This is doubly the case since spectator analysis has not confined itself in recent years to 'spectator as psychic phenomenon'. The debate has become enlarged (thanks in the main to cultural studies) and the spectator-as-viewer is now equally deemed to be an important area of investigation. Thus historical and empirical models of spectator or viewer analysis have been established. In this respect spectatorship has been perceived as a matter of historically shifting groups. The popularity of cinema has shifted over time and has had different effects and been differently affected depending on the make-up of those groups. Spectatorship has also been analysed in relation to **intertextuality**: an examination of all the texts surrounding the actual film text and their impact upon the viewer as reader and receiver. Exhibition – where films are screened and the effect felt by the viewer – is another important consideration, as is **audience** pleasure in identification. Finally, studies of viewer-reception, initiated in television studies, have pointed to the ecclecticism of viewers and acknowledged the difference in readings of the film depending on **class**, age, race, creed, **sexuality**, **gender** and nationality.

*see also*: **apparatus**, **gaze**, **ideology**, **Imaginary/Symbolic**, **scopophilia**, **suture**, **voyeurism/fetishism**

For an extremely thorough, comprehensive and well-written book on spectatorship read Mayne, 1993. On spectator-identification see Ellis, 1982. For specific textual analyses see Modleski, 1988. On female spectatorship see Kaplan, 1983 and Pribham, 1988. On reception, read Stacey 1993; and Mayne, 1993, supplies an excellent bibliography.

## STARS/STAR SYSTEM/STAR AS CAPITAL VALUE/ STAR AS CONSTRUCT/STAR AS DEVIANT/STAR AS CULTURAL VALUE: SIGN AND FETISH/ STARGAZING AND PERFORMANCE

### *A first definition: star as capital value*

The star system is generally associated with **Hollywood**, although the French film industry was the first to see its usefulness in promoting its products (especially its **comedy** series and *film d'art* productions, starting in 1908). In earliest cinema, films were anonymous productions bearing only the name of the studio. It rapidly became evident that certain performers were greater attractions than others. Henceforth, performers were perceived as having capital value. And by 1919 the star system was established. Although Florence Lawrence, 'the Biograph girl' was the first named star in the United States (1910), the first 'real' star was Mary Pickford (known as 'little Mary' in her films of that period). She was shortly followed by Charlie Chaplin. But this capital value of stars was by no means a one-way exchange. Stars made fortunes – that is, as long as they made the studios' fortunes.

Before **sound** both male and female stars were quite archetypal, so their **iconography** was easily readable. After sound, there was a shift in **stereotypes**, and roles differentiated. But, as Claire Johnston (1976) has noted, this was predominantly the case for male stars only Female stars remained, much as before, vamps or virgins or full-scale sex-goddesses whose main purpose was to give the **audience** (and presumably the male star) a 'human sense of beauty and eroticism' (Konigsberg, 1993: 348). Meanwhile male stars became more complex. No longer just heroes, they could be anti-heroes, rebels-as-heroes, socially aware heroes, and so on.

Hollywood's dominance of the Western film industry since the First World War has meant not only that the studios have massively exported their star commodities on celulloid throughout the European continent and the United Kingdom, but also that they have

been in a position to offer lucrative enticements to import stars: most famously, arguably, in the silent era, Greta Garbo. For some film stars 'going to Hollywood' could make them into megastars, for others it could consign them to oblivion, or – ultimately – do both (for example Vivien Leigh and Richard Burton).

Officially the star system was 'over' by the 1950s owing to the Hollywood studio system collapse, but rivalry remained strong in the 1950s between Europe and Hollywood. For example, just on the sex-goddess front, Diana Dors and Shirley Ann Field in the United Kingdom, Brigitte Bardot in France, Gina Lollobrigida and Sophia Loren in Italy were star images served up to counter the US sex-symbols Marilyn Monroe, Ava Gardner and Jayne Mansfield. Rather than 'over' it would be fairer to say that the star system went into decline after the 1950s collapse and that it became a case of stars still being manufactured but of being fewer in number. Also with the increase in the youth audience from the 1960s to its present dominant position, stars are of a different order – for example, they are 'even more like us' or hulking heroes, or, again a reverse-type: nasty, malevolent villains – but still stars.

Stars sell films, but their capital exchange value goes further than that of course. Producers will put up money for films that include the latest top star. Stars can attract financial backing for a film that otherwise might not get off the ground. Film scripts are written with specific stars in mind (see Robert Altman's *The Player*, 1992, for a satire on Hollywood practices in this respect). And while films are indeed vehicles for stars, allowing them to show a wide range of skills over different genres, stars are equally vehicles for film genres (for example Fred Astaire and Ginger Rogers, and Gene Kelly are icons of the **musical**, Lauren Bacall, Humphrey Bogart and Edward G. Robinson are closely identified with **film noir** and **gangster** films). Indeed, a need to re-establish a star's commercial viability could be the impetus to disassociate her or him from one type of **genre**. (This was attempted with Anthony Perkins but was never successfully pulled off. He will always remain Norman Bates of *Psycho*, Alfred Hitchcock, 1960.)

Stars are signs of indigenous cultural codes. Gestures, words, intonations, attitudes, postures – all of these separate one nation's stars from another's, thus affirming the plurality of the cultures. Indeed, it could be argued that the gestural codes, even more so than the **narrative** codes, are deeply rooted in a nation's culture – which is why some stars do not export well. Traditions of performance, then, have national as well as individual resonances and need to be borne in

mind when analysing a star's performative style. Gesturality is also tied up with the question of authenticity. We expect certain rituals of performance from our stars, indeed the camera colludes with this process of recognition by giving us close-ups of the particular gesture that authenticates the star in question (*the* Garbo smile, *the* Bette Davis wringing of hands, *the* Clint Eastwood side-mouth delivery of the few lines he ever utters, and so on).

### *A second definition: star as construct*

(What follows in this section is largely based on Dyer, 1986, and Gledhill, 1991 – two extremely lucid and useful texts on this subject.) Stars are constructed by the film industry, but stars (although not all) also have a role in their own construction, participate in their own myth-making. Similarly, star status is authenticated by the media (press, fanzines, television and radio and so on). But stars also possess markers of their own authenticity and as such are involved in their own mythification. Think, for example of Doris Day, the representative of nice middle-America womanhood; the sexually charged and ambiguous **sexuality** of Marlene Dietrich; the swashbuckling Errol Flynn; the ice-cold maiden Catherine Deneuve with flawless feminine beauty; the socio-psychologically inept Woody Allen.

Stars are somehow baroque in their image-construction since it is so predominantly about illusionism, about 'putting there' what in fact isn't there. They are appearance in the very diversified meaning of that word: they appear on screen, but they are not 'really' there – their image on screen stands in for them so they are *apparence*, a semblance (see **absence/presence**). The look that has been constructed of them that is up there for all to perceive is also an appearance, a carefully manufactured appearance (of flawless beauty, of rugged handsomeness, for example). The rest, as Dyer (1986: 2) puts it, is supposedly 'concealed'. Yet we as **spectators** accept this construct as real.

As a way of measuring this sense of reality let us pick up on Gledhill's comment that stars reach their audience primarily through their bodies (1991: 210). That is, they reach us through their appearance. But, depending on whether it is a male or a female star, this 'reaching-us-with-their-bodies' changes as they age. Not for nothing do so many female stars decry the lack of roles for older, mature, even old women. For male stars, ageing is not (or is less of) an issue where their appearance is concerned. Thus it is acceptable

for a male star to age so long as he is 'healthy', his appearance remains one of good, or reasonable health – read: virile health (for example Paul Newman, Clint Eastwood). Even if he grows old unhealthily, through body abuse, some types of 'unhealthiness' still do not bring about a rejection of the star-body that is reaching us. In this respect, it would be purposeful to compare the responses to Burton and his facial deterioration through alcohol (described as 'cragged', 'tragic') with the prurient reactions to Rock Hudson, the first star to be openly known to have died of AIDS (even though it was denied for a long time). Certain types of deterioration, such as physical decline from **excess** in alcohol consumption, are less negatively judged than others, it would appear.

To return to the female star and ageing: the female star has 'trouble' ageing not just for herself (loss of looks equals loss of premier roles) but also in relation to her audience. On the whole, her fans do not like her to age. Curiously, the process of ageing matters when it is a woman star – it recalls our own, ageing is too real – not the 'real' we want to see. Just to take a few random examples of stars and ageing, Simone Signoret, whose premature ageing was always said to be a result of heavy drinking and smoking, was severely criticized for losing her looks. She, it would appear, should have exercised the control that no one expected Burton to exercise. Cancer, from which she died at the age of sixty-four, could equally have been the cause for her premature ageing as her much quoted excesses. Rita Hayworth was dismissed at forty as a drunk, yet she died of Alzheimer's disease. Ageing here is seen as deviancy. Joan Crawford complained of how hard she had to work to look, and stay looking good (Dyer, 1986: 1). Marlene Dietrich spent a fortune on face-lifts. The price of being not bodily deviant is high. Brigitte Bardot and Greta Garbo left the screen before age set in – taking the appearance away, the other price to pay to 'keep up appearances'.

The star as a construct has three component parts (Gledhill, 1991: 214): first, the real person; second, the 'reel' person/the character she or he plays; third, the star's persona, which exists independently of but is a combination of the other two. The film industry makes the multi-faceted star-image, so does the star, and the audience selects; in this regard, the star-image has four component parts (Dyer, 1986: 3–4): first, what the industry puts out; second, what the media (critics and others) say; third, what the star says and does; fourth, what we say, what we can select, even to the point of imitating the star (for example James Dean look-alikes) – and each audience will select a different meaning (for example, Bette Davis means different things to

Black men and women than she does to White heterosexuals, or to lesbian, gay audiences).

Star-images, then, are more than just the image. As Dyer (1986: 3–4) makes clear, they are extensive (can extend in meaning, and over the public and private spheres); they are multimedia (photography, film, press, television, and so on); they are **intertextual** (the star's image gets picked up and used by others – a sulking Dean look-alike in a jeans advert); finally, they have histories that can and do outlive their lives (especially if they die in tragic circumstances). A star, then, is a cluster of meanings and parts. It is not difficult, therefore, to see that the star phenomenon is profoundly unstable (Dyer, 1986: 6) and extremely paradoxical by nature – as the next three sections will go on to show.

### *A third definition: star as deviant*

A star's life is controlled by the studio, which means there is very little room for resistance. A few stars have been able to take charge of their meaning construction (for example Mary Pickford, Bette Davis, Barbra Streisand, Meryl Streep, Robert De Niro); and this resistance becomes part of their star-image. However, in general, the star colludes in the fabrication of her or his self as star, participates in the manufacturing of her or his self as representative of 'normality'. Why for example are there still 'lavender' marriages in Hollywood – marriages of convenience to cover up the fact that one or both partners is gay? Why has fear set into Hollywood as a result of a recent outing campaign led by militant homosexuals? Gay stars are the most vulnerable in relation to the instability of the star-image because they must conceal even more than the straight star. They must convince through their performance that their appearance is 'really real'; their performance is a double masquerade.

It is not difficult to perceive that this collusion in manufacturing a star-image confronts the star with a loss of identity or, at the very least, a fragmented rather than a divided self (see **psychoanalysis** and **suture**). In terms of identity loss, the star is positioned paradoxically: she or he is pre-Oedipal playing at being post-Oedipal (being without identity, the star is like the child prior to the mirror phase and 'unaware' of his difference or her/his separateness from the mother). As a fragmented self, the star has more than one image and thus too many mirrors reflecting back the multiple self – which one is the real image or reflection? At its most extreme manifestation, this loss of identity can propel the star to seek out reunification with the lost (m)other (note the important role Liz Taylor has had in relation to a number of male stars:

Montgomery Clift, James Dean, Michael Jackson). And it can propel them to a reunification with the absent father. The father is either absent because he has not yet had to be present, that is, the mirror phase has not been gone through (if the star is in the pre-Oedipal phase). Or, he is not yet present because the mirror phase has been so overdetermined with reflections that he has been unable to assert himself as the representative of the Law of the Father. The star as the fragmented self has recognized nothing in these multiple reflections, including his difference or her/his separation from the mother.

Bearing this in mind, let us return to the concept of deviancy. The construction of a star is about excess, excess of meaning ascribed to her or him. This excess is mirrored in the star's lifestyle. If it were not excessive (mansions, swimming pools, parties and so on) would we believe in their star status? Occasionally we accept un-excessed star-images, but they are the exception and that exceptionality is part of the star image. Excess then has positive value for studio, star and spectator. But it soon becomes translated into deviancy once it has negative value primarily for the studio. Sexuality and consumption practices are, unsurprisingly, the areas in which stars 'transgress'. Since their sexuality is set up on screen for us to consume, it is perversely through those very sets of comportment that the star will seek to deny (through excess in sexual practice and consumption abuse) and then (inadvertently?) expose the masquerade of stardom – through disfigurement or death.

### *A fourth definition: star as cultural value: sign and fetish*

As a sign (see **semiology**) of the indigenous cultural codes, institutional **metonymy** and site of the **class** war in its national specificity, the signification of the star 'naturally' changes according to the social, economic and political environment. Stars are shifting signifiers, they function as reflectors of the time and as signs to be reflected into society. During the 1950s, when youth emerged as an important class economically and culturally, teenage boys in the United States donned T-shirts, jeans and leather jackets with either Dean or Brando as their icon; in France, teenage girls mimicked the Bardot look – as well as the walk, and so on. Stars have emblematic as well as cultural value in that they 'signify as condensers of moral, social and ideological values' (Gledhill, 1991: 215). Gledhill makes the point that they can also be emblematic of those values being in question (for example Garland in *A Star is Born*, George Cukor, 1954; Dean in *Rebel Without a Cause*, Nicholas Ray, 1955).

The star as sign also functions as mediator between the real and the imaginary and, as such, has spectator expectations transferred on to it. The shifts in the representation of female sexuality, just to take one example, over the past sixty years of cinema show how this process of transference and mutation occurs. In Hollywood, for example, during the 1930s and 1940s two types of feminine eroticism prevailed: the 'independent just as good as the boys' (Claudette Colbert, Bette Davis, Rosalind Russell, Katharine Hepburn) or the weak, vulnerable type (Vivien Leigh). In the 1950s the femino-masculine independent type was replaced by the dutiful wife at home supporting her husband (by staying out of the job market), or the self-parodying brunette who eventually 'settles down' (roles played respectively by Doris Day and Jane Russell). The weak type is replaced by the dumb blonde (guess who?). By the late 1960s a new type has emerged, a 'radical-liberal feminist eroticism' which attributes to women the right to decide what they do with their sexuality (Jane Fonda). This woman-in-her-own-right sexuality has persisted into contemporary cinema, but it has not always sat easily – as if by way of a backlash against feminism. As two contrastive modes of representation, see Glenn Close in *Fatal Attraction* (Adrian Lyne, 1987) and Jodi Foster in *The Accused* (Jonathan Kaplan, 1988). These shifts in representation, over time, correspond, first, to different stages in the dominant perception of the American woman's sexuality and, second, to the social, political and economic conditions that prevailed in each of those epochs.

This is also an example of the way in which stars are endowed with national iconicity and as such have cultural value. Clearly a star's meaning can shift in the move from the national to the international level. This is particularly true of the United States' perception of European stars – especially French stars. But stars also signify on a personal level. They articulate the idea of personhood which is a fiction for the reproduction of the kind of society we live in (Dyer, 1986: 8). As (national) icon and (individuated) person the star functions as both extraordinary and ordinary. In the first instance, as extraordinary, she or he is an object of our speculation and impossible object of our desire. In the latter, as ordinary, she or he is 'just like us' – we can identify the stars with us – and so the star is a possible object of our desire. This binary effect functions to fetishize the star – in neither instance is the star subject, always object (see **voyeurism/fetishism**). Ellis (1982: 91–108) points to the similarity between this binary effect and the **absence/presence** paradigm. The star on screen is absence made presence and the

spectator is the hearing, seeing subject. In this respect the screen is analogous to the mirror into which the spectator peers and has a momentary identification with that image (the star just-like-us). The spectator then perceives her or his difference and becomes aware of the lack (absence, separation from, loss of the [m]other – the star as absence, as not-like-us). Finally, the spectator recognizes herself or himself as the perceiving subject, a position which in turn creates desire. As holder of the gaze the spectator is positioned voyeuristically, desiring to look, with all that that connotes in terms of fetishism. But the absence/presence paradigm also points to the simultaneously impossible and possible nature of that desire, which is also a feature of fetishism (desiring that which cannot be had – what is absent, adulating a fixed object – the star or icon present up on screen).

The fetish value of a star is strongly underscored by her or his **mise-en-scène**, starting with the moment of entrance on screen – awaited with impatience – a use of suspense to give added value to the star. Morphological markers, 'that seem natural or naturally the star's' (such as a certain smile, biting a lip, side-**lighting** eyes), but which privilege us into their emotions, play into the fiction that the spectator or the camera or the eye has caught them unawares (Ellis, 1982: 106). Voyeuristically we look on: unseen-'presence' watches what was once seen-presence but which is now absence – an image standing for star. Even a film itself can obtain fetish status when, for example, a star has died young and/or in tragic circumstances. The film is all that is left of her or him as movement (for example, River Phoenix and *My Own Private Idaho*, Gus Van Sant, 1991).

### *A fifth definition: star gazing: strategies of performance*

Two questions will frame this last definition of stardom: who is looking at the star? and what are we looking at? The answer to the first will make clear why strategies of performance inform the answer to the second question. Essentially there are two audiences looking at the star: the diegetic and the extra-diegetic ones (see **diegesis**). That is, those on the inside looking on, and those on the outside looking in – but in both instances also looking *at* the star, if with different effect. With different effect because the spectator's look is mediated by the diegetic audience. This does not exclude the fact that the spectator's gaze is also mediated by the point of view within the film,

which is usually that of the star, but we are here discussing who is looking at the star. (The entry on **spectatorship** addresses spectator-positioning more fully).

The effect of diegetic star-gazing on the female star is one of a fairly straightforward fetishization. However, the effect on the male star is twofold. First, if those star-gazers are male, the effect is one of homoeroticism and of a feminizing of the male body (the male body is as much fetishized by the male gaze in this instance as is the female body). This puts an interesting reading on predominantly all-male genres (**Westerns** and **crime-thriller** movies). Second, if the star-gazers are female, even though the gaze is now heterosexually charged, the feminizing of the male body still takes place. Women's agencing their gaze on to the male body means they are taking up the privileged male position as holder of the gaze (see **agency**). An analysis of Clint Eastwood's positioning in relation to diegetic audiences in his two films *Unforgiven* (Clint Eastwood, 1992) and *In the Line of Fire* (Wolfgang Petersen, 1993) would illustrate this double effect.

The extra-diegetic audience likes to come and see its stars. This implies that the audience has certain expectations of the star. The star is the point of synthesis between representation and identification. She or he represents or re-presents the 'host culture' of which she or he is a part and with which the spectator identifies (King, 1985: 37). She or he also stands for roles she or he has played before. The extra-diegetic star-gazer, then, has come to see what the star is capable of and, depending on the star, expects either a degree of sameness (acting to type or personification) or unsameness (always changing or impersonation). And to this effect strategies of performance are mobilized by both the industry and the star to satisfy this need on the part of the audience. Irrespective of which mode of acting is in play (personification or impersonation), these strategies function as markers of authenticity. Thus a star who plays roles that are consonant with her or his personality (no matter how constructed that is) will be far more typecast and produce ritualistic performances far in excess of a star who impersonates.

Hollywood tends to prefer the personifying star in the belief that audiences choose films in relation to stars and a knowledge, more or less, of what to expect (for example Eastwood, the non-verbal gunman; Jack Nicholson and the leering grin combined with a macho bravura; the Bette Davis flouncing bitchiness; the soulful Barbra Streisand and her songs; the all-American winner and tough guy, John Wayne; Tom Cruise, less of a tough guy, but still an all-American winner; and so on). Stars who impersonate (that is, who

can be true to any conceivable character) are fewer in number and their popularity or success depends to a great degree on how far they go in suppressing the authenticating markers of their real personality or star-image. While the construction of difference (from the star-image or personality) must be convincing, if the suppression is so total the audience is likely to reject that performance. In other words, if the impersonation gets to the point where the disguise prevents the signs of the star from being read, so that the star to all intents and purposes 'dis-appears', the audience feels 'cheated' of the process of spectator recognition, an essential component of the star-image. The audience can no longer select those bits of the star (authenticating markers) which it recognizes or with which it identifies. In this respect, the star Meryl Streep is the one actress who comes to mind because she sails so close to this 'dis-appearance act'. This could explain why she receives such a mixed reaction to her performances, which are far from universally liked or admired.

*see also*: **gesturality studio system**

## STEREOTYPE

Originally, *stereotype* was a printing term used to refer to a printing plate taken from movable type, to increase the number of copies that could be printed. Applied figuratively, this expression has come to mean, at its simplest, a fixed and repeated characterization (the drunken doctor in **Westerns**, the moll with a golden heart in **gangster** movies). Initially, stereotypes came about in cinema to help the audience understand the **narrative**. However, it would also be true to say that they are a carry-over from traditions of performance in stage **melodrama** and vaudeville – the two theatre **genres** that were most readily adopted by early cinema. They also serve an economic function in relation to the narrative. We 'know' what they stand for so there is no need to elaborate their characterization. This means that stereotypes are little, if at all, nuanced. But this does not mean that stereotyping just operates at the level of secondary characters. Main roles, **stars**, can equally be reduced to stereotype (the dumb blonde or sex goddess; the hulk with no brain; the all-good middle-American – respectively: Marilyn Monroe, Sylvester Stallone, James Stewart).

Stereotypes come and go; they also change in the light of the shifting political cultural context. Take for example the representation

of communists and communism in Hollywood cinema from the 1950s to the 1990s (from threat, alien force that is to be defeated, to an inept, corrupt system that is doomed to failure). Already it can be seen that stereotypes are not simple signifiers, even though they appear to represent types, norms. Because they are social-cultural productions passing as normative, they need to be examined in relation to race, **gender**, **sexuality**, age, **class** and genre as well as history.

Let's take these last two pointers (genre and history) as a way of explaining why stereotypes must be widely examined. Some genres rely more heavily on stereotypes than others. Why? The traditional Western for example abounds with stereotypes – all the better to serve as a backcloth to the main protagonist: the hero-who-puts-things-right against all odds; the hero as positive value versus the stereotypes as negative value. Take the disaster movie – a particular favourite genre of the 1970s and early 1980s (for example, the *Airport* series and the *Towering Inferno* types of films). The narrative this time functions a bit in reverse to the Western. That is, the hero is not identified from the beginning but has to identify himself (sic) gradually against the stereotypes present in the disaster arena (neurotic ageing female film star; bigoted priest; drunken doctor (again); dying nun; nymphomaniac; twin orphans). What purpose, then, do stereotypes serve? They clip into **codes and conventions** associated with belonging and exclusion. We, the spectators, may not be like the hero but we are certainly 'not like the others'. Stereotypes represent a release of our prejudices at the same time as they play on them. They allow us to belong to a social grouping of which they (the stereotypes) are not part.

In terms of history, certain socio-cultural groupings (just as an example) find a stereotypical characterization or representation that is, in the main, unfavourable, at best reductive – even though this representation may shift over time. Certain racial groupings, and gay and lesbian groupings, are prime examples. An examination of the evolution of the representation of Jews in different Western cinemas over the past sixty years of cinema would be highly instructive of how stereotypes have shifted if not necessarily improved. And a question worth asking is, in what way, if at all, do more recent images function less stereotypically than earlier ones? Do they represent more clearly issues surrounding Jewishness or do they still slot into the problematic area of stereotypes? Or are they guilty of historicism? Compare, for example, Woody Allen's films where his Jewishness is at the centre of the narrative, with Alan Pakula's *Sophie's*

*Choice* (1982) where Jew-as-victim survivor of the Holocaust is the driving force behind one individual's suffering.

## STRUCTURALISM/POST-STRUCTURALISM

The founding-stone of structuralism was structural linguistics (later to become semiotics) which dates back to the beginning of the twentieth century, primarily in the form of Ferdinand de Saussure's linguistic theories. However, they remained little known until the theories were brought into the limelight, in France, by the philosopher-semiotician Roland Barthes in the 1950s – especially in his popularizing essays *Mythologies* (1957). Saussure, in his *Cours de linguistique générale*, set out a base paradigm by which all language could be ordered and understood. He distinguished between language as a system (*langue*): an underlying set of rules that is universal as a concept; and language as utterance (*parole*): the speech that can be generated by those rules. The impact of linguistic structuralism in the late 1950s and through the 1960s on other disciplines was quite widespread, affecting anthropology, philosophy and **psychoanalysis** to mention but three that are of immediate importance in the context of film theory. Exemplary of this impact was Claude Lévi-Strauss's anthropological structuralism of the 1960s, which looked at Indian myths. Although his thesis was to have a widespread influence, because he was examining **narrative** structures, it was of particular significance in the context of film theory. Lévi-Strauss's thesis was that since all cultures are the products of the human brain there must be, somewhere, beneath the surface, features common to all. This was an approach that became extremely popular during the 1960s and was adapted not just by film theoreticians such as Christian Metz but also by the Marxist philosopher Louis Althusser into his discussions of **ideology** and by Jacques Lacan into psychoanalysis.

The first point to be made about this popularization of structuralism, in France, is a socio-political one and relates to structuralism's strategy of 'total theory'. This popularization coincided with de Gaulle's return to presidential power in France. His calls for national unity in the face of the Algerian crisis, the era of economic triumphalism which he instituted and the consequent nationalism that prevailed were in themselves symptomatic of a desire for structures to be mobilized to give France a sense of national identity in the face of decolonization and radical constitutional change. Thus, the desire for

total structure, as exemplified by structuralism, can be read as an endeavour to counter the real political instability of the 1960s.

The second point to be made about structuralism as it affects film theory is that it represents a rethinking of film theory through academically recognized disciplines, those of structural linguistics and semiotics, hence also its appeal to US and British theorists, among others. This pattern would repeat itself in the 1970s with psychoanalysis, philosophy and feminism, and, again in the 1980s, with history. The significance of this new trend of essayists and philosophers turning to cinema to apply their theories cannot be underestimated. It is doubtless this work which has legitimated film studies as a discipline and brought cinema firmly into the academic arena.

Initially the introduction of structuralism into film theory was perceived as a bold move to deromanticize the film-maker as auteur by introducing a more scientifically based approach that could objectively uncover the underlying structures of film. However, it ended up in rigid formalism which removed any discussion of pleasure in the viewing. Symptomatic of this desire for total order in film theory were Christian Metz's endeavours in the mid-1960s to situate cinema within a Saussurian semiology. Metz, a semiotician, was the first to set out, in his *Essais sur la signification au cinéma* (1971 and 1972), a total-theory approach in the form of his *grande syntagmatique* – a linguistic structure that could account for all elements of a film's composition. Thus cinema is a set of syntagmatic relations – that is, of universal rules (much like Saussure's *langue*), a set of relations that could be described as a grammar of film. Syntagmatic relations then relate to the possibility of combination. Each film will be constructed out of a combination of syntagms, but within these a specific selection of shots will be used (much like Saussure's *parole*). Let us take, for example, a parallel syntagm – two events running in parallel. The universal rules that govern this type of syntagm mean that **cross-cutting** between the two events must occur. However, no two parallel syntagms are the same (or rarely), because each film-maker, bearing in mind the narrative and **genre**, selects the shots that make up the syntagm. Thus a film based on a fairy story that opposes two worlds (the real and the **fantasy** worlds) vastly differentiates itself from a **Western** or a **thriller** even though they are similarly composed of parallel syntagms.

It is not difficult to see in Metz's endeavour the problems inherent in such a total approach. First, although structuralist theory purported to reveal the hidden structures behind film-making, it simultaneously ignored modes of production, the impact of stars on choices and the

socio-historical context of production. Post-structuralism would make this widening possible. Thus structuralism, while it might have deromanticized the auteur, none the less continued to focus on the film-maker and on her or his product. Analysing film this way meant that a critic could scientifically and objectively evaluate a film, determine the style of a particular auteur/film-maker and indeed determine also if a particular film was consistent with that film-maker's style – hence the term *auteur-structuralism*. The focus, therefore, was on the hidden structures and codes in the text and, in this respect, answers the question of how the text comes to be – but not how it comes to mean. The problem becomes one of the theory overtaking the text and, thus, of being very limiting. What is omitted is the notion of pleasure and **audience** reception. What occurs instead is a crushing of the aesthetic experience through the weight of the theoretical framework.

### *Post-structuralism*

It took the impact of post-structuralism, psychoanalysis, feminism and **deconstruction** to make clear finally that a single theory was inadequate and that what was required was a pluralism of theories that cross-fertilized each other. Post-structuralism, which does not find an easy definition, could be said to regroup and cross-fertilize – to some extent – the three other theoretical approaches mentioned. As its name implies, post-structuralism was born out of a profound mistrust for total theory, and started from the position that all texts are a double articulation of discourses and non-discourses (that is, the said and the non-said, *le dit et le non-dit*). Because post-structuralism looks at all relevant **discourses** (said or unsaid) revolving around and within the text, many more areas of meaning-production can be identified. Thus, semiotics introduced the theory of the textual subject – that is, subject positions within the textual process, including that of the spectator and the **auteur** – and the text as a series of **signs** producing meanings.

In terms of auteur theory the effect of post-structuralism was multiple: 'the intervention of semiotics and psychoanalysis' 'shattering' once and for all 'the unity of the auteur' (Caughie, 1981: 200). Having defined the auteur's place within the textual process, auteur theory could now be placed within a theory of textuality. Since there is no such thing as a 'pure' text, the intertextuality (effects of different texts upon another) of any film text must be a major consideration, including authorial **intertextuality**. Thus, the auteur is a figure

constructed out of her or his film; for although there exist authorial signs within a film that make it ostensibly that of a certain filmmaker, none the less that authorial text is also influenced by those of others.

Psychoanalysis and feminist film theory introduced the theory of the sexual, specular, divided subject (divided by the fact of difference, loss of and separation from the mother (see **suture**)). Questions of the subject come into play: who is the subject (the text, the star, the auteur, the **spectator**)? These newly introduced theories also examined the effects of the **enunciating** text (that is, the text brought about by the spectator) – this included analysing the two-way ideological effect and the pleasure derived by the spectator as she or he moves in and out of the text (see **spectator identification**). To speak of text means too that the context must also come into play in terms of meaning production: modes of production, the social, political and historical context. Finally and simultaneously, one cannot speak of a text as transparent, natural or innocent, therefore it is to be unpicked, deconstructed so that its modes of representation are fully understood.

*see also* **apparatus**, **auteur theory**, **feminist film theory**, **suture**, **theory**

## STUDIO SYSTEM

Normally identified with Hollywood, even though the first country to boast a vertically integrated studio system was France, which in 1910, had three production companies: the two majors, Gaumont and Pathé, and, on a smaller scale, Éclair. Vertical integration means that a studio controls the modes of production, distribution and exhibition. The 'official' date for the birth of the studio system is circa 1920. However, its earliest prototype in the United States can be found in the pioneering work of Thomas H. Ince, who in 1912 built Inceville in Hollywood, where he both directed and produced films much on the lines adopted by the Hollywood studio system from the 1920s to the early 1950s. Ince set himself up as director, producer and manager, and as such supervised all the films being made simultaneously in different studios; it was he who had the final say on everything from the script to the **editing**. From this production practice it was not long before the full-blown Hollywood studio management style emerged. This style was designed along the following lines: a production head to supervise the whole project, a

division of labour and the mass production of films (mostly formula films for sure-fire success), which meant among other things shooting films out of sequence to save on costs, and the last word on the final cut resting with the director-manager-owner.

Vertical integration was initiated in the United States in 1917 when Adolph Zukor acquired Paramount Film Corporation – then a distribution company (established in 1914) – and aligned it with his own production company, the Famous Players-Lasky Corporation. This brought him control of both production and distribution. This move had important consequences both for financing films and for exhibition practices. Distribution was the way to finance films, and now that Zukor owned production and distribution he could more or less force cinema theatres to accept block-bookings – to rent and screen films as decreed by exhibitors. There was an attempt to counter this potentially monopolistic putsch. In 1917 an exhibitors' company, First National (originally called the First National Exhibitors' Circuit), was established to fight the block-booking system. It lasted some twelve years and in its heyday – 1921 – owned around 3,500 theatres. By 1922 it had entered into production. Zukor responded by buying up theatres himself, and by 1926 owned more than a thousand. During this first cycle in the studio system's history (1913–29), four other major production companies consolidated their positions as rivals to Paramount, and full vertical integration for the five majors occurred between 1924 and 1926, the others being Fox Film Corporation (first established in 1913 and fully integrated by 1925); Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer (1924); Warner Brothers (established 1923 and integrated by 1926); RKO (1928). Alongside these five majors there coexisted the 'little three' majors – Universal Pictures (formed 1912), United Artists (1919) and Columbia (1920). They were called 'little' because they were not vertically integrated but had access to the majors' first-run theatres. (For a brief history of these companies see below.)

During the 1920s these major companies had a virtual monopoly over the film industry. Profits were enormous, but so too were costs. To counter these increasing costs – due, first, to the effect of vertical integration (an expensive system to finance) and, second, to the advent of **sound** (1927) – studios increasingly came under the control of bankers and businessmen with the effect that not only economic considerations but also artistic ones became more and more a matter for management-style decisions (see Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 320–9). Only Warner Brothers, Columbia and Universal escaped direct interference from Wall Street, because of their prudent production practices. The director was but one of many specialists hired

by the studio companies who were now organized into different departments. Hollywood meant business, as can be determined by the fact that from 1930 to 1948 the eight majors between them controlled 95 per cent of all films exhibited in the United States and formed a seemingly impenetrable oligopoly (Cook, 1985: 10).

The eighteen-year period of Hollywood's unrivalled studio system (1930–48) can best be summed up as follows. Each studio had a general overseer (usually the vice-president of the company), and its own 'stable' of **stars**, scriptwriters, directors and designers (which led to a 'house look'). Hollywood produced some six hundred films a year on an assembly-line process (which led to a standardization of the product but also, more positively, to a greater sophistication of **genres**). Although each company followed similar production practices, they none the less tended to specialize in certain types of films and cultivate a distinctive look (see below). Economic exigency meant that films had to follow certain criteria to guarantee box-office success. During the Depression, in order to give value for money, double features became the rule. This meant that the majors and the minor majors, alongside smaller production companies that specialized in low-budget movies (particularly Monogram and Republic), had now to turn their hand to making **B-movies** to supplement the programme. With the exception of Warners, Columbia and United Artists, all majors went bankrupt at some point during the Depression and became subject to direct interference from Wall Street (Bordwell *et al.*, 1985: 400).

In 1948 the majors suffered a reversal in fortune with the Supreme Court–Paramount decision. Litigation had been begun against the studios in 1938, but the Second World War put a halt to it until 1948. Exhibitors brought an anti-trust action to put an end to the film industry's monopoly over exhibition. On the grounds of unfair practices, the Supreme Court issued decrees that effectively divested the majors of their power as vertically integrated systems. The big five would have to relinquish their theatres, which represented about two-thirds of their capital investment (Cook, 1985: 10), and the little three would, with the big five, have to stop restrictive practices and coercion (block-booking) in the exhibition of their films. This decision opened the doors to independent film and, to a lesser degree, to foreign imports. In 1951, several appeals later, the majors had no choice but to comply with the law and enter into fair competition with minor production companies. This was but a first step in the demise of the studio system. Rising costs meant that the double bill and the B-movie with it disappeared. The lower costs of location shooting abroad also impacted upon studio use. Outside the system

other factors contributed to this decline: first, the rise in the popularity of television and, second, the effect of the House of Un-American Activities Committee on Hollywood both in terms of blacklisting certain actors, directors and scriptwriters and in terms of an unspoken or implicit **censorship** whereby certain types of films just would not get made (see **Hollywood blacklist**). Attempts to regain lost **audiences** through new departures in technology – 3-D, technicolour, **cinemascope** – had only a slight impact.

To stem losses, studios rented out space to television companies and even turned their own hands to making television programmes (in 1957 RKO was bought by Desilu – Lucille Ball's and Desi Arnaz's television production company – solely for making television programmes). Departments closed, land and real estate were sold off. The studio system became a ghost of its former self. More recently, studios have been bought up by large conglomerates for whom film production is just one of their practices. The current method of producing films is usually for an independent producer to put a package together and sell it to one or other of the studios (Konigsberg, 1993: 358–9).

There follows a brief history of the major and minor Hollywood studios, listed in chronological order in each category.

### The five majors (Fox, Paramount, Warners, MGM, RKO)

The five major studios at that time were Fox, Paramount, Warners, MGM and RKO.

#### *Fox Film Corporation/20th Century Fox*

Fox Film was established in 1913 by William Fox. Originally an exhibition company (in New York), it quickly became a production company (1915) with studios in Hollywood. Fox's ambition was to be the biggest major; that ambition was to cost his company so dear that he was forced out of it in 1931. In 1935, a small production company, 20th Century, headed by Joseph M. Schenk and Darryl F. Zanuck (formerly production head at Warner Brothers), merged with Fox and the company was renamed 20th Century Fox. Zanuck, as vice-president (a post he held for over twenty years), quickly turned the ailing fortunes of the former company around, and brought it into third position to MGM. This he achieved – at least during the late 1930s, more by the type of films he produced – popular **musicals** – than by his stable of stars, which he built up only slowly.

To the two he inherited from Fox – Shirley Temple and Will Rodgers – he added Tyrone Power, Sonja Henie, Alice Fay, Carmen Miranda and Betty Grable, and eventually, in the 1940s and 1950s, Henry Fonda, Marlon Brando, Marilyn Monroe, Jane Russell and Gregory Peck. In his stable of directors he could count Elia Kazan, John Ford and Joseph Mankiewicz. After 1948, Fox turned to location shooting and extended its repertoire of films to include 'realistic' crime films, **Westerns**, musicals and spectaculars. To attract audiences back into the theatres, Fox led the way in new technology – producing, for example, *The Robe* (1953), the first feature-length film to be shot in Cinemascope. Fox is now owned by Rupert Murdoch.

*Paramount Pictures Corporation*

Originally a distribution company established in 1914 by W. W. Hodkinson. As indicated above, when Zukor became president of the company in 1916, he set about vertically integrating this major, which lay second only to MGM during the studio system's heyday. During the silent era it boasted such famous names as Mary Pickford, Douglas Fairbanks, Gloria Swanson, William S. Hart and Fatty Arbuckle among its stars and Cecil B. De Mille, Erich von Stroheim, Mack Sennett and D. W. Griffith amongst its top directors. Griffith, Fairbanks and Pickford soon left to set up with Charlie Chaplin their own independent company, United Artists, in 1919. Nor was Paramount short of stars during the sound era, when it produced mainly **comedy** and light entertainment – with occasional **epics** (such as *The Ten Commandments*, De Mille, 1952). Mae West, Marlene Dietrich, Paulette Goddard, Hedy Lamar, Dorothy Lamour, Barbara Stanwyck, the Marx brothers, Bing Crosby and Bob Hope are some of the stars that made up the Paramount stable. During its Hollywood heyday, Paramount – because it owned so many theatres – produced forty to fifty films a year, more than any other studio. Dorothy Arzner was given her first directorial role by Paramount in 1927 – and was one of the very few women to accede to directorial status during Hollywood's years of ascendancy (1930–48).

After 1948, while continuing to make films, Paramount gradually ventured into television production, becoming heavily involved in the 1960s. In 1958 the company sold off all its rights to its 1929–49 feature films to Music Corporation America. In 1962 MCA had also acquired Universal. In 1966 Paramount was acquired by Gulf and Western. Until recently it was owned by the entertainment group Paramount Communications. But in 1994 it became the centre of a

protracted buy-out battle between two rival American cable companies, Viacom and QVC Network, which Viacom finally won.

### *Warner Brothers*

A production company established in 1923 by the four Warner brothers. Warner Brothers was the studio that introduced integral sound into films in 1927 with *The Jazz Singer* (Alan Crosland). This bold move was undertaken to improve the studio's status amongst the majors. Prior to this Warners had been the poor relation to the other studios because it was not yet vertically integrated. The introduction of sound revolutionized production practices, and catapulted Warners into major status. In 1928, it consolidated this status by purchasing its own theatres, first by buying out the Stanley Company (three hundred theatres), then a part share in First National, which it completely bought out in 1930. Warners was now truly integrated. Of all the companies, Warners is the one that rode out the Depression best. This was as a result of careful economic planning and strategies. The company (initially under the aegis of Darryl E. Zanuck, Warners' production head) rationalized its production into assembly-line production methods, low-budget movies and strict adherence to shooting schedules. This had two consequences. First, it meant that the company could produce fast and in significant numbers (around sixty films a year during the Depression period and thereafter through the 1930s). Second, the economic constraints influenced the product itself. Therefore **gangster** films and **backstage musicals** were the genres to prevail, because they were cheap to produce. **Social realism** and political relevance combined with a downbeat image endowed Warners' films with a populism that made their products particularly attractive to working-**class** audiences (Cook, 1985: 11–12). *Little Caesar* (1930), *The Public Enemy* (1931), *I Am a Fugitive from a Chain Gang* (1933), *The Roaring Twenties* (1939), *They Drive by Night* (1940) are but a sample list of 1930s films with social content or criticism at their core. During the war this liberalism gave way to more patriotic statements that were anti-isolationist, anti-pacifist and anti-Nazi. Less known in this category is *Sergeant York* (1941), but one film which has become legend – more, it has to be said, as a love story than a film about patriotism – is *Casablanca* (1942). Warners did not have 'stables' as such, but used contract directors, actors and crews. Raoul Walsh was a long-serving contract director (1939–51), Howard Hawks made *Sergeant York* and *To Have and Have Not* (1944); actors include Paul Muni, Humphrey Bogart, James Cagney, Edward

G. Robinson, Errol Flynn, James Dean, Bette Davis, Ingrid Bergman, Joan Crawford, Barbara Stanwyck, Lauren Bacall.

After 1948, Warner Brothers lost its theatres (as did the other majors because of the Supreme Court-Paramount decision), but it went on to produce numerous successful films (*A Star is Born*, 1954; *Rebel Without a Cause*, 1955; *My Fair Lady*, 1964). The company also went into television production in a big way. In 1967 Warners was sold to Seven Arts (a distributor and dealer in old films). Warner-Seven Arts distributed *Bonnie and Clyde* (Arthur Penn, 1967). In 1969 Warner-Seven Arts became Warner Communications. Warner Brothers is currently (since 1988) merged with Time Incorporated, and is now known as Time-Warner. Since joining Time Inc., the company was in continuous debt until 1992 when it made its first profit. Time-Warner is currently the largest American entertainment group.

### *Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer*

Created by a merger (completed by 1924) of three smaller studios (Metro, Goldwyn and Mayer), MGM was the leader among the majors during Hollywood's heyday. This was the studio of stars, spectacle and glamour that produced such glossy and glittering films as *The Wizard of Oz* and *Gone with the Wind* (both 1939 and directed by Victor Fleming). No set was too lavish, no special effects too expensive – for example the earthquake in *San Francisco* (W. S. Van Dyke, 1936). MGM's house style was influenced by two factors: first, high investment in pre-production and, second, the extremely tight rein on production held by Irving Thalberg, who saw a product through from start to finish. Investment in pre-production meant that films had multiple scriptwriters, and it was not uncommon during production for numerous editors to work on a particular film, or for a director to be replaced by another after previewing. This also meant that directors for this studio during the 1930s were less visible than in others. The same could not be said of its stars. Unlike Fox, which because of its small stable of talent had to make its films its stars, MGM had a veritable galaxy of stars – and was particularly renowned for its grooming of women into stars: Joan Crawford, Greta Garbo, Judy Garland, Greer Garson, Jean Harlow, Norma Shearer are some of its greatest female stars. Mickey Rooney and Spencer Tracey were two of the great names among the male attractions. But, undoubtedly *the* male star in this stable was Clark Gable – the labourer turned crowned king of Hollywood (1937).

After 1948, MGM's fortunes declined as with the other studios. In 1969 it was bought up by a Las Vegas businessman, Kirk Kerkorian, who sold off much of its real estate and other assets. In 1981, he purchased United Artists. MGM became MGM-UA. The company was then sold to the Turner Broadcasting System, which was subsequently sold back to Kerkorian, but not before Turner had kept the MGM film library for his own purposes (that is, for his film television channel, HBO), causing a serious cash-flow problem to MGM. The company was then taken over by Giancarlo Paretti, who had to relinquish control when the French bank Crédit Lyonnais foreclosed on loans made to him. Since 1992 MGM has been operated by the Crédit Lyonnais, but is losing $1m a day and has very few assets left (the UA film library is all that remains).

### *RKO Radio Pictures Incorporated*

As its name suggests this studio came into existence around the time of the launching of sound (1928). The Radio Corporation of America wanted to get into film production so that it could promote its own sound system, Photophone, against the Movietone system which the other majors had invested in. RCA joined forces with a distribution company which owned the Keith and Orpheum theatres – hence RKO. It became a ready-made vertically integrated company 'overnight'. In its heyday it produced nine Fred Astaire and Ginger Rogers films (most famously *Top Hat*, 1935). It also produced big hits such as *King Kong* (Ernest B. Schoedask, 1933), *Bringing up Baby* (Howard Hawks, 1938), *Citizen Kane* (Orson Welles, 1941) and *Notorious* (Alfred Hitchcock, 1946). RKO's production system was introduced early (1931) into the company's existence by David O. Selznick. Termed unit production, it was strikingly different from the other majors' systems in its unrestrictive practices of contracting an independent director to make a certain number of films free of studio supervision or interference. RKO is not associated (as are the other majors) with a specific genre, although alongside its prestige movies it did produce B-movies, particularly the **film noir** and **horror** genres. The output of B-movies greatly increased after 1940 to counter the severe losses caused by the studio's prestige-film policy. And by 1942 production of these low-budget films had become the new adopted policy.

After 1948, this company also went into decline, though more severely than its rival majors – since it would eventually disappear. It was bought up in 1948 by Howard Hughes and was subsequently

sold, in 1955, to General Tyre and Rubber Company who then, in 1957, sold the studios to the television programme producing company Desilu.

### The three minors (Universal, United Artists, Columbia)

The first of the three minors, *Universal*, formed in 1912 by Carl Laemmle, did not build its studios in Hollywood but in the San Fernando Valley (Universal City, 1915). The firm-handed Irving Thalberg was one of its first chiefs of production (later he went to MGM). Its most famed silent stars were Rudolph Valentino and Lon Chaney. During the 1930s Universal specialized in horror movies (*Frankenstein* and *Dracula*, both 1931) primarily because at this early stage in sound cinema they were relatively inexpensive to make, depending as they did on sets and **lighting** rather than a mobile camera (Cook, 1985: 24). The success of *Frankenstein*, directed by James Whale, sealed Universal's reputation as the 'home of horror'. In fact, the genre became virtually identified with Whale and Universal. Whale went on to make *The Invisible Man* (1933) and *The Bride of Frankenstein* (1935), arguably his masterpiece. Considering Universal's low-budget policy, the special effects of these three films are all the more remarkable. In the light of the Depression it is interesting to note the popularity of the horror genre. But then again audiences' escapism into horror **fantasy** was matched by their keen consumption of social realist films made during the same period by Warners. This studio was the first to make a sound movie about the First World War, *All Quiet on the Western Front* (1930), which was astonishing not just for its sound effects at such an early stage in sound technology but also for its pacifist message and lack of heroization. This film, directed by Lewis Milestone, became the prototype for many European **war movies** made during the 1930s. Universal went into receivership in 1933 for two years and Laemmle was obliged to sell off his holdings in 1936. The studio was relaunched and, though far from free of economic worries, its decline was stemmed until the mid-1940s by the popularity of its top stars Deanna Durbin, Abbott and Costello and W C. Fields. From 1946, to help its ailing fortunes, Universal adopted a new strategy which prevailed until the late 1950s: in order to attract big names that would 'sell' its products, it offered stars a percentage of the profits made on films in which they starred. This brought them James Stewart, Charlton Heston, Orson Welles, Marlene Dietrich and Janet Leigh amongst others. Also in 1946 it acquired International Pictures, an independent production

company: this helped to improve the company's distribution activities.

After 1948, to counter the effects of the anti-trust decision ending the industry's monopoly over exhibition, Universal re-established a studio identity by specializing in three main genres: thrillers, **melodramas** and Westerns (Cook, 1985: 24). In 1952 the studio was taken over by Decca Records. Later, in 1962, these two companies became part of Music Corporation of America, a talent agency highly invested in television production. Under MCA management, Universal went on to be successful in both domains by producing small-budget movies (ultimately destined for the television screen) and big-budget blockbuster movies (such as *Jaws*, 1975 and *E.T.*, 1982, both directed by Steven Spielberg). MCA was bought up in 1990 by the Japanese electronic company Matsushita for a staggering $6.6 billion (compare with the major Paramount valued at $10 billion) – an investment repaid perhaps by Universal's big Spielberg hit, *Jurassic Park* (1993).

### *United Artists Corporation*

Established in 1919 by Charlie Chaplin, Douglas Fairbanks, D. W Griffith and Mary Pickford as a protest against the oligarchy of the majors, the corporation was a distribution company for their own films made by them as independents (most famously *The Gold Rush*, 1925). By 1925 the paucity of films they had produced themselves obliged the corporation to distribute films made by other production companies. During the 1930s its most important releases were *City Lights* (Charlie Chaplin, 1931), *The Private Life of Henry VIII* (Alexander Korda, 1933) and *Modern Times* (Charlie Chaplin, 1936). But the major stumbling-block to its success, the lack (because of the majors' monopoly) of sufficient theatres in which to exhibit, was not fully removed until the anti-trust decree of 1948. After 1948, thanks to the anti-trust decision, United Artists was elevated to the status of a major. Unencumbered by huge overheads of studio ownership, the company flourished (*High Noon*, Fred Zinnemann, 1952; *Marty*, Delbert Mann; and distributing in the US the James Bond series during the 1960s and 1970s). This state of affairs prevailed, by and large, until the late 1970s when, buoyed by three Oscars in a row, 1975–7 (*One Flew over the Cuckoo's Nest*, Milos Forman, *Rocky*, John Alvisdon, and Woody Allen's *Annie Hall*), the company over-extended itself. Then part of the conglomerate Transamerica (since 1967),

United Artists was sold to MGM in 1981. Currently, MGM-UA produces and distributes a small number of films each year.

### *Columbia*

Originally CBC Sales Corporation, a distribution company founded by Harry and Jack Cohn and Joseph Brandt in 1920, in 1924 it entered into production and changed its name to Columbia. During the 1930s it produced predominantly B-movies which it sold to the 'big five'. In 1932 Brandt was bought out; Harry Cohn became president and head of production as well as principal shareholder and, much like Warners, imposed a tight rein of careful pre-production planning and short production schedules. Columbia rethought its production strategy when in 1934 its investment in a more upmarket movie, *It Happened One Night* (Frank Capra), brought great returns. Henceforth it would invest in both A- and B-movies. Although Columbia is not known for a stable of directors or stars (somewhat like Fox), none the less its 1930s output has been identified with one **auteur**, Frank Capra, and its 1940s films with one star, Rita Hayworth. The truth is that Columbia could ill afford to have directors and stars of its own and so it tended to buy them in (hired from other studios). As for actors, the company's practice was to have contract players and character actors, only occasionally setting out deliberately to groom an unknown into a star as it did successfully with Rita Hayworth, who became a true star with *Gilda* (Charles Vidor, 1946).

After 1948, the deregulationary effects of the anti-trust law benefited Columbia, and it began to develop a small stable of stars (Judy Holliday, Broderick Crawford and William Holden). It could afford to follow a production strategy of expensive adaptations of Broadway hits and best-selling novels. This was a successful strategy against television's increasing popularity but sensibly Columbia also saw the benefit of making products for television and as such was the first studio to recognize the potential of this new medium to effect its own economic growth. In 1950 it created a television subsidiary, Screen Gems; the other studios did not start to follow this trend until 1955. The most renowned of Columbia's earliest television products was the cop series *Dragnet* (1953). Another key to Columbia's success during the 1950s was its readiness to back not just independents but also foreign productions (for example Elia Kazan's *On the Waterfront*, 1954, and David Lean's *Lawrence of Arabia*, 1962). In the face of dipping fortunes it sold its studios in 1972 and rented space in Warner Brothers Burbank Studios (Konigsberg, 1993: 58). In 1982 the company was

bought up by Coca-Cola – an irony given its Poverty Row origins, its populist nature and pro-New Deal positioning in the 1930s (see Cook, 1985: 14–15). (Poverty Row is an area of Hollywood around Sunset Boulevard and Gower Street where Columbia and other small studios had their base, subsequently an expression used to refer to a low-budget type of production from small companies.) Columbia is now part of the Japanese Sony Group, which bought it in 1989 for $3.4 billion.

## Three smaller Hollywood studios (Essanay, Monogram and Republic)

### *Essanay*

Organized in 1907 and of short duration, effectively 'dying out' in 1917 when it was bought out by Vitagraph (a New York-based studio with studios in California, in turn bought out by Warners in 1925). Essanay built its early reputation on its Westerns (360 Bronco Billy films). It was also successful with its comedies and was clever enough to attract Charlie Chaplin away from Keystone. During his two-year stay with the company (1915–17) he made fourteen films – most noteworthy of which is *The Tramp* (1915) (Konisberg, 1993: 105).

### *Monogram Picture Corporation/Allied Artists Picture Corporation*

Monogram was established in 1930 and produced very cheap products, the most noteworthy being the *Charlie Chan* series. It formed a subsidiary, Allied Artists Productions, in 1946 to produce better-quality films. In 1953 the two merged and became Allied Artists Picture Corporation. Its best-known films are *Friendly Persuasion* (William Wyler, 1956) and *The Man who would be King* (John Huston, 1975). Later it produced mainly for television, eventually (in 1980) filing for bankruptcy.

### *Republic Pictures*

Established in 1935 and particularly reputed for its fast production practices. Specializing in B-movies, it was best known for its Westerns and could boast among its actors John Wayne, Gene Autry and Roy Rogers. The decline of the studio system and particularly the B-

movie in the 1950s signalled the end to the company's fortunes but not before it had produced the Oscar-winning *The Quiet Man* (John Ford, 1952) and the **gender**-bending *Johnny Guitar* (Nicholas Ray, 1954, starring Joan Crawford). The company folded in 1958.

*see also*: **Hollywood**

See Bordwell *et al.*, 1985; Konigsberg, 1993, for more detail on these companies. For an analysis of their history and their 'political' positioning see Cook, 1985.

## SUBJECT/OBJECT

In standard **classical narrative cinema**, which is fixed in phallocentric language, men are the subject, women the object. The narrative **discourses** deny woman her **subjectivity** and as such set up the binary **gender** divide whereby male is active, holder of the **gaze**, and female is passive and the object of male desire. (See **feminist film theory** which challenges this view.)

## SUBJECT/SUBJECTIVITY

This concept needs to be viewed within three different, if contiguous, contexts: within the film text itself, as part of the **structuralist/post-structuralist** debate on the subject and, finally, within psychoanalytic theory.

### *Within the film*

There are subjective points of view, **shots** as well as narrative techniques, that make it clear that one particular character's point of view is being privileged within the filmic text. For example, the uses of **flashback** and intra-diegetic narrative voice-over (so privileged in **film noir** adaptations of Raymond Chandler's novels) serve as markers to the authenticity of the protagonist's subjectivity. Similarly, point-of-view shots affect the **spectator**–text relation whereby the spectator feels positioned alongside that character's subjectivity and so identifies with that character. **Shot/reverse-angle shots** represent another series of shots that stitch us into the narrative and also into character identification (see **suture**).

### *As part of the structuralist/post-structuralist debate*

The structuralist theory of the subject was based primarily in Marxian-Althusserian thinking which perceived the subject as a construct of material structures. Thus we are the subjects of such structures as language, cultural **codes and conventions**, institutions – what Althusser called ideological state apparatuses (ISAs). We are, he argued, interpellated as subject (see **ideology**) by ISAs such as the church, education, police, family and the media. The effect of this totalizing and anti-humanist theory (the subject as effect or construct of institutions) on spectator theory was similarly monolithic. Film, as a pre-existing structure, is like all other ISAs in its ideological functioning, and as such interpellates the spectator, thereby constituting her or him as subject. Post-structuralists (Michel Foucault, Jacques Derrida, Jean-François Lyotard) argued against this totalizing theory and proposed a different vision of the subject as simultaneously constituted and constituting – as both effect and agent of the text (for further discussion see entry on **spectator**).

### *Within psychoanalysis (see also psychoanalysis)*

According to Jacques Lacan, human subjectivity, the unconscious and language are all interrelated. The unconscious is structured like a language and so is produced in much the same way as the subject, through language. When the child goes through the mirror phase it first perceives itself as a unified being (the ego-ideal), although in identifying with the reflection it is in fact identifying with the other (what is there in the mirror) and in so doing misrecognizes itself. Second, because the child is held up to the mirror by the mother, it then perceives its similitude with or difference from the mother, senses absence, loss, separation from the mother and desires reunification with her. The mother becomes the first love-object of the child. However, the child also perceives the mother as lack: lacking the penis. This lack becomes a source of castration anxiety for the boy child as he enters into the Symbolic Order, into language (see **Imaginary/Symbolic**). The issues around the girl child's entry into the Symbolic are more complex because she simultaneously perceives her mother as her first desired object and sees herself as the same (this point is more fully developed in **feminist film theory**).

The child's entry into the Symbolic amounts to its entry into and acquisition of language. So the subject is the speaking subject. However, in order to be part of language and human society, the child

must conform to the Law of the Father (the site of language) and reproduce it. To do so, the subject has to appear to be a unified being. Thus, libidinal drives for the mother have to be repressed because according to the Law of the Father they are taboo; he forbids access through the utterance of the patriarchal 'No'. These drives also have to be repressed because to be conscious of them is to be aware that one is *not* a unified being, for the following reasons. These libidinal drives represent a desire to find again the imagined unity with the mother 'pre-lack' (before the knowledge of lack). However, the child, after entry into the Symbolic, does not leave the Imaginary behind even though it must suppress these particular drives. Part of the child's trajectory is forever trying to return to the Imaginary, but since it may not desire the mother, these particular drives will be repressed into the unconscious (that which is not spoken but which is inscribed in language as taboo or the patriarchal 'No'). The child will seek an alternative moment of imagined unity to compensate for the lack represented by the mother and will imagine an idealized image of itself as complete. In other words it will seek to return to that first stage of the mirror phase when it felt a unified being – the ego-ideal.

Thus the subject is always divided (self/other; unified/not unified). What gets repressed into the unconscious is that which recalls the subject's lack of unity. The unconscious, in this respect, threatens our sense of unity.

It is not difficult to see how this theory of the subject is relevant to film studies. We saw above, considering the structuralist/post-structuralist debate, that the spectating subject is, in a sense, a divided subject (dialectically positioned as constituted or constituting) in relation to the filmic text. Because film projects before us ideal images in the form of **stars** and a seamless reality that disguises its illusory unity (see **apparatus** and **suture**), film functions **metonymically** for this imagined unity of the ego-ideal and as such allows us to identify with that ego-ideal (see **spectator**). But film also does something else. It projects our desires on to the screen, it functions as a release for our repressed unconscious state and our **fantasies**. Why do so many of us like **thrillers**, **horror movies**, **melodramas** and so forth? So film is, simultaneously, the place where the spectator can find imaginary unity *and* the site where the unspoken can be spoken – that is, a 'safe' place from which to observe our lack of unity. Pornographic and bondage films would be the most extreme in terms of visioning the unconscious, but many a **film noir** replicates our most deep-rooted fantasies and repressed 'hatreds or phobias'.

*see also*: **apparatus**, **diegesis**, **enunciation**, **ideology**, **psychoanalysis**, **spectator**, **suture**, **theory**

For more depth on this issue see Kaplan, 1983; Kuhn, 1982; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988.

## SUBJECTIVE CAMERA

The camera is used in such a way as to suggest the point of view of a particular character. High- or low-angle **shots** indicate where she or he is looking from; a panoramic or panning shot suggests she or he is surveying the scene; a tracking shot or a hand-held camera shot signifies the character in motion. Subjective shots like these also implicate the **spectator** into the **narrative** in that she or he identifies with the point of view.

## SURREALISM

A movement that dates back to the 1920s and which impacted on films of that time but which still has a small influence today – particularly in **horror** films. This movement, much influenced by Freud, strove to embody in art and poetry the irrational forces of dreams and the unconscious. Surrealist films are concerned with depicting the workings of the unconscious (perceived as irrational, excessive, grotesque, libidinal) and with the liberating force of unconscious desires and **fantasy** that are normally repressed.

*see also*: **avant-garde, underground cinema**

For more depth see Hammond, 2000; Williams, 1981.

## SUTURE

This term means, literally, to stitch up (from the medical term for stitching up a cut or wound). In film **theory** the system of suture has come to mean, in its simplest sense, to stitch the spectator into the filmic text. As a critical concept it was introduced into film studies by theorists, starting with Jean-Pierre Oudart (1977), and was based on studies in child psychoanalysis conducted by Jacques

Lacan in the 1960s. It is important to note that Lacan primarily addressed the psychology of the male child and that it is feminist Lacanians – Hélène Cixous, Luce Irigaray and Julia Kristeva – who brought the female child's psychosexual development into a central space for consideration. In a similar way, until recently, in terms of its application to film studies, film theorists have blissfully ignored the case for female spectatorship. However, **feminist film theory** has significantly redressed this imbalance (for details see also **spectator**).

Lacan used the term *suture* to signify the relationship between the conscious and the unconscious which, in turn, he perceived as an uneasy conjunction between what he terms the Imaginary and the Symbolic orders – two orders which, after infancy, are always co-present. In its initial manifestation, the Imaginary stands for the period in infancy of a child's life when it first glances at its reflection in the mirror and sees itself as a unified being. This period, which Lacan terms the mirror phase, marks the first stage of the child's acquiring an identity separate from the mother and marks the child's first understanding of space, distance and position. This moment is pre-Oedipal. It is a moment of pure *jouissance* or jubilation (see **psychoanalysis**) and narcissism in which the child, held up to the mirror by the mother, sees or senses itself as a unified being at the centre of the world. This moment cannot last, however, and there occurs a second moment, also during this mirror phase when the child recognizes its difference from or sameness with the mother and senses the absence and loss of the mother – since it identifies itself as separate from her.

At this juncture, according to Lacan, the Oedipus complex plays its part in dissolving the mirror phase and pushing the child into the Symbolic. Upon entry into the Symbolic both male and female child will feel not whole but divided. This time both sexes attempt to signify themselves through language, that which is outside from their selves (the language/Law of the Father). The Symbolic now becomes the Other (which Lacan signifies with a capital 'O'). The subject represents itself in the field of the Other (language) – capital 'O' because the Law of the Father. To this first sense of fragmentation comes another, felt by the fact that the subject can never fully be represented in speech since speech cannot reflect the unconscious (the repressed, unspeakable desire for the mother or the father). The subject, in representing itself, can only do so at the cost of division (conscious/unconscious; self/Other). The difference for the two sexes is of course the degree of division or fragmentation.

This is in direct correlation to the *mastery* as subject *in* and *of* that language. The male child can be part of it/in the field of the Other since he follows in the name of the father, even though he is always in danger of being castrated by the big 'O' – hence the capital letter (as in capital punishment). The already always castrated girl is excluded by it; however, in exchange she remains always doubly desiring (for more detail on the female child see **psychoanalysis** and **spectator**).

To return to the general question of division, as the (conscious) subject seeks to represent itself in the field of the Other, it does so at the expense of coming after the fact or word by which time the (unconscious) subject is already not there but becoming something else, a situation Lacan (1977: 304) refers to as 'future anterior' (see **enunciation** and **absence/presence**). In other words, the conscious subject utters or enunciates 'I' and becomes situated as 'I' (the spoken subject becomes presence). However, the unconscious subject is already beyond that 'I' and becoming something else (the spoken subject now becomes absence). As the spoken subject fades, becomes loss or lack, so the subject will attempt to recapture itself as a unified being, the idealized image of the Imaginary. However, that idealized image is a recall of that first mirror reflection and the child's identification with its own specular image. In other words, that image is an external one, the subject as seen from outside (not from within) – therefore also the subject as it imagines others see it. Lacan reasons that this is where the subject confronts the divided notion of self: the image of the self is accurate but also delusory. It is the same and other. The subject (mis)recognizes itself both as itself and as other. Thus the attempt to produce or reproduce that image is to produce a misrecognition of the self – the self as it cannot be. And it is at this juncture that the conjunction – which Lacan terms suture – occurs between the Imaginary and the Symbolic to close the gap opened up by this breach in the subject's identity (between recognition and misrecognition, and between the conscious and unconscious).

### *In summary*

The Symbolic does not 'dislodge' the Imaginary but functions to regulate it, which is why the two orders are described as always being co-present. This co-presence can best be summed up in the following way. The early *jouissance* or jubilation felt at the mirror stage is soon threatened by the child's realization that she or he is not a unified

being at the centre of the world but part of a larger social and Symbolic order within and against which the individual is constantly trying to define her or his identity – including reasserting herself or himself as a unified being. It follows, therefore, that the psyche is also not a simplified entity as it fluctuates between the desire for the ideal of the unified being of the Imaginary and the knowledge imposed by the Symbolic that it is composed of many conflicting forces. In psychoanalytic terms, then, suture is perceived as the striving of the ego to stitch these two orders together, to fill the gaps in the rupture implicitly caused by these two orders, to unify them rather than let them split asunder and thus (one must presume) split the psyche in two. (For further reading on Lacan see Grosz, 1990.)

### *To return to film theory*

During the 1970s and early 1980s the debate around suture and its applicability to film was a contested one but one that was introduced because of a perceived need to account fully for the viewing experience of a film during its projection and to describe the relationship between film narrative and spectator. What follows is a synopsis of the arguments. In its first, simplified form, suture was perceived to be the effect of certain filmic codes that stitched the spectator into the film text. For Oudart (1977) the system of shot/reverse-angle shot is the primary suturing device in **classical narrative film**. In this series of shots, which establishes the point of view of two characters in (say) a conversation, the spectator adopts first one, then the other position and becomes both subject and object of the look. The first shot, through an **eyeline match**, positions the spectator as the one looking, character A. The spectator adopts A's position and looks at character B. The next shot, reverse shot, positions the spectator as character B. But character B, as we know, was the object of character A's look. So the spectator adopts the position of the object that A looked at. However, character B now looks at character A. The off-screen space (where A had been in the first shot) now comes into view. Thus, according to Oudart, the spectator makes sense of off-screen space and becomes stitched into the film.

In general terms, the process of suturing goes as follows. The spectator upon first encountering a cinematic **image** feels much the same jubilation or *jouissance* as does the child in the mirror phase. This image appears to be complete or unified in the same way that the child's specular image appears to it. At first, then, the spectator feels secure in an imaginary relationship with the image. But this

image is an idealized image, so in fact the spectator is caught up in a fascination with a delusion, with the unreal. Yet, as we know, the Imaginary and the Symbolic are always co-present. Thus this secure imaginary relationship with the image is soon under threat as the spectator becomes aware of the image frame (imag(in)e(d) frame) and therefore of off-screen space, of absence, of the absent space off-screen. This gap, this absence or lack of point of view felt by the spectator, is similar to the breach, noted by Lacan, in the subject's identity as same and other, as absence/presence. In this instance the spectator starts wondering whose point of view it is and who is framing the image. The image starts to show itself for what it is, an artefact, an illusion and in so doing threatens to reveal film as a system of signs and codes. What relieves this exposure of film's signifying practices and sutures the spectator back into the illusion, back into her or his earlier imaginary unity with the image, is the reverse-angle shot (the second point-of-view shot). The spectator now sees that the first shot was the point of view of the character currently in the shot. Off-screen space becomes on-screen space. Absence has become presence. The artifice of film can continue. The **narrative** is safe and the spectator comfortably reinscribed into the filmic discourse.

Daniel Dayan (1974) takes this idea of deception (what Oudart also termed the tragedy inherent in cinematic **discourse**) further and examines it within the context of **ideology**. If, he argues, the system of suture renders the film's signifying practices invisible, then the spectator's ability to read or decode the film remains limited. In this way, this system allows the ideological effect of the film to slip by unnoticed and to become absorbed by the spectator. Film becomes **hegemonic** rather than a reflection of reality. And it is not difficult to point to **Hollywood**, as Kaplan (1983: 132) does, and its dream factory as exemplifying these cinematic strategies of smoothing over any notion of conflict and contradiction and presenting the spectator with an unquestioning or unruptured idea of idealness of the American way of life (see discussion of seamlessness in **editing**).

Other theorists saw this interpretation of the system of suture as too limiting both in terms of its enunciation (how it negotiates the spectator's access to film) and in its relation to ideology. With regard to the former point, Salt (1977), Rothman (1976), Heath (1981) and Silberman (1983) all argue that to limit suture to the shot/reverse-angle shot is to lose sight of the fact that, as a shot, it is not a dominant one in cinema – even Hollywood cinema – and that this shot should be seen as just one example of suture alongside other devices

consistent with **continuity editing**. Nor, they argue, should suture be limited to pure cinematic devices. Silberman, especially, demonstrates how suture is synonymous with the operations of classical narrative (that is, film discourse in its widest sense of **editing** and **lighting**, as well as compositional and formal narrative elements). According to her analysis, narrative is indispensable to the system in providing the spectator with a subject position.

In terms of ideology both Heath and Rothman (albeit in different ways) turn Dayan's argument around. Rothman argues against the system of suture by saying that the dominant point-of-view sequence is in fact a three-(and not a two-) shot sequence (viewer/view/viewer). He goes on to say that the point-of-view sequence appropriates the viewer's **gaze** in the second shot to show the spectator what the viewer sees. It is not an authorized shot – that is, the viewer does not authorize it, the point-of-view sequence merely takes over her or his gaze and then cuts back in shot three to the viewer. The question of whose point of view it is, Rothman asserts, simply does not pose itself. The spectator knows it is a point-of-view shot and so is aware of that cinematic code (as much as any others). It is not then a question of deception, nor is it an attempt to render film's signifying practices invisible, and as such its function is not an ideological one. It follows, then, that classical narrative is not necessarily hegemonic and that if there is a question of ideology to be addressed in relation to cinema then it cannot be thought of (as by Dayan) in terms of some abstract ahistorical absolute but rather in terms of history. If cinema is an ideological system, Rothman's argument goes, then it is so only in so far as throughout history it has served a variety of bourgeois ideologies.

Heath does not reject suture, although he does agree with Salt and Rothman that the system cannot be reduced to the function of the single cinematic code of the reverse-angle shot. As with Silberman, he believes that suture – because it is the conjunction between the Imaginary and the Symbolic – is necessarily present at all levels of filmic enunciation and that therefore all texts suture. This is not a sweeping generalization. For Heath the concept of suture is an invaluable one because it draws attention to the fact that the image is not the unified idealized image of the Imaginary it purports to be but, rather, an incomplete one – one therefore that requires the speaking subject (uttering or enunciating from the Symbolic Order) to complete. But, as has already been pointed out in the Lacan section, the speaking subject fades as soon as it has spoken. Any notion that the image is complete is illusory and it is in this

respect that the ideological representations that images construct can be taken to task. Interpreted this way then, suture, contrary to Dayan's contention, leads the way into an understanding of ideological representation.

Arguably the most lasting outcome of the debate around suture concerns the relationship of the spectator to the screen and the pleasure experienced in cinema's reconstruction within the spectator of an illusory sense of the early-in-life imagined unity. Attendant within this identification process is the separation from the mother and the implicit sexual drives that separation brings with it. Cinema in this respect becomes a **mise-en-scène** of desire: first, it constructs the spectator as subject and, second, it establishes the desire to look with all that that connotes in terms of visual pleasure for the spectator. In its early days, this debate on visual pleasure, which ran concurrently with that on suture, was completely unproblematized in terms of **sexuality** and **scopophilia**. Since then, however, feminist film theory has entered into the debate and widened it to include analyses of masculine erotic desire and the male fetishizing gaze as well as female representation and spectatorship (see also **feminist film theory** and **voyeurism/fetishism**).

*see also*: **audience, enunciation, Imaginary/Symbolic, Oedipal trajectory, psychoanalysis, shot/reverse-angle shot, spectator, subject/subjectivity**

For further reading see Kuhn, 1982; Lapsley and Westlake, 1988; Mast *et al.*, 1992.

## THEORY

This entry limits itself to a reasonably brief history of the development of theory since the beginning of the twentieth century. Specific details of major developments are given in other entries.

Although there is no attempt to be deterministic here, there does appear to be a quite convenient way of carving up film theory into epochs of theory-pluralism and theory-monism. Indeed we can determine three epochs: 1910–30s, a period of pluralism; 1940s-60s, a period of serially monistic theories; 1970s-2000s, pluralism once more.

### *1910–1930s*

Cinema was very quickly perceived to be an art form. Arguably, the genesis of film theory was in France. The earliest reference to film as art occurred with the start in 1908 of Film d'Art's productions (the first of which was *L'Assassinat du duc de Guise*, set to the music of Saint-Saëns). However, one of the earliest attempts to align cinema with other arts can be found in the film-maker Louis Feuillade's advance publicity sheet for his series *Le Film esthétique* (1910). In his manifesto he begged the question: since film appeals to our sight and, therefore, has as its natural origins painting and the theatre, surely cinema can provide those same aesthetic sensations? He also perceived cinema as a popular art and as an economic art (a synergy between technology and the aesthetic) and as an artistic economy (art closely allied with capital). A year later Ricciotto Canudo published in France his manifesto 'The Birth of a Sixth Art', in which he established the two main lines of debate that would preoccupy theorists well into the 1920s and in some respects into the 1930s: the debate around cinema's **realism**, on the one hand and, on the other, around a pure non-representational cinema based on form and rhythm.

A few years later a German psychologist, Hugo Münsterberg, introduced the idea that cinema was not filmed reality but a psychological and aesthetic process that revealed our mental experiences. After the First World War, the debate widened further, mainly among French critics and film-makers, and addressed issues of high and popular art, realist versus **naturalist** film, the **spectator**–screen relationship, **editing** styles (a debate much influenced by the **Soviet cinema** of the 1920s), simultaneity, **subjectivity**, the unconscious and the **psychoanalytical** potential of film, **auteur** cinema versus script-led cinema, cinema as rhythm and as **sign**. In the 1930s, following the advent of **sound**, the ground shifted and the debate centred on the very polemical issue of whether sound was a good or bad thing for the aesthetics of cinema. Certain critics claimed that it was the death-knell for experimental cinema, others thought that it brought with it the chance of a new radicalization of cinema. In this latter case, film was linked with social praxis (that is, it acted as a **transparence** on society and its interactions with individuals) but was also revelatory of mental states.

### *1940s–60s*

This was predominantly the period where the search was on, particularly after 1946, for a total theory. Speculatively, we could say that this desire for total theory is easily understandable in the light of the Jewish and atomic holocausts – to such irrational acts only a single unified vision can provide security and stability. The two main theories to mention here are, first, the so-called **auteur theory** (1950s) and, second, **structuralism** (1960s), although we should also point out that these two were preceded by Alexandre Astruc's (1948) concept of cinema as language (caméra-stylo as he defined it). Seeing film as a matter of authorial signs (whether stylistic or thematic) was too limiting, denying the other structures and production practices that go into making a film (see **auteur theory**). It was also a conservative romantic aesthetic in so far as the film-maker was isolated as the aesthetic genius. Finally, it was fraught because it introduced the idea of 'great' directors.

Similarly, structuralism and auteur-structuralism, which 'replaced' auteur theory in the 1960s, ran into difficulties, this time of total theory crushing the aesthetic. Structuralism was a theory which, it was believed, could be applied to all aspects of society and culture. However, it ended up in rigid formalism which removed any discussion of pleasure in the viewing. Although this theory purported to reveal all hidden structures behind film-making (modes of production, impact of **stars** on choices, socio-historical context of production and so on), in fact it continued to focus on the film-maker and her or his product – hence the term auteur-structuralism. The most central theorist in this debate as it concerned cinema was the semiotician Christian Metz (1971 and 1972), who devised a linguistic paradigm that could account for all elements of a film's composition – almost a grammar of film (see **semiotics**). Analysing film this way meant that a critic could scientifically and objectively evaluate a film and at the same time determine the style of a particular auteur or film-maker and indeed determine also if a particular film was consistent with that film-maker's style. The focus, therefore, was on the hidden structures and codes in the text and in this respect it answered the question of how the text comes to be – not how it comes to mean. Thus, ultimately, the limitation of this total theory was its formalism (for fuller discussion see **structuralism**).

### *1970s–2000s*

Total theory made it evident that a single theory would never be sufficient to explain and analyse film. Where in this total theory, for example, could one talk about the **spectator**-text relationship? However, there was no need to throw the baby out with the bathwater, hence the term **post-structuralism**. Psychoanalysis and semiotics in their structuralist phase had started to shatter the concept of the unity of the auteur. The effects of **deconstruction** theory, introduced by Jacques Derrida around 1967, would help to do the rest. Deconstruction helped to recentre the theory debate in a pluralistic context. In essence, deconstruction stipulates that a text is not transparent, natural or innocent and therefore must be unpicked, deconstructed. The non-transparency must be investigated to show just how many texts there are – all producing meaning. There is no longer any single reading of a text, nor indeed is there any final reading.

Post-structuralism, then, did several things. It defined the auteur's place within the textual process – the auteur was now a figure constructed out of her or his films (a far less authoritative position). It established the importance of **intertextuality** – the effects of different texts upon one another. There is no such thing as a 'pure' text, all texts have intertextual relations with others. As far as film is concerned, this means relations with other films and of course with the 'invisible' texts such as the modes of production, the dynamics between actors, crew and film-maker (and so on). Post-structuralism also established the fact that film has **ideological** effects, therefore the question of the **subject** comes into play (who is the subject: the text, the auteur, the spectator?). What also comes into play is the question of the effects of the **enunciating** text (the film as performance) upon the spectator. In the final analysis poststructuralism opened up textual analysis to a pluralism of approaches which did not reduce the text to the status of object of investigation but as much subject as those reading, writing or producing it.

In Anglo-Saxon countries the other significant area of film theory, **feminist film theory**, helped to develop the debate along several new lines of investigation. The whole question of gendered **subjectivity** and **agency**, not addressed since the 1920s, was re-opened. Who held the **gaze**, within and without the screen, was a fundamental issue raised in this area. **Genre** and **gender** also generated questions: if certain films were gender specific (for example **Westerns** for men, **melodrama** for women), what were the ideological

operations at work and what were the spectator-text relationships depending on what sort of genre was being viewed? Further, given the ostensible gendered subjectivity of the viewer, what could be said about pleasure in viewing?

## THIRD CINEMA

In 1968 a group of radical Argentinian film-makers, Grupo Cine Liberación, made a three-part four and a half hours long political film *La Hora de los hornos/The Hour of the Furnaces*. It was shot clandestinely and smuggled to Italy for processing. Its importance needs to be measured against the political climate of the times. Argentina's popular president Juan Perón had been deposed in 1955 and since then the country had been ruled by a series of military dictatorships. This film was intended to wake people up and radicalize them against the latest military coup of 1966. Fifty prints were in secret circulation in Argentina over a five-year period until 1973 when the Peronists won the elections and, however briefly, a less repressive government was in place. This militant film was described by the group as 'a film act' – one that was open to dialogue and designed to be stopped when inter-titles directed questions to the spectator to open up debate (Chanan, 1997: 373).

Following on from the making of this film, two members of the film group, Fernando Solanas and Octavio Getino, wrote a manifesto based on the experience of making the film: 'Towards a Third Cinema' (1969, reprinted in 1983) in which they call for a 'decolonization of culture' through a **counter-cinema** (Chanan, 1997: 373–4). And so the term Third Cinema was coined and as such refers to both theory and practice. The concept Third Cinema was used to distinguish it from First Cinema (**Hollywood**/Eurocentric cinemas) and Second Cinema (European art cinema and the cinema of **auteurs**). It was also called Third Cinema because it emanated from countries and continents outside the two dominant spheres of power: the Western (first world) and the Eastern (second world) super-power blocks (these two blocks now of course no longer exist since the demise of the Soviet Union in 1989). The naming of this Third Cinema was intentionally playful – a riposte to economists (who had carved the world up in this way) *and* to dominant Western cinemas. Third Cinema refers to films (but not, as we shall explain, to all films) made by countries of the so-called Third World – countries, that is, which do not belong to the developed industrial countries. It is important,

therefore, not to confuse the two terms Third Cinema and Third World Cinema. This is because Third Cinema is ostensibly political in its conceptualization since it seeks to promote the cause of socialism and to counter what Solanas and Getino perceive as the **ideologically** unsound film-making practices of the two other cinemas, especially Hollywood (see **cinema nôvo** entry). Thus Third Cinema challenges First World consumerist cinema and Second World aesthetic auteur cinema. Clearly, not all Third World cinemas do this. To take the example of popular Indian cinema (Hindi popular films) it is evident that while its own film-making practices might have little to do with Hollywood production styles, none the less, it is a cinema of entertainment geared to promoting popular song, its **stars** and to the representation of an imagined mythical India (as, for example, in epic melodramas of self-sacrificing mothers and swashbuckling heroes). It is not about resistance to a First or Second world cinema – and in fact in its major studio-city Mumbai (formerly Bombay), production practices were originally based on an 'imitation' of Hollywood (producing a hybrid name, **Bollywood**). However, India has and still does produce another cinema that resists. One such cinema is the so-called New Indian Cinema whose beginnings, in 1969, coincide with the publication of the Third Cinema Manifesto (although it is only coincidence, since the funding scheme had been put in place several years before by the state (see below)).

Generally speaking, these Third World countries do not have a fully developed film industry (at least in the sense of Hollywood and some European cinemas like France). The major exceptions are Brazil, Argentina, India, Pakistan (to a degree), China and Egypt. Some of the films produced by these Third World countries, primarily in Latin America, Africa, Asia and the Middle East, or at least the ones that get distributed outside these countries often have political resonances. And these are the films that are counted as Third Cinema. These films are political in terms of making political statements either directly or through allegory in relation to, or about their own country. They are also political stylistically (as a counter-cinema) and again target their own nation's mainstream cinema (see below). Finally, they are politicized in their statements (style and content) against dominant film practices outside their country.

This politicization of Third Cinema dates back to the 1960s when liberation struggles and revolutions in these countries became worldwide news and film-makers made films either advocating or challenging these changes. Since that period also, the cinema of these countries has been fairly consistent in its opposition to the colonial

film practices of the Western world, particularly as exemplified by Hollywood. With the exception of India, which has a huge film industry (producing some 800 to 900 films per year) and has successfully exported to other continents (especially Africa), American and European products have swamped the screens of these Third World countries with their pro-capitalist messages. The need was felt, in the 1960s as now, to project images of the indigenous realities and this was done in a variety of ways depending on the particular country's political culture and the individual film-makers' vision and working conditions.

Despite major differences between the cinemas of the countries constituting Third Cinema, they do have in common a desire to address the effects of colonialism (as in Africa and India) or neo-colonialism (as in Latin America, some African countries and Asia, including the Indian continent), exclusion and oppression (all of these countries or continents). This Third Cinema sets out deliberately to politicize cinema and to create new cinematic **codes and conventions**. Gabriel (1982: 16ff.) discusses the major themes of this Third (politicized) cinema. This cinema addresses issues of **class**, race, culture, religion, sex, and national integrity. Class struggle between the poor and the rich is at the core of this cinema. But in these films the issue of race is seen within the context of class antagonism (ibid.: 16). The preservation of popular indigenous cultures and the representation of them in opposition to the dominant colonial and imperialist values espoused by the ruling classes, constitute an 'aesthetics of liberation' (ibid.) in Third Cinema. Contradictions inherent in political struggle within the context of deeply rooted structures of religion are **foregrounded** as is, very occasionally, the struggle for the emancipation of women (see Deepa Metha's *Fire*, 1997, as an example of representation of forbidden desire between two Indian women).

In terms of Third Cinema practice, several nations have had the term ascribed to their work *post facto*. While this is not necessarily a problem, insofar as these cinemas correspond to the ethos of Third Cinema, we do come up against the fact that several of these cinemas owe their existence to either state funding (as is the case for Cuba and to some degree India) or to assistance (in the form of training or finance) from previously colonizing countries (as is the case for some African countries). Thus, in terms of state funding, in 1959, right on the heels of the Cuban Revolution, Fidel Castro set up the Cuban Institute of Cinematographic Art and Industry and **documentaries** and feature films were soon being produced. Cuba very quickly established itself on the international scene. In the second instance,

help from former colonizers, some African countries such as Senegal and the North African countries (Tunisia, Algeria and Morocco) have been assisted in their film-making practices, mostly in the form of training (in these cases by France). Similarly, in Ghana the infrastructure of colonial film-making (left behind by the British) was used to build the on-going film industry (see **Third World cinema** entry for more detail on these countries film industries; see also Diawara's useful essay, 1986: 61–5; and for an in-depth study of African cinema see Ukadike, 1994).

What is interesting, however, is how so many of these so-called Third World countries came to a similar position in the late 1960s around the need for a third type of cinema even though they may not have evoked the term 'Third Cinema' itself. Thus, in the late 1960s, film-makers in Africa established independent groups within their own countries and came together to form a Pan-African organizational means for developing cinema as a revolutionary tool. The manifestos written at that time are very similar to those written in Latin America and the intentions were the same (see above). And in 1969, the Fédération Panafricaine des Cinéastes (FEPACI) was established in Algiers 'to use film as a tool for the liberation of the colonized countries and as a step towards the total unity of Africa' (Diawara, 1986: 69). Furthermore, the bi-annual Film Festival at Ouagadougou in Burkina Faso was also established in 1969 – the Festival Panafricaine du cinéma de Ouagadougou (FEPASCO).

Film-makers from **Africa** (see **Third World** entry), whose work is clearly politicized and therefore considered as Third Cinema, are not well known in the West, although Ousmane Sembene, Djibril Diop Mambéty and Idrissa Ouedraogo of Senegal, Med Hondo from Mauritania, and Souleymane Cissé from Mali have made the crossover into Western cinema theatres. Conversely, to take only one example, the Ghanaian independents, active since the late 1970s, are hardly known to us at all. In this context, the Ghanaian independents Kwaw Painstil Ansah and King Ampaw make an interesting comparative study in relation to Third Cinema practice and the need to safeguard creative autonomy. Both claim to have done this, but they have done so at very different prices. For his part, Ansah refused foreign money or partnerships for his films and thus managed with great difficulty to pull off his productions, making two films in seventeen years (*Love Brewed in an African Pot*, 1981 which took him ten years to complete, and *Heritage ... Africa*, 1988). This story is familiar to other African film-makers, for example, Mambéty who struggled to finance his few films. The other Ghanaian film-maker,

Ampaw, co-produced his films with foreign companies and foreign funds which allowed him to make two feature films in two years (*Kukurantumi*, 1984 and *Juju*, 1988) (for more detail see Ukadike, 1994: 131–65).

Continuing our survey, **Indian** cinema has a strong tradition in Third Cinema practice, beginning as explained in 1969 when state financing made it possible for a new generation of film-makers to emerge on the scene. Mrinal Sen and Mani Kaul are seen as the originators of this New Indian Cinema. However, the heritage of this contestatory and politicized cinema goes back, first, to the work of the influential communist-backed theatre and film movement, the Indian People's Theatre Association (IPTA) which launched its first film production in 1946 (*Dharti Ke Lal/Children of the Earth*, K. A. Abbas) and, second, to the art cinema made by Satyajit Ray during the 1950s. Mani Kaul's cinema is more evidentially counter-cinematic given its formalist concerns and the debates it raises on cinematic practice (e.g. *Usi Roti/Our Daily Bread*, 1969). But again, Ritwik Ghatak's work of the 1950s and early 1960s pre-dates these concerns, albeit in a slightly different way. Ghatak mixes documentary realism with myth, tribal and folk traditions – truly blurring the boundaries between fact and fiction. See, for example, *Nagarik/The Citizen*, 1952, *Ajantrik/The Unmechanical*, 1957. See also his deeply political trilogy about refugee poverty and conditions in Calcutta which is based on his own experience of watching refugees fleeing to Calcutta during the famine of 1943 and the partition of India in 1947 (*Meghe Dhaka Tara/The Cloud-Capped Star*, 1960, *Komal Gandhar*, 1961, *Subarnareka*, 1962). Recently, a new cinema of resistance that appears to follow in Ghatak's tradition – which is not feature film but independent documentary film production – has emerged (see Patwardhan's *We Make History*, 1993, *Father Son and Holy War*, 1993).

Finally, in this brief overview, we must make mention of **Latin American** cinema especially since the term Third Cinema emerged from these countries (see Burton 1986 and 1990; Chanan, 1983; King, 1990; King *et al.*, 1993 for more detail). Armed struggle is a theme particularly identified with this Third Cinema. Labels such as guerilla cinema, garbage cinema and cannibal-tropicalist cinema are deliberately and provocatively used by these film-makers to demarcate their practice from First and Second cinemas – and of course to point to the radical nature of their purpose within their own nation-state. Indeed, indirect and direct social and political criticism of existing regimes are more commonly associated with Latin American Third

Cinema films of the 1960s than with any other Third Cinemas of that time. This is particularly the case for Brazil and Argentina. In Brazil this cinema often took the form of an aesthetics of hunger or violence (see **cinema nôvo** entry) – as, for example in Glauber Rocha's *Terra em Transe* (*Land in Anguish*, 1967). In Argentina revolutionary cinema took the form of 'avant-garde militant documentary' (Shohat and Stam, 1994: 260) – somewhat in the same light as Pontecorvo's *La Bataille d'Alger/Battle of Algiers* (1965). Exemplary of this style are Octavio Getino and Fernando Solanas' *La Hora de los Hornos* and Leopoldo Torre Nilsson's *Piel de verano* (*Summer Skin*, 1961). During this same period, Cuba produced a political cinema that was, it has to be said, closely identified with the socialist programme of the state and to that effect spoke not against the regime but made films that charted the difficulties of implementing the Revolution (thanks to the severity of US sanctions amongst other reasons). Exemplary of this cinema are Tomás Guttiérez Alea's *Memorias del subdesarrollo* (*Memories of Underdevelopment*, 1968) and Humberto Solás' *Lucia*, 1968 (see Chanan, 1985 for more details on Cuban cinema).

Third Cinema continues to be an active cinema both within its practice and debates. This entry concludes with a brief overview of these shifting debates (and I am indebted here in what follows to Jacqueline Maingard's lucid synopsis of these debates, 1998: 60–93). In 1982, the concept Third Cinema was elaborated by Teshome Gabriel in his book *Third Cinema in the Third World: The Aesthetics of Liberation*. The crucial issue raised by Gabriel's book is the relation between the term Third World and the concept of Third Cinema as both a concept and a practice. Gabriel's study seems to imply that the two terms Third Cinema and Third World are easily conflatable. As we have explained above, this conflation is not really sustainable. For example, what do we make of China's cinema? In the 1950s at the Bandung Conference, China opted for Third World status, so strictly speaking it falls under the banner of Third World Cinema, but it is not necessarily practising Third Cinema (given the very heavy censorship and state control of the film industry it would be difficult to argue the case). Gabriel's book had the effect, however, of opening the doors where Third Cinema was concerned. It became a referrable concept to other cinemas not coming from the Third World, but made by film-makers living in diasporic communities. Thus, a few years later, in 1986, the concept was further elaborated to embrace the cinema of marginalized groups in other parts of the world. In the late 1980s in Britain, where Black cinema had begun to emerge, two

conferences were held (one in Edinburgh, 1986, the other in Birmingham, 1988) which in a sense 'officialized' this broader meaning of the term. The debates centred, on a far broader scale than that first considered by Solanas and Getino, on cinematic practices that were developing at that time and their relevance to Third Cinema as a political concept.

Pines and Willemen's book *Questions of Third Cinema* (1989) brought together the Edinburgh conference debates. A special issue of *Framework*, 1989, published those of the Birmingham conference (of which more later). First to be addressed were the developments in cinema practices in Britain and the United States that were taking place outside the White-Euro-American sphere – that is being made by Blacks (see **Black cinema – UK** and **Black cinema – USA**). While not rejecting Gabriel's earlier implicit argument that Third Cinema could refer to non-Third World practitioners, Willemen (1989: 15–17) makes the point that Gabriel's homogenizing Third Cinema (as Third World Cinema) on an internationalist basis disguises the fact that this cinema is profoundly national and regional and must therefore be seen as one of the cinemas making up a nation's cinema. In other words, Third Cinema is a national cinema alongside the mainstream and the *auteur*-based national cinemas of a nation. It is in this way, in fact, that we can argue for a Black cinema outside the Third World as having the cachet of Third Cinema. Indeed, Gabriel (1989), in his paper, included in Pines and Willemen's book, notes that there can be different types of Third Cinema, depending on the prevailing social conditions in specific places. What is crucial is the relationship between personal memory, identity, history and cinema. Providing the representations are not of official history but of personal memory, then the term Third Cinema may be used as a means of identifying, naming and claiming a consciously transformative space for cinemas in parts of the world that, at least geographically, would not be considered as being in the Third World. This challenge to history would, according to Gabriel (1989: 57–9), take a counter-cinematic form: open-ended narrative, multiple points of view, style that grows out of the material of the film, and so on. On these two counts, therefore, it would appear that Third Cinema could be used to define British Black cinema. Willemen (1989: 29) did express the fear – and he was not alone – that Third Cinema might be kidnapped and appropriated into the First world (and indeed even Second world). But he also makes the point that British Black film-makers are in a position of being both 'other' and 'in and of' the culture they inhabit. They occupy what he calls an 'in-

between' position (what Homi Bhabha terms a third space (see **postcolonial** entry)). Thus, it can be argued that the work of Black film-makers in Britain has both incorporated what can be learned from Third Cinema about 'otherness' and, at the same time, extended and developed already conceived and already received notions of the Third Cinema ethos.

By 1988 in Birmingham, the debates had moved on and broadened to embrace more issues still. At this conference, John Akomfrah made the point that, while Third Cinema had been useful to help place British Black cinema, what was currently needed was 'a re-examination of location and subjectivity' (Akomfrah, 1989: 6). Third Cinema, as a cinema of resistance coming from a third space, raises the two fundamental issues of politics of location and identity politics: where are 'you' shooting from (which nation/location), and who are 'you' and what position are you shooting from? For example, Coco Fusco made the point that the early Latin American Third Cinema films (see above) were made by men from middle-class and upper-class elites and almost always forgot about gender (1989: 9). Finally, hooks (1989: 18) argued that this cinema, wherever it emanates from, must be about 'the struggle of memory against forgetting' – a politics/politicization of memory therefore.

The Third Cinema debate remains an open one particularly in relation to what counts as 'in'. In general terms, it encompasses politicized and historicized cinemas of the Third World and the Black and Asian-Indian diasporas. In more purist terms, it can refer to the counter-cinemas of Third World countries. For the most part, it is the former reading that dominates, and this should be welcomed on the whole since it will allow for other diasporic cinemas – such as that of the Native-American, the Asian-American, the Turkish-German, the Arab-French, and so on – to be imagined and viewed in a different way than they presently are. That is, not as ghetto cinemas, but as national cinemas in their own right.

The point is also that Third Cinema should be seen as both: national and transnational (or even trans-continental). As Gabriel points out, it is a process of becoming, even a nomadic cinema (Chanan, 1997: 382). This latter point is evident if we consider that film-makers can often be either in exile but may eventually return to make films, or their films are exiled from their countries but are screened elsewhere in the world. In a sense Third Cinema asserts difference within its own indigenous cinema, but also dissolves geographical boundaries with, as Michael Chanan so eloquently puts it, 'a virtual geography of its own' (1997: 375). In that it is a combative

cinema committed to social liberation and that its aesthetics are an anti-aesthetics it should also be seen as being capable of emanating both from the collective and the individual film-maker (1997: 382). This means of course that individual experimental *auteurs* from Third World continents (Sembene, Cissé, Mambéty for example) and Europe as well as North America (or indeed collectives: US New Left film group, Sankofa and Black Audio Film Collective in the UK, for example) can be part of this process of Third Cinema making. As we have seen Third Cinema is a cinema which possesses a semiotics of its own (Guneratne and Dissanayake, 2003: 13). Essentially, to figure as Third Cinema, the work must serve to challenge the (capitalist and consumerist) modes of representation inherited from the Hollywood/Eurocentric cinemas. It should challenge these cinemas' erasure of the distinction between history and reality (whereby Hollywood/Eurocentric narratives allow fiction to pass as fact) and place reality (most often in the form of 'what is happening now as it is witnessed') in whatever configuration (political, economic, social, racial, sexual, and so on) before our eyes in the form of a dialogue for us to enter into. In summation it should decolonize the mind.

*see also* **Black cinema – USA**, **Black cinema – UK**, **cinema nôvo**, **postcolonial theory**, **Third World Cinema**

For further reading consult texts cited in this entry. See also Martin's (1995) edited book which contains most of the manifestos of Third Cinemas; Vieler-Portet's (1991) Third Cinema bibliography; Oshana's (1985) Third World women's filmography; and Bobo's history of Black women's film and video work (1998). See also *Screen* special issue on Third Cinema, 24: 2, 1983; Barnard, 1986; Burton, 1990; Shohat and Stam, 1994; Wayne, 2001. For an excellent summary of the debates see Chanan, 1997. For a re-thinking of this cinema see Guneratne and Dissanayake (2003).

## THIRD WORLD CINEMAS

As the entry on Third Cinema made clear, the 'Third' of that cinema was established to distinguish it from two other cinemas which, as their numbering makes evident, are hierarchically placed. Thus, First cinema refers to the USA (and more precisely **Hollywood**), Second cinema to Europe and **auteur** cinema. These terms do not refer to the First or Second World economies – although the terms were coined as an intentional ironic parody of the Western world's desig-

nation of dominant economic powers. Rather, these terms refer to dominant cinema practices: Hollywood-style cinema and auteur-style cinema (both of which, of course, any country can practice). These First and Second cinemas are not cinemas of political protest or reform. Auteur cinema may challenge mainstream film practice but it is not necessarily committed to or capable of bringing about any *profound* political change. Third Cinema, however, is a cinema committed to a direct confrontation of the political and cinematic systems. It operates, then, from a third space that is distinct from First and Second cinema positions (for more detail see entry on **Third Cinema**).

Third World Cinema is not to be confused with Third Cinema. As a term it emanates in the first instance by association with world order spheres of influence (East, West, and the rest of the world). Only later did the terms First, Second and Third World determine specific countries and continents in relation to their global economic spheres of influence. The term Third World was coined in 1952, at the height of the Cold War, to refer to countries that were not aligned with either of the two super-powers (the USA and the former Soviet Union). At that time, the term First World designated the dominant economies of the West, and Second World those of the Soviet Union and its satellites. Presently, First and Second World economies are terms that are rather loosely applied to the economies of North America, Northern Europe, some countries in the Middle East, Australia, New Zealand, Southern and Eastern Europe. Third World applies as an economic term to all other continents and countries – excluding those countries that became known after the Second World War as the Western Pacific rim (a global economic term used to refer to Japan, South Korea, Taiwan, Singapore, Thailand and Malaysia), that is, countries until recently considered as constituting an important economy in their own right (the so-called Tiger economies – a term no longer invoked since their demise in the late 1990s). Some would say the Pacific rim was an artificial economic sphere established by the Americans to ensure a Western, Eurocentric, economic ethos to counter the perceived communist threat (of China and the former Soviet Union). By analogy with the term Third World, Third World cinema refers to the cinemas of the African continent, the Middle Eastern territories, the Indian continent, China and Asian territories, and Latin America. As we can see, the term is again used rather loosely since not all the cinemas included under this broad umbrella are necessarily Third World economies. For example, not all countries of the Middle East are

poor, but what they singularly are not is Eurocentric. And just as the term Third World Cinema is loosely applied and is therefore problematic, so too is the use of the term Third World itself. Homi Bhabha (1989: 112–13) makes the point that, although the term is one we are obliged to use, it remains hugely problematic because of its pejorative connotations and its assumptions about a geopolitical world view.

The first paradox to emerge in relation to Third World Cinema is that if we were to take all their cinemas as a whole (as we do with Europe in our definition of it as Second cinema), then it is this cinema that makes up most of cinema (in terms of output and audiences). Yet, this cinema is treated as if it were the subaltern, the shadow cinema of the 'real' cinema of North America and Europe. Furthermore, the Western world has a very poor idea of what this Third World Cinema is and seems far from curious to import it and find out. Even the act of talking of this cinema as one entity (a unified whole) is part of the problem. So a first need is to use the term in the plural: Third World Cinemas. Clearly Third World Cinemas constitute a very diverse set of cinemas – far more so than those emanating from the USA and even Europe. As the Western nations continue to become more multicultural, as studies in postcolonial theory and practice become more widespread, then it is evident that these Third World Cinemas will become increasingly better known (for an explanation of the unhyphenated spelling see the first paragraph of the **postcolonial** entry). And as the technology for the culture of consumption for 'more' develops (through access to movies on the Internet), so more and more images must be made available to the globalized consumers. Here too we must expect and hope that these 'unexplored' cinemas (I use the term in a non-colonialist sense) will become steadfastly more available.

Ella Shohat and Robert Stam's book *Unthinking Eurocentrism: Multiculturalism and the Media* (1994) is a key text for helping those of us in the Western world avoid falling into what Appiah (1992) calls the pseudo-universalism of Eurocentric theories and their applications onto all cinemas. In other words, we must not imagine the Third World Cinemas through (our) Western, Eurocentric eyes, mentalities and theoretical frameworks. To take an evident example, it is clear that constructions of gender will differ according to the placing of femininity and masculinity within a nation's cultural traditions. Nor must we imagine that Third World Cinemas are without their own traditions and theories. Nor must we imagine that these cinemas 'occurred' only recently in the post-colonial moment or in some cases the post-revolutionary, or *coup d'état* and post-*coup d'état*

moments. Indeed not. Third World Cinemas in many cases are cinemas that were in place as early as, or shortly after the emergence of cinemas in Europe and North America. For example, the Lumière brothers travelled the world with their *cinématographe*, thereby encouraging imperialist nations to take their own images of their colonies. By the early 1900s, many colonizing nations had established their Colonial Film Units and, in some cases, were actively encouraging indigenous film-makers to create their own films to entertain local audiences. In other countries, where colonialism was not about cultural assimilation, as in the case of India, indigenous traders financed film-making companies as early as the 1900s. In fact, to cite India again, it is as early as 1896 that we can speak of it as having its 'own' cinema. India's tremendous theatre tradition (the Parsee theatre is perhaps the tradition best known to Westerners) meant that there were 'ready-made' venues for the screening of these early short films as attractions at the end of performances.

A further thought we need to bear in mind is that Third World Cinemas have established their own theoretical **discourses** around film. Again, to take the example of India, we can point to an emergence of film theory as early as 1948 (at least) with the writings of Satyajit Ray and Chidananda Das Gupta on the importance of a post-independence cinema that would function culturally as a national integrating force. Their writings and those, a bit later, of Ritwik Ghatak and Kobita Sarkar (in the 1960s and 1970s) have provided a central core of theoretical debates on realism versus modernism, modernism versus avant-garde, nationalist cinema versus regional cinema, and so on.

Nor must 'our' (i.e. the Western film critics') 'newly found' awareness of Third World Cinemas blind us to the fact that there are also what Shohat and Stam (1994: 32) call the Fourth World cinemas. As Shohat and Stam explain, when we speak of Fourth World we are referring to peoples who are 'the still-residing descendants of the original inhabitants of territories taken over or circumscribed by alien conquest or settlement' (ibid.), for example, Native-Americans in the USA, Native-Indians in Latin American countries, Maoris in New Zealand, Aborigines in Australia – all of whom have produced cinemas of their own. I believe this distinction between Third and Fourth Worlds and, therefore, cinemas is an extremely helpful one when talking about non-Eurocentric cinemas. It prevents a homogenization, by us in the West, of cinemas that we barely know, let alone understand. It also makes it clear that when we think about cinemas and their cultural traditions – wherever they are located – we should

be mindful of the fact that belief in Western domination (whether in terms of domination of a market or cultural **hegemony**) is often a little closer to fiction than fact.

What follows in this entry is an overview of Third World Cinemas. It is modest and inevitably schematic, but its intention is to 'point the way'. So what is proposed is a brief description of each continental or territorialized Third World Cinema, highlighting some of the major issues and providing useful bibliographical references for readers who wish to investigate further.

### *The cinemas of the African continent*

Unlike China and India, African cinemas are quite new and for the most part postcolonial. Although some African countries, as for example South Africa, have a long tradition of 'a' cinema – that is, a White, colonialist-settler cinema. Nor is it straightforward to talk about African cinema as a concept. Not only are there broad distinctions such as that which can be drawn between Northern African cinemas and Sub-Saharan ones, but there are also other distinctions that can be drawn intra-nationally – what Ukadike (1994: 12) terms the co-existence of ethnic subcultures. For example, the Ife and Nok cultures in Nigeria are quite distinct as are the local languages of that nation. In terms of film production and Nigeria, much of its cinema is based on literary adaptations and is heavily influenced by the Yoruba travelling theatre tradition. Thus, while most of the films may be based on the Yoruba language, other films which are based on different indigenous cultures are shot in the relevant language (for example, Igbo in *Amadi*, Ola Balogan, 1974; Hausa in *Kanta of Kebbi*, Adamu Halilu, 1984).

Production practices are, equally, very complex, not just at the level of financing indigenous products, but also at the level of what constitutes an African film. In recent history, several films have been labelled as African but in fact they are not indigenously made, nor indeed financed even though they may well have been shot in African countries and have African actors. A recent example is the 'South African' *Jump the Gun*, 1997, directed by the British film-maker, Les Blair, co-produced by Britain and South Africa. This should not necessarily be read negatively, however, since co-productions are often the only way in which films can be made in countries which do not have a film industry infrastructure.

To facilitate clarity, this entry comes in two parts: Sub-Saharan African cinema and North African cinemas.

*Sub-Saharan cinemas*

In the colonial period, Sub-Saharan Africa was divided up between Britain, Belgium, France, Portugal and the Netherlands. This has produced three main linguistic spheres of reference when talking about the cinemas that make up this part of Africa's continent: Francophone, Anglophone and Lusophone (the latter refers to former Portuguese colonies). In the Netherlands' case there has been no such distinct linguistic or cinematic 'legacy'. For although there is an Afrikaner cinema that emanates from South Africa, it has nothing to do with the former Dutch colonialists. Afrikaners were Dutch settlers who, early in Dutch colonialism (some 250 years ago), separated themselves from the Dutch and established their own language and culture. Afrikaans is a dialect of Dutch that exists in its own right. One does not, therefore, speak of a Netherlandophone cinema. Presently, much of Sub-Saharan Africa is at a neo-colonialist stage by which I mean that most countries have not yet reached full democratic status, primarily because of the indirect domination by Europe or the United States (in the form of military oligarchies or dictatorships) and/or by the economic hi-jacking of these countries to whom huge loans have been made by the World Bank and the International Monetary Fund but which no country is in a state to repay (most African nations' GNP goes towards paying off the interest only).

Cultural colonialism is another great problem encountered by African cinemas. Hollywood monopolizes the cinema theatres of most Sub-Saharan African countries. But there is also a strong presence of Indian musicals and Hong Kong Kung-Fu films. African audiences either do not get much occasion to view their cinema, or the attractions of the 'other' cinemas are so great that they neglect their indigenous product. Another form of cultural colonialism is of course the presence (albeit still not huge) of television. South Africa has the largest presence in terms of TV consumption, but most of what it shows is not indigenously produced and since MNET satellite and cable have taken hold, there is a proliferation of foreign products and in particular foreign (mostly American) films. The television in other African nations is state-controlled in most instances and is a tool of control and propaganda.

Cinema arrived in Africa at different periods in its colonial history. As a source of entertainment for indigenous peoples we can locate its presence as early as 1896 in South Africa and the early 1900s in Senegal. Elsewhere, missionary zeal may have led to its use but not much more before the early 1920s. Where cinema did have a more

marked presence, however, was in its own colonial practice as an investigative tool of the indigenous people. Under the guise of ethnographic filming, or filming solely for the purposes of entertainment, the Black African body and culture were exoticized for consumption by intrigued audiences 'back home' in the West. This cinema soon began to influence and cross over into narrative cinema produced for the most part back in the studios in Europe and the USA. Blacks were represented either as submissive workers for the colonialist master (and mistress) or as savage or cannibalistic. Films made by Westerners exploited the exotic otherness of Africans basically to show their undeniable inferiority to the Whites. A few titles will suffice to make the point: *The Wooing and Wedding of a Coon* (1905), *Kings of the Cannibal Islands* (1909), *Voodoo Vengeance* (1913). Nor did this fascination dissipate. In the 1930s, both documentary and feature films, claiming to offer true images of Darkest Africa, showed us the Black as barbaric and untamed (e.g. in the anthropological-based *Congorilla*, 1932) or as the noble savage (e.g. in the feature film *King Solomon's Mines*, 1937).

Sub-Saharan cinema as an African cinema has its beginnings in the mid-1950s. It first emerged in the form of short films. The very first film is credited to Paulin Soumano Vieyra and his *Afrique sur Seine* (1955), followed not very shortly by Ousmane Sembene's *Borom Sarret* in 1963. Both film-makers are Senegalese and both are seen as important trail-blazers in the field of film-making and film history. Vieyra is perhaps best known for his didactic documentaries (e.g. *Mol*, 1957, *En résidence surveillée/Under House Arrest*, 1981). He is also the author of two important books on African cinema (Vieyra 1975; 1983) which have pioneered 'a' writing of Africa's film history from within. In African film contexts, Sembene is considered the most significant pioneer of African Francophone cinema. Senegal has maintained a leading role in Sub-Saharan African cinema. The first black African feature film is Sembene's *La Noivre de* ... (1966, poorly translated as *Black Girl*, since it means *The Black Woman from* ... ). And Senegal also produced the first black African woman's film *Kaddu Beykatt* (*Letter from My Village*, 1975, Safi Faye). Senegal's leadership has inspired the development of cinemas in other Francophone countries: Burkina Faso, Niger, Cameroon, Mali and Mauritania. And, although we are only talking in terms of small numbers of films, Francophone cinema is, compared to Anglophone and Lusophone cinemas, an extremely vibrant one producing as it does 80 per cent of the Sub-Saharan cinema.

The crucial problem for all Sub-Saharan cinemas is the lack of a strong infrastructure that could provide training for film-makers, to say nothing of funding and help at the distribution level. Sub-Saharan cinemas emerged after independence and, apart from the Ghanaian Film School in Accra and a few university-based film departments where film-making is taught (or more usually video-making), African film-makers are dependent on film-training abroad. Since becoming a democracy, South Africa has put money into film-training, but mostly television acts as the venue for gaining experience. And that about sums up what is available, which is very little indeed. The fact of having to go abroad is not in itself the problem, what matters is the lack of independence of these cinemas to fully underwrite their products.

Traditionally, African Francophone cinemas have received more support than Anglophone or Lusophone cinemas. All cinemas receive some form of state support, but a more significant contributor to the establishing of African Francophone cinemas on the international front has, undoubtedly, been the support they have received both directly and indirectly from their previous colonizers, particularly the French. French governments through their successive Ministries of Culture (which date from the 1960s) have provided financial support for African Francophone cinemas. They have also helped in terms of distribution outside of Africa, most especially in France and other Francophone countries but also in countries where they have an active cultural attaché and Institute (e.g. South Africa, the UK and Canada). Many film-makers have had the opportunity to study in French film schools: Balogun, Cissé, Faye, Hondo, Mambéty, Sembene. But that was not their only experience. Some also went to Moscow to study the Soviet school of cinema (Cissé and Sembene). Yet others went to Rome to train.

As for Anglophone African cinemas, the paradox is that, although in some instances (particularly Ghana and Nigeria), they were better equipped than the Francophone countries, none the less, they failed to capitalize fully on the legacy left them by the colonizing nations. Broadly speaking, the legacy was twofold. First the Bantu Film Projects (mostly educational and health films), that were founded in 1935 by Major L. A. Notcutt and sponsored by the Colonial Office of the British Film Institute. Second, the Colonial Film Unit (CFU) which was set up by the British in 1939. During this period, Africans were trained to do much of the routine work, but the products made were almost entirely for the purposes of propagating the superiority of British ways and, a bit later, to persuade Africans to fight the Second

World War. Further to this, in 1949, the CFU established a film school in Accra, the capital city of Ghana. The effect of the legacy meant that, after independence, Ghana and Nigeria were left with sophisticated film studios. But they were also left with colonialist practices where the structures of film production were concerned. Thus, although President Nkrumah of Ghana greatly developed the film industry's infrastructure, the people who took over the infrastructure itself were not always progressive in their ideologies and continued practices established by their former colonizers. If we take the example of Ghana and Nigeria, those indigenous film-makers who were fully trained remained neo-colonialist and the types of films they produced reflected colonialist 'aesthetics' (slow-paced films with elementary narratives) (for more detail, see Diawara, 1986). A further complication for Anglophone cinemas since the early independence years is that the nations' economies have suffered terribly under the militaristic rule to which they have been subjected. Thus it is hardly surprising that, in the context of its cinemas, poor planning strategies and lack of finance have meant that Anglophone African nations such as Ghana or Nigeria are far from strong in terms of the number of products they are able to make (for example, Ghana made six full feature films during the 1980s). And yet Nigeria since 1992 has managed to turn things around – albeit not within the context of independent experimental cinema nor indeed feature film screening as we know it. Nevertheless, it has set itself up as one of the world's top five producers of films with its cheap budget movies that get released on video and DVD. This Nigerian film industry is purely commercial and truly a case of capitalizing on the effects of globalization combined with new cheap digital technology. Known as Nollywood this video-tape and DVD based industry churns out between 5–800 films per year – these sell well within Nigeria and as exports. The films' narratives are local based stories, comedies, romantic thrillers, happy family stories (all very imitative of Hollywood narrative structures but embedded in the local). In a different light, there is a growing if still small South African film industry post-Apartheid – now being referred to as the New South African Cinema which deals very much with the contemporary. So far this cinema has been seen outside Africa on the festival circuit or in special programmes only. For example in May 2001 the National Film Theatre in London launched a programme of new South African films as part of the Celebrate South Africa Festival (films included *Chikin Biznis . . . The Whole Story*, Luruli; *Hijack Stories*, Schmitz; and *Pure Blood*, Kaplan – all 2001). And Ramedan Suleman's exposure of

the fissures that still exist in post-Apartheid South Africa, *Zulu Love Letter* (2004), has at least made it as far as the Carthage bi-annual film festival (JCC) – where it won the Silver Tanit Prize.

But on the whole the picture remains rather bleak where Sub-Saharan cinemas are concerned. There is, of course, a counter-image. In the manifestos emanating from Black African film-makers (see **Third Cinema** entry) there is a clearly stated ethos that African cinemas must unite in their opposition to escapist Western cinemas and remain committed to the undoing or counterposing – through full representation of African identities – of the image given to the Black African by White Western film-makers. It is an extraordinary feat that, despite the absence of material resources, there has been any cinema produced at all. Extraordinary too that what that lack of resources has meant to film-makers is that it takes many years to complete a project, not that it will not get done. They are prepared to wait lengths of time that might shock and deter film-makers in the West from pursuing the project. It is not uncommon for a project (even as a co-production) to take anything from seven to ten years. Mambéty of Senegal, Hondo of Mauritania, Ansah of Ghana, Ogundipe of Nigeria and Ecaré of the Ivory Coast have all known exceedingly long waits. Ecaré's controversial film *Visage de femmes* (*Faces of Women*, 1985) with its explicit eroticism (a taboo in African cinema) took twelve years to make. In recent film history, it is possible to point to only one 'success' story in terms of volume of production. Ola Balogun, a Nigerian film-maker trained in France, set up his own production company in 1973 (Afrocult Foundation Limited) and proceeded to make on average one film per year – some in the Igbo language and others (most predominantly) in Yoruba. The secret to his success was his collaboration with theatre practitioners with whom he fully exploited the rich vein of the Yoruba travelling theatre tradition. Each of his Yoruba-based productions has met with huge audience response which then allows him to recoup expenses and go on to produce the next film. Only when he has stepped out of this format and attempted a more politically motivated cinema has he been unsuccessful (as was the case for his film on the Mau Mau struggle, *Cry Freedom*, 1981).

Much of the cinema that is made is a cinema of national consciousness, one that denounces the effects of colonialism, and one that questions modernity versus tradition. That is, a cinema that looks to tradition and modernity which it then questions or valorizes; a cinema that may seek to entrench certain traditions and scrutinize others, just as it reveals the pluses and minuses of modernity

(for an illustration of this, see below for a discussion of Mambéty's film work). It is a revolutionary and resisting cinema therefore and one which is identified with Third Cinema (see **Third Cinema** entry for further details). Initially, in the late 1960s and during the 1970s, much of the thinking that went into its practice was inspired by the writings of Frantz Fanon (see entry on **post-colonial theory**) and to some extent by Marxist writers (particularly Louis Althusser and his thinking on **ideology**). In this regard, the presence of numerous Black African film-makers in Paris during that period meant that when they returned to their African nations they could bring with them their knowledge of these radical writings. But the other key factor that must be mentioned before discussing further the nature of this cinema is the crucial formation, in 1969, of the Fédération Panafricaine des cinéastes (FEPACI) and the equally crucial launching, in that same year, of the Festival Panafricaine du cinéma de Ouagadougou (FESPACO) a bi-annual festival of African cinema (in Burkina Faso) – in fact, the biggest film festival in the world. The other important film festival held on alternate years from FESPACO is the Journées cinématographiques de Carthage (JCC). All three (FEPACI, FESPACO, JCC) have been central to the process of identifying what is the Africanness of the continent's cinemas. What is the pan-African cinema? And what must its function be?

There are three main answers. First, this cinema must narrate the nations' histories and cultures. Second, it must focus on the socio-political contradictions apparent in contemporary Africa. And third it must produce a film aesthetics of decolonization. In terms of what actually gets produced, obviously the intention is that all three of these practices overlap. So let us develop them a bit further. The African tradition of history is mostly an oral tradition and as such it is well suited to cinema. This process of history telling is part of the raising of a national consciousness which Frantz Fanon speaks of when he talks of the poet's duty in pioneering the raising of a national consciousness (see *Black Skin, White Masks*, 1967, and *Wretched of the Earth*, 1968). Thus cinema must denounce colonization, but it must not do it in a simplistic (binary) way. It must revivify the lost heritage and identity of its African nation and in so doing lead the nation to a revolutionary consciousness that will build the future. The poet film-maker must not speak *for* his or her nation, but through film give him or herself over to the process of national consciousness – that is speak from *within* but not for the nation. Just as with earlier oral traditions of narration (which is a multi-layered

and pluri-historical affair), this form of narrating demands a syncretic style – by which is meant a collection of art forms, a multi-layering of narratives, intertexts and artefacts/traditions. Djibril Diop Mambéty's film *Hyenas* (Senegal, 1992) is exemplary of this function. Through this allegorical tale about hope, greed and deception at a local (village) level where magic is an everyday reality and the exchange of oral narratives is central to the community's spiritual economy, Mambéty exposes the terrible poverty to which, first, colonialism and subsequently the World Bank have reduced the Senegalese people. But this film also shows how the indigenous people have not resisted and chosen to go down the false path of consumerism stretched out before them by the West. Denouncing colonization takes other forms, such as the denunciation of the effects of Christianity and Islam on African spirituality (see Sembene's *Xala*, 1974). The conflict between the old and new world orders is often at the heart of these films as well. The clash between Western political economies and the social economies of African society are highlighted in Mambéty's earlier film *Touki-Bouki/The Hyena's Journey* (1973), a wonderfully constructed satire on the conflict between tradition and modernity.

What is surprising and not a little disconcerting is that more recent examples of this cinema which has become more directly political is having difficulty being distributed outside of Africa. It seems as if African magic realism with its use of symbols (including music and song) and language as a way of perpetuating memory is the kind of authenticity the West is prepared to see. But when it comes to a cinema that points the mirror outwards to the West and exposes in a far more politically obvious way the effects of colonialism, then distribution outside is almost impossible, or the films are sharply criticized as giving inadequate or improper representation. Thus, the trajectory of the Burkina Faso film-maker Idrissa Ouedraogo is a good case to cite. His early films – very much set in the 'African tradition' – *Yaaba* (1987), *Tilaï* (1990) were extremely well received (*Tilaï* received the Grand Prix at Cannes). But his *Samba Traoré* (1992) which endeavoured to transpose the American Western into an African context was not liked by Western critics; and his socio-realist *Le Cri du coeur* (1995), set in France, was liked even less. The formerly so in vogue Senegalese director Sembene's film *Guelwaar* (1992) which denounces institutional charity was hardly distributed at all any more than the Mali director Cissé's *Waati* (1995). The Ethiopian director Haile Gerima's *Sankofa* (1992) about slavery got no distribution at all. A deeply politicized film-maker, he claims no

national affiliation at all – but sees himself rather as a modern-day oral historian/artist, a transnational griot.

As for the aesthetics of decolonization, the film style of Pan-African cinema is one that 'escapes' Eurocentric interpretation and resists readings that threaten to 'domesticate the subversive elements of [the films'] cultural traditions' (Ukadike, 1994, 2). The syncretism and intertextuality of the film narrative are matched by the synergistic use of time and space in these films (time moves at many speeds and the representations of time and space are incredibly dense). It is a style that mixes fiction with documentary, fantasy, allegory and myth. The style is also marked by a certain hybridity. Since so many film-makers trained outside of Africa, it is not unusual for them to play with tropes from Western cinema, or indeed other cinemas with which they are familiar (for example, Cuban, Indian and Egyptian). Films are structured around mythological patterns, not generic codes and conventions. The play, in this pan-African aesthetics, is with form not with genre (which has no function or meaning). An ethnographic approach to the memories of ancestors is also part of the experimental mode of representation and exploration of identity. Film language deliberately challenges its audiences with images that are innovative but also with images that repel (for example the end of *Hyenas*). As Ukadike, in his marvellously comprehensive book on African cinema, says, here is a cinema that cannot be reduced to simple economic determinism (1994: 12). (For further reading consult Appiah, 1992; Bakari and Cham, 1996; Diawara, 1986; Fanon, 1967, 1968; Martin, 1995; Givanni, 2000; Shiri, 1993; Tomaselli, 1988, Ukadike, 1994, 1995. For journals consult *Ecrans d'Afrique*.)

### *North African cinemas*

North African cinemas consist of Egypt and a major groupings of nations, the Maghreb (Algeria, Morocco and Tunisia). Once again the ubiquitous presence of the Lumière brothers and their *cinématographe* can be traced to these countries. The year 1896 is again recorded as the date of its first screening exhibitions. Exhibition practices in these early days was fairly similar to those practised in India (see below). At first it was only elite audiences (mostly expatriot colonialists in the case of the Maghreb countries) who were privy to these screenings. A little later (1908) screenings were provided for a wider more popular indigenous audience and a tiny handful of indigenous films were made during the 1920s by Egypt. Indeed, Egypt was the first, in the 1930s, to establish a film industry

which successfully produced a cinema with wide appeal, primarily in the form of the Egyptian musical. Other countries in Northern Africa were much later in coming to any such level of production. Thus, at this time, Egyptian cinema 'dominated' the Arab world. It was in fact the only cinema and exported its products to other Arab countries. It is unsurprising, therefore, that the impact of this early domination is still felt in other Arab nations and their cinemas in terms of production and consumption. Thus, when other Arab nations came to establish their own cinemas their own film-making was very much influenced by the mechanisms, standards and practices introduced by Egyptian cinema. Furthermore, most other Arab countries have consistently experienced great difficulty in sustaining a viable indigenous cinema for a number of complex factors. First, due to the lack of a strong economic infrastructure, their film industry is unable to make enough films to meet national demand. Second, lack of movie theatres means that not enough revenue can be generated to finance new products. Finally, imports (from Egypt, India and the USA) fill the gaps and are cheaper to hire.

Let us examine the case of Egypt's cinema first. Egypt made on average ten or so films a year in the 1930s, peaking at twenty-five films a year by the mid-1940s. The foundations for the film industry were laid when Misr Bank established Studio Misr in 1935. Interestingly there were one or two women film-makers practising during the 1930s (e.g. Bahiga Hafiz, *Leyla the Bedouin*, 1937), setting a small tradition that has been perpetuated in one or two rare instances in other Arab countries. By 1948, six further studios had been built and production increased proportionately. By the 1950s, film production in Egypt rose to fifty films per year making the film industry the most profitable industrial sector after textiles. In the 1980s Egyptian cinema experienced a New Wave of sorts which helped the average to rise to seventy films per year. These films offered a more muted social criticism than that put in place by the politicized film-makers of the 1950s and 60s (see below). By the late 1980s production rates declined by half due to poor investment in the industry and the concomitant rise in consumption of electronic entertainment (TV, videos, etc.). And now the trend is ever-downwards with production around twelve or so films per year.

Egypt's increase in production during the 1940s and 1950s lead to a broader generic output. Beyond the earlier Egyptian musical, genres now included, social dramas, melodramas, farces, police films, epics (especially historical epics), and rural dramas. Although, Egyptian narrative traditions and traditions of performance (song and dance)

predominated, by the 1950s and early 1960s (the period known as the Golden Age of Egyptian cinema), Egyptian cinema was happily pulling on elements of Hollywood cinema to enhance its own indigenous products. But realist literature also played a decisive role in establishing a strand of cinema known as Egyptian Realism (about 10 per cent of production). This cinema owes a great deal to the influence of Egyptian novelist Naguib Mahfouz. Egyptian Realism used the melodrama aspects of the commercial genre but the films emphasized the evils of poverty brought about by unscrupulous businessmen, corrupt nouveaux riches and unbridled commercialism. Three film-makers dominated the scene in the 1950s, Salah Abou-Seif (known primarily for studio melodramas with a political edge, he worked in close collaboration with Mahfouz, see *Beginning and End*, 1960, and *Cairo 30*, 1966), Youssef Chahine (whose name now is readily associated with the epic style, as with *Adieu Bonaparte/Goodbye Bonaparte*, 1985, but whose work at that time covered all genres), and Tewfik Salah (whose socially committed work aligns him with the practitioners of Third Cinema, see *La Ruelle des fous/The Backstreets of the Madmen*, 1955).

In 1961, the Egyptian film industry came under the control of the state-sponsored Central Organization of Egyptian Cinema. To all intents and purposes the industry was nationalized. This had a restricting effect on independent producers and the work of some of the established film-makers, as a result of which some went to Syria – Tewfik Salah went in 1971 and made *Les Dupes/The Deceived* one of the best films on the Palestinian situation. Others, like Youssef Chahine (born 1927), who studied film-making in the USA, briefly left to work in the Lebanon and then returned shortly after to make his homage to Nasser, *Saladin*, 1963. Chahine's work oscillates between the introspectively autobiographical and historical and social criticism. His films have consistently been politically motivated, whether attempting to describe the schizophrenic state of the Arab consciousness that finds itself trapped between greatness and impotence (full of pride in Arab nationalism and despondency at the successive defeats and demagogy of its leaders) as in *Le Moineau/The Sparrow* (1974, which traces the disastrous effects on Egypt and Nasser of the Six Day War with Israel) or addressing religious fundamentalism, violence and intolerance as in *Le Destin/Fate* (1997) and *L'Autre/The Other* (1999).

One lasting and positive effect of the industry's nationalization, however, was the establishing of a film school to train indigenous film-makers (the Higher Film Institute in Cairo). Egypt is the only

Arab country to boast a film school still in existence. This nationalization of the film industry lasted until 1971, when it was partially reprivatized by President Sadat. Since that date, film-makers in exile have been able to return and/or continue to work with greater freedom once more even though financing projects has become increasingly difficult. As a result of the economic constraints, film-makers have established their own production companies (e.g. Chahine and his Misr International) and have turned to making co-productions, first, with other Arab states, and later with Western countries (such as France in the case of Chahine).

Given the poverty of film production in Egypt it is not surprising that the more commercially based production companies are disinclined to invest profits into the industry which means that the more serious projects struggle to get off the ground. The case of Asma El-Bakri is a good case in point. El-Bakri is one of the few Egyptian women film-makers. Her pioneering work engages with social and political issues. She began as an assistant (amongst others to Chahine) in the 1970s and then turned her hand to documentary work until she managed to garner the finance to direct her first feature film *Mendiants et orgueilleux/The Proud and the Beggars* (1990) – a film set in Cairo in 1945 relating the murder of a young prostitute by a university professor. Her second feature, about the love of a lowly Egyptian civil servant for a European concert violinist, *Concerto Darb Saada* (1998) failed commercially. Her third and latest film, *La Violence et la dérision/Violence and Laughter* (2003), shifts away from class and cross-cultural relationships and takes on a far more hard hitting subject, albeit with a light touch. The film revolves around the attempt to dethrone the tyrannical ruler of a Mediterranean city. Two strategies are employed to achieve this: violence and humour. El-Bakri makes it clear that violence is the weapon of the weak and, in this film, it is the humour that ends up winning the day. In a web interview about this film El-Bakri tells us that the tyrant is a symbol for the USA and the Arab regimes that comply with it (El-Assyouti, 2003). It is worth pointing out that neither Chahine nor El-Bakri are young film-makers anymore and it is encouraging therefore that more recently there have been signs of a renaissance amongst young film-makers of a socially conscious and politically aware type of cinema. Alef Hetata's first feature film *Les Portes fermées/Closed Doors* (1998) is a story about the Gulf crisis and the rise of Islamic fundamentalism. Daoud Abdel Sayed's *A Citizen, an Inspector and a Thief* (2001) interweaves tales of a thief and his victim set in modern day Egypt. Finally and most controversially, Hanif Khatifa's *Sleepless Nights*

(2003) provides a frank portrayal of marriage, sexuality and adultery amongst the middle-classes (this film was a box-office sensation).

The 'birth' of cinema in the Maghreb countries is an effect of the 1950s and 1960s post-independence – although, the foundations of this new independent Maghrebine cinema were laid in the struggle for liberation from colonialist rule. This is particularly true for Algeria. During the war of liberation, Algeria had a resistant underground cinema which it established in 1957 (the Tebessan Film Unit, Groupe Farid, which was annexed to the provisional Algerian government based in Tunis, Tunisia). Tunisia and Morocco gained independence in 1956, Algeria in 1962.

Since the 1960s, if we take their cinema as a whole, these countries are, with Egypt, the other most 'prolific' film-producers of the North African countries. Unlike Egypt, however, their films do not enjoy the same popular acclaim within their own countries and are more readily seen outside of the Maghreb in film festivals. Thanks to the French colonial presence in the Maghreb, there is a stronger tradition for film-making than in most other Arab countries – although, after withdrawal, the French, for the most part, removed the studios they had established in the three countries (studios that had been created for propaganda purposes to make Arab language films to counter the Egyptian products). The lack of infrastructure post-independence meant that the first films to be produced in the mid-to-late 1960s were very much in the documentary-naturalist-realist tradition associated with **Italian neo-realism**. Equally, this lack of infrastructure, which still exists today, means that film-makers are either self-taught or tend to be trained abroad (mostly in France) – although Algeria briefly boasted a film school of its own (the Institut National du Cinéma d'Alger, 1964–7). In more recent years, film-makers have also come into film from television.

Of the three countries it is Algeria that is the most structured in terms of organizational bodies and their tutelage of the film industry. But the industry's modest infrastructure means that it lacks technicians and production management still today. Its first central organization body, the Office National pour le Commerce et l'Industrie Cinématographique (ONCIC), was established in 1969, since when this body has known several different forms until its most recent one, established in 1987, when there was a major reorganization of the industry with the setting up of the Centre Algérien pour l'Art et l'Industrie Cinématographiques (CAAIC).

Algerian cinema was state-controlled until the mid-1980s. This meant that state policy tended to guide production. Thus the early

years of liberation (mid-1960s to mid-1970s) saw a spate of anti-imperialist films, made by film-makers who had been involved in the struggle and had often been members of the FLN (Front de Libération Nationale). These films celebrated the revolutionary liberation struggle. Arguably, Gillo Pontecorvo's *La Bataille d'Alger/Battle of Algiers* (1965, an Algerian-Italian coproduction) was a reference film for this cinema. But more significant still was the crucial input, during the struggle years, of the French documentarist René Vautier, an FLN sympathizer who worked with the FLN freedom-fighters and (according to some accounts), led the Tebessan Film Unit. His two documentary films *Afrique 50* (1955) and *Algérie en flammes/Algeria in Flames* (1958), which were banned in France, were the precursors to the documentary-realist tradition so much in evidence in the indigenous cinema of the first ten years of independence. Mohamed Lakhdar-Hamina's two films that span this period, *Le Vent des Aurès/The Wind from the Aurès* (1966) and *Chronique des années de braise/Chronicle of the Years of Embers* (1975), are exemplary of this tradition. By the 1970s, issues of rural reform were of primary concern, and feature films were produced to support the agrarian revolution introduced by President Boumedienne. These films exposed the poverty of rural life, and spoke out against traditional taboos and unjust property conditions that were based on native feudalism. As such, they were as much about the class and the rural struggle. They also touched upon female emancipation. Abdelaziz Tobi's *Noua*, 1972, is exemplary in addressing all three of these issues. The tradition of maraboutism (magic practised by holy men) and sexual segregation also came under attack in this cinema. These aspects of traditional culture and religion are represented as obstacles to progress (see, for example, Mohamed Slim Riad's *Vent du sud/Wind from the South*, 1975).

The first decade of Algerian cinema is marked, as Viola Shafik in her excellent study of Arab cinema makes clear (1998: 175–6), by a monumentalization first of the Algerian resistance hero and subsequently the peasant. Films at this stage were busily engaged in selling an Algerian national identity that was unified and not diverse. By the late 1970s, however, just prior to its dissolution as a state-controlled industry a more diversified cinema had emerged that talked about the poor social conditions experienced by most Algerians, and represented the contradictions inherent in Algerian society (as a hybrid culture) including the oppression of women. During this period, the only Algerian woman film-maker, Assia Djebar, made two films looking at the role of women during colonial occupation and the

struggle for independence (*La Nouba des femmes du mont Chenoua/The Nouba of the Women of Mount Chenoua*, 1978, and *La Zerda ou les chants de l'oubli/The Zerda and the Songs of Forgetfulness*, 1980). The 1970s was also marked by a close collaboration with the state television service (Radio Télévision Arabe, RTA). Djebar's films were co-produced by RTA. And, by the 1980s, television-trained directors turned to film-making. From 1983 until the early 1990s, when the new military regime came into full force, Algerian cinema continued in this same vein but it also took a new, ironic look at its own history (*Les Années folles du twist/Mad Years of the Twist*, Mahmoud Zemmouri, 1983), and issues of multi-culturalism (*Histoire d'une rencontre/Story of an Encounter*, Ibrahim Tsaki, 1983). Despite fears that the political upheavals of the 1990s would affect production, the first half of the 1990s curiously witnessed a slight increase in output over previous decades (averaging four films per year as opposed to three). Since 1995, however, conditions have deteriorated. Algerian filmmakers have been sentenced to death by the Islamist fundamentalists and have gone into exile and as a result indigenous production has come almost to a complete stop. Merzak Allouache is one such filmmaker threatened with death who works in exile, from France where he made his 'trilogy' on this sense of exile and mood of fundamentalist intolerance. *Bab El-Oued City* (1994) set shortly after the bloody war of 1988 foretells the rise of Islamic fundamentalism in Algeria which would ultimately lead to the civil war of the mid-to-late 1990s (this film won the Cannes International Critics Prize in 1996). *Salut cousin!/Hey Cousin* (1996) evokes the feeling for those Algerians who (for political or economic reasons) will never return to their homeland but who equally feel they will never be at home in France. *Algiers/Beyrouth: pour mémoire/Algiers/Beirut: A Souvenir* (1997) traces the encounter between a self-exiled Lebanese journalist who returns to war-ravaged Beirut where she meets an old colleague, a fugitive from the violence of his Algerian homeland. The shared experience is less one of a souvenir and more one of terror. Another outspoken film on Islamist fundamentalism, this time made by a film director not yet in exile, is Yasmina Bachir-Chouikh's *Rachida* (2002). This courageous film is set during the darkest days of Algeria's fight against Islamic fundamentalism. Rachida, a young schoolteacher, refuses to plant a bomb in her school. She is shot, but miraculously survives and runs away to her home village where she begins teaching again, only to befriend a former student whose father is a terrorist. (For further reading see Armes, 1996; Dines, 1994; Hadj-Moussa, 1994; Shafik, 1998.)

Moroccan and Tunisian cinemas do not enjoy the same industrial infrastructure that Algeria does. Although Morocco has almost as many cinema theatres as Algeria (around 250 to Algeria's 300 odd), the theatres are almost entirely dominated by foreign imports. Tunisia has only about 75 film theatres. So in the case of both countries (albeit for differing reasons) there is little resourcing for indigenous products. Film production is, therefore, a far more individualistic affair. Film-makers are either self-taught or have trained outside the country. They do, however, have studios to work in in their native country. But financing remains the key issue. Many work collaboratively helping each other out on their films, as is the case in Tunisia for Nouri Bouzid, Férid Boughedir and Moufida Tlatli. Interestingly, Bouzid and Boughedir's first films *Man of Ashes* (1986) and *Halfaouine* (1990) are both concerned with the troubling dynamics or difficult relationships between father figures and sons, whereas Tlatli's focus – whilst also on the micro-politics of everyday life – is on the unwritten story of female sexuality. Martin Stollery (2001) writes illuminatingly on these overlaps and differences. Bouzid exposes the conflict between hegemonic masculinities and male inter-generational relationships but nevertheless offers a message of cultural openness that can exist between Arab and Jew (2001: 55). Boughedir explores in a far more light-hearted fashion the young adolescent boy, Noura's negotiation with male hierarchies of power and his own entry into manhood (2001: 57). Tlatli's films – *Les Silences du palais/Silences of the Palace*, 1994, and *La Saison des hommes*, 2001 – reveal how, beneath the woman's exterior appearance that all is alright, there lies a secret pain which she holds in silence: that of the abuse and repression imposed by the dominant patriarchal ideologies upon female sexuality (2001: 60). Two recent Moroccan films *Women's Wiles* (Farida Benlyazid, 1999) and *In Casablanca Angels Don't Fly*, (Mohamed Asli, 2003) in different ways again take on these micro-political issues of the place men and women can or cannot hope to occupy. In Benlyazid's film, which pits the wit of the woman against that of the man, we are offered a feminist take on the Scheherezade myth. Far more darkly in Asli's film, we see the effects of chronic poverty on a Berber family as the father of the home is forced to travel to Casablanca to work in a desperate effort to support his wife and children (it ends badly with the wife dying).

Although Morocco had established a state-sponsored Centre Cinématographique (CMM) as early as 1944, the CMM did not really take on an active role in funding until the late 1970s at which point production rose from a meagre average of one film every two

years to an average three to four indigenous films per year. But this only helps finance projects to a degree, in much the same way as Tunisia's now defunct SATPEC (Société Anonyme Tunisienne de Production et d'Expansion Cinématographique, 1957–94) could only finance a small percentage of the cost of production. This lack of finance has three effects. First, Morocco and Tunisia have had to seek finance for their films through co-productions. Second, film-makers often only get to make one film per decade (in the case of Morocco, only Ben Barka, Nour Eddine Gounejjar, Hakim Noury and Mohamed Tazi have managed two). Finally, both countries have opened their studios to Western film-makers in an effort to boost their own industry. French film-makers in particular make avail of the cheaper labour costs offered by these countries. Tunisia for its part has also successfully pre-sold film rights to European television companies (French Arte and Channel Four in particular). In this way it has financed several international successes in particular the films of Férid Boughedir (*Halfaouine*, and *Un été à La Goulette*, 1995). Tunisia also has a major standing as one of the most important festival venues for African and Arab cinema. The country hosts the bi-annual film festival (the JCC). Strict Islamic laws and severe censorship in the Maghreb countries mean that women film-makers are extremely thin on the ground. Tunisia has the lead with four, two of whom have made at least two feature films: Selma Baccar, *Fatma* 75, 1975 – banned for several years because of the scenes about sex education – and *La Danse du feu/The Fire Dance*, 1995; and Moufida Tlatli, *Les Silences du palais/Silences of the Palace*, and *La Saison des hommes*. (For further reading see the excellent study by Viola Shafik on Arab cinemas (1998) and the very useful dictionary of North African cinemas by Roy Armes (1996). For the various manifestos see Bakari and Cham (1996).

### *The cinemas of China*

This entry deals with mainland China only (not Hong Kong or Taiwan cinemas). Numerous cinemas make up China's cinema history. To give a sense of its history, it is perhaps helpful to first divide its history into two epochs. The first goes from the earliest presence of cinema in China, 1896, to the establishing of the People's Republic in 1949. The second stretches from 1949 to the present day. These two epochs, however, subdivide into different periods producing different or assimilated or recuperated cinemas (as I will explain below).

## *1896–1949*

The beginnings of cinema in China are not dissimilar from those of India. The first *cinématographe* screening took place on 11 August 1896 in Shanghai. Very quickly this was followed by itinerant showmen taking films out to other cities and provinces. By 1905, Chinese camera operators were filming local Chinese opera and by the 1920s China was producing melodrama and comedies. The first Chinese film was *Dingjun Mountain* (1905), a filming of Beijing opera performed by the renowned actor Tan Xinpei. Even at this time, though, this popular cinema displayed a resistance to Western imperialism, and for the following reasons. During this first period, Chinese cinema was not a thriving industry, companies quickly folded and in terms of cultural capital the dominant presence in Chinese cinema venues was Western cinema. Chris Berry (1996: 409) quotes the figures of dominance as 90 per cent foreign of which 90 per cent was American. This dominance lasted until 1949. In the period 1910–30, what little Chinese cinema there was found its sources in and drew its narratives primarily from the popular Mandarin Duck and Butterfly literary tradition. Although these were escapist films that narrated melodramatic and sentimental tales, they were films that warned against the effects of Westernization which was already considerably in evidence in major Chinese cities, particularly Shanghai. Curiously therefore this populist cinema was both assimilated to its culture and resistant to it (it was escapist but challenging of Western ideology).

Shortly after this first period of populist film-making, during the 1930s, China witnessed the emergence of a second type of cinema, this time far more directly politicized, that of a nationalistic leftist cinema that would eventually become identified with the communist party in its fight to liberate China from Japanese imperialism (which lasted throughout the 1930s). The catalyst for this new cinema was the invasion of China by Japan in 1931. Intellectuals of the left infiltrated the film industry and some established communist cells. These leftist intellectuals were responsible for producing what are known as leftist films, a product which has come to exemplify the first golden age of Chinese cinema. However, the point needs to be made that these leftist films were directly inspired by the nationalistic May Fourth Movement (1919) a crucial factor that would lead Chairman Mao to advocate their rejection in the new Revolutionary China (see below). The May Fourth Movement was a protest movement headed by intellectuals and students and led against the Chinese government

for their pro-Western and pro-Japan policies. The movement also protested against the stifling nature of Chinese tradition and culture and advocated a new China that could be both patriotic and open to new and foreign ideas. The cinema produced by leftist intellectuals was based on the literary work to come out of that movement and while it was certainly politicized it none the less remained populist in its appeal as entertainment. During this entire fifty-year span, Shanghai remained the film centre of China. Only after the revolution would more studios be established in Beijing (including a Film Academy) and Changchun. If, in 1949, this leftist cinema was rejected by Chairman Mao it was because of political self-interest. Accusing this cinema of being Westernized (primarily because it was based in Shanghai, a melting-pot of many cultures, including those of the West), he sought to impose his own cultural apparatchiks who had been trained in Yen'an. By 1953, the Shanghai studios were nationalized, thereby effectively putting a stop to the production of films that were not considered consonant with the Maoist line. A form of total recuperation that would last on and off for thirty years.

Just before the People's Republic of China (PCR) came into being, China experienced what is referred to as its second golden age of production. During just three years, 1946–49 (after the war with Japan and the Second World War ended), leftist film-makers re-established themselves in Shanghai and produced social realist films which 'documented' the civil war between the ruling bodies of that period and the communists as they fought to come to power. (See Zhang, 2004 for more details.)

### *1949–2005*

There are five waves to this epoch of China's cinema. The first wave, 1949–66 was something of a paradox. It began with the Social Realist worker-peasant-soldier cinema which was heavily influenced by **Soviet cinema**. This cinema served to propagate the idea of a revolutionary nation and a classical revolutionary cinema. During this period, China set up an integrated national film industry, whereby the state controlled all aspects of production including, of course, censorship. By 1956, it was decided that cinema needed to change direction and should look to China's history rather than to its present. The new directive was to produce a revolutionary realism and a revolutionary romanticism. To this effect, curiously, film-makers were able to return to the literary tradition of the May Fourth Movement as well as to the operatic tradition. In other words, cinema had

reverted to a previously disavowed or at least denounced practice. This relaxation of the pressure to make politically motivated cinema stemmed from Chairman Mao's famous policy of a Hundred Flowers (Let a Hundred Flowers Bloom and a Hundred Schools of Thought Contend). Restrictions on the creative process of film-making were lifted. Film-makers were able to visit European Film Festival venues, and foreign (European and other Third World) films were allowed into China. Films that openly criticized the bureaucracy of government were allowed to pass uncensored. And it was at this time that studios were opened up in Beijing and Changchun, and Shanghai opened three more studios. This spirit of openness was an up and down affair. In 1957, 1958 and again in 1964, the Anti-Rightist movement accused certain films of bourgeois tendencies and effectively had them censored. This movement did not die away but was to re-emerge in 1966 as part of the Cultural Revolution. Indeed, its leader, Kang Shen became one of the Gang of Four who, along with Madame Mao, formed the uncompromising leaders of revolutionary taste during the terrible years of the Cultural Revolution. From 1966 to 1972 – the period of the Cultural Revolution – there was virtually no cinema at all. Only ten films were made. All of them had to adhere to the very strict rules and filmic guidelines imposed by Madame Mao. Strongly didactic and stylized, these films (which were revolutionary model-operas) propagated the **myth** of the perfect proletarian class hero and heroine. During this period, the Film Academy in Beijing was closed, many film-makers were sent to prison or to work-camps – many perished under those conditions.

From 1972–84 feature film slowly reprised and from 1977–84 a genre of films called 'scar' or 'wound' films emerged exposing the unjustified persecution that took place during the Cultural Revolution. A fourth wave occurred in the mid-1980s thanks to a new relationship between the state and the film industry which saw a relaxation of controls imposed upon film practice. First, the industry was no longer obliged to make films closely associated with Chinese operatic theatre. Second, film could now investigate the aesthetics of films and not be tied to the revolutionary propaganda cause (the so-called revolutionary realism). Finally, the state agreed both to the principle and to the financing of a cinema that was audience-based which meant that entertainment films could now replace the earlier practice of didactic cinema. The effect, beyond entertainment films, was some ground-breaking experimental work produced by a 'movement' of young film-makers, graduates of the Beijing Film Academy (which had re-opened in 1978). They were known as the

Fifth Generation. Their films were considered elliptical and were accused of elitism, and they were not successful with audiences. They remain, however, as a testimony to a moment of film language experimentation and modernization. A few Fifth Generation film-makers went on to produce more 'accessible' films, some of which were financed by foreign money (Taiwan, Hong Kong, UK/Germany). Of all the film-makers of that generation it is Zhang Yimou and Chen Kaige who have successfully managed to combine experimentation with popular narration. And, from that generation, it is their work that Western audiences get to see. Yimou's films have been highly acclaimed in the West. His *Red Sorghum*, 1987, won the Berlin Golden Bear in 1988. *The Story of Qui Ju*, 1992, won the Venice Golden Lion. And two other films *Raise the Red Lantern*, 1991 (banned in China), *Shanghai Triad*, 1995, have met with audience acclaim outside China. Chen Kaige's breakthrough film *Yellow Earth*, 1984, helped to put the Fifth Generation and China on the world film map and his *Farewell My Concubine* (1993) won the 1993 Cannes Palme d'Or. Incidentally, *Yellow Earth* was shot by Yimou and he is co-credited with the making of the film along with the designer He Qun.

The last phase of China's cinemas stretches from the late 1980s to the present, with films expressing different messages but in which it is not difficult to read a disenchantment with the government. The Tiananmen Square massacre of 1989 only brought further repression and censorship to film-makers (other than those attempting to produce commercial products such as action movies). Chen Kaige and Zhang Yimou now enjoy a sufficiently strong international reputation that they can obtain outside financing for their projects and post-produce outside China which effectively puts their films out of China's censorship net. Younger film-makers are not so lucky. They have essentially either had their projects censored and shelved or have had to go underground and attempt to get their films released outside of China – in particular the blacklisted film-makers Zhang Yuan and Ning Dai. This self-nominated Sixth Generation of film-makers has succeeded in obtaining international recognition with films such as Wang Xiaoshuai *The Days* (1993) and Zhang Yuan's *Mama* (1990, but only released in China two years later). His gay film – China's first (if we except *Farewell My Concubine* which is more **queer** than gay) – *East Palace, West Palace* completed in 1996 and screened in Western film festival venues has yet to be released in China. Sixth Generation film-makers are committed to a new vision of truth and unlike the previous generation's work which was concerned with traditional

culture, the rural, allegory, their work focuses on the urban and the uncertain situation of everyday life. For example Wang's *So Close to Paradise* (1998) investigates prostitution; his later film *Beijing Bicycle* (2001) looks at the rapidly changing cityscape. Some film-makers take a critical look at the Cultural Revolution, three of which, interestingly, are made by women film-makers: Dai Sijie's *China, My Sorrow* (1989) and *Little Chinese Seamstress* (2002); and Joan Chen's *Xiu Xiu: The Sent Down Girl* (1998).

For further reading see Berry, 1991; Browne *et al*., 1994; Clark, 1987; Eder and Rossell, 1993; Rayns and Meek, 1980; Yau, 1996; Zhang and Xiao, 1998; Zhang, 1998; Zhang, 2004.

### *Indian cinema*

Bearing in mind the distinctions drawn between Third and Fourth Worlds and cinemas, I need to make clear that this section is only going to deal with Indian cinema. Although there are other cinemas of the Indian continent which evolved either post-Partition (Pakistan, 1947) or post-independence (Bangladesh, 1971), I do not know if we can speak of them as cinemas of the Third World or Fourth and do not propose to enter into this debate here. Quantitatively, Pakistan ranks amongst the top ten film-producing countries, and for that reason there is a separate entry on Pakistan cinema (see below) but not on Bangladesh which only has a quite small output to date. However, to mention these cinemas is to raise again the difficulties of defining Third World Cinema and perhaps also the futility of attempting to do so. We deal with it because it is a term the West has invented and which Third World nations have been obliged to accept as a way of determining their identity, namely, through their international economic status. But, as the entry on postcolonial theory makes clear, this term may not last forever. Indeed, India is rapidly rising as an important economy (along with China) and, by the late 2010s, may well no longer allow us to figure its film industry in this section.

It is something of a paradox to speak of Indian cinema as a Third World Cinema. Today it produces more films than any other nation, between 700 and 800 per year and in twenty-two languages (compared to USA's 400 to 600 films per year, usually in one language). Indian cinema rivals Hollywood in terms of films and audiences, but not in terms of revenues. In that respect Hollywood cannot be rivalled, precisely because it has the infrastructure for world distribution

and exhibition which Indian cinema, as yet, does not possess (Joshri, 2001: 54). Nonetheless, Indian cinema is big business in India and as a cultural force it outstrips the USA (First World) cinema market in terms of consumption within its own cinema theatres and venues alone: more Indians (12 million go to the cinema everyday) watch their indigenous products than Americans do theirs (bear in mind though that India's population is almost twice that of the USA). Indian cinema is big business also in relation to its stars. Stars have a major influence and standing and often play an active role in politics.

Indian cinema is still a very popular form of entertainment especially for young male audiences. It is, however, the case that the increasing popularity of television since the 1990s has affected audiences (primarily in the major cities). Nowadays, of the yearly 800 products, only one per cent will be a huge box-office success (Kabir, 2003: 6–7). Thus, much of this current cinema has now become the mainstay of television programming (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 123). The dominant popular **genres** are mythologicals, melodramas, musicals, romance, adventure films – often these are all rolled into one and labelled as song-dance-action films and, since the 1980s have become known as **Bollywood** films. Their popularity has to do with the tremendous legacy of India's theatre which has heavily influenced the generic tradition of mainstream Indian cinema. Another contributing factor is that, with their seamless mix of Hindi and Urdu, they are immediately accessible to half of India's population. But beyond this extremely popular mainstream cinema there exists other cinemas – art cinema, which is often a state-subsidized cinema, and avant-garde cinema which is made by independents and is not necessarily state-subsidized.

Although the birth of the Indian film industry dates from 1913, film made its entry into India on 7 July 1896. Maurice Sestier, an envoy of the Lumière brothers started *cinématographe* exhibitions in Bombay (now Mumbai). By the 1900s, itinerant showmen took film beyond the cities of Bombay/Mumbai, Calcutta and Madras and set up tent shows which at times would house as many as 10,000 spectators. The making of the first Indian feature film is credited to Dhundiraj Govind Palke with his mythological *Harishchandra* (the date given varies as either 1913 or 1914). Palke is credited with introducing the mythologicals, which were extremely popular with 'ordinary' people (i.e. not the educated elite) – what postcolonial theory would term the subaltern classes. The narratives of these early silent films, where gods did battle with demons, borrowed heavily from Hindi epic tales from the *Mahabharata* and from the *Ramayan*

(Kabir, 2003: 6). These mythologicals then developed in the mid-1920s into devotional or religious and allegorical films. However, if we are to be true to history, then Hiralal Sen is really India's first film-maker. He established the Royal Bioscope Company in Calcutta and filmed plays from the major theatres in that city. A first film of his (dating from 1903) *Alibaba and the Forty Thieves* not only marks Sen out as the first film-maker in India, but, interestingly, also predates by four years France's version of the same story (Pathé's *Ali Baba*, 1907).

The 1920s can be taken as the period when India truly established a film industry. At that time, Hollywood was a reference point for the structuring of the industry and remained as such until state intervention in the early 1960s changed the nature of industrial practice (see below). The mid-1920s saw the founding of the major studios first in Bombay and Calcutta then in Poona and later still in Madras (1930s). But the economic management and practice of these studios were a far cry from the seamless vertically integrated system of Hollywood. The financing for films was extremely difficult and dependent on the country's trader-industrialists (mostly mercantile traders) and if that failed, then, recourse had to be made to usurers. With the advent of sound, Indian cinema had to compete with foreign products (particularly American films). It created its own indigenous sound film that included songs and dance. These routines were often extra-diegetic but they were a great success and so guaranteed the popularity of any particular film in which they featured. They also, of course, perpetuated and extended the star system to include not just theatre actors or dancers as stars but now singers too. If we could speak of an integrated cinema industry at that time, then it would be in terms of a cinema run by families and friends and financed by the lower rungs of capitalist entrepreneurialship and speculators. This made the industry a fairly precarious affair to say the least, so it is not surprising if, after the Second World War, the studio system collapsed. Freelancing became the primary production practice beginning in the 1950s – interestingly the decade that is known as the Golden Age of Indian cinema. Currently, this system still prevails, albeit with an increased corporatisation. This has led the Indian government to grant the Indian cinema industry-status which gives it access to banking facilities and insurance cover (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 111 and 121). The effect has been to give the industry 'a more organized look than ever before.' (121)

The Bombay Talkies and musicals of the 1930s are considered the true precursor of today's mainstream Indian cinema. Bombay Talkies

refers to a studio established in 1934 that made mostly rural melodramas – although it also made social films, a strand that would get perpetuated in the New Indian Cinema of the late-1960s. Bombay musicals is a loose term used to refer to the song-dance-action movies. This heritage has won the Bombay studios the epithet of Bollywood (which is now used freely to refer to the films themselves). The three largest studios are the Kohinoor Film Company, The Ranjit Movietone studio and the Imperial Film Company (all established in the 1920s). Imperial produced India's first sound film *Alam Ara*, 1931. These studios produced Hindu mythologicals, melodramas, song-dance-action films. They also produced some realist films which transposed orientalist narratives into period movies so that they appeared to be allegories or mythologicals. In fact, they were thinly disguised criticism of the colonial-nationalist conflict. Bombay, however, was not the only geographical site of the film industry and we need to be conscious of the important work being produced at that time by other studios dotted over the country: the Prabhat studios in Poona, the New Theatre studios in Calcutta and the United Artists Corporation in Madras. Nor should we forget the small Punjabi-based studios in Lahore (which of course is now part of Pakistan) which, prior to the partition of 1947, produced fantasy films. After partition, many of these studios and film practitioners moved to India and their products became integrated into Indian cinema. These became known in the 1970s and 1980s as the Hindi 'masala' movies – namely, a song and dance film that mixed genres.

Someswar Bhowmik (1995) in his very useful overview of Indian cinema provides us with the following survey of pre-Independence cinema of the 1930s. Globally speaking it was made up of the following categories. Sixty per cent were romance and love-affair films. This broad category includes many of the musicals, romance-melodramas, mythologicals and allegories associated with Indian cinema. Thirty per cent of film production was about problems facing Indian families (in-laws, marital maladjustments, and so on). This category includes films that are known as reform socials, films that reflected the state reform programme that called for widows to remarry and other programmes dealing with the condition of women. These films are the precursor to Indian melodramas of the post-independence cinema. The third category makes up 10 per cent of production and are films that reflect the growing awareness of a society influx as it faces the almost insuperable conflicts of orthodoxy with modernity. Much of India's cinema, pre- and post-independence, makes allusions (however indirectly) to the struggle between traditional authenticity

and capitalist modernity. And, in this context, it is worth citing one film-maker whose work straddles these two periods, Mehboob Khan and his fetish female star Nargis (who often embodied these tensions in her performances). Mehboob used the costume drama as his forum for his mise-en-scène of these conflicts (see *Humayun*, 1945, *Romeo and Juliet*, 1947 and *Andaz*, 1949).

The Golden Age of Indian cinema covers a fifteen year span (1950–65). Budgets were low and film-makers could afford to experiment. Mehboob Khan, Bimal Roy, Raj Kapoor and Guru Dutt are the four names that still hold importance today because they 'transformed the film song into an art form' by mastering the use of film music and choreography (Kabir, 2003: 7). In all areas of film practice – cinematography, set design, editing – they re-invigorated Indian cinema. In terms of narrative and characterization they gave depth where before stereotype had predominated. It was also the golden age for stars; the galaxy was dominated by four major names – Dilip Kumar, Dev Anand, actor-director Raj Kapoor and Nargis (the major female vehicle for Khan and Kapoor). The benchmark film was Kapoor's *Awaara* (1951) which broke box-office records and was an international hit in the East (from Russia to the Middle-East). This film set the precedent for Indian popular cinema of this era. Narratives were a blend of social realism and popular cinema. Lyrics came from leftist poets (Shailendra, Sahir Ludhianivi). Roy's *Devdas* (1955), Mehboob's *Mother India* (1957) and Dutt's *Pyaasa* (1957) are classics of this Golden Age cinema with their social concerns embedded in a effective use of song, dance and music to heighten feeling.

Contrary to Eurocentric cinemas, India's boom in the industry in terms of production occurred in 1979 and continues today. Pre-independence, India produced between 100 and 170 films per year. Post-independence, India made 200. This number subsequently grew to 400 films per year in the 1970s. By 1979 production soared to 700 up to 948 depending on the year. Lack of mass consumption of television sets is a part explanation of this extraordinary increase in film production, but so too is the shift in the conceptualization of the industry which only post-independence was properly geared to the reproduction of capital (Bhowmik, 1995: 38). Two other reasons are contributory causes. The first was the introduction of a series of state measures to aid the industry starting in 1960 with the Film Finance Corporation (FFC), an independent but state-established body. By the mid-1950s most of the studios were in a parlous state and had either closed down or attempted to break into the mainstream

Bombay-Bollywood type of production. The FFC's objective was twofold: first, to promote and assist mainstream cinema and, second, to develop film as an instrument of national culture. In this latter respect the FFC made it possible for a whole new generation of film-makers to get into production. This in effect was the launching-pad of the New Indian Cinema (see below and **Third Cinema** entry for more details of this cinema). In 1980, the FFC subsequently became the NFDC (the National Film Development Corporation) a quasi-(state) monopoly for financing, distributing and exhibiting films. The second reason for the extraordinary upswing in film production was the withdrawal in 1974 of the Motion Picture Export Association of America (MPEAA) from the Indian market which allowed India, in the form of the FFC, to import films for local distribution and make a tidy profit in the process and further finance its own production.

There are three major trends in Indian cinema dating from the 1960s: the Hindi movie which embraces many different types including the social film, but which predominantly refers to the dance-song-action movie (see entry on **Bollywood**); the art cinema (best exemplified for Westerners, since he exported so well, by Satyajit Ray); and, finally, the avant-garde/formalist or counter-cinema more closely identified with Third Cinema practices (see entry on **Third Cinema**). The Hindi film follows much in the tradition of genres that were established pre-independence (for further details see Chakravarti, 1993). There is considerable overlap between the other two cinemas (art and counter-cinema) although the latter cinema is closely identified with the earlier work of the Indian People's Theatre Association (ITPA), a communist-backed theatre and film movement. The art cinema, so associated with Ray's work – although we should not overlook his important contemporary Ritwik Ghatak (see below), is one that looks to a way of representing history within the framework of post-independence discourses of the nationalist enterprise. Ray's cinema is a cinema of realism but whose content is often located in the past. It is also a regionalist cinema rather than a nationalist cinema – which in a sense reinforces the very point that Third Cinema makes that a national cinema is made up of many national cinemas. Ashish Rajadhyaksha, one of the leading experts on the history of Indian cinema, puts it well when he describes Ray's realism 'as a vantage point from where to restage "the past": to re-present memory in a land that could now, so to speak, celebrate the arrival of history' (1996: 682). This practice of returning to history to make history is a key to understanding Ray's films. In a different way but also in a regionalist vein, Ray's contemporary,

Mrinal Sen also seeks to represent India and its history but does so through a realism grounded in the present. Indeed, his 1969 film *Bhuvan Shome* is a good example of this desire to stress differences in regional cultures, languages and customs. (Kabir, 2001: 4) Sen's film is credited with launching India's New Cinema. Themes which preoccupied film-makers of this New Cinema of the 1970s were based in the everyday reality of India: questions of caste, exploitation of workers, bad landlords, political corruption, and so on. As Kabir (2001: 4) notes, this is a far cry from popular cinema's preoccupation with romance. This New Cinema, also labelled anti-establishment cinema, necessitated a more realistic and natural acting style so producing a new type of actor on screen. The most well-known in Western eyes being Om Puri (now working in the UK in a big way).

In 'purely' political terms, India's post-1947 history falls into two phases: 1947–69, the period of secular nationalism advocated by Nehru and which was based on a politics of integration; and 1970 to the present day which has witnessed the increasing importance of Hindu nationalism as exemplified by the rise in popularity of the BJP (the Bahratiya Janata Party) and its electoral success in 1998. What of the film industry? Partition divided the film industry and, in the early years of partition, India was the country to gain in terms of studios and personnel. A few years later, however, some film-makers returned to their now native Pakistan (see below). Indian films about the traumas of the partition were, however, very thin on the ground. Indeed, films that addressed the recent history of India tended to continue the earlier trend of pre-independence films about the struggle for freedom and they were few in terms of numbers (twenty or so over a thirty-year period, 1925–57). Ritwik Ghatak's 1960s trilogy on refugee poverty and conditions in Calcutta was the first to show the effects of partition on ordinary people (*Meghe Dhaka Tara/ The Cloud-Capped Star*, 1960, *Komal Ghandar*, 1961, *Subarnareka*, 1962). But the first film to impact hugely on audiences was *Garam Hava* (*Hot Winds*, M. S. Sathyu, 1973), a film which focused on the plight of a Muslim family in North India. Since then a handful of films have been made on this topic from a sympathetic viewpoint (the latest of which is Pamela Rooks *Train to Pakistan*, 1997). Another film of the 1970s with a similar impact as *Garam Hava* was *Sholay/ Flames* (Ramesh Sippy, 1975), only this time the reference was not Pakistan but contemporary India and its civil unrest (Prime Minister Indira Ghandi declared a state of emergency in the same year).

The 1990s witnessed the emergence of films that address India's present political condition. In terms of the early 1990s, Mani

Rathnam's *Roja* (1992) and *Bombay* (1994) are extraordinary given the political upheavals of those times. Extraordinary, because *Roja* met with wide audience appeal, suggesting that Indians do want a political cinema. Extraordinary, because *Bombay* got through censorship. *Roja* is about the nationalist struggle between Kashmiri separatists and India. *Bombay* is a love story between a Muslim and a Hindu set against the backdrop of the Hindu–Muslim conflict (see Gokulsing, 1999).

However, since the rise to political power of the BJP (1998) there has been a move away from radical themes and a shift to the production of an increasing number of films with national and political agendas, reflecting, this time, the party's determination to develop a particular notion of Indian-ness and get even with history (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 110). This has included a cinema that sells Indian cultural values (the Bollywood musical is primary vehicle in this regard) and also a cinema that no longer holds back from hitting out against Pakistan. In this latter context two films need mentioning Anil Sharma's *Gadar – Ek Prem Katha/Uprising, A Love Story* (2001) and *The Hero* (2003). In these formulaic films the hero takes on the enemy nation (Pakistan) and defeats or outwits them.

This is not all of India's cinema of course. In the new millennium, films are set in the contemporary and deal with realistic situations (ranging from venal small town politics to people in emotional difficulties). Romantic comedies continue to be popular – often in the form of Bollywood musicals. The industry has become better organized, multiplexes are on the increase and there is an expanding market overseas (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 123). But there is also a greater openness within the internal market thanks to the impact of globalization. Thus, the ideology of consumption finds a ready reflection in the modern style Bollywood products (fashion, food and cars have a strong presence), the central star can often be a 'global Indian' (Gokulsing and Dissanayake, 2003: 115). Diasporic film-makers are also having an impact. Deepa Metha, Gurinder Chadha and Mira Nair – all women film-makers – have all helped to 'bring India' to Western audiences. This signals the beginning of a new kind of cross-fertilization where it will work both ways. Namely, India influencing Western products as well as Western products having an impact on those of India. In this context, *Devdas* (Bhansali, 2002) starring India's current top male star Sharukh Khan is a good example. Exported to Western countries this film has done extremely well. In a reverse sense, Chadha has gone to India and made *Bride and Prejudice* (2004).

For further reading on Indian cinema see first Ashish Rajadhyaksha and Paul Willemen (1994) *Encyclopedia of Indian Cinema*. This is *the* reference book on Indian cinema. For histories of Indian cinema see Bhowmik (1995), for representation in popular Indian cinema see Chakravarti (1993) and Gokulsing and Dissanayake (1998 and 2003). And the journal *Cinemaya: Asian Film Quarterly* (which also includes articles on Arab diaspora cinemas).

### *Pakistan cinema*

Although it mostly caters to the local market, Pakistan's film industry, with an average of eighty films per year, ranks amongst the top ten film production countries (Gazdar, 1997: 1). Little is known of this cinema outside of its own country with the exception of diasporas (for example, Birmingham and Bradford in the UK) where video club rentals make these films available. Nor is there much written about this cinema in the West. However, readers seeking to find out more would find Mushtaq Gazdar's (1997) comprehensive study provides an informative picture of Pakistan's production.

United Players was the first studio to be established in Lahore in the 1920s (and one of its early film-makers was, in fact, the first Indian woman film-maker, Fatma Begum, who made *Bulbule-Pakistan*, 1926). In terms of production it was not competitive enough to fight against the Bombay silent movies. Only the advent of sound brought about some success for films emanating from the Punjab. The 1947 partition had a considerable impact upon existing studios in the new Pakistan. Kamla Movietone (established 1924), later known as Shorey Studios, moved to Bombay after partition. The founder of Pancholi Art Pictures (established late 1930s), Dalsukh Pancholi, fled to Bombay. In 1948, these studios were taken over by Agha G. A. Gul who had already established his own Evernew Studios in 1937. Gul's dominant position meant that he became a major pioneer of Pakistan cinema after partition. During the early partition days there was some collaboration between India and Pakistan. And, two years after partition, there was some reverse in migration from Bombay to Lahore and some film-makers returned to their native city. One famous example is Nazir (born in Lahore) who returned in 1949 and became an actor, director and producer in Pakistan and worked in a successful partnership with his actress wife Swaranlata (see *Pheray*, 1949, *Sachthai*, 1949, *Anokhi Dastan*, 1950). The first Pakistan film was *Teri Yaad* (Daud Chand, 1948), but the first film made by an indigenous Pakistan film-maker was *Do Ansoo* (Anwar Kamal Pasha, 1949). At this stage, however, the Pakistan film industry

was too small to meet audience demand. Consequently, cinema theatres relied mostly on Indian film imports.

Gul was the major producer of the 1950s. But quick to follow on his heels was J. C. Anand whose first big hit was *Sassi* (Chand, 1954). By the mid-1950s quota restrictions imposed on Indian imports greatly helped the Pakistan film industry to grow. And by the 1960s Lahore had become the Hollywood of Pakistan – Lollywood. While the state did little to help the industry, it did establish a very strict code of censorship. This meant that the cinema of the 1950s and 1960s was predominantly a-political (on both social and political issues). What dominates during this period are comedies, folk tales and musicals. Although films on the history of Pakistan were deemed acceptable and represent a small exception to dominant cinema of this time. Thus, Saifudin Saif made *Kartar Singh* (1959) about the effects of partition; Khahil Qaiser made a film on the anti-colonial struggle *Shaheed* (1962); and Raza Mir made a film based on the effects of partition on Hindu-Muslim relations *Lakhon Mein Eik* (1967).

In the late 1960s and early 1970s, the ascendancy of television began to take its toll on the film industry as indeed did the political upheavals that led to the secession of Bangladesh from Pakistan. In order to assist the ailing industry, the Bhutto government in 1973 established the National Film Development Corporation (NAFDEC, quite similar to India's NFDC) which was an autonomous body under the tutelage of the Ministry of Culture. Box office receipts on foreign imports went to NAFDEC (which was responsible for importing foreign films). These revenues went forward to finance indigenous products and the tendency was to finance big budget movies and stars. The net effect was a boom in film production during the 1970s (averaging 100 films per year).

Then of course, in 1977, came the military coup of General Ziaul Haq who got rid of Bhutto (by execution in 1979), imposed martial law and established a dictatorship (the Zia junta) in the name of Islam. Zia's junta fought the Afghan war on behalf of its Western allies. It also governed on a policy of divide and rule by supporting sectarian and ethnic groups and leaving them to fight among each other. The effects on cinema (particularly that of the 1980s) was an increase in films glamorizing violence (e.g. Yunus Malik's *Jeera Sain*, 1977). Two social-realist films of the period stand out as exceptions to this trend. Mutbi *Bhar Chawal*, made by the woman film-maker Sangeeta (1978), a film about village family life and the struggle of a family to survive once the mother becomes widowed. This social

film on the condition and status of women in contemporary Pakistan pre-dates tougher censorship laws (introduced a year later) which might have got it banned. Even so, after the new laws, Sangeeta continued to be the prolific film-maker she had been throughout the 1970s making up to three films a year (as she did in 1979). The other film was *Maula Jat*, directed by Yunus Malik (1979), which deals with the indifference of officials to the plight of ordinary people. This film was banned in 1981 under the pretext that it was too violent, but clearly its reference was too close to the Bhutto story to be acceptable to the junta – or the new censorship laws (the Motion Pictures Ordinance, 1979). These new laws represented a heavy clamp-down imposing moral and religious values which was, in fact, a barely disguised form of political censorship. This censorship included the closing down of the majority of cinemas, banning the work of certain film-makers (e.g. Jamil Dehlavi who fled to the UK). The effect was a major decline in the film industry's output. It went from 100 films per year to 61 in 1980 and then balanced out at around 80 per year (a figure it maintains today).

The first half of the 1980s was a disastrous period for Pakistan cinema. Poor products (due to the all-pervasive censorship laws) met with declining audiences (especially among the elite classes). Cinema complexes were turned into shopping centres (especially in Karachi). The majority audience was now composed of rural and urban working-class male audiences and they were provided with a diet of comedies, musicals and above all violent films. By the late 1980s, rising costs and the decline in the film industry's fortunes had led to an increase in co-productions with South Asian and Far Eastern countries (not with India because of political tensions). This brought new talent into the industry, particularly in the form of stars (e.g. Sabita from Sri Lanka and Shiva from Nepal). In the 1990s, the effects of media globalization led increasingly to commercially orientated films, imitating Hollywood and Bollywood, targeting youth audiences (for example see Sangeeta's violent and sexually explosive film *Khilona*, 1996, which is based on contemporary Hollywood psychopath thrillers). However, today Lollywood remains the poor relation to Bollywood. Poor equipment (dating from the 1960s), poorly produced films, stuck to predictable formulas, have alienated a diversified audience. Arguably, one factor that helps it to survive is the ban on Indian imports which, ironically, it so slavishly and mediocrely imitates.

For further reading see Gazdar, 1997.

### *Latin American cinemas (which includes Mexican cinema)*

Between 1896 when the Lumière brothers' *cinématographe* first penetrated Latin America and 1911, almost all the countries of this continent had established exhibition venues for the screening of short films either made by indigenous film-makers or imported from Europe. Audiences were mainly the elite classes who were privy to an exoticization of their country through the documentary images brought to them. We have seen how a similar exoticization occurred in countries of the African context, the major difference being that the images taken there were for the entertainment of the privileged colonizing classes and for export to the Motherland. In Latin America's case there was, however, a form of colonization which was effected by Hollywood's forceful distribution practices which soon penetrated the countries of central and southern America and by the 1920s had garnered 80 per cent of the indigenous markets (Mexico, in particular, has a very complex relationship with the USA that dates back, at least, to the Mexican Revolution, 1910–17).

Knowledge of the early years of Latin American cinema is presently very scant. Only now are film historians engaged in uncovering the hidden pre-1930s cinemas. What is known is that in the first decades, 1900–30, only Mexico, Argentina and Brazil had anything like an indigenous film production infrastructure. In Brazil, where films were made in regional centres, production by the 1910s had reached 100 films per year. These were mostly cowboy and rural dramas, a genre that was also extremely successful in Argentina. Mexican cinema, in these early years, focused on traditional narratives but also made controversial films (at least in the eyes of its northern neighbours in the USA) about the conditions of Mexican workers in Northern America.

The advent of sound in Latin American countries was a slow affair because of the enormous financial burden of equipping cinema theatres. However, it did have the advantage of promoting national cultures in a more specific way and it brought in its wake the musical genre. In Argentina it was the *tanguera* (tango melodramas based as the name suggests on Argentina's indigenous dance form, the tango). In Brazil it was the *chanchada* (a hybrid form of Hollywood musicals and the Brazilian samba dance, carnival and comic theatre traditions). In Mexico it was the *ranchada* (a cowboy musical) and the *cabareteras* (cabaret melodramas). The Mexican cowboy musical is a hybridization of the American genre with Mexican rural traditions, whereas the cabaret melodramas are more a hybrid of the Mexican street/city

genre and the Hollywood cabaret or backstage musical. Within this notion of hybridity, Brazilian and Mexican film-making has tended to merge the practices or genres of other cinemas with their own indigenous cultural traditions and film style. The overall effect of this hybridization is a deep textual and textural layering of meanings – what is known as syncretism (a syncretic style). Brazil mimicked the Hollywood action movies (especially Westerns) by transposing them into their own context and environment and Mexico's singing cowboy films came immediately upon the heels (spurs?) of the Hollywood prototype of the mid-1930s (first exemplified by John Wayne and shortly followed by Gene Autry and Roy Rogers).

The Mexican film industry was the first to be formed in Latin America in the mid-1930s and it enjoyed a golden age of cinema through until the 1950s (particularly the decade 1943–53). This period is marked primarily by the distinguished collaboration between the film-maker Emilio Fernandez and the cinematographer Gabriel Figueroa. Figueroa trained in Hollywood under Gregg Toland (the cinematographic genius behind Welles' *Citizen Kane*, 1941). An early film Fernandez and Figueroa made together, *María Candelaria* (1943) won the Palme d'Or at Cannes in 1946. Figueroa also worked with Buñuel when he was in exile in Mexico and made *Los Olvidados* (1950) with him. Another, earlier formative influence on Mexican cinema was Eisenstein who visited Mexico in 1930–2 (where he shot *¡Qué viva Mexico!*, 1931).

During Mexico's cinematic golden age, the Argentinian cinema went through a decline (partly due to its pro-fascist but supposedly neutral political stance during the Second World War which lead to the USA withholding vital film stock). In 1946, the ailing Argentinian film industry was given a boost by the newly established Peronist government. But the cinema produced, due to tremendous pressure and censorship, was mainly safe and uncritical bourgeois melodramas. Only one voice spoke out against the Peronist oligarchy, Leopoldo Torre Nilsson whose film *La Mano en la trampa* (*The Hand in the Trap*, 1961) won the International Press Prize at Cannes.

What all these cinemas had in common was a similarity of cultural references and an artisanal style that did in fact constitute a heritage for the later radical cinema of the 1960s and the still later cinema of the 1980s and 1990s. The Latin American cinemas drew on their landscapes, costumes, customs and traditions including their oral narrative traditions and their music. This local and culturally syncretic structure of their films was matched by an equally hybrid cinematic style that was both industrial and artisanal. What distinguishes the

cinemas of that period from the later cinemas is the apparent lack of political **motivation** within the cinematic practice. What also marks this cinema of the 1940s and 1950s was the degree of cross-fertilization and the migration of talent. Europeans and Americans came to work in the Latin American continent; Latin American film-makers went to Europe; Cubans contributed to Mexican and Argentinian cinemas; Argentinians went to Brazil and Venezuela. This migrancy has also left an important heritage, one which is mirrored by the present trend of transnationalism (especially in the form of co-productions) in Latin American cinemas and one which, because of the dynamics of exchange, has come to be termed transculturation.

The late 1950s saw a new cinema emerging, one which was to last through until the early 1970s across the Latin American continent. This cinema was a militant, revolutionary, counter-cinema. It was one which denounced poverty and celebrated protest. This new cinema was started by film-makers whose products often, ironically enough, were financed by the very state machineries they sought to criticize and militate against. A film made in Bolivia is an interesting example of these paradoxes and yet shows how militant and effective some of this cinema could be. *The Blood of the Condor* (1969), made by a Bolivian film collective (Ukamau), exposed the forced sterilization of Quechua Indian women by the American Peace Corps. The effect was the Peace Corps' expulsion by the Bolivian government. The year 1959 can count as the watershed year in which this radicalization of cinema came into practice, starting with the Documentary Film School of Santa Fe in Argentina, the cinema nôvo in Brazil and the Film Institute in Cuba (founded in that year after the Cuban Revolution). These groupings produced an ethnographic and social-realist cinema showing the poverty of their countries. They also made a cinema termed the Tropicalist style (see **cinema nôvo** entry for more detail). This was a syncretic and stylized cinema that fused Catholic religion with indigenous mysticism, allegory with legend and semi-pagan religion, cult with African-Latin American ritual, producing a more surreal cinema (see the works of Glauber Rocha, especially *Antonio das Mortes*, 1969). And the impact of these groupings was such that it grew into a movement that embraced all Latin American countries producing a resisting cinema. This movement became known as the New Latin American Cinema. At the same time, debates on representation and identity were taking place in film journals. The impact of this wave of change was enormous and had world-wide repercussions best exemplified by the huge influence of the Third Cinema Manifesto (written by the Argentinian film-makers

Fernando Solanas and Octavio Getino in 1969) and the international impact of the Argentinian collective film *La Hora de los hornos* (*The Hour of the Furnaces*, Grupo Cine Liberación, 1968). (See **Third Cinema** entry.)

The Cuban Institute of Film Art controlled the film industry and between 1960 and the late 1980s (when the economy collapsed due to the demise of Soviet Russia) it was a model of socialist film-making. Production was small but consistent, and always experimental, with a yearly output of six to ten feature films and forty or more documentaries. Santiago Alvarez was a leading light in the documentary tradition and Tomás Gutiérrez Alea was a major figure in the feature film domain. Both domains cultivated a deliberate counter-cinema, a cinema that is improvised, social-realist, allegorical – deeply experimental and deliberately rough-edged. An intentionally Imperfect Cinema as Julio García Espinosa puts it (see Chanan, 1996: 743–5).

The 1960s and early 1970s, therefore, produced an extremely vibrant cinema throughout Latin America even though (with the exception of Cuba which seemed to tolerate criticism) some films were banned and in certain countries, where military dictatorships had already taken hold, film-makers were persecuted. This revolutionary cinema worked outside of genre and more in the vein of syncretic cinema (see **cinema nôvo** entry). In Brazil, one form of this syncretic cinema that espoused the aesthetics of garbage (a cinema working with scavenged and scarce resources) was Tropicalism. This was a cinema based on Afro-Brazilian or Afro-Caribbean culture, allegory and mythology (see above and Shohat and Stam, 1994: 310 for more detail). By the mid-1970s everything worsened with military coups occurring over the entire Latin American continent forcing film-makers underground or into exile from where they made a cinema of exile. Persecution meant death, not just the force of censorship. A diasporic film culture grew outside of the Latin American countries (in North America and France in particular). Militant film-makers like the Chilean Raul Ruiz eventually ended up in France where he went on to make what we can certainly call radical and experimental films, but films which would be considered more auteur-based than revolutionary (see *La Ville des pirates/The City of Pirates*, 1983, or his 1998 film adaptation of Proust's *A la recherche du temps perdu*).

In some regards, there has been a shift in cinematic practices since the 1980s towards an international art cinema. At least, that is one of the major trends. A primary reason for this shift has been the growing

importance of television as a consumer commodity for the reasonably affluent middle-classes (who make up most of the cinema-going audiences after all) as well as its presence as a shared commodity in shanty towns. In a sense, cinema has rebecome an elitist cultural artefact (as it was in its earliest days). Thus, it has had to pitch towards a more international audience if it is to remain viable. A film that well exemplifies this tendency is Brazil's Oscar contender *Central do Brazil/Central Station* (Walter Salles, 1998), a multi-co-production (Brazil/France/Spain/Japan) which enjoyed enormous success outside of Brazil (winning the Berlin Golden Bear, 1998). A road movie, scored by indigenous (Brazilian) music, it focuses on two protagonists (young and old) whose individual quests for identity act as an allegory for contemporary Brazil. Past and present inflect this travel towards the unknown future. The protagonists' poverty is matched by the pain of deprivation and insecurity experienced by the great majority of rural and metropolitan Brazilians. Religion and myth intersect to countermand belief in rational chronology (a concept which the two protagonists profoundly mistrust any way).

But there has also been the emergence of another new type of cinema – or, rather, new movements in cinema. The 1980s and 1990s have seen the emergence of a woman's cinema, a gay cinema and the native residents' cinema (what Shohat and Stam, 1994, refer to as Fourth Cinema – see above). Often, working in video and super-8, but not exclusively, this cinema continues the tradition of the resisting counter-cinema of the 1960s. But it has produced a new type of representation of national identity, a more complex and less homogeneous one than the one imaged in the 1960s by the militant New Latin American Cinema movement (see above) which pitted the true inheritors of the earth (i.e. the subalterns: the disenfranchised Indians, peasants, and workers) against the elites. This cinema breaks free from an evocation of the dependency culture to which the elites had subjugated the Latin American nations. Geographically and spiritually this cinema is a more fragmented one, very much a regional cinema that represents rural and metropolitan Latin America in its many manifestations. Indians film themselves (for example, the Kayapo Indians in Brazil, and the Nambiquara Indians of the Amazon Basin). Women relate their stories across generations of women (e.g. Suzana Amaral's *A hora da estrela/The Hour of the Star*, 1985). And gays get a very rare voice (e.g. Jaime Humberto Hermosillo's *Doña Herlinda y su hijo/Dona Herlinda and Her Son*, 1986). This fragmentation can be read (and probably should) as a positive sign and not as one of miserabilism. In other words, it can be read as if the national con-

sciousness that was required of the earlier militant cinema of the 1960s is now surpassed and no longer a necessary driving force of contemporary Latin American cinemas.

Currently in the new millennium there has been something of a renaissance of Latin American cinemas – particularly where Argentina, Brazil and Mexico are concerned. As we shall see, different financing and structural practices have helped bring about this new wave of production, but interestingly there is a common transnational thread in that, often, these films seek out the truth about the nation's troubled past, or expose, unwaveringly, the difficult social conditions experienced by these nations' poorest inhabitants. Argentina's official film school INCAA has set up a subsidy plan to foster new talent – it has some 10, 000 film students and film production is subsidized by a ten per cent levy on cinema tickets and video sales. Young talent includes Lucrecia Martal (*Nina santa/The Holy Girl*, 2004), Fabian Bielinsky (*Nine Queens*, 2001), Leonardo di Cesare (*Buena vida Delivery*, 2004), Juan José Campanella (*Luna de Avallaneda*, 2004) and Alejo Daube (*Uno de dos/One or the Other*, 2003). Through different narratives, these young directors look at the effects of the economic crisis and the dilemma faced by a new Argentina. Ironically, given that Argentina has one of the worst economies, is caught in a volatile political situation and besieged by terrible social problems, nonetheless its film industry has to count as one of the successful ones in today's world (producing around 150 films per year, a quarter of which are made by Argentinian film-makers).

Brazil is experiencing a revival not seen since the early 1980s thanks it could be argued to the enormous success of Walter Salles' *Central Station* (see above). This has brought in its wake serious international co-funding which has made possible, amongst others, two further Salles' international hits *Behind the Sun* (Brazil/Switzerland/France: 2001) – a tale of bloody feuding between two neighbouring sugar-cane growing families – and *The Motorcycle Diaries* (UK/USA/France: 2004) – the memoirs of the Argentinian Che Guevarra's early travels through the poverty-ridden Western nations of Latin America (Chile, Peru and onto Venezuela). In all three of these films, although the initial impulse is the quest for identity, the personal quickly becomes the political and in each case the dreadful conditions of labour (be it rural, metropolitan, farming or mining) are quickly exposed for the unjust practices that they are. In a slightly different way, the enormously successful *Cidade de Deus/City of God* (2002) by the equally socially conscious younger generation of Brazilian film-makers Fernando Meirelles and Katia Lund also exposes

the scandalous poverty of those living in shanty-towns. In their quasi-documentary about the street gangs of the desperately poor youth class they not only portray the terrible brutality of this life, they also propose a way out of the trap through their central character Rocket who chooses the camera over the gun. Incidentally, this rescue culture was also exemplified by the way the young actors were selected. None of them were actors, but were auditioned from the shanty-towns and trained up. Nor should veteran Hector Babenco be forgotten in this consideration of Brazil's revival. A film-maker who has been at the hard edge of social and political commentary since the late 1970s (see his *Pixote*, 1981 which depicts the plight of Brazil's abandoned street children, or *Kiss of the Spiderwoman*, 1984, about the brutal repression of revolutionaries and gays), his most recent film *Carandiru* (2004) recounts the lives of several of the prison inmates before the entire community (all 111 of them) was brutally massacred by the riot-police.

Finally Mexico. Despite recurring hardship and a decline in state funding since the notoriously corrupt Institutional Revolutionary Party (PRI) seventy year rule came to an end in 2000, Mexican cinema (albeit small at 10 films or so per year) is doing extremely well nationally and internationally. Whilst the new rightist government (National Action Party) has cut funding to the film institute IMCINE which has reduced investment in production, private money is being found to produce a small but vibrant cinema. *Amores perros/Love's a Bitch*, González Inárritu (2000), *Y tu mama también/And your Mother too*, Alfonso Cuarón (2002), *El crimen de padre Amaro/The Crime of Father Amaro*, Carlos Carrera (2002) have all been huge box-office hits in Mexico before making it big internationally. None of this cinema is the cinema of denunciation of the 1980s and 1990s which exposes poverty and exploitation among the underclasses. In this context see, for example, *Los motivos de Luz/Light Motives*, Felipe Gonzales, 1985 and *La ley de Herodes/Herod's Law*, Luis Estrada, 1999 (this latter a particularly hard-hitting film exposing the corruption practices of the PRI). Overall this new cinema is more based in humour, often the middle-classes are the focus. This is not to say that that these films are without their political edge however. Many of the ambient images in *Y tu mama también* (a road movie about identity – that of the characters as much as the country itself) present us with the oppression of the less fortunate. The gender politics of this film are also quite challenging in that the female character exposes the homoeroticism latent in Mexican machismo. *Amores perros* for its part indirectly criticizes the lack of freedom of

expression under the former ruling party the PRI and makes plain the legacy of its long rule. It also reveals a city (Mexico city) where the huge chasm between rich and poor is ever-growing and crime, as a means of survival, is rife.

For further reading see Barnard and Rist, 1996; Burton, 1986; Burton-Carjaval, 1996; Chanan, 1985 and 1996; Johnson and Stam, 1982; King, 1990; Pick, 1993; Shohat and Stam, 1994; Elena and Lopez, 2004; Noble, 2004. See also *Screen* special issue on Latin American cinema, 38: 4, 1997.

### *Middle Eastern cinemas*

Iranian, Iraqi, Israeli, Kuwait, Lebanese, Palestinian, Sudanese, Syrian and Turkish cinemas come under this rather loose denomination. Let us begin with the Eastern Arab states, leaving aside Palestine for the moment. Syria, the Lebanon, Kuwait, the Sudan and Iraq have yet to produce a national cinema that competes with Egypt or the Maghreb. Some countries (Syria, Lebanon and Iraq) established governing bodies called the General Organization for Cinema whose purpose it is to implement policies for film-making (quotas and the fostering of new film-making talent). Thus, Syria and Lebanon have managed to produce a regular if small amount of films per year. Given the current difficulties between Syria and Palestine it is worth mentioning the thoughtful film by Syrian film-maker Raymond Butros, *Refuge* (1997), which is about the 1948–9 deportation of Palestinians to Syria after the formation of Israel. The Lebanese film industry, until civil war (1975–91) broke out in Lebanon and suffered the Israeli raids and Syrian occupation, produced twenty to twenty-five films per year. Under strict censorship, production was resumed in the late 1980s with about ten films per year. But for the most part, Lebanese cinema is a diasporic one with film-makers in exile making documentary-fiction films that treat the war-torn Beirut they have left behind or to which they return to film at great personal risk. Maroun Baghdadi (killed in Beirut in 1993), made *Hors la vie/Out of Life*, 1990 (a French-Lebanese co-production). Shooting in extremely dangerous conditions, Heiny Srour took seven years to make her *Layla and the Wolves* (1984), a film about the participation of Palestinian women in the fight for independence. In the 1990s, a younger generation of Lebanese film-makers emerged and made films on the same nation-shattering topic (see for example, Samir Habshi, *Vortex*, 1992; Jean-Claude Codis, *Histoire d'un retour/Story of a Return*, 1994; Layla Assaf, *The Gang of Freedom*, 1994). This concern is one that

refuses to go away as the films of the late 1990s and early to mid-2000s testify. Ziad Doueiri's *West Beirut* (1998) is set in 1975 and narrates the Lebanese civil war as experienced by three teenage Muslims as they move around in the war-torn city. The continued message coming from Lebanese cinema centres around this unsettled nation. The personal becomes the starting point of the political in Eliane Raheb's *So Near Yet So Far* (2001) in which the killing of a young child leads to an investigation of the effects of the Palestinian cause on Arab peoples. The loss of direction of the post-war generation is the central thrust of Ghassan Salhab's sexually daring *Terra Incognita* (2002) with its focus on the young people of Beirut – a generation suspended in time, hanging in the present not daring to look to the past nor to the uncertain future.

Economic conditions, civil strife or political censorship make it difficult for any of the Eastern Arab states to boast of a national cinema and it is much more the case of individual film-makers making a breakthrough or having to leave and work in other countries, migrating to other Arab or Middle Eastern countries or to the West. Where national film products are concerned, it is almost impossible to recover costs of a film from indigenous audiences, thus film-makers are obliged to turn to other solutions: either making shorts or documentaries or seeking out international co-productions. Only a few male film-makers have been able to opt for the latter solution, the handful of women directors that exist have traditionally opted for the first solution (Heiny Srour and Joceline Saab of the Lebanon, for example).

### *Palestinian cinema*

If it is hard to talk about the above nations as having a film industry there is even greater difficulty in talking about a Palestinian cinema – at least since 1948, when Palestine became an occupied territory. Palestine has in fact always been an occupied country. The Jews believe that it is their promised land and that they have the right to live there, but so too do the Palestinian Arabs. The present occupation of the territory came about in 1947 when the then Palestine was divided into a Jewish state (which officially became Israel in 1948) and an Arab state that was shared between Egypt (the Gaza strip) and Jordan (the West Bank). Both these Arab territories were reclaimed by Israel in the Seven-day War of 1967. And since then the territories have been continuously contested by Israelis and Arabs, including the Palestinian Arabs who quite clearly feel totally dispossessed. As things

stand, the Palestinian Arabs remain without an official territory of their own, even though they possess a national identity. According to Shohat and Stam's categories (see above), film products made by Palestinian Arabs could arguably be considered as Fourth World cinema – they are certainly diasporic. Similarly, it is difficult to conceive of Israel as a Third World economy. Israel, in that it points its political and economic cap towards the USA, is in this respect a Euro-American nation, not a Third World one. Viewed in this context it is hard to see how we can speak of a Third World Cinema where Israel is concerned.

Having said that, I will briefly sketch out these two cinemas before discussing Turkey and Iran. The historic area of Palestine was a popular 'site' for early cinematographers. During the late 1890s early 1900s, the Lumière brothers and Edison made travelogue-documentary films of Jerusalem and the 'Holy Land'. However, *Palestinian cinema* itself emerged out of the resistance that was established after the defeat of the Seven-day War in 1967, when Egypt, Syria and Jordan were defeated by the Israelis. Most of its cinema is diasporic, created outside of 'Palestine' by Palestinian exiles (in Iraq, Jordan and Lebanon). A small group of film-makers founded a resistance film unit in Jordan that was directly annexed to the al-Fatah/PLO movement (led by Yasser Arafat). After the Black September Massacre of 1971 (the Jordanian massacre of Palestinian refugees and freedom-fighters) the unit moved to Beirut (in Lebanon). Subsequent to Israel's invasion of Beirut in 1982 this unit as well as other Palestinian film-makers based in that city left and settled in Tunis (Tunisia). A major trend in Palestinian cinema is the documentary one (for obvious reasons of economy) and in this context, mention must be made of May Masri, the first Palestinian woman to make films (documentaries) co-directed with the Lebanese film-maker Jean Chamoun. This documentary trend is one which sits well both with the Palestinian need to make a political cinema and with the Palestinian oral tradition.

A major Palestinian film-maker is Michel Khleifi, an Israeli-Palestinian citizen who has lived in Belgium since the mid-1970s. His feature films and documentaries are strongly politicized and address – among other issues – the lack of female emancipation within Palestinian political culture and Palestinian dispossession in the face of the Israelis (see his documentary *Al Dhikrayat al Kasibah (al-Djakira al-khisba)/Fertile Memories*, 1980). Similarly, he addresses the double occupation experienced by Palestinian women who suffer oppression both from their own patriarchal society and the Israeli occupation

(*Urs fil Jalil/Marriage in Galilee*, 1987). In *Canticle of the Stones* (1990) two Palestinian lovers are parted in the 1960s when the man resists Israeli occupation. They come together 18 years later in Palestine only to observe how much worse things have become. His *Tale of the Three Jewels* (1995) mixes documentary style with fiction: against the backdrop of the Palestinian-Israeli conflict, a young man seeks the three missing jewels that will permit him to win the love of the young woman of his dreams. In a similar vein, Rachid Mashrawi mixes documentary and allegory in his film about Palestinian refugees packed into Gaza refugee camps (*Curfew*, 1993, *Haifa*, 1995). Elia Suleiman's two films of the 1990s (*Homage by Assassination*, 1990, and *Chronicle of a Disappearance*, 1996) are remarkable reflections on the psychological effects of dispossession and occupation – themes which he has pursued in his black humour film *Divine Intervention* (2002) a not thinly veiled reaction to the ruins in which the Oslo agreements have fallen. Other recent occupation films include *Ranu's Wedding* (Hany Abu-Assad, 2000) where life in Jerusalem under Israeli occupation makes a beleaguered Ranu's task of trying to arrange her wedding a virtual impossibility. Hanna Elias' *The Olive Harvest* (2003) tells the tale of two brothers in love with the same woman set against the backdrop of tensions between Palestinian farmers and Israeli settlers. Unsurprisingly, in this cinema of Palestine, what dominates is the brutality of military occupation and its scarring effects on the Palestinian psyche. (Perhaps by the next updating of this book things will be different – hope springs eternal as the inauguration of the Ramallah International Film Festival in July 2004 attests!).

### *Israeli cinema*

Since 1948, Israeli cinema is, in many cases, nationalist and full of ethnic rhetoric vaunting its superiority over Arab nationalists (see Eli Cohen's *Ricochets*, 1986). Although, during the 1980s, Israeli cinema produced a different representation of the Israeli-Arab conflict, one which was sympathetic to and acknowledged a Palestinian entity. These films which gave 'progressive images of the conflict' (Shohat, 1989: 240) showed the Palestinians as victim. These films, made by Israeli film-makers, were known as the Palestinian Wave films. They were not liked by the Israeli Right (who labelled them Leftist) nor were they appreciated by the Palestinians who viewed them with suspicion. For the most part, these Palestinian Wave films sought to represent the conflict and the attempt to transcend it through a love affair between a mixed couple – mostly an Israeli woman and Pales-

tinian man (e.g. *Hamsin*, Daniel Wachsman, 1982, although *A Very Narrow Bridge*, Nissim Dayan, 1985, controversially reverses the order).

Conversely, in the predominantly heroic-nationalist films, gender and sexuality are very differently represented. Often the female body is the site upon which much of the nationalist ideals get played out. Thus women are represented as persons who, unlike their Arab counterparts, have egalitarian status and wield weapons and work the land. The Israeli woman sacrifices herself for the nation, bears arms and suffers unconditionally for her supposed privilege of equality. The reality is of course more complex. Many different Jews make up the Israeli state, some of whom have greater equal status than others. There are European/Ashkenazi Jews and Oriental/Arab Jews. The Oriental Jews are either Palestinian Jews or Sephardi-Mizrahi Jews. These Jews are considered ethnically inferior to the European Jew. What is noteworthy (as Shohat and Stam point out, 1994: 315) is that Israel's 'conflictual syncretisms' have given birth to an indigenous genre, the Bourekas genre (which takes the form of either a comedy or melodrama), in which the tensions between the two ethnic Jewish groupings are played out and in which the woman frequently figures as the Sephardi Jew.

Outside of Israel, Amos Gitai is arguably one of the better known film-makers. His films are politically courageous, often perceived as didactic and thereby controversial (several of his documentary films have been banned from Israeli television). His early work consisted of documentaries on the Israeli-Palestinian conflict; he then went to France in the 1980s to begin his career in fiction films, returning to Israel in 1993 where he has made a trilogy of films each one based both in separate Israeli cities and in separate orthodoxies. Thus, *Devarin/Things* (1995) is set in Tel Aviv amongst the first generation of Israelis to be born in their new state. He then made *Yom Yom/Day after Day* (1998) where he investigates an Arab-Jewish marriage against the backdrop of Haifa. In *Kadosh/Sacred* (1999) it is Jerusalem that he portrays and the structures of orthodox Jewish life as they affect the marriage between two Hasidic Jews.

For further reading see Shohat, 1989; Kronish, 1996.

### *Turkish cinema*

Turkey is the first country amongst these nations to produce an indigenous cinema, primarily in the form of documentaries (e.g. the

1914 documentary *The Demolition of the Russian Monument at St Stephen)*. The early period of feature film production did not get under way until the 1920s. A small number of films were made and (like Indian and Chinese cinemas) the main source of reference was the Turkish theatre. During this first period of Turkish cinema, which lasted through until 1940, there was only one production company (Ipek) and one film-maker Mushim Ertugrul who worked in close association with the Municipal Theatre in Istanbul. This period was also one in which Turkey was very orientated towards the West, thus Western film styles strongly influenced what few products were made (particularly French and German vaudevilles and melodramas). The second period, that of the 1940s, saw the establishing of a second production company (Ha-Ka Film) which broke the previous monopoly and made it possible for new talent to emerge and different types of films to be made that had more in common with Turkish national culture. The beginning of the boom years coincided with the coming of a multi-party system in 1950. By the late 1950s production had risen to a range of a 150 to 200 films per year (on a par therefore with, or even exceeding, France's output). Generic types were quite broad: melodramas, rural dramas and city-based dramas, action films and urban comedies. This decade also saw the birth of the star system and the establishing of a mainstream popular film industry: Yesilçam (Turkey's Hollywood). Yesilçam developed a particular visual style, highly saturated colour and minimal camera movement, and produced fairly stereotypical melodramas (of redemption and sacrifice).

The military coup of 1960 changed the direction of Turkish cinema and it veered towards a more inward-looking (as opposed to Western-looking) cinema that would draw on Turkish visual culture and tradition in an effort to establish a national cinema. An indication of the difficulties involved in producing a national cinema is exemplified by the presence, during the 1960s, of two completely opposing national film movements. The first movement was based on the belief that Turkish national cinema had to address the fundamental conflict, embodied by the nation itself, between modern Western values and Islamic traditional values. The second was based on Islamic ideology only.

By the late 1960s, early 1970s, repression under military rule and the effects of a sustained civil war led to a peculiar type of censorship whereby semi-pornographic films were not banned, but the social-realist films of committed nationalist film-makers were. A major victim of this repression was Yilmaz Güney, who after years in prison, spent

the last few years of his short life in exile (in France). When in prison he wrote scripts that were produced. He scripted *Yol* (*The Way*), made in 1982 by Serif Gören, which won the Palme d'Or at Cannes in 1983. Güney's films of the early 1970s (e.g. *The Hope*, 1970; *The Elegy*, *The Sorrow*, both 1971), based as they were in themes of rural poverty and oppression, did not endear him to the authorities but they set a trend in Turkish cinema which became known as the New Turkish Cinema, an art cinema which still perdures today (see below).

During the 1970s which was a period of stiff competition on the exhibition front (against Hollywood majors primarily), production soared to an average of almost 300 films per year. This hugely inflated number is mostly due to the inclusion of uncensored soft-porn (and even hard-core porn) movies which made up half the total number of films, and the 'cheapie' karate films being made at the time. The more traditional arabesque (musical) genre also figures, but in a fairly minor way when compared to the porn movies. The effect, however, was a diminution of audience figures which led to a crisis in the 1980s and the eventual collapse of Yesilçam. Production slumped to seventy films per year until 1986 when the Ministry of Culture intervened to protect Turkish cinema from competition (both from television and the American majors). The result was a rise in production – not to former levels but to an average of 185 films per year. This is a remarkable achievement if one considers that the 1980s was a difficult period of censorship thanks to the new military regime which came in on the back of the 1980 military coup. But the post-coup Republic/military dictatorship endorsed a mixed culture of economic liberalism and apoliticization of its citizens (thus porn films continued to be made, but political cinema was censored).

The cinema of the late 1980s and through to the present is one which draws once more on Turkish tradition and which has seen a resurgence of the type of socio-realist national cinema first advocated in the 1960s (one that addresses the tensions inherent in Turkish society and which also reflects Turkish narrative traditions). And it is noteworthy, in this context, that the prime mover behind the nationalist cinema of the 1960s, Halit Refig, was back on the scene making films (*The Lady*, 1988, *Two Strangers*, 1990). Production of the more popular cinema (arabesques, comedies) has decreased greatly in the 1990s due to competition for financing and the effects of television. Ninety per cent of the cinema market is dominated by American products. And television's rapacious demand for film products means that channels will go for cheap imports rather than the more expensive indigenous product. On a more positive note, however, the

state has put in place a system of aid and Turkey now accesses Euro-images which helps on the production and distribution side of the industry. Furthermore, the 1990s has witnessed the emergence of a new generation of film-makers which includes a very healthy proportion of women directors (Mahinur Ergun, Canan Gerede, Tomris Giritlioglu, Furuzan, Biket Ilhan, Hanan Ipekçi Isil Özgentürk, Yesim Ustaoglu, and Seçkin Yasar).

Throughout all this politically difficult time New Turkish Cinema, whilst small in output, has never disappeared. Intriguingly therefore its life span is over thirty years and still going. Key words to its practice show how distinct it is from the Yesiçlam in-house studio style. Credibility, naturalness, shooting with sound (as opposed to dubbed sound in post-production), psychological types (as opposed to stereotypes), representations of the changing role of women since the 1980s (as opposed to fixed constructions) – these are the central features of this cinema presently well exemplified by the work of Nuri Bilge Ceylan (see his trilogy: *Kasaba/The Small Town*, 1998; *Mayis Sikintisi/Clouds of May*, 2000; *Uzak/Distant*, 2003).

For further reading see Basutçu, 1996; Ozguc, 1988; Woodhead, 1989; Erdogan and Göktürk, 2001.

### *Iranian cinema*

Iranian cinema (formerly Persian until the Revolution of 1978) began in the 1900s with documentary films commissioned by the Shah. These were, as one might expect given their source, spectacles of Royal ceremonies and attractions (weddings, births, the Royal zoo) and were made for an elite consumption, that is, the Shah and his Royal entourage. This state sponsorship of documentary still prevails today. Iran's first feature films appeared in the 1930s. First came a silent film, *Abi and Rabi* (Avanes Ghanian, 1930) then Iran's first sound film, *The Lost Girl* which was directed in India by Ardeshir Irani (1933). It took a long time for Iran to set up its own film studios. Pars Film Studio, established in the late 1940s, was the first and was owned by Esma'il Kushan who directed the two first sound films produced in Iran (*The Tempest of Life*, 1948, and *Prisoner of the Emir*, 1949). Films of this era were based on the Iranian traditions of folklore and epics, a tradition that would return in a big way under the Revolutionary oligarchy.

In the 1960s the state took control over the film industry which until then had been a mixed economy of private sector film produc-

tion and state-subsidized films. The move was political and motivated by the USA's concerns about the spread of communism into Islamic states. The Shah was perceived as a natural ally to (and controlled some might say by) the United States. Films of the late 1950s and early 1960s expressed concern over the increased presence of Western values and their seeming erosion of traditional Iranian ones. Thus the state take-over was intended to redress this negative view and to foster a more pro-Western cinema. Production for a while was quite mediocre which of course sent audiences off to other cinema venues (ironically) to watch Western products. The indigenous types of films being produced were comedies, melodramas and action-hero movies (the latter did not attract as much as their 'superior' American prototype). However, in 1969, two films launched what became known as the Iranian New Wave. *Qaisar* by Mas'ud Kimai was an action-hero film with a difference, thus recasting the poorer Iranian prototype. The film shows the negative effects of American Westernization on the Iranian people (the action-hero rescues the Iranian damsel in Western distress). The other film, *The Cow* directed by Dariush Mehrju'i, was a rural film filmed in the social-realist vein. Although this was not the dominant cinema of the 1970s (indeed it had great trouble getting its products financed) this New Wave lasted and informed film practices through until the Revolution of 1978.

During the first years of the Revolution, cinema was proscribed. It was banished as corrupt and redolent with Western cultural imperialism. Cinema theatres were burnt down (in 1979 there were 470 now there are only 270). Almost all indigenous products were banned and once production got underway again, only a quarter of new products were passed by censorship and, therefore, got made. Strict imposition of Islamic law meant that women virtually disappeared off the screen. Many film-makers sought exile from where they have continued to make a diasporic cinema of Iran. In 1983, the Ministry of Culture established the Farabi Cinema Foundation, a body whose function was to overview film practice and to ensure high quality products. By 1987, women were allowed back on the screen, but were shot according to strict criteria for modesty. Women film-makers also began to appear (around six in all).

Censorship remains unabated, however. Iranian film-makers have to negotiate not just delicate taboo issues (such as the proscription of sex and any physical contact between opposite sexes unless they are related in real life) but also the equally difficult issue of political taboos. There are five levels of censorship – all have to be passed before a film can be exhibited in the country. Thus, even films that

have been made can subsequently be banned. The Islamist freedom-fighter and film-maker (who fought against the Shah) Mohsen Makhmalbaf has had his work banned by the censor board of Iran (*Gabbeh*, 1994, for being subversive, *A Moment of Innocence*, 1996, for being anti-revolutionary). However, he enjoys a popular reputation in Iran. Furthermore, Makhmalbaf has established his own production company and co-produces with France. In 1997 he co-produced his daughter's, Samirah Makhmalbaf, first feature film (*La Pomme/The Apple*) which passed through the levels of censorship. The strict laws in Iran can produce other anomalies such as, for example, the film-maker Abbas Kiarostami who has managed to escape censorship, but who is more widely applauded internationally than he is nationally. His films are not commercially successful in Iran but they are with Western audiences (see *The White Balloon*, 1995, *Through the Olive Trees*, 1996, *A Taste of Cherry*, 1997 which won the Cannes Palme d'Or).

Where Iranian cinema is presently concerned, therefore, it would be fair to say that, while the infrastructure for production has been put in place ensuring quality films, and that the levy on cinema tickets ensures a ploughing of resources back into the industry, none the less, distribution and exhibition systems are in a parlous state (partly because of the burning down of so many theatres and partly due to lack of available funding to remedy those specific problems). Lack of products means that the television market (often 'illegally' accessed by satellite) and video black markets are taking care of audience needs. Undoubtedly, however, censorship is the most severe obstacle film-makers have to overcome to get their work seen – and the latest new wave of cinema, called New Iranian Cinema is remarkable in this respect. Babak Payami, now living in exile, had to smuggle his film, *Silence between Two Thoughts* (2003) out of Iran on DV. The negative was confiscated because the film was deemed too controversial: in accordance with the village's reading of Islamic law a young woman is sentenced to death for not being a virgin; the executioner's hand is staid at the last minute, she is after all a virgin; however, he is such a zealot he is persuaded to marry and deflower her so he can carry out the sentence. Jafar Panahi still lives in Iran and, despite the board of censors giving him a very difficult time, manages to get his films made and distributed outside his country. His recent films, *The Circle* (2000) and *Crimson Gold* (2003), have not been seen in Iran – and the film-maker refuses to make cuts that would allow their exhibition. Samira Makhmalbaf continues in the wake of her early success, *The Apple*, to make internationally acclaimed films (*Blackboards*, 2000; *At 5 in the Afternoon*, 2003) – all

her films address in different ways the theme of women's rights. Indeed the Iranian Culture ministry finds itself in a very paradoxical situation with its internationally successful film-makers. It celebrates these film-makers' world-wide renown and yet it may well refuse their products any kind of release in Iran. These films get made thanks to two different sets of circumstances. On the one hand, many of them get international funding (which guarantees their international release). On the other hand, the authorities (since the mid-1990s) have 'softened' the censorship laws so that now films get the go-ahead for shooting based on a short synopsis. However, they can step in at the last stage and refuse a screening licence. The intention behind this softening was to foster self-censorship, which clearly is not working where the above film-makers are concerned.

Much has been made of the influence of Italian Neo-realism on this New Iranian Cinema. Film-makers use primarily non-professional actors, the stories are ground in the real and bear a strong relationship to contemporary Iranian social reality – even if the narrations have to be told in allegorical form, which in itself gestures to the limits of what can be shown (see *The Apple*, *The White Balloon*, Panahi, 1995). The trajectories are often circular, the spaces disconnected, children feature largely (often one suspects because of the difficulty of casting women, see above), but there is nearly always a quest (to leave the city, *The Circle*; to escape patriarchal emprisonment, *The Apple*; to help a friend, *Where is the Friend's House?*, Kiarostami, 1987; to challenge the division caused by boundaries, *Blackboards*, Samira Makhmalbaf, 2000; a woman's return to her homeland to try and locate her sister in *Kandahar*, Moshen Makhmalbaf, 2001). This quest suggests the psychological disconnectedness felt by the characters, both men and women, in this nation that presently so rigidly asserts a single reality.

*see also*: **Black cinema – USA**, **Black cinema – UK**, **cinema nôvo**, **postcolonial theory**, **Third Cinema**

For further reading see Issa and Whitaker, 1999; Naficy 1979, 1992 and 1993; Tapper, 2002.

## 30-DEGREE RULE

A rule applied in the name of continuity which stipulates that, when there is a cut to another camera position, the camera should be at

least 30 degrees from the previous one. If this rule is not observed and two shots are cut together of the same person or object within the scene without the camera having moved more than thirty degrees, the effect on the spectator is of a jolt as if the camera has jumped a bit. Essentially in terms of spatial logic there is not enough difference between the two shots in terms of angle (and therefore a clearly understood renewed position on the object) for the transition between the two shots to remain unnoticed. The result is a noticeable jump, what is termed a **jump cut**. The 30-degree rule serves to create an undisturbed seamlessness in the film because such a shift does not draw attention to itself and is logically motivated within the **narrative**.

*see also*: **180-degree rule**

## THRILLER/PSYCHOLOGICAL THRILLER

A very difficult **genre** to pin down because it covers such a wide range of types of films. Thrillers are films of suspense, so clearly film noir, gangster, science fiction or horror films are in some respects thrillers, as are detective thrillers (see **gangster films**). Some purists will differentiate terror movies as being distinct from thrillers, since a thriller is supposed to instil terror into the **audience**. I shall ignore that sub-categorizing and focus primarily on the psychological thriller, bearing in mind the overlap with the aforementioned genres.

A thriller relies on intricacy of plot to create fear and apprehension in the audience. It plays on our own fears by drawing on our infantile and therefore mostly repressed fantasies that are voyeuristic and sexual in nature. *The* master of the thriller is Alfred Hitchcock, the greatest creator of anticipation and builder of suspense. Almost unquestionably he is the film-maker who invented the modern thriller. His secret is of course in the construction of his films. Often at the centre of the **narrative** is a fairly basic theme, usually a struggle around love and/or money, so that is not what grabs and enthrals the **spectator**. Fundamentally Alfred Hitchcock works through delay. He delays the action which we know is going to occur. We know Marion Crane is going to be murdered (in *Psycho*, 1960), but we do not know when or how. We, like Norman Bates, have been watching her, unseen, as we peep through the holes alongside Norman. When will terror strike? When it finally does, we almost feel relief, certainly a release from all the tension that has been building up through the set of

**gazes** that have been conferred on Marion. In this respect, the attacks on women in Alfred Hitchcock's films are clearly sexually motivated. Even if in some films (such as *The Birds*, 1963) they do not die, Alfred Hitchcock's women are assailed by knives, birds or brutally strangled (*Frenzy*, 1972).

Thriller films are, then, sadomasochistic. Indeed, the psychological thriller bases its construction in sadomasochism, madness and **voyeurism**. The killer spies on and ensnares his victim in a series of intricate and sadistic moves, waiting to strike. The killer is most often psychotic and his madness is an explanation for what motivates his actions. He **agences** murderous power through his madness. Such is not usually the luck of the woman. Madness predominantly privileges women-as-victim far more than men. Their madness is a deep-rooted phobia that often has a sexual cause. Marnie's fear of men (in *Marnie*, Alfred Hitchcock, 1964) is due to her violent reaction to seeing her mother aggressed by a sailor – Marnie kills him, but is for ever stuck with the neurosis that men equal sexual aggression. She is stuck, that is, until her all-knowing husband cures her. In *Repulsion* (Roman Polanski, 1965), as the title already indicates, the heroine's revulsion at men's sexual advances is the result of the fear and repulsion she experiences when confronted by the primal scene (the parents copulating). Men who get too close to her get murdered.

Voyeurism operates within the film is **diegetically** inscribed but the film also operates to position us as voyeurs. One film that brilliantly exposes this process is Michael Powell's *Peeping Tom* (1960). The film itself **foregrounds** voyeurism, positions us as voyeur-director and as the victim, and in the closing shots makes us voyeur of our 'own' victimness (for a discussion of this point see **foregrounding**). In this way we too play out the sadistic scenario and derive pleasure from re-experiencing our primitive and infantile desires. It is noteworthy that many thrillers focus around bad parenting – or that bad parenting is the cause of psychotic behaviour. Norman Bates in *Psycho* and Mark Lewis in *Peeping Tom* both had bad parents: an overbearing mother in the first case, a disapproving father in the second. Sibling rivalry can also cause psychological disorders of a life-threatening kind (as in *Whatever Happened to Baby Jane?*, Robert Aldrich, 1962). But so too can sibling narcissism (as in *Dead Ringers*, David Cronenberg, 1988). The two identical twins, both brilliant gynaecologists (!), live in perfect harmony with one another until a woman enters their life with an amazing gynaecological problem (a triple cervix). She disrupts the twins' symbiosis and symbolically castrates them (well, she would with a triple cervix wouldn't she?).

Incapable of coping with woman-as-difference and terrified of separation, one of the twins takes to drugs and becomes increasingly hysterical in relation to women. He eventually drags his brother down with him and the two finally succumb to a gruesome double-death.

One final point. Although thrillers are more about fantasy than reality, they do fulfil a very real need. Otherwise why would we go to the movies? We do have a psychological fascination with horror, we like being made afraid. For this reason many thrillers have an aura of 'the possible' about them. To achieve this, the settings are as ordinary as one's own familiar environment. Alfred Hitchcock's *Frenzy* is a good example of this everyday ordinariness in which ordinary women keep getting murdered (the setting is London, more specifically the former Covent Garden, the murderer an ordinary fellow, a fruiterer). Roman Polanski combines the fantastic with the ordinary in *Rosemary's Baby* (1966) where he juxtaposes demonic possession and witchcraft with contemporary New York.

*see also*: **fantasy**, **film noir**, **gangster movies**, **motivation**, **horror movies**, **science fiction**, **voyeurism/fetishism**

## TRACKING SHOT/TRAVELLING SHOT/DOLLYING SHOT

Terms used for a **shot** when the camera is being moved by means of wheels: on a dolly (a low wheeled platform on which a film camera is moved) and on tracks (hence tracking shot), in a car or even a train. The movement is normally quite fluid (except perhaps in some of the wilder car chases) and the tracking can be either fast or slow. Depending on the speed this shot has different connotations (for example like a dream or trance if excessively slow, or bewildering and frightening if excessively frenetic). A tracking shot can go backwards, forwards, from left to right or right to left, and the way in which a person is framed in that shot has a specific meaning (for example, if the camera holds a person in the frame but that person is at one extreme or other of the frame, this could suggest a sense of imprisonment).

## TRANSPARENCY/TRANSPARENCE

This concept takes both these spelling forms, and refers to the notion that cinema, does not provide a window on the world, any more than

television does, that is, the idea that it offers a one-to-one relationship with reality is a **myth**. Both media can, however, offer a transparence on the world: they can give a reflection *on* the world that surrounds us. Thus a **war film** like *All Quiet on the Western Front* (Lewis Milestone, 1930) gives a reflection on the horrors of the First World War trench warfare – a reflection that is closer to the truth than the dominant tendency of war films which is to glorify victory and heroize the individual.

*see also*: **ideology**

## UNDERGROUND CINEMA

The underground cinema movement in the 1960s was very important to the growth of US cinema. It was bold, outrageous and scornful of **dominant cinema** practices. It was also known as the New American Cinema Group: this group, formed in 1960, signed a manifesto accusing mainstream or dominant cinema of being morally corrupt. Underground cinema was a name coined by Stan VanDerBeek to qualify this independent film-making movement based in New York and San Francisco. This movement grew out of the 1950s Beat Generation and its revolt against conventional artistic practices. VanDerBeek was one of the practitioners of this movement, as were, more famously, Andy Warhol, Stan Brakhage and Kenneth Anger. **Censorship** was still in practice in the US (it was abolished in the late 1960s), hence the term underground, because in subject matter the films produced by this movement were proscribable products. The movement was not a cohesive group but stood as one in its determination to defy the censorship laws, which it deemed unconstitutional. And in fact it was one of the movement's most notorious films, Jack Smith's *Flaming Creatures* (1963) – a **fantasy** film about a transvestite orgy – which was hounded by the New York police and the US Customs but which, in the end, was shown as evidence before the States Supreme Court hearing on the abolition of censorship.

The collective that made up underground cinema were not necessarily film-makers, but came from different artistic backgrounds and saw in film a new way of self-expression. The heritage of this movement is traced back to Maya Deren's influential experimental film work on the subconscious, most specifically her film *Meshes of the Afternoon* (1943). And indeed she helped to finance projects by

other independent film-makers, particularly Brakhage and Anger. The first so-called underground film, *Pull My Daisy* (1959), was a Beat Generation film made by Robert Frank and the painter Alfred Leslie starring Jack Kerouac as voice-over and Allen Ginsberg as the poet. Kenneth Anger's films explicitly explored homosexual fantasies, rituals and dilemmas (see *Scorpio Rising*, 1963). Andy Warhol filmed real time by placing his camera in front of a building for up to eight hours and just letting the film roll (see *Empire*, 1965 – in front of the Empire State Building). He also parodied **Hollywood genres** (for example **Westerns** in *Lonesome Cowboys*, 1968). Other film-makers were more closely associated in their work with the **cinéma-vérité** tradition. Lionel Rigosin's and Shirley Clarke's documentary approach produced such politicized films as Rigosin's film on a down and out alcoholic in New York, *On the Bowery* (1955), and the clandestinely shot film among Black South Africans, *Come Back Africa* (1959); Clarke's films focused on Black ghetto subculture in Harlem: drugs and jazz (*The Connection*, 1961); adolescent crime and survival (*The Cool World*, 1963); Black male prostitute fantasy (*Portrait of Jason*, 1967).

## UNMATCHED SHOTS

Cutting from one **shot** to another so that there is no apparent **continuity** in action. This type of editing is typically used in **avant-garde** and **surreal** films as a means of creating a sense of disorientation in time and space. A classic example is Luis Buñuel's *Un Chien andalou* (1929).

## VERTICAL INTEGRATION

A term used to refer to a film industry practice put in place by Hollywood (although there are precursors to **Hollywood**) whereby the entire system of production, distribution and exhibition is controlled by the studio making the film product. Thus the studio makes the film, distributes it and controls its exhibition (often in its own theatres).

## VOYEURISM/FETISHISM

Voyeurism is the act of viewing the activities of other people unbeknown to them. This often means that the act of looking is illicit or

has illicit connotations. We pay to go to the movies, but once we are sat before the screen we are positioned as voyeurs, as spectating **subject** watching the goings-on of the people on-screen who are 'unaware' that we are watching them. It is from this positioning that we derive pleasure (known as scopophilia, pleasure in viewing). Voyeurism is not limited to the spectator, however. The camera that originally filmed the action is also a 'voyeur'. Often there is a voyeuristic positioning of a character within a film. Alfred Hitchcock is notorious for this (as in *Rear Window*, 1954, and *Psycho*, 1960). A film that admirably foregrounds the complexity of voyeurism and all the subject positionings possible is Michael Powell's *Peeping Tom*, 1960 (see **foregrounding** for a discussion of this film in this light).

Fetishism refers to the notion of over-investment in parts of the body, most commonly the female body. Thus, in films women's breasts or legs are often 'picked out' by the camera and are, thereby, over-invested with meaning. Similarly, dress-codes can be part of this fetishizing process. Thus, a woman might wear a slinky, tight-fitting dress and long black evening gloves. Alternatively, she might be wearing very high heels, stilettos perhaps, and have her fingernails thickly nail-polished (in deep red if it is a film in **colour**).

In psychoanalytic terms, voyeurism and fetishism are two strategies adopted by the male to counter his fear of sexual difference (between himself and the female, sexual other) and the fear of castration which he feels as a result of that difference (the woman lacks a penis, the male assumes 'she' has been castrated). Thus, adopting the first strategy he fixes the woman with his gaze, voyeuristically investigates her body, and therefore sexuality – she is the object of his investigation and in that way he safely contains her. As the object of his look and surveillance, meaning is ascribed to her by him. Voyeurism, at its most extreme, can lead to sadomasochistic behaviour. The man watches the woman, she may or may not know that he is looking at her, she cannot, however, return the gaze (because it is he who has **agency** over it and thus over her). Ostensibly, she is his victim and he the potential sadist who can violently attack or even kill her. Most **thrillers** and **films noir** depend on this sadomasochistic dynamic for their suspense. *Psycho is* an obvious example, but *The Shining* (Stanley Kubrick, 1980) is another. And by way of a rare reversal of power relations, at least until the bitter end, Kathy Bates in *Misery* (Carl Reiner, 1990) entraps her favourite popular fiction writer who has broken his leg and is therefore 'impotent'; she keeps him under constant surveillance and, when he 'dares' to 'look back' (by refusing

to do her bidding and write *the* novel she wants written!), thinks nothing of brutally attacking him with axes and all sorts of penile or castrating instruments. But all ends well, he gets away – this after all is a comic thriller.

Fetishism is no more kind to the woman. Fetishism is a strategy to disavow difference. The male seeks to find the 'hidden' phallus in the woman. This fetishization takes place by a fragmentation of the body and an over-investment in the part of the body (or a piece of clothing) that has been fragmented off. The purpose of this over-investment is, ultimately, through perceiving them as perfection themselves, to make those parts figure as the missing phallus. The female form is contained this time by a denial of difference. She is phallic, therefore safe. Marlene Dietrich was a fetishized form particularly in Von Sternbergs films – she takes on a masculinized female form (see Kaplan, 1983: 49ff:). Marilyn Monroe was kept sexually safe by over-investment in her breasts and legs. More recently, many of Kathleen Turner's and Theresa Russell's roles have them (phallically) dressed in tight black dresses, stiletto heels with highly varnished nails and long sweeping hair – the deep voice just adds the finishing touch.

*for fuller discussion see* **gaze**, **psychoanalysis**, **scopophilia**, **spectator positioning**, **suture**

## WAR FILMS

Given the devastating effects of wars, especially world wars, on the populations of the nations involved, it comes as some surprise that war movies are very much a minority genre – both in the West and the East – and that, as far as colonized and formerly colonized countries and nations are concerned, there is even less **transparence**. What transparence there is tends to glorify or put forward the heroics of a particular triumphant nation. Until the 1970s, for the most part, the myth of the citizen army fighting the enemy prevailed, completely over-riding issues of class and ethnic diversity. Furthermore, only rarely do these films look at the horrors of war – in some ways it is impossible to represent. Within Western cinema on the whole, the vanquishing nation or colonizer's rightness in its endeavours has hardly ever been questioned or indeed explained – that is until recently.

The West has known two world wars since the birth of cinema. It has also been involved in various combats with regard to decoloni-

zation (particularly France) and wars that have been partially the outcome of the Cold War waged between the two superpowers (the United States and the former Soviet Union). What follows is a synopsis, largely based upon these various periods, of the representations of war in Western movies.

### *The Great War 1914–18 and its representation in cinema 1914–39*

The Great War had been the 'war to end all wars'. The loss of life had been colossal, almost beyond belief – at least 8.5 million servicemen died on the two sides of the combat (the Allies lost 5 million, the Central Powers 3.5) and a further 21 million combatants were wounded. The loss of life on the Eastern front (Germany's Eastern border) was as great as that on the Western front, yet it is the latter front that is the more notorious in film and in history books – perhaps because of the devastating futility of the trench warfare fought out on both sides along the Franco-German border.

In Europe during this period, the propagandist nature of films only lasted for the early part of the hostilities. But the patriotic **melodramas** did their bit to help enlistment. *England Expects* (1914), *The Fatherland Calls* (*Das Vaterland ruff*, 1914) and *French Mothers* (*Mères françaises*, 1916) are just a sample of the titles that were intended to encourage men into battle and women to support their patriotic sons, lovers and husbands in the war effort. However, audience taste soon waned for these films that demonized the enemy or glorified the sacrificial spirit of the ordinary indigenous population. Preference was felt for the escapist nature of American comedies and series. Paradoxically, in terms of patriotic fervour it would be the United States that would pick up where Europe left off. Until 1917, when the Americans went to war, the United States had adopted an isolationist position in relation to the war, an isolationism that was reflected in the film output. And what few films were made about war were pacifist in nature (for example, *War Bride*, 1916, urges women to abstain from bearing children until fighting ceases). By 1917 all had changed and films became increasingly militantly pro-war (for example *The Kaiser – The Beast of Berlin*, 1918). The change of attitude came about largely as a result of Germany's offensive against the trade embargoes placed upon it and the two other countries of the Central Powers alliance (Austria-Hungary and Italy). To counter the Allies' attempts to deprive it of trading and receiving materials, Germany in 1915 launched a submarine (U-boat) campaign against the United Kingdom and the mercantile activities of the

United States (one famous sinking was of the British liner *Lusitania* in 1915). Anti-German sentiment, not expressed until this period, at the loss of American lives during this campaign was partly responsible for the United States joining forces with the Allies (France, the Soviet Union and the United Kingdom). Now the German was exposed on film as a ruthless rapist intent on ravishing America's virgins (*The Little United States*, 1917, starring Mary Pickford as the almost hapless victim) or a terrorizing colonialist who would invade America's shores (for example *The Sinking of the Lusitania*, 1918). In terms of content, these films did little more than transpose into American culture the jingoistic tone and stereotyping of earlier British and French films (such as *The Outrage*, Cecil Hepworth, 1915; *Herr Doktor*, Louis Feuillade, 1917).

Only after the war could a more acerbic eye be turned upon the savagery of war. But even so the number of films produced was minimal. For example, in the immediate aftermath of the war, France produced only one, and it focused on the horrors of war: Abel Gance's *J'accuse* (1919). Not until the tenth anniversary of the Armistice would the French film industry produce another film on the atrocities of that war. If anything, the United States was the more prolific. Capitalizing on the success of Charlie Chaplin's *Shoulder Arms* (1918), **Hollywood** was quick to realize that there was a taste for war movies, and during the 1920s several grand-scale reconstruction films of the United States' fighting role in the war were made. *The Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse* (1921), *The Grand Parade* (1925) and *What Price Glory* (1926) are just three examples of films that reconstructed battle scenes (often using veterans as extras). William Wellman's *Wings* (1927) pays homage to the fighter pilots of the war (then in their infancy). His film won the first Oscar ever, for best film.

The film to describe most explicitly the merciless horror of trench warfare was one of the earliest **sound** films to be made, Lewis Milestone's *All Quiet on the Western Front* (1930). The effect of this film was all the stronger since it was the first to bring the sound of war to the **images**. A strongly pacifist film, it portrays both the Allies and the Germans as victims of war, a senseless war. Jean Renoir's *La Grande illusion* (1937) also picks up on this theme, but by the late 1930s, with war again imminent, the pacifism of his film was met with **censorship**. During the early 1930s, Germany also produced anti-war films, most famously Georg Pabst's *Westfront 1918* (1930). However, given that moment in history and the rise of Nazism, the tendency was for the Germans to pay tribute to their war heroes,

particularly those working in the submarines *(Morgenrot/Dawn*, Gustav Uciciky, 1933).

With the advent of the Second World War, the Great War (now the First World War) sunk into oblivion as a film theme until the late 1950s. Stanley Kubrick's *Paths of Glory* (1957) and Joseph Losey's *King and Country* (1964) were just two films among a handful that returned to that 1914–18 period and seriously questioned practices operated behind the war scene by officers in power over young conscripts. In both Kubrick's and Losey's film the issue is that of court-martials: three Frenchmen in the former film, a British soldier in the latter. More historically accurate films like these appear periodically in attempts to put the record straight (showing for example the effects of blinding gas in *Aces High*, Jack Gold, 1976) or to put on record war efforts that had been neglected (for example the contribution of Australian and New Zealand servicemen to the war in *Gallipoli*, Peter Weir, 1981).

### *The Second World War*

If ever proof were needed that wars do not end wars then perhaps the devastating mortality figures of the Second World War will stand as testimony. Over thirty million service people and civilians died in this six-year war (some figures quote fifty million) that left the world divided into two ideological parts (at least): the capitalist West and the communist East (of course geography does not oblige with such a neat schism: Cuba is in the west and Japan in the East!). The boundaries of traditional warfare had been blown apart by the dropping of the atomic bomb first on Hiroshima and then on Nagasaki (two important Japanese seaports). The savagery of this war can be measured by the fact that almost as many civilians as service people perished (14.7 million civilians including the systematic annihilation of 5.7 million Jews and an unaccountable number of gypsies and homosexuals; 15.3 million service men and women).

In the United Kingdom, as elsewhere, the **documentary** was perceived as a vital instrument for both morale boosting and propaganda (see **ideology**). Already in the First World War the documentary had been used to chronicle some parts of the war, that is once the ban on cameramen (sic) was lifted in 1915, thus permitting them to go to the front. These documentaries included footage of the disastrous battle of the Somme. Documentary was already a strong tradition in the United Kingdom, harking back to work done for the GPO Film Unit by the Grierson Group – a group of documentarists

headed up by John Grierson (see **documentary**). This film unit was renamed the Crown Film Unit in 1940. These documentaries focused both on the home front and on hostilities overseas. *London Can Take It* (Harry Watt and Humphrey Jennings, 1940) portrayed life going on as normal in London during the day despite the night raids by German fighter planes. This film was extremely influential in the United States in obtaining funds for Britain's war effort. In the same vein of Britons 'getting on with it' were Jennings's *Heart of Britain* (1941), showing ordinary people coping in the north of England, *Listen to Britain* (1942) about the British facing up to the hardships of wartime and *Fires Were Started* (1943) about the London fire service. *Target for Tonight* (Watt, 1941) portrayed the RAF bombing raids on Germany, showing what all the home-front hardship was for: victory. (The film was a studio reconstruction, although real RAF pilots were used.) Nor was the focus uniquely on the confrontation with Germany on European soil. Films from the Service Film Units provided images of campaign victories in North Africa (*Desert Victory* and *Tunisian Victory*, both 1943) and the Far East *(Burma Victory*, 1945).

If the war can be said to have had any positive impact on the film-making industry, as far as the United Kingdom and France were concerned, it did free up slots for new talent to emerge. The American presence in Europe 'went home'. (The United States had not joined the war until 1941 after the Japanese had bombed its naval base at Pearl Harbor in the Pacific.) As for the French presence, certain of the established names, including immigré Germans and Austrians fleeing Nazi Germany, escaped to Hollywood. The new talent emerged from their lesser roles into that of film-maker: David Lean, Sidney Gilliat, Frank Launder and Charles Frend in the United Kingdom, Robert Bresson, Jacques Becker and Henri-Georges Clouzot in France. In the United Kingdom many of the films produced were about the RAF, the naval forces and the merchant navy. Exceptionally with the new generation of film-makers, the shift in emphasis was away from **class**, still very much in evidence in other established film-makers' work (see Anthony Asquith's *The Way to the Stars*, 1945). Their films exemplified group solidarity dissolving class lines, and they stressed the ordinariness of people fighting the war (see *In Which We Serve*, Lean, 1942; *San Demetrio, London*, Frend, 1943). The importance of women in the war was also signalled (see two 1943 films: *The Gentle Sex*, Leslie Howard, about the women in the Auxiliary Territorial Services, and *Millions Like Us*, Launder and Gilliat, about women working in a munitions factory).

For France the story was completely the reverse. As an occupied country (1940–44) France could not address the war either as resistant to the Germans or as collaborator. This is why the few films that did appear to have a 'message' commenting the time were read so conflictually as simultaneously resistant and collaborationist. A classic example is Clouzot's *Le Corbeau* (1943), a film about a small town riddled with fear as a result of a spate of poison-pen letters. Another example is Jean Grémillon's *Le Ciel est à vous* (1944), about a female aviator who, after successfully completing a transatlantic flight, returns to the bosom of her family and carries on as a good mother and housewife. In post-war France very few films indeed reflected the immediate past. Those that did eulogized the work of the French Resistance (eight films in all immediately after the liberation), most famously perhaps *La Bataille du rail* (René Clément, 1946).

In Germany propaganda had been underway throughout the Nazi régime since the early 1930s (with Goebbels as Hitler's propaganda minister). The work of Leni Riefenstahl is most often mentioned in this connection (see *Triumph of the Will*, 1934) although during the war she was virtually inactive. The primary message of Germany's propaganda was its Aryan superiority, its victorious war campaigns and its heroism. The most notorious 'documentary' film was Dr Franz Hippler's *The Eternal Jew* (*Der Ewige Jude*, 1940) which purported to document the evils that Jews had wreaked on Germany (including causing Germany the loss of the First World War) and showed them as degenerate, even barbaric, in their traditions and culture and as corrupters of German aesthetics. Apart from the documentary propaganda, the German film industry produced a fair number of historical films which, in particular, praised former great leaders of the nation (for example *Bismarck*, 1940). Historical films were also produced to target Germany's reviled enemy, Britain. These films attacked Britain as the evil oppressor in Ireland (*The Fox of Glenarvon*, 1940, and *My Life for Ireland*, 1941 – both made by Goebbels's brother-in-law, M. W. Kimmich). Alternatively, Britain was the imperialist creator of concentration camps run by Churchill during the Boer War (*Uncle Kruger*, 1941). This last piece of propaganda was in fact based in truth. During the Boer War the British did set up concentration camps in which some twenty thousand women and children perished.

Both Germany and Britain exploited the historical reconstruction to propagandistic ends: the Germans to show their courage, their genius and their sense of vision as a nation that was politically and culturally unified, the British to extol their indomitable spirit against

all odds (what is now termed the Dunkirk spirit – oddly since Dunkirk refers to a 'valiant' retreat by the Allies in 1940 when France was occupied). Bismarck, Schiller, Bach and Diesel were just some of the geniuses Germany paraded before its cinemagoing **audiences** (in films of the same titles). Britain turned to Nelson, exhorting Britain to go to war against Napoleon (*That Hamilton Woman!*, Alexander Korda, 1941); to Disraeli and his defiance of Bismarck (*The Prime Minister*, 1941); and to Henry V and his rallying call to the English for one more effort to overcome the enemy (*Henry* V, Laurence Olivier, 1944).

The war established a documentary tradition for the Soviet Union, United States and Japan. The Soviets often compiled documentaries exemplifying the collective spirit of a united Soviet Republic (see *A Day at War*, 1942, with a hundred contributions from the front and *Berlin*, 1945, with forty contributions capturing the taking of Berlin). The documentary was exploited far less in Japan and on the whole extolled the duty to fight, but not without giving a realistic portrayal of the dangers of war (see Yamamoto's *The War at Sea from Hawaii to Malaya*, 1942, a reconstruction of the bombing of Pearl Harbor). In the United States documentaries were used to explain why the country had engaged in the war – a necessary procedure given its isolationism and fairly neutral pacifism during the first two-and-a-half years of hostilities. Most exemplary was Frank Capra's documentary series *Why We Fight* (1942–45). The seven documentaries that make up this series document the rise and spread of fascism, the aggression of those fascist nations on others and, finally, the threat of fascism to America. Questioning the merits of engagement does not arise. Indeed the series was commissioned by the United States War Department. The maverick style in which John Ford's equally propagandistic film *The Battle of Midway* (1942) was made and finally shown to President Roosevelt for approval also points to a committed unquestioning stance. Ford, a lieutenant-commander serving in the Pacific, brought back to the United States actual footage of the Battle of Midway, determined to make a film for the mothers of America so that they would be proud of their sons' bravery in war and be moved to support American engagement (and send more sons to fight). It was made in total secrecy, shown to the President and approved for general distribution. John Ford had become the John Wayne of war documentaries.

Before the United States joined the war it produced several films, made in Britain, in support of the British. For example, the British film *That Hamilton Woman!* was a United Artists London film. As

already mentioned, this film was an historical reconstruction. Others showed British courage in the face of German bombing raids (William Wyler's *Mrs Miniver*, 1942). More usually, however, these films took the form of an American serviceman participating in a British campaign (as with *A Yank in the RAF*, Henry King, 1941). These types of film also had the merit of not upsetting the isolationist camp in the United States which, despite Roosevelt's wish to assist Britain in the war effort, had a strong hold on how the nation conducted itself. Furthermore, these films were muted and were not allowed to be particularly anti-fascist for fear, according to the **studios**, of political and economic reprisals – although why this fear arose is questionable since by 1940 Hollywood could not export to most of mainland Europe because it was occupied by the Germans, who had imposed a complete ban on the import of American products, including films. This fear may point to the widely acknowledged belief at the beginning of the war that the Germans would win the war and that it would be foolish to lose future markets. A simple example will illustrate this fence-sitting attitude. In 1939 (just prior to the war) Warners released Anatole Litvak's *Confessions of a Nazi Spy*, an explicitly anti-Nazi film. Germany, which still had a diplomatic presence in the United States, expressed its indignation and Warners were warned off making any such film in the future.

If until the United States' engagement in the war Hollywood played a rather minimal and unpartisan role in relation to the war effort, such was not the case once Pearl Harbor brought the United States into the war. Roosevelt put pressure on the studios to participate in the propaganda and morale-boosting necessary to get the United States behind the fight. Stars helped either by joining up (Clark Gable, James Stewart), by entertaining troops or getting ordinary Americans to buy war bonds (Bing Crosby, Bob Hope, Rita Hayworth, Bette Davis, Marlene Dietrich). The war film took off **comedies**, **musicals**, and combat films, films depicting the effects of the war on European citizens – all of these came pouring out of Hollywood, under the strictest of government guidelines. In the period 1942–45 Hollywood produced some five hundred war movies out of a total output of 1,700 films. The earliest films obeyed the governmental criteria of patriotism against fascism (see two 1942 films, *Yankee Doodle Dandy*, a musical, and *Remember Pearl Harbor*, a war film with a clear call to arms). A different form of patriotism is advocated in Jean Renoir's *This Land is Mine* (1943) and in some ways it is surprising it slipped through unnoticed when the war was at one of its most critical moments (the defeat of the Germans at

Stalingrad and El Alamein). The central protagonist, played by Charles Laughton, declaims on two occasions in the film the right to freedom of speech, life, liberty and democracy based on the founding principles of socialism: equal rights for all.

On the whole the **stereotyping** in the war films reveals a curious mixture of jingoism, ambivalence and naivety The jingoistic attitude prevailed in the representation of the Japanese. They were the evil, sadistic torturers who would go to any lengths to win (as in *Across the Pacific* and *Wake Island*, both 1942, and the fiercely anti-Japanese *Purple Heart*, Lewis Milestone, 1943). As far as the representation of the Germans was concerned, they were either the evil Nazi (*Hitler's Children*, 1942) or the good German (*The North Star*, 1943). They could in fact be a blend of the two as in Conrad Veidt's Nazi in *Casablanca* (Michael Curtiz, 1942). Veidt, it will be recalled, was the fetish star of the **German expressionist** films (so not a little irony here since Hitler held the Jews responsible for the decadence of expressionism!). The ambivalence in these particular films can be understood in the light of the large numbers of German immigrants and second-generation Germans residing in the United States. The open hostility to the Japanese, however, resides in their otherness and purported inscrutability.

But, in terms of stereotypes, by far the oddest response was to the Soviets. In films such as *Mission to Moscow*, *North Star* and *Song of Russia* (all 1943), Soviets were cast as ordinary people just like the 'folks back home'. Ideologically there was little to separate the two 'great nations': the Soviet Union was a virtual reflection of the United States: singing, dancing and uncomplicated. Stalin was Uncle Jo, and his repression of dissidents a necessary step for national and international security in the time of war (let it not be forgotten that the United States had incarcerated thousands of Japanese-Americans in California, under the same pretext of national security). This whitewashing of a precarious ally – after all the Soviet Union had signed a non-aggression pact with Hitler which broke down only when the Germans decided to invade the Soviet Union in June 1941 – is not astonishing in the light of war. Beyond the strategic need for fighting to take place on Germany's Eastern front, thus dispersing German resources and weakening the enemy, there was doubtless a more hidden agenda that explains this naive representation of the Soviets. The Soviet armed forces were needed if public support for the war was to be maintained 'back home'. Presidential popularity, therefore security of office, is and always has been notoriously tied – in times of combat – to the number of 'body bags' sent

home. Eleven million Soviet combatants died in this war and seven million civilians (over half the total deaths in this war). American casualties were not light, but in relation to those figures they are certainly less awesome (292,131 combatants and 6,000 civilians).

The idea that the United States was fighting a just war and that sacrifices were necessary was not a mood that prevailed, however. By 1943, doubtless because returning servicemen were bringing the message home that the war was not being won, several films had begun to reflect a greater reality in sharp contrast to the heroization and fervent patriotism expressed in the general run of war movies. Several films reflected the setbacks and defeats suffered by American troops against the Japanese. *Bataan* (Tay Garnett, 1943) ends with the massacre of an American patrol. *Air Force* (Howard Hawks, 1943), *Thirty Seconds over Tokyo* (Mervyn Leroy, 1944) showed the gruesome reality of air combat. *The Purple Heart* depicted the torture of American prisoners of war at the hands of the Japanese.

Immediately after the war several American war movies began if not to question then certainly to expose the futility of war, its horrors and the atrocious conditions under which it is fought (as in *The Story of GI Joe*, William Wellman, and *They Were Expendable*, John Ford, both 1945). But by the late 1940s Hollywood was back to its more jingoistic practices, undoubtedly as a result of the Cold War and the activities of the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC). An exemplary film in this context is *The Sands of Iwo Jima* (1949), subtitled *The Marines' Greatest Hour*, and starring John Wayne. A notable exception is William Welland's *Battleground* (1949) – a film about the unglamorous nature of war and which would not have got made but for the persistence of MGM's production chief Dore Schary (unusually for that time within the industry a man of the left). War-wearied Britain dropped the genre only to return to it with grand-scale heroization of the RAF in *The Dam Busters* (Michael Anderson, 1955). This jingoism and heroization was sharply contrasted by the sense of loss and defeat apparent in the few films made by the losing nations, Germany and Japan – it is revealing that they were not post-war films as such but products of reflection, coming some ten years after the end of hostilities. Kon Ichikawa's two films on the devastation and dehumanizing effects of war, *The Burmese Harp* (1956) and *Fires of the Plain* (1959), reveal the full horror to which Japanese troops were exposed. In the first film a former army scout becomes a Buddhist monk who roams across Japan burying the war dead; in the second, which is set towards the end of the war, starving troops are reduced to cannibalism. The desperate lengths to

which Germany would go in the face of the inevitable loss of the war is virulently described in *The Bridge* (Bernhard Wicki, 1959). Short of manpower, young adolescents are conscripted to defend a bridge, futilely, since they get blown up.

As with the **Western**, the war movie, at least until this period, had a fairly unchanging **iconography**. Combat is either on a grand scale (military manoeuvres, tanks and so on) or on a small, even individual one (as with fighter pilots). Quite frequently there is a target to be obtained (a hill, a bridge). There is an ensemble within the corps of servicemen with whom we identify (see **spectator identification**) and who display different types of courage. Comradeship is paramount. The enemy is absent except as an impersonal other (and therefore bad). There were, of course some exceptions to this uncritical heroic representation of war. Class conflict destroying prisoner of war morale is central to David Lean's *The Bridge over the River Kwai* (1957), and the corruption of officers and their indifference to the fate of their men is exposed in Stanley Kubrick's film (based in the First World War) *Paths of Glory.* As with other genres in the 1950s, psychology was being introduced as a mainspring to character **motivation**. Thus, a certain number of films which attempted to go counter to the dominant trend tried to examine the psychological effects of warfare – as in Lewis Milestone's *Halls of Montezuma* (1950), about combat fatigue; Fred Zinnemann's *The Men* (1950) starring Marlon Brando which shows the devastating realities faced by war veteran paraplegics who return home from the war, wounded and psychologically broken; and Robert Aldrich's *Attack!* (1956), which looks at officers' cowardice and the fear of fighting. But then again in the UK, in the late 1960s and 1970s, there were odd switches back to the glory of the war heroics – primarily in the star-studded blockbusters *Battle of Britain* (Guy Hamilton, 1969) and *A Bridge Too Far* (Richard Attenborough, 1977). So there isn't necessarily a forward evolution of the genre towards a greater truth in representation or more realistic portrayal of men at war – although there is great play for 'authenticity' through extremely mobile camera work, blurred images of combat and special effects. This lack of change is made evident by the fact that, even though more recently, in the 1990s and the new millenium, there have been films showing local heroism within the magnitude and horror of war, where the gore of war is matched by the unheralded heroism of an individual who stands for humanity, nonetheless, there can be startlingly contrasting versions of this representation. Steven Spielberg's *Saving Private Ryan* (1998) and Terrence Malick's *The Thin Red Line* (1998) are exemplary in this context. Spielberg's film

remains an utterly straightforward American take on World War II – an overly simplistic narrative reduced to small-time heroics that have no real bearing in history and based in sentimentalism – despite the gory and realistic first thirty minutes of the landing on Omaha beach (and, typically, the ending is a bloody defending of a bridge). Malick's film completely contrasts with Spielberg's film about individual heroics and takes a deep look into military behaviour and the nature of evil. In his film there are no all-American heroes. Rather Malick's film shows – in complete contradistinction with Spielberg's – how war erodes and undermines personal identity and humanity.

The true ghastliness of war can probably never be represented (at least in feature films) – very few films come close. Spielberg's *Saving Private Ryan* only sustains it for half an hour; his controversial *Schindler's List* (1993) still does not escape the heroization of an individual and has (in my view) an unforgivable sentimental edge. Similarly, albeit in a different register, Roberto Benigni's *Life is Beautiful* (1997) sanatizes the atrocities of the Holocaust away. Nor, with time, does the truth come any closer/easier. *Pearl Harbor* (Michael Bay, 2001) is nothing short of a distortion or evacuation of history. A video-game full of beautiful men and pyrotechnics and fireball extravaganzas, it is as thin as the lack of characterization it skates on. It asks no questions and tells us nothing of the true nature of soldiering and combat. Compared to Zinnemann's *From Here to Eternity* (1953) with which it arguably shares some similarities – a love story set in the Pearl Harbor moment – it lacks Zinnemann's sense of what the endurance of war and the horribleness of being in the army meant.

Exceptions to this are very rare, and mention must be made of the Soviet film-maker Elem Klimov's *Come See* (1985) – this account of an adolescent's experience during the German occupation of Belarus in 1943 shows the unbearable. Based in Klimov's personal experience (as well as Adamovich's novel *The Story of Khatyn*) it feels deeply rooted in the real. The adolescent has already witnessed a massacre in his own village. When he manages to struggle onto another, he sees the SS German Commandos arriving and doing exactly the same: taking food from the villagers then rounding them up into a church and setting fire to the building. We, like the boy, watch the grotesque reality unfurl (apparently 628 Belarussian villages were destroyed in this way). The cycle of violence is unending in this film, as we are obliged to 'come see' (Wrathall, 2004: 28–30).

In general, vanquishing nations tend not to look too closely at the ambiguities of war. This is also true of film. Questions can be asked

only if there is doubt, and victory is less conducive to doubt than defeat. And it is worth noting that, as far as the United States was concerned, only when the ignominy of defeat became undeniable and questions had to be asked – as they were over Vietnam – did an 'unglorious' look at war become more commonplace. But before that came the Cold War.

### *The Cold War and Vietnam*

The term Cold War refers to the hostilities between the two superpowers and their allies following the Second World War. The fear of nuclear war (as exemplified by the effects of dropping atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki) proscribed military confrontation (even though both powers reputedly stockpiled nuclear arms). So war was conducted on economic, political and ideological fronts. This was the epoch for the spy, counter-espionage, paranoia about the spread of communism or capitalism and, finally, the age of intervention into the political arena of countries too small to prevent the encroachment of the two superpowers who annexed them as satellites.

The Cold War produced anti-communist films from Hollywood (such as *The Red Menace*, *The Red Danube*, both 1949; *I Was a Communist for the FBI*, 1951; *Big Jim McClain* and *My Son John*, both 1952). These were virulent anti-communist **melodramas** where protagonists either wake up to the dangers of communism, and sniff it out or die for their mistake in believing that communism was a good thing. Alternatively the Red Menace could take an alien form, as in *Red Planet Mars* (1952) and *Invasion of the Body Snatchers* (1956). Paranoia was also felt at the risk of nuclear war. This mood generated a series of films either in the apocalyptic mode (*The Beginning or the End?*, 1947; *White Heat*, 1949) or in the post-holocaust one (*Five*, 1951; *The World, the Flesh and the Devil*, 1959). Unsurprisingly, the Soviets produced their own anti-American films. Mostly these focused on the imputed evildoings of the CIA (for example *Secret Mission* and *Conspiracy of the Doomed*, both 1950).

However, perhaps the film-maker most associated with Cold War movies is the American Sam Fuller. He made three films based on US intervention during the hostilities between North and South Korea: *Steel Helmet*, *Fixed Bayonets* (both 1951) and *Hell and High Water* (1954). They are all extremely violent films – since he mostly made **B-movies** he suffered less interference from the censors. But his representation of violence set a precedence for movies to come,

particularly in the 1960s and 1970s films of Arthur Penn and Sam Peckinpah (for example *Bonnie and Clyde*, 1967 and *The Wild Bunch*, 1969, respectively). Fuller's influence extended beyond the depiction of violence, however. His editing style, which **deconstructed** the seamlessness of traditional Hollywood practices, considerably influenced Jean-Luc Godard and later certain film-makers of the **New German Cinema** (Rainer Werner Fassbinder and Wim Wenders), and later still Martin Scorsese. Fuller's modernity or prescience is (arguably) evidenced by the fact that he was the first to portray the Vietnam War as an issue for the United States, long before it became officially engaged in the war. His 1958 film *China Gate* tells the story of an American legionnaire fighting for the French in Vietnam. As opposed to the traditional role of a legionnaire as detached from any patriotic or personal motivation, his fighting the communist enemy is personalized. He sees their defeat of the Vietcong as the imperative that will allow him to take his son (the progeny of his marriage to a Eurasian woman) back to the United States.

The 'truth' about the war – with one or two brave exceptions (usually censored) – rarely comes out until some decent amount of time has elapsed and the nation's psyche has had time to recover. Interestingly, this was not the case with Japan. After 1952, when the occupation of Japan by the American Allies was over, Japan made several post-Holocaust films about the atomic bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki that had brought the country to an abrupt cessation of hostilities with the Allies. Until that date, Japan was not permitted to broach the subject from a critical or realistic point of view. Once the ban was lifted, a variety of films on the subject of the effects of the atomic Holocaust were made. The horror of the holocaust was represented in Kaneto Shindo's *Children of the Atom Bomb* (1952), Heideo Sekigawa's *Hiroshima*, *Hiroshima* (1953) and Akira Kurosawa's *Record of a Human Being* (1955). The effects of the atomic fall-out, such as producing monsters and mutants, is the subject of Ishiro Honda's **horror** movie *Godzilla* (1955). Conversely and more typically, in the West, issues raised by the atomic bombing – such as the kind of reasoning that makes such attacks possible – did not get raised until the mid-1960s, some twenty years after the event. In 1964 Stanley Kubrick launched a virulent satire on those in charge and capable of unleashing atomic warfare *(Dr Strangelove*, 1964) and in 1965 Peter Watkins made a politically uncompromising film that examined the effects of a nuclear attack on Britain (*The War Game*).

With regard to Vietnam – although of course there were the usual range of jingoistic efforts, for example, John Wayne (*Green Berets*,

John Wayne/Ray Kellogg, 1968) and Sylvester Stallone (*Rambo: First Blood, Part II*, George Pan Cosmatos, 1985) – Hollywood was, perhaps surprisingly, not so slow to produce films that attempted to view critically the impact of that war on the American mentality, particularly that of the American GI. But even as early as 1969, Robert Altman's film *M*A*S*H*, despite being set in a surgical unit during the Korean war, was readily being understood as a metaphor for the carnage of Vietnam. The war was officially over by 1976. Martin Scorsese made *Taxi Driver* in the same year. Then in 1978 and 1979 came Michael Cimino's *The Deer Hunter* and Francis Ford Coppola's *Apocalypse Now.* These films focus on the effect of the war on the individual and in that light can be seen as progressive. They do not, however, question America's legitimacy in fighting that war. In Scorsese's film the neglected and despised Vietnam veteran becomes a self-appointed vigilante of urban New York and finally wins acclaim as a hero. In the other two films the real issue of why the war was being fought is again side-stepped and, although the protagonists are clearly severely disturbed by what has happened to them in Vietnam, there is no mistaking that the cause for the action in both films is the sadism of the enemy, the unknown other. The only film of the period that came close to a committed questioning of the United States' involvement in Vietnam was Hal Ashby's *Coming Home* (1978) starring Jon Voigt as the disabled veteran and Jane Fonda (who had been politically active against the war) as the woman who falls in love with him. Unfairly, perhaps, some critics slated the film as sentimental, worse still as letting America off the hook in terms of guilt about the war. Rather the film, while it does centre the Vietnam issue in one person, raises issues about why American troops were sent there and why they were so devalorized when they came home alive or half alive. It does, therefore, put America's warmongers on the stand. Ten years later, using a similar narrative, Oliver Stone's *Born on the Fourth of July* (1989) is in a position to take this questioning a whole lot further – condemning the war and exposing the lack of compassion and proper care made available to veteran victims of the war. In the late 1980s and early 1990s a smattering of films have attempted to address that war more realistically, with portrayals of American brutality, the horror of the actual fighting, the racism suffered by Black Americans from their own compatriots – and so on (for example *Platoon*, Oliver Stone, 1986 and *Hamburger Hill*, John Irvin, 1987, *Full Metal Jacket*, Stanley Kubrick, 1987).

Whilst this entry has limited its points of reference to the major world wars of the twentieth century, it is true that other wars have

found their expression in film. In the Hollywood context, obviously there is the American Civil war (often the subject of Westerns). It is worth mentioning how far representation of this war has shifted from the first film on the subject *The Birth of a Nation* (D. W. Griffith, 1915), and a more recent one *Glory* (Edward Zwick, 1989). In the first, Griffith is unapologetically nostalgic for the good old days of Southern wealth (based on cotton plantations) and his film remains deeply racist (as indeed it was then, with amongst other things, a glorification of the Ku Klux Klan, a stereotyping of blacks and a normalization of their general mistreatment, including lynching). In the second film, Zwick marks the bravery of the war's first black fighting unit. With regard to more contemporary conflicts, for example the first Gulf war of 1991 (George Bush Snr's so-called smart war against Iraq), there exists a parlous few films – *Courage under Fire* (Edward Zwick, 1996) and *Three Kings* (David O' Russell, 1999) are the ones that come to mind, and both in different ways sanatize the awfulness of that war. In the former, investigation of the truth behind a fellow officer's courage is quickly reduced to a matter of personal redemption. In the latter, the heroes of a non-existent war of liberation function allegorically for the political discourse surrounding that war: blatant self-interest passed off as humanitarian concern.

*see also*: **genre**

For further reading see King, 2000; Lipschutz, 2001; Russell, 2002; Shapiro, 2002; Shaw, 2001.

## WESTERNS

Also known as the Horse Opera or Oater, the Western became a genre that was very early incorporated into the film industry's repertoire. The first, official, Western was by the American film-maker Edwin S. Porter, *The Great Train Robbery* (1903). Although the Western is considered an exclusively American genre, this is not the case. The French, for example, were making Westerns and exporting them successfully to the United States at least until the First World War – most famously the *Arizona Bill* series, starring Joë Hammond (1912–14). And, of course, later on in the history of this genre the Italians turned to making the so-called spaghetti Westerns (1965–75).

In a sense, the silent Westerns (though of course they were accompanied by music) were simply carrying on where reality had

left off. The 'civilizing' of the West was virtually completed when cinema was born, and the cowboy's life as a herder had more or less come to an end as a result of the land-rush and subsequent homesteading. The effect of this great migration west was to close off the open range. The land-rush to all intents and purposes made the cowboy defunct. Given the mythic value of the cowboy as far as Westerns are concerned, it comes as some surprise that as herders cowboys only existed fully for a brief period: 1865–80 – at which point the beef boom foundered. Homesteading was complete, the new towns and cities were established and there was no more need for driving the cattle west to feed the people. These factors – civilization and the open range or wilderness – are two first keys to the typology of this genre. The hero (sic) is constantly operating at the point of conjuncture of these two opposing values. He never really wants to accept civilization, as embodied by the woman (who brings with her from the East Coast the notion of community, family and so on). Rather he is always desiring to be on the move in the Wild West. The cowboy, with his restless energy and rugged, dogged individualism, is in the Western the embodiment of American frontiersmanship, or at least the **myth** of that frontiersmanship. However, the fact that the cowboy or gunman is always represented as being caught between the two values points to the **ideological** contradictions inherent in the myth of that frontiersmanship. The hero's actual ambivalence reveals the nation's own ambiguous attitude towards the West. Civilizing the West meant giving up the freedom it represented, including of course freedom of the individual, a high price for Americans to pay for national unity. However, the duration of the genre – possibly the longest lasting one of all – points to America's fascination with the frontier as a site of hope for something new and better.

The tradition of the cowboy as mythic hero dates back to the Western dime novels published from the 1860s. These novels dramatized lives that were both real and fictional and elevated the cowboy to mythic status. In the early days of cinema, at least, these novels were the primary sources for the Western movie, which is a part explanation for the highly ritualized nature of this genre. These novels also heroized outlaws (Jesse James being a favourite) and indeed lawmen. And as we shall see, the heroization of the outlaw also became a typology of this genre. In fact, real-live outlaws and cowboys – especially cowboys who had been rodeo riders – came into the film industry up until as late as the 1930s and 1940s (Gene Autry and Roy Rogers are two well-known names). Buffalo Bill

starred in his own film *The Adventures of Buffalo Bill* (1913). A reformed bank robber, Al Jennings, starred in several early Westerns. However his films did not glamorize the West, rather they told the truth about the sordid money-grabbing practices that were so prevalent (as in *The Lady in the Dugout*, 1918). These were not the **images** the public wanted to see, so his career soon ended.

**Audience** expectation, then, is a second factor explaining the ritualistic and formulaic nature of the Western. This ritualization needs to be discussed before continuing with the history of this genre. The dime novels tried to explain 'how the West was won', even though of course it was not won. It was taken away from the Indians by the 'few' property speculators, and what was left over from the good gold-mining terrain and profitable land, which they kept, was sold to the beleaguered pioneers who had come so far for so little. Dime novels could not tell this story any more than films. Audiences wanted to see the West as it should have been, that is as myth. The ritualistic narratives of the Western do, however, reveal the ideological contradictions of this myth. Rituals are about the fear of loss of control, of mastery (sic). Thus the eternal repetition, as represented by rituals and the formulaic construction of the genre as well as the audience's own ritual in going repeatedly to see these films, reflects the desire to reassert that control and mastery (we know this is not the truth, it is myth, but we keep going back to see it because we want it to be so). The narrative rituals of robbery, chase and retribution, of lawlessness and restoration of law, are iconographically inscribed in the Western, right down to the very last detail and gesture. Attacks are repeated in different ways. The stagecoach chase is replaced by the wagon-train attack, the train robbery, the cavalry charge or the Indians swooping down on 'innocent' homesteaders. Cattle drives, gold prospecting and railroad building are epic markers saluting the glory of going West. The ritual of the gunfight (in or out of the saloon), the pushing through the saloon swing-doors and swagger up to the bar – all are images that we immediately associate with the genre. All, of course, constitute a massive cover-up of how the West was colonized in the name of capitalism. That story would be told, but only rarely, and Al Jennings was one of the first to tell it so. However, back to history.

The first Western hero was one of his own making, Gilbert M. Anderson. He persuaded Thomas H. Ince to let him star in *The Great Train Robbery*. Just as importantly, it was he who took the Western out West in the name of authenticity. He formed his own production company, Essanay, and made a large number of films starring himself

as Bronco Billy. The Bronco Billy series lasted from 1910–18 (for example *Bronco Billy's Redemption*, 1910; *The Making of Bronco Billy*, 1913). He was quickly followed by William S. Hart, who made his début in 1914. He too strove for authenticity and worked first for Ince, then for Paramount. Hart's films were quite pessimistic and bleak. He played the same role of the baddie who is really good deep down inside and who gets redeemed by the end of the film. His most accomplished film is *Tumbleweeds* (1925), which he produced and in which he starred. It contains extraordinarily realistic footage, including the settlers' land-rush sequence composed of three hundred wagons and at least a thousand men, women and horses.

By the late 1910s the Western, by now a great favourite, spawned five big Western **stars**, whose careers went well into the 1920s – some lasting as long as into the 1930s (that is into **sound**). The five 'greats' were, first, Tom Mix, who wore highly stylized outfits, the first to do so, a tradition that carried on through into the fringed shirts, soft leather gloves and gaily painted leather boots worn by Roy Rogers. More macho in image and in action were Buck Jones and Tim McCoy, great stunts-men who had, like Mix, started out their careers in rodeo and Wild West shows. The last two, Hoot Gibson and Ken Maynard, were often paired in films. Between them they significantly developed the iconography of this genre: Mix's costumes have already been mentioned; the horse became a focal point, almost a second hero; cowboys started to sing.

The first Western **epic** is James Cruze's *The Covered Wagon* (1923), closely followed by John Ford's *The Iron Horse* (1924). What is exceptional about Cruze's film, apart from the mammoth undertaking of attempting to put into film the enormity of the migration west, was that it was shot not in the studios but on location and was therefore a reconstruction of the migration as it had been experienced. Thus there were river crossings, Indian attacks and struggles through arduous weather conditions, all of which worked to give the film a **realism** that no other Western to that date had produced. Lasting two hours, the film convincingly evoked the two-thousand-mile trajectory undertaken by the pioneers.

The other contemporaneous epic, *The Iron Horse*, tells the end-part of the pioneering American spirit, the building of the railroads west. In this respect, this film and Cruze's are the bookends of the history of that epoch, at least the mythic version of it. Clearly, in this epic context, the mythical value of these films has nationalistic overtones. Indeed, Ford, the son of an immigrant family from Ireland, makes no attempt to disguise his commitment to the concept of America as the

land of opportunity and to the Lincolnian belief in America as one nation (he dedicated his film to Abraham Lincoln). The overriding message of this film is a belief in progress (the iron horse replaces the horse). However, not at any price: unity among men, not individualism, is the only way of achieving it.

John Ford is arguably the greatest Western film-maker of all time, although Howard Hawks is a strong rival. Ford started his career making Westerns for Universal, the largest producers of the genre until the early 1920s (see **studio system**). In 1920, after three years with Universal, he went over to Fox. His film career spans over forty years (*The Man Who Shot Liberty Valance*, 1962, is a late example of his work in this genre alone). It is often said that, because of his own immigrant past and his desire to belong, he was obsessed with American history and with the notion of the family. Whatever the case, it is certain that the notion that unity creates stability and a sense of community is central to his films, including the Western. In this respect his vision seems to go counter to the ideology inherent in the Western of the wandering cowboy or gun-hand who must restlessly move on. However, this first disposition of Ford's in fact enhances the tension in his film between the opposing values of *wilderness* and civilization precisely because, for the most part, his heroes do not settle down but live out and with this contradiction (as in *My Darling Clementine*, 1946; and, in a more complex way, *The Searchers*, 1956). His fetish star was John Wayne who, when he first worked with Ford, almost got himself thrown out of the studio for being insubordinate.

Back to the history of this genre. The advent of sound brought about a big drop in the production of the Western, at least as an A-movie. The drop occurred largely because there was so little dialogue. The audience was now used to 'talkies' and the Western did not adapt well at first. As an action-packed film, before sound, it had little need for much talk. Clint Eastwood's almost silent movies of the 1980s and 1990s merely carry on this tradition (although he is not that heavy on action either!). Interestingly however, during the 1930s, Westerns continued to be produced as **B-movies** and were very popular. As a B-movie, a Western was a low-budget product that could be quickly and cheaply produced to fill the double-bill requirement. The double bill was a practice introduced during the Depression years to attract audiences by giving two films for the price of one. The smaller studios, Monogram and Republic in particular, were largely responsible for this output although, among the majors, Warners was also a significant producer. It was the B-Westerns that launched the singing cowboy – starting with John Wayne in 1933

(*Riders of Destiny*) and closely followed by Gene Autry (*Tumbling Tumbleweeds*, 1935) and Roy Rogers. As a type the B-Western was iconographically simplistic and ideologically populist. The goodies and the baddies were easily identifiable. The former wore white, the latter black, and unquestionably the goodies would win. No room here for redemption – bad is bad. By the mid-1950s the B-Western (and the B-movie in general) had disappeared after the Supreme Court's decision in the Paramount case of 1948 finally took effect by breaking up the major studios' cartel (see **studio system**). But it did not go out with a whimper. In 1952 and 1954 Republic won best director Oscars for, respectively, Ford's *The Quiet Man* and Nicholas Ray's *Johnny Guitar.*

Briefly in the late 1930s there was a big surge once more in production of A-feature Westerns. A first cause was the United States' isolationism in the face of the war in Europe. The revival of the genre reflects an inward-looking nationalism that is simultaneously nostalgic, having regard for things American but things of the past, in this instance, the nation's heroic and civilizing expansion into the west. By curious coincidence John Wayne, *the* true grit American as we now know him, finally attained star status in this brief period of production upswing when he starred in Ford's *Stagecoach* (1939). Pioneers were celebrated (as in *The Westerner*, 1940, with squeaky-clean Gary Cooper). Often the narrative depicted the individual fighting against giant corporations (railroad companies, banks, etc.). Certain outlaws were also celebrated. A particular favourite was Billy the Kid (see *Billy the Kid*, 1941 and Howard Hughes's *The Outlaw*, 1943 but not released until 1946 – see below). This heroization of outlaws, as already mentioned, was part of the mythologizing of the West started by the Western dime novels of the 1860s. Because the West was largely monopolized by land-grabbing companies, to take the law into one's own hands was perceived as a legitimate practice. An outlaw in these circumstances came to represent freedom in much the same way as the cowboy. The outlaw asserted individual 'rights' over the big bosses. Similarly the lonesome lawman was a hero in his standing up to the baddies who threaten to disrupt the community.

There was, however, the burgeoning of another type of Western: one that was more socially critical and which set a trend that would be more fully developed in the 1950s. William A. Wellman is credited with being the progenitor of this so-called 'modern Western' which, because it deals with social issues, is also described as the psychological Western. In the first of these films, *The Ox-bow Incident* (1943), Wellman polemicizes against the lynch law. The rough justice

meted out in Western folklore is severely criticized but not through a goodies-versus-baddies confrontation. Collusion and passivity on the part of 'decent, ordinary folk' are as much responsible for the lynching of the innocent men as those baying for their blood. In this uncompromising film Wellman takes to task the ideological functioning of the traditional Western: nostalgic escapism at the service of corporate capitalism. He repeated this in his 1944 film criticizing the White colonization of the West, *Buffalo Bill*.

The introduction of **colour** on a bigger scale in the mid-to-late 1940s meant that violence now appeared more real. This was greeted with considerable consternation by the censors. But far more to their consternation were the implications for sex on screen. Sex did not come on to the screen in the Western until the late 1940s and even so it came in with great difficulty. Howard Hughes's *The Outlaw* was made in 1943 and was a vehicle for his new star, Jane Russell. However, the league of decency (see **censorship**) created a furore over its premiere, complaining that the over-exposure of Jane Russell's breasts was indecent. The film was withdrawn and re-released with a few cuts in 1946. Jane Russell was the first of a number of actresses to play the role of a 'smouldering', sexy, décolletée Mexican woman. Sex was launched, but it had to be had with **stereotypes**. Plenty of hot-blooded foreign womanhood but not 'nice, nice Ms American pie' – she had to be kept virginal at all costs. Until this eruption of sex the characterization of women was fairly peripheral. The Western is a man's movie. A man with a horse, a man in action, a loner who leaves the woman behind rather than staying. His lust for adventure far outweighs his lust for women. As a genre, the Western is the antithesis to the **melodrama** and domesticity. The Western stands out in its refusal to complete the **Oedipal trajectory**. It is very rare for the hero, having once rescued the abducted but pure woman, to go on to marry her. The hero's job is to make the West safe for the virgins to come out and reproduce, but not with him, that is the job for the rest of the community. He has to 'move on out'.

In the Western very few exceptions exist to the misrepresentation of the frontierswomen. Women are either floozies in the saloon, who are to be driven out of town (not until after good use however) or shot, or pure as the driven snow and totally vulnerable to marauding men and, of course, abducting Indians. In truth, cowgirls did exist, gun-toting just like the men, and dressed in men's clothes. Indeed, *The Ballad of Little Jo* (Maggie Greenwald, 1993), is based on a real woman whose gender was discovered only after her death. During

the 1930s only a handful of films paid homage to the role of women in the West. *Annie Oakley* (1935) was a first, starring Barbara Stanwyck, followed by *Plainsman* (1936) with Jean Arthur in the role of Calamity Jane. And two films starring Mae West, *Klondike Annie* (1936) and *My Little Chickadee* (1940) complete the list. The 1950s did not see any great improvement on this tally. Again, only a handful come to mind. Wellman's quite authentic film about frontierswomen and their dangerous and stressful drive out west to find husbands (*Westward Women*, 1951), is one. So too is Ray's *Johnny Guitar*, starring Joan Crawford as the gun-slinging cross-dressed Vienna who, once she has cleared the town of the threat of a lynch mob and their leader (another woman, Emma, played by Mercedes McCambridge), is able to don feminine clothes again (in fact, in the dramatic concluding sequences to the film, she switches back and forth with the greatest of ease between male and female attire). In all these films, women cross-dressing occurs and represents **diegetically** an embodiment of power and independence. And, as far as the female **spectator** is concerned, despite the fact that in some of the films the woman gives up her clothes and gets her man, there is none the less a pleasurable identification with that empowerment. Not that those in feminine attire necessarily lack force. Barbara Stanwyck had several strong roles to play – most brilliantly in *Forty Guns* (Sam Fuller, 1957) where she is a ranch boss with forty hired guns. Finally, Marlene Dietrich (playing true to type) was the star in *Rancho Notorious* (Fritz Lang, 1952). Cross-dressed passing women in Westerns are extremely thin on the ground and seem doomed to remain a lesbian fantasy. Jo in *The Ballad of Little Jo* is the one who comes closest – although as R. Ruby Rich argues there is no true 'play' with her sexuality, so her cross-dressing offers limited pleasures to a lesbian audience (see Rich's useful article in *Sight and Sound*, November 1993, vol. 3, issue 11, 18–22). Cowgirls, it would appear, never look like becoming a good idea in movies.

If you can count female Westerns on two fingers, you can count Black Westerns on just about one hand (if you include black presence in a major role). Unsurprisingly, the major 'spurt' of Black Westerns occurred in the early 1970s coming in the wake of or on the back of the successful **blaxploitation** movies. One such film that is guilty of exploiting the blaxploitation moment is Anthony Dawson's *Take a Hard Ride* (1975), with its crude 'rushing for the bounty' **narrative** that attempts to marry the Italian spaghetti Western with the anti-movie. *El Condor* (John Guillerman, 1970) just pre-dates the blaxploitation moment by one year and follows more in the trend of the

newly violent Western *à la* Peckinpah. This flashily violent film features among its main protagonists a Black chain-gang fugitive and an Apache Indian hunting down buried treasure. *Boss Nigger* (aka *The Black Bounty Killer*, Jack Arnold, 1974) stands out among this generation of Black Westerns because of its intentional parody of the genre through its play with cliché and violence. In a different vein, Sidney Poitier's *Buck and the Preacher* (1971) examines the struggles of Black wagoners (freed slaves) trying to head out west. The Black cowboy reappears briefly in *Silverado* (Lawrence Kasdan, 1985). And that is about it until Mario Van Peebles' *Posse* (1993) and the rather silly *Wild Wild West* (Barry Sonnenfeld, 1999). Apart from these few forays the Western remains an essentially all-White male affair. So let us return to its history.

By the 1950s the Western's hero had become more complex, more psychologically motivated (see **motivation**). He had a past. The introduction of **psychoanalysis** into this genre is credited to Wellman (as mentioned above), but it took off in a big way in the 1950s in part owing to the influence of the **film noir**. The broody, introspective, angst-ridden film noir protagonist reappears with spurs. Something in his past has deeply scarred his persona. He still rides in and out of the *wild*erness as before, but now that wilderness is also part of his temperament and embedded in his psyche. The other exemplary film-maker of this new type of Western, was Anthony Mann, who worked with James Stewart as his fetish star. Before turning to the Western Mann had made several films noir (such as *T-Men*, 1947, and *Raw Deal*, 1948) so the cross-over of mood is quite visible in his films. He gave an uncompromising vision of the West. His heroes are often solitary, mentally and morally divided personae (as was their film noir prototype), bent on revenge and yet wanting to find peace of mind and thereby rest from their avenging souls (see *Winchester '73*, 1950; *Bend* of *the River*, 1952; *The Naked Spur*, 1953 – all Stewart vehicles). Mann's Westerns are intentionally violent – a tradition followed by Arthur Penn (as in *The Left-Handed Gun*, 1958) and Sam Peckinpah (*The Wild Bunch*, 1969).

The demise of the studios in the early 1950s led to location shooting, and this, coupled with the implementation of **cinemascope** and colour, gave the Western increased visual realism alongside this greater psychological realism. Although on the whole the Western, then as before, was seen as an escapist genre, none the less certain films, especially those made during the first half of the 1950s, can be read as commentaries on the contemporary political arena of McCarthyism as well as reflections of the political uncertainties of the

Cold War. *High Noon* (Fred Zinnemann, 1952) and *Johnny Guitar* are the two that are most often cited as allegories of McCarthyism and the fear and mistrust brought about by the Cold War. The former film was scripted by Carl Foreman, a communist who was blacklisted (see **Hollywood blacklist**) and he clearly meant his loose adaptation of the novel *The Tin Star* (by John W. Cunningham) to act as an indictment of US justice and society. In the film the hero (played by Gary Cooper) is the lone marshal who has to gun down an ex-convict and his gang bent on revenge. The marshal tries to drum up support but no one will come to his assistance. A similar instance of community cowardice and a refusal to get involved is present in *Johnny Guitar* (which was shot in Spain in 1954 while Ray was in self-imposed exile, and also free of the constraints of Hollywood). In this film the community hide behind the law to rid themselves of 'outsiders', 'aliens', people coming from outside and 'who don't belong' – even though, in the end, Vienna and Johnny put a stop to it.

*High Noon* certainly re-established the reputation of the Western, and the 1950s produced many great Westerns. Indeed the traditions of this epoch of films are at least partly a progenitor to Clint Eastwood's 1980s and 1990s Westerns. Alan Ladd's portrayal of nervous heroism in *Shane* (George Stevens, 1953), Gregory Peck's unsuccessful attempts to outrun his past as the fastest gun in the West in *Gunfighter* (George King, 1950) and the restless, drifting hero coming into town and then leaving having resolved a problem of a community in crisis – these are all hallmarks of Eastwood's performance as exemplified in two films also directed by him, *Pale Rider* (1985) and *Unforgiven* (1992).

Until the 1950s Indians on the whole were represented as killers, abductors and pyromaniacs – hardly ever as individuals, certainly not with any attempt to understand or reflect their side of history. John Ford's *The Searchers* is a perplexing and difficult film in this context. In one respect it appears to advocate (by the end of the film) greater tolerance of difference. However, it is not difficult to read the entire narrative – with its expressed anxiety about rape, miscegenation and the genetic determination of race (an anxiety embodied incidentally by the ruthless Ethan Edwards, played by John Wayne) – as a metaphor for concern about the growth in the 1950s of the Civil Rights movement. Furthermore, no attempt is made to 'explain' the Indian side of the story. There were, however, one or two exceptions to this ahistorical approach to Indian Western history. In these rare films there is a new respect for the Indian (*Broken Arrow,* Delmer Daves,

1950) and a bitter condemnation of the exploitation of the Indian by the White man (*Devil's Doorway*, Mann, 1950). Kevin Costner's *Dances with Wolves* (1990) is but one of the last in a short line of this attempt to redress the history of the West.

By the 1960s, in an attempt to attract audiences back into the cinemas, the Western went super-epic. The psychological realism was dropped in favour of bulk value for money: widescreen productions filled with as many stars as possible (like John Sturges's *The Magnificent Seven*, 1960, with seven stars and reworked three times). The community had gone, and with it the notion of service. Group solidarity was in but only among the gang. Alternatively the protagonist was motivated by revenge, but, contrary to the complex Western of the 1950s, there was no visible reason or moral point of view that explained this motivation (see Henry Hathaway's *Nevada Smith*, 1966). What also prevailed was an aesthetics of violence not seen heretofore, primarily in Penn and Peckinpah's films (for example, Peckinpah's *Straw Dogs*, 1971). One explanation for this violence could be the abolition of film **censorship** in the United States, since this new, even excessive, violence characterizes many films of that decade and the next (notably Arthur Penn's *Bonnie and Clyde*, 1967). Another could be that the old-established generation of film-makers (particularly Ford and Hawks) were coming to the end of their careers and a new way had to be found of telling what is intrinsically the same story. The Western had become as action-packed as in its early silent days, but on the whole it lacked inventiveness, bar a few smash hits (like *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*, George Roy Hill, 1969). A third reason might be that it was a genre out of touch with the climate of the times. The United States had proved to itself that it was still a violent and corrupt country (the Watergate scandal, the assassinations of President Kennedy, his brother Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King), so the myth of pioneering spirits, frontiersmanship and a united nation – with all that it denotes of optimism, wholesomeness and integrity-did not sit easily with reality.

The Western, perhaps the longest-lasting genre, looked set to die out, even though Peckinpah was still making them. See for example his *Pat Garrett and Billy the Kid* (1973), an answer perhaps to the revisionist *Chisum* made in 1970 by Andrew McLaglen and starring the ubiquitous Western iconic star John Wayne. But its fortunes were revived, largely thanks to its moving eastward to Europe into the form of the so-called spaghetti Westerns (made by Italian directors and so called in the belief that they were shot in Italy; in fact they were, for the most part, shot in Spain). These films challenged the

Hollywood model by its shift in emphasis from reality to parody. They politicized the genre in a way Hollywood never did – they were often anti-clerical and the outsider did not instinctively fight for the poor, but might well help revolutionaries in their cause. The true success of the genre came about as a result of a fortunate meeting in 1964 between the Italian film-maker Sergio Leone and a fairly unknown American actor Clint Eastwood. The quiet, almost static aloofness of the 'man with no name', as Eastwood was known in his first film, *A Fistful of Dollars* (1964), in combination with Leone's ironic treatment of the Western proved to be unbeatable. And if the genre has been revitalized on the American front, then its regeneration is in large part due to the parodying it underwent under Leone's direction. The genre itself was called into question. Leone's films provided a criticism of the ideological operations at work in Hollywood's mythic construction of the West. The footage was not all action-packed, the pace was slowed down. Eastwood hardly spoke and barely moved. Eastwood claims that he deliberately cut out most of the dialogue to facilitate direction since he and Leone had no common language. This first film was such a success that Eastwood went on to make three more. Other American actors went to Europe to work with Leone (Henry Fonda, Charles Bronson and Rod Steiger). And the whole series of spaghetti Westerns lasted a decade. But the Western was changed for ever, away from the prevailing optimism, puritanism and nationalism it had displayed before. The genre had been **deconstructed**, it could now go back West. (For further reading on spaghetti Westerns see also Staig and Williams, 1975; Frayling, 1998.)

The success of the spaghetti Westerns is their difference. Their caricatural nature pokes fun at the iconography of the Western. The baddies are not only bad, they are ugly and dirty. The films themselves are cynical in tone. Sleaziness and dishonesty are the order of the day. Only one man, Eastwood, can clean it all up and even then not for long if the first sequel to *A Fistful of Dollars* is anything to go by – *For a Few Dollars More* (1966). Following the success of these films, Eastwood returned to the United States, since when he has been directing and producing and starring in his films (e.g. *The Outlaw Josey Wales*, 1976). He has become the icon of the contemporary Western to the point that he is almost solely identified with it.

The Western still remains with us today. Not as popular a genre in terms of numbers as it used to be – and arguably replaced by the **blockbuster** film – but certainly a box-office hit when its epic

nature provides the appropriate mix in its appeal to American audiences' nostalgic take on the past, namely, the wide ever-expanding horizons of the frontiers, the interaction with the American-Indian, the challenging of corrupt settlers, and so on. In this context, see Kevin Costner's *Dances with Wolves*, 1990, or even more interestingly Costner's lengthy homage to Western film history in general and Ford in particular in his film *Open Range*, 2003. Curiously, however, inter-racial sex still seems a problem, albeit not in Costner's films. Indeed, Costner's *Dances with Wolves* argues for tolerance. But a later film, Ron Howard's *Missing* (2003), shows that it is still not something that rests easy with the American psyche – particularly if it is a white woman whose sexuality is at stake.

*see also*: **genre**

For further reading see Blake, 2003; Bold, 1987; Buscombe, 1988; Ramirez-Berg, 2002; Saunders, 2001; Stanfield, 2001; Studlar, 2001; Tompkin, 1992; Tuska, 1976; Walker, 2001; Wright, 1975.

## WIDESCREEN

Experimentation with widescreen has been around since at least the 1920s. However, none of the various systems really took off until the 1950s with the introduction of Cinemascope, thanks to the anamorphic lens. In the late 1920s, several Hollywood companies experimented with different gauge widths – from 56 to 70m – but, in general, because of the costs incurred, especially by cinema theatres, thanks to the advent of sound very few were in a position to afford the expense of new widescreen equipment on top of that needed for sound. The early 1950s' use of the anamorphic lens gave an aspect ratio of 2.35:1 (by first squeezing the image onto a 35mm print and then un-squeezing it by projecting the film through an anamorphic lens) – up until that time the standard aspect ratio was 1.33:1. By the late 1950s technology for widescreen had moved forward and managed to compress the image and then un-squeeze it onto a 70mm print – thereby dispensing with the anamorphic lens. Yet another system used to create the widescreen effect was to shoot a film on 65mm and then print onto 70mm. When projected, the effect was widescreen with an aspect ratio of 2.2:1 (now the standard widescreen projection ratio for 70mm). Nowadays for the widescreen effect, films are often shot on 35mm (via an anamorphic lens –

Panavision is standard) and then transferred to 70mm. However, when 35mm films are projected in widescreen the aspect ratio diminishes somewhat to 1.85:1 in USA and 1.66: in Europe.

*see also*: **anamorphic lens** and **cinemascope**

For further details on this technology and its effect see Belton, 1992.

## WIPE

A transition between two **shots** whereby the earlier one appears to be pushed aside by the latter, creating the effect of wiping off a scene and replacing it with another.

## ZOOM

The zoom lens was developed in the 1950s, constituting another technological attraction for audiences, as did the introduction of colour and cinemascope in the same decade. A zoom shot is one that is taken with the use of a variable focal length lens (known as a zoom lens). A zoom-forward normally ends in a close-up, a zoom-back in a general shot. Both types of shot imply a rapid movement in time and space and as such create the illusion of displacement in time and space. A zoom-in picks out and isolates a person or object, a zoom-out places that person or object in a wider context. A zoom shot can be seen, therefore, as voyeurism at its most desirably perfect.

# BIBLIOGRAPHY


Abel, R. (1984) *French Cinema: The First Wave, 1915–1929*, Princeton, NJ, Princeton University Press

—(1994) *The Ciné Goes to Town: French Cinema 1896–1914*, Berkeley, New York and London, University of California Press

Abel, R. and Altman, R. (eds) (2001) *The Sounds of Early Cinema*, Bloomington Indiana, Indiana University Press

Ahmad, A. (1996) 'The Politics of Literary Postcoloniality', in: Mongia, P. (ed.) *Contemporary Postcolonial Theory: A Reader*, London, New York, Sydney and Auckland, Arnold

Akomfrah, J. (1989) 'Introduction to the Morning Session', Birmingham Third Space Section of the 1988 Birmingham Film and Television Film Festival, *Framework*, Vol. 36

Alexander, K. (1988) *Ethnic Notions: Towards a Cinema of Cultural Diversity*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Althusser, L. (1984) *Essays in Ideology*, London, Verso

Altman, R. (1989) *The American Film Musical*, Bloomington, Indiana, Indiana University Press

—(ed.) (1992) *Sound Theory and Sound Practice*, New York and London, Routledge and American Film Institute

—(1999) *Film/Genre*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Anderson, L. (1954) (Only Connect!), *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 23, No. 4, April/June

Alton, J. (1995) *Painting with Light*, (with an introduction by Todd McCarthy), Berkeley LA and London, University of California Press

Andrew, D. (1984) *Concepts in Film Theory*, New York and Oxford, Oxford University Press

—(1995) Mists *of Regret: French Poetic Realism*, Princeton, NJ, Princeton University Press

Antonio, S. D. (2002) *Contemporary African American Cinema*, New York and Oxford, Peter Lang

Appiah, K. A. (1992) *In My Father's House: Africa in the Philosophy of Culture*, Oxford, Oxford University Press

Armes, R. (1974) *Film and Reality: An Historical Survey*, Harmondsworth, Pelican

—(1996) *Dictionnaire des cinéastes du Maghreb/Dictionary of North African Filmmakers*, Paris, Editions des Trois Mondes

Ashcroft, B., Griffiths, G. and Tiffin, H. (1995) *The Post-Colonial Studies Reader*, London and New York, Routledge

—(1998) *Key Concepts in Post-Colonial Studies*, London and New York, Routledge

Astruc, A. (1948) 'Naissance d'une nouvelle avant-garde', *Le Film*, No. 144

Attile, M. and Blackwood, M. (1986) 'Black Women and Representation', in: Brunsdon, C. (ed.) *Films For Women*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Bad Object-Choices (1991) *How Do I Look?: Queer Film and Video*, Seattle, Bay Press

Baird, R. and Rosenbaum, S. (eds) (1991) *Pornography*, Buffalo, Prometheus Books

Bakari, I. (1993) 'Le Facteur X du nouveau cinéma afro-américain', *Ecrans d'Afrique*, No. 4

Bakari, I. and Chain, M. (eds) (1996) *African Experiences of Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Barefoot, G. (2001) *Gaslight Melodrama: From Victorian London to 1940 Hollywood*, London and New York, Continuum

Barnard, T. (1986) (ed.) *Argentine Cinema*, Toronto, Nightwood Editions

Barnard, T. and Rist, P. (eds) (1996) *South-American Cinema: A Critical Filmography 1915–1994*, New York, Garland

Barsam, R. M. (1992) *Non-Fiction Film: A Critical History*, Bloomington and Indianapolis, Indiana University Press, revised edition

Barthes, R. (1957) *Mythologies*, Paris, Editions du Seuil (also available in English translation: A. Layers (trans.) London, Paladin, 1989)

—(1973) *Le Plaisir du texte*, Paris, Editions du Seuil

Basutçu, M. (ed.) (1996) *Le Cinéma Turc*, Paris, Editions Centre Georges Pompidou

Baudry, J.-L. (1970) 'Cinéma: effets idéologiques produits par l'appareil de base', *Cinéthique*, Nos 7–8, translated as 'Ideological Effects of the Basic Cinematic Apparatus', in: Rosen P (ed.) (1986) *Narrative, Apparatus, Ideology*, New York, Columbia University Press

—(1975) 'Le Dispositif', *Communications*, No. 23, translated as 'The Apparatus: Metaphysical Approaches to Ideology', in: Rosen, E (ed.) (1986) *Narrative, Apparatus, Ideology*, New York, Columbia University Press

Bazin, A. (1967) *What is Cinema?* Vol. I (essays selected and translated by H. Gray), Berkeley, University of California Press

Bellour, R. (1975) 'Le blocage symbolique', *Communications*, No. 23

Belton, J. (1992) *Widescreen Cinema*, Cambridge, Mass. and London, Harvard University Press

Bendazzi, G. (1994) *Cartoons: One Hundred Years of Cinema Animation*, trans. Anna Taraboletti, London, Paris and Rome, John Libbey

Benveniste, E. (1971) *Problems in General Linguistics*, Miami, University of Miami Press

Benvenuto, B. and Kennedy, R. (1986) *The Works of Jacques Lacan: An Introduction*, New York, St. Martin's Press

Bergstrom, J. (1985) 'Sexuality at a Loss: The Films of F. W. Murnau', *Poetics Today*, Vol. 6, Nos 1–2

Bernardi, D. (ed.) (1996) *The Birth of Whiteness: Race and the Emergence of US Cinema*, New Jersey, Rutgers University Press

Bernstein, M. and Studlar, G. (eds) (1997) *Visions of the East: Orientalism in Film*, London and New York, I. B. Tauris Publishers

Berry, C. (ed.) (1991) *Perspectives on Chinese Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

—(1996) 'China before 1949', in: Nowell-Smith, G. (ed.) *The Oxford History of World Cinema*, Oxford and New York, Oxford University Press

Bhabha, H. (1989) 'The Commitment to Theory', in: Pines, J. and Willemen, P (eds) *Questions of Third Cinema*, London, British Film Institute

—(1994) *The Location of Culture*, London, Routledge

Bhowmik, S. (1995) *Indian Cinema: Colonial Contours*, Calcutta, Papyrus

Black, G. D. (1994) *Hollywood Censored: Morality Codes, Catholics, and the Movies*, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press

Blake, M. F. (2003) *Code of Honour: The Making of Three Great American Westerns, High Noon, Shane and The Searchers*, Lanham, New York, Oxford, Taylor Trade Publishing

Bluestone, G. (1971) *Novels into Film*, Los Angeles, University of California Press

Bobo, J. (ed.) (1998) *Black Women Film and Video Artists*, London and New York, Routledge

Bogle, D. (1988) *Blacks in American Film and Television: An Encyclopedia*, New York and London, Garland Publishing Company

—(1994) *Coons, Mulattoes, Marries and Bucks: An Interpretative History of Blacks in American Films* (third edition), Oxford, Roundhouse Publishing Company

Bold, C. (1987) *Selling the Wild West: Popular Western Fiction 1860–1960*, Bloomington and Indianapolis, Indiana University Press

Bordwell, D. (1986) *Narration in the Fictional Film*, New York and London, Routledge

Bordwell, D., Staiger, J. and Thompson, K. (1985) *The Classical Hollywood Cinema: Film Style and Production to 1960*, London, Routledge and Kegan Paul

Bordwell, D. and Thompson, K. (1980) *Film Art: An Introduction*, Reading, MA, Addison-Wesley Publishing Company (fourth edition (1993), New York, McGraw-Hill)

—(1994) *Film History: An Introduction*, New York, McGraw Hill

Bottomore, T. (1984) *The Frankfurt School*, London and New York, Tavistock Publications

Bourne, S. (2001) *Black in the British Frame: The Black Experience in British Film and Television*, London and New York, Continuum.

Bowser, P and Spence, L. (1996) 'Identity and Betrayal: *The Symbol of the Unconquered* and Oscar Micheaux's "Biographical Legend"', in: Bernardi, D. (ed.) *The Birth of Whiteness: Race and Emergence of US Cinema*, New Jersey, Rutgers University Press

Branigan, E. (1992) *Narrative and the Comprehension of Film*, London and New York, Routledge

Bratton, J., Cook, J. and Gledhill C. (eds) (1994) *Stage, Picture, Screen*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Braudy, L. (1992) 'From the World in a Frame', in: Mast, G., Cohen, M., Braudy, L. (eds) *Film Theory and Criticism*, New York and Oxford, Oxford University Press
Bristow, J. (1997) *Sexuality*, London and New York, Routledge
Brooks, P. (1976) *The Melodramatic Imagination: Balzac, Henry James, Melodrama and the Mode of Excess*, New Haven, Yale University Press
Brosnan, J. (1991) *The Primal Screen: A History of Science Fiction Film*, London and Sydney, Orbit Books
Browne, N., Pickowicz, P G., Sobchack, V and Yau, E. (1994*) New Chinese Cinemas: Forms, Identities, Politics*, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press
Bruno, G. (1987) 'Ramble City: Postmodernism and *Blade Runner*', October, No. 41
Brunovska Karnick, K. and Jenkins, H. (eds) (1995) *Classical Hollywood Comedy*, New York and London, Routledge
Brunsdon, C. (ed.) (1986) *Films for Women*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Bruzzi, S. (1997) *Undressing Cinema: Clothing and Identity in the Movies*, London and New York, Routledge
—(2000) *New Documentary: A Critical Introduction*, London and New York, Routledge
Bukatman, S. (1993) *Terminal Identity: The Virtual Subject in Postmodern Science Fiction*, Durham and London, Duke University Press
Burch, N. (1973) *Theory of Film Practice*, New York, Praeger
—(1990) *Life to Those Shadows* (trans. and edited by B. Brewster), London, British Film Institute Publishing
Burns, E. (1983) *Introduction to Marxism* (ninth reprint), London, Lawrence and Wishart
Burston, P. and Richardson, C. (eds) (1995) *A Queer Romance: Lesbians, Gay Men and Popular Culture*, London and New York, Routledge
Burt, G. (1994) *The Art of Film Music*, Boston, Northeastern University Press
Burton, J. (ed.) (1986) *Cinema and Social Change in Latin America: Conversations with Filmmakers*, Austin, Texas, University of Texas Press
—(1990) *The Social Documentary in Latin America*, Pittsburgh, University of Pittsburgh Press
Burton-Carjaval, J. (1996) 'South American Cinema', in: Hill, J. and Church Gibson, P. (eds) *The Oxford Guide to Film Studies*, Oxford, Oxford University Press
Buscombe, E. (ed.) (1988) *The BFI Companion to the Western*, London, André Deutsch/British Film Institute Publishing
Butler, J. (1990) *Gender Trouble*, New York and London, Routledge
—(1993) *Bodies that Matter*, London and New York, Routledge
Cameron, I. (ed.) (1992) *The Movie Book of Film Noir*, London, Studio Vista
Cartmell, D. and Whelehan, I. (1999) *Adaptations: From Text to Screen*, London and New York, Routledge
Caughie, J. (ed.) (1981) *Theories of Authorship*, London, Routledge and Kegan Paul

Cawelti, J. G. (1992) '*Chinatown* and Generic Transformation in Recent American Films', in: Mast, G., Cohen, M. and Baudry, L. (eds) *Film Theory and Criticism* (fourth edition), Oxford, Oxford University Press
Chakravarti, S. S. (1993) *National Identity in Indian Popular Cinema* 1947–1987, Austin, University of Texas Press
Chambers, I. and Curti, L. (1996) *The Post-Colonial Question*, London and New York, Routledge
Chanan, M. (ed.) (1983) *Twenty-Five Years of the New Latin American Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1985) *The Cuban Experience*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1996) 'Cinema in Latin America', in: Nowell-Smith, G. (ed.) *The Oxford History of World Cinema*, Oxford, Oxford University Press
—(1997) 'The Changing Geography of Third Cinema', *Screen*, No. 38, Vol. 4, 372–88
Chibnall, S. and Petley, J. (eds) (2002) *British Horror Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge.
Childs, P. and Williams, P. (1997) *An Introduction to Post-Colonial Theory*, London and New York, Prentice Hall/Harvest Wheatsheaf
Chion, M. (1982) *La Voix au cinéma*, Paris, Cahiers du Cinéma, Editions de L'Etoile
—(1985) *Le Son au cinéma*, Paris, Cahiers du Cinéma, Editions de L'Etoile
—(1994) *Audio-vision; Sound on Screen*, ed. and trans. by C. Gorbman, New York, Columbia University Press
—(1999) *The Voice in Cinema*, ed. and trans. by C. Gorbman, New York, Columbia University Press
Chow, R. (1995) *Primitive Passions: Visibility, Ethnography, and Contemporary Chinese Style*, New York, Columbia University Press
Christie, I. and Taylor, R. (eds) (1993) *Eisenstein Rediscovered*, London and New York, Routledge
Clark, L. (2002) quoted in James Mottram's article 'Daddy Cool', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 12, Issue 3, 24–6
Clark, P. (1987) *Chinese Cinema: Culture and Politics since 1949*, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press
Coates, P. (1991) *The Gorgon's Gaze: German Cinema, Expressionism and the Image of Horror*, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press
Cohan, S. (ed.) (2002) *Hollywood Musicals: The Film Reader*, London, Routledge
Cohan, S. and Hark, I. R. (eds) (1997) *The Road Movie Book*, London and New York, Routledge
Comolli, J.-L. and Narboni, J. (1969/1977) Cinéma/Idéologie/Critique, *Cahiers du cinéma* (Oct–Nov 1969); English translation in: *Screen Reader: Cinema/Ideology/Politics*, London, Society for Education in Film and Television
Cook, P. (1980) 'Duplicity in *Mildred Pierce*', in: Kaplan, E. A. (ed.) *Women in Film Noir*, London, British Film Institute Publishing (revised edition)
—(ed.) (1985) *The Cinema Book*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1996) *Fashioning the Nation: Costume and Identity in British Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Cook, P. and Dodd, P. (eds) (1993) *Women and Film: A Sight and Sound Reader*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Copjec, J. (ed.) (1993) *Shades of Film Noir*, London and New York, Verso
Corrigan, T. (1983) *New German Film: The Displaced Image*, Austin, Texas University Press
Courthion, P. (1968) 'Introduction', in: Ragon, M. (ed.) *Expressionism*, London, Heron Books
Cowie, E. (1984) 'Fantasia', *m/f*, No. 9
Creed, B. (1993) *The Monstrous Feminine: Film, Feminism and Psychoanalysis*, New York and London, Routledge
Creekmur, C. K. and Dory, A. (1995) *Out in Culture: Gay, Lesbian and Queer Essays on Popular Culture*, London, Cassell
Cripps, T. (1977) *Slow Fade to Black: The Negro in American Film 1900–1942*, Oxford and New York, Oxford University Press
—(1978) *Black Film as Genre*, Bloomington and London, Indiana University Press
—(1982) 'New Black Cinema and Uses of the Past', in: Yearwood, G. (ed.) *Black Cinema Aesthetics: Issues in Black Filmmaking*, Ohio, Ohio University Papers on Afro-American, African and Caribbean Studies
—(1993) *Making Movies Black: The Hollywood Message Movies from World War Two to the Civil Rights Era*, Oxford and New York, Oxford University Press
Crisp, C. (1993) *The Classic French Cinema 1930–60*, Bloomington, Indiana University Press
Culham, S. (1988) *Animation From the Script to the Screen*, London, Columbus Books
Davies, K., Dickey, J. and Stratford, T. (eds) (1987) *Out of Focus: Writings on Women and the Media*, London, The Women's Press
Davis, A. (1981) *Women, Race and Class*, New York, Random House
Dayan, D. (1974) 'The Tudor Code of Classical Cinema', *Film Quarterly*, Vol. 28, No. 1
De Lauretis, T. (1984*) Alice Doesn't: Feminism, Semiotics, Cinema*, Bloomington, Indiana University Press
—(1985) 'Oedipus Interruptus', *Wide-Angle*, Vol. 7, Nos 1–2
—(1989) *Technologies of Gender: Essays on Theory, Film and Fiction*, London, Macmillan
De Lauretis, T. and Heath, S. (eds) (1980) *The Cinematic Apparatus*, New York, St. Martin's Press
Dever, S. (2003) *Celluloid Nationalism and other Melodrama: From Post-Revolutionary Mexico to fin de siècle Mexamerica*, Albany, NY, State University Press
Diawara, M. (1986) 'Sub-Saharan African Film Production: Technological Paternalism', *Jump Cut*, Vol. 32
—(ed.) (1993) *Black American Cinema: Aesthetics and Spectatorship*, New York and London, Routledge
Dickinson, K. (ed.) (2003) *Movie Music: The Film Reader*, London and New York, Routledge
Dickos, A. (2002) *Street with no Name: A History of the Classic American Film Noir*, Lexington, University Press of Kentucky

Dimendberg, E. (2004) *Film Noir and the Spaces of Modernity*, Cambridge, Mass. and London, Harvard University Press
Dines, G. and Hurnez, J. (eds) (1995) *Gender, Race and Class in the Media*, London, Sage
Dines, G., Jensen, R. and Russo, A. (1998) *Pornography: The Production and Consumption of Inequality*, London and New York, Routledge
Dines, P. (1994) *Images of the Algerian War: French Fiction and Film 1954–1992*, Oxford, Clarendon Press
Doane, M. A. (1982) 'Film and the Masquerade: Theorising the Female Spectator', *Screen*, No. 23, Vol. 3–4
—(1984) 'The Woman's Film: Possession and Address', in: Doane, M. A., Mellencamp, P. and Williams, L. (eds) *Re-vision: Essays in Feminist Film Criticism*, Frederick, Maryland, The American Film Institute/University Publications of America
—(1987) *The Desire to Desire: The Woman's Film of the 1940s*, Bloomington, Indiana University Press
—(1992) *Femmes Fatales: Feminism, Film Studies and Psychoanalysis*, New York and London, Routledge
Doane, M. A., Mellencamp, P. and Williams, L. (eds) (1984) *Re-vision: Essays in Feminist Film Criticism*, Frederick, Maryland, The American Film Institute/University Publications of America
Doherty, T. (1988) *Teenagers and Teenpics: The Juvenilization of American Movies in the 1950s*, Boston, Unwin
Donald, J. (1989) *Fantasy and the Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Donaldson, M. (2003) *Black Directors in Hollywood*, Texas, University of Texas Press
Donnelly, J. K. (ed.) (2001) *Film Music: Critical Approaches*, Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press
Dorenkamp, M. and Henke, R. (1995) *Negotiating Lesbian and Gay Subjects*, New York and London, Routledge
Doy, G. (2000) *Black Visual Culture, Modernity and Postmodernity*, London and New York, I. B. Tauris
Dworkin, A. (1991) *Pornography: Men Possessing Women*, London, Women's Press
Dyer, R. (1977a) 'Entertainment and Utopia', *Movie*, 24 (no pages)
—(1977b) *Gays and Film*, London, British Institute Publishing
—(1980) *Stars*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1986) *Heavenly Bodies: Film Stars and Society*, London, Cinema British Film Institute Series, Macmillan
—(1990) *Now You See It: Studies in Lesbian and Gay Film*, London and New York, Routledge
—(1993) *The Matter of Images: Essays on Representation*, London and New York, Routledge
—(1997) *White*, London and New York, Routledge
—(2004) 'The Talented Mr Rota', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 14, no. 9
Dyssanayake, W. (ed.) (1994) *Colonialism and Nationalism in Asian Cinema*, Bloomington, Indiana University Press

Easton, S. (1994) *The Problem of Pornography*, London and New York, Routledge

Eder, K. and Rossell, D. (eds) (1993) *New Chinese Cinema*, London, National Film Theatre, British Film Institute Publishing

Eisner, L. (1969) *The Haunted Screen: Expressionism and the German Cinema*, London, Thames and Hudson

El-Assyouti, M. (2003) 'Asma El-Bakri: Freudian Slips', *Al-Ahram Weekly on line*, Issue No. 619: http://weekly.ahram.org.eg/2003/619/profile.htm (accessed 07.04.05)

Elena, A. and Lopez, M. D. (eds) (2004) *The Cinema of Latin America*, London, Wallflower Press

Ellis, J. (1982) *Visible Fictions*, London and New York, Routledge and Kegan Paul

Elsaesser, T. (1987) 'Tales of Sound and Fury: Observations on the Family Melodrama', in: Gledhill, C. (ed.) *Home Is Where the Heart Is: Studies in Melodrama and the Woman's Film*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

—(1989) *New German Cinema: A History*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

—(1996) 'Germany: The Weimar Years', in: Nowell-Smith, G. (ed.) *The Oxford History of World Cinema*, Oxford and New York, Oxford University Press

Erdogan, N. and Göktürk, D. (2001) 'Turkish Cinema', in: Leaman, Oliver (ed.) *Companion Encyclopedia of Middle Eastern and North African Film*, London and New York, Routledge, 537–9

Ezra, E. (ed.) (2004) *European Cinema*, Oxford, Oxford University Press

Faber, L. and Walters, H. (2004) *Animation Unlimited: Innovative Short Films since 1940*, London, Laurence King Publication

Fanon, F. (1967) *Black Skin, White Masks* (first published in 1952), New York, Grove Press

—(1968) *The Wretched of the Earth* (first published in 1961), New York, Grove Press

Featherstone, M. and Burrows, R. (eds) 1995) *Cyberspace/Cyberbodies/Cyberpunk*, London, Sage

Ferncase, R. (1995) *Film and Video Lighting: Terms and Concepts*, Newton, MA, Focal Books, Butterworth-Heinemann

Feuer, J. (1982) *The Hollywood Musical*, London, Macmillan

Fischer, L. (1989) *Shot/Countershot: Film Tradition and Woman's Cinema*, Princeton, NJ, Princeton University Press and London, British Film Institute/Macmillan Education Ltd

Fiske, J. and Hartley, J. (1978) *Reading Television*, London and New York, Methuen

Flitterman-Lewis, S. (1990) *To Desire Differently: Feminism and the French Cinema*, Urbana and Chicago, University of Illinois Press

Forbes, J. and Street, S. (2000) *European Cinema: An Introduction*, Basingstoke, Palgrave

Foucault, M. (1977) *Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison*, trans. A. Sheridan, New York, Pantheon

—(1978) *The History of Sexuality*, Vol. 1, trans. R. Hurley, New York, Pantheon
Frayling, C. (1998) *Spaghetti Westerns: Cowboys and Europeans from Karl May to Sergio Leone*, London, IB Taurus
Freud, S. (1931) 'Female Sexuality', reprinted in *The Standard Edition of the Complete Works of Sigmund Freud*, trans. J. Strachey, London, Hogarth Press, 1953–74, Vol. 21, pp. 64–145
Frieden, S., McCormick, R. W, Petersen, V. R. and Vogelsang, L. M. (eds) (1993) *Gender and German Cinema: Feminist Interventions*, Vols I and II, Providence, Rhode Island and Oxford, Berg Publishers Inc.
Friedman, L. (ed.) (1993) *British Cinema and Thatcherism*, London, University College London Press
Furniss, M. (1998) *Art in Motion: Animation Aesthetics*, London, Paris and Rome, John Libbey
Fusco, C. (1989) 'About Locating Ourselves and Our Representations', Birmingham Third Space Section of the 1988 Birmingham Film and Television Film Festival, *Framework*, Vol. 36
Fuss, D. (ed.) (1992) *Inside/Out: Lesbian Theories, Gay Theories*, New York and London, Routledge
Gabbard, K. (2004) *Black Magic: White Hollywood and African-American Culture*, New Brunswick, NJ and London, Rutgers University Press
Gabriel, T. (1982) *Third Cinema in the Third World: The Aesthetics of Liberation*, Ann Arbor, Michigan University Press
—(1989) 'Third Cinema as Guardian of Popular Memory: Towards a Third Aesthetics', in: Pines, J. and Willemen, P. (eds) *Questions of Third Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Gaines, J. (1988) 'White Privilege and Looking Relations: Race and Gender in Feminist Film Theory', *Screen*, Vol. 29, No. 4
Gazdar, M. (1997) *Pakistan Cinema: 1947–1997*, Karachi, New York, Oxford and Delhi, Oxford University Press
Genehe, G. (1980) *Narrative Discourse*, trans. J. E. Lewin, Oxford, Blackwell
Gever, M., Parmar, P and Greyson, J. (eds) (1993) *Queer Looks*, New York and London, Routledge
Ghanian, T. A. and Phillips, M. E. (1996) *Digital Filmmaking: The Changing Art and Craft of Making Motion Pictures*, Washington, Focal Press, Butterworth-Heinemann
Gidal, P. (1989) *Materialist Film*, London and New York, Routledge
Gill, J. (1995) *Queer Noises*, London, Cassell
Gilroy, P. (1993) *The Black Atlantic: Modernity and National Consciousness* (reprinted 1995), London and New York, Verso
Givanni, J. (1992) *Black Film and Video List*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(2000) (ed.) *Symbolic Narratives/African Cinema: Audiences, Theory and the Moving Image*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Givanni, J. and Reynaud, B. (1993) 'Images de femmes noires', *CinémAction*, No. 67

Gledhill, C. (1980) '*Klute* 1: A Contemporary Film Noir and Feminist Criticism', in: Kaplan, E. A. (ed.) *Women in Film Noir*, London, British Film Institute Publishing (revised edition)
—(ed.) (1987) *Home is Where the Heart Is: Studies in Melodrama and the Woman's Film*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1991) *Stardom: The Industry of Derive*, London and New York, Routledge
Godard, J.-L. (1980) *Introduction à une véritable histoire du cinéma*, Paris, Albatross
Gokulsing, K. M. (1999) 'Fatal Attraction? Nationalist and Patriotic Themes in Indian Films', unpublished paper
Gokulsing, K. M. and Dissanayake, W. (1998) *Indian Popular Cinema: A Narrative of Cultural Change*, Staffordshire, Trentham Books
—(2003) *Indian Popular Cinema* (new revised edition), Stoke-on-Trent, UK and Sterling, USA, Trentham Books
Gopalan, L. (2002) *Cinema of Interruptions: Action Genres in Contemporary Indian Cinema*, London, British Film Institute
Grant, B. K. (ed.) (1986) *Film Genre Reader*, Austin, Texas, University of Texas Press
—(1995) *Film Genre Reader II*, second edition, Austin, Texas, University of Texas Press
—(2003) *Film Genre Reader III*, third edition, Austin Texas, University of Texas Press
Grant, J. (1987) *Encyclopedia of Walt Disney's Animated Characters*, New York, Harper and Row
—(2001) *Masters of Animation*, London, B. T. Batsford
Griffin, S. (1988) *Pornography and Silence*, London, The Women's Press.
Griffith, J. (1997) *Adaptations as Limitations*, Cranbury University of Delaware Press
Grimshaw, A. (2002) *The Ethnographer's Eye: Ways of Seeing Anthropology*, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press
Grodal, T. (1997) *Moving Pictures: A New Theory of Genres, Feelings, and Cognition*, Oxford, Clarendon Press
Grossman, A. (ed.) (2000) *Queer Asian Cinema: Shadows in the Dark*, New York, London, Oxford, Harrington Park Press
Grosz, E. (1990) *Jacques Lacan: A Feminist Introduction*, London and New York, Routledge
Grosz, E. and Probyn, E. (eds) (1995) *Sexy Bodies: The Strange Carnalities of Feminism*, London and New York, Routledge
Guerrero, E. (1993) *Framing Blackness: The African American Image in Film*, Philadelphia, Temple University Press
—(1994) 'Framing Blackness: the African-American Image in the Cinema of the Nineties', *Cineaste*, Vol. XX, No. 2
Guha, R. (ed.) (1982) *Subaltern Studies 1: Writings on South Asian History and Society*, 7 vols, Delhi, Oxford University Press
Guneratne, A. R. and Dissanayake, W. (2003) *Rethinking Third Cinema*, New York and London, Routledge
Hadj-Moussa, R. (1994) *Le Corps, L'Histoire, Le Territoire: Les Rapports de genre dans le cinéma d'Algérie*, Montreal and Paris, Les Editions de Balzac

Hake, S. (2002) *German National Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge
Hammond, P. (2000) *The Shadow and its Shadows: Surrealist Writings on the Cinema* (3rd edn), San Francisco, City Lights Books
Hampton, H. (2001) 'Whatever you Desire: Notes on Movieland and Pornotopia', *Film Comment*, Vol. 37, No. 4, 36–45
Hanson, E. (ed.) (1999) *Out Takes: Essays on Queer Theory and Film*, Durham and London, Duke University Press
Hardy, P, Milne, T. and Willemen, P. (eds) (1986) *The Aurum Encyclopedia of Horror*, New York, Harper and Row
Hare, W. (2003) *Early Film Noir: Greed, Lust and Murder Hollywood Style*, Jefferson, NC and London, McFarland
—(2004) *LA Noir: Nine Dark Visions of the City of Angels*, Jefferson, NC and London, McFarland
Harper, G. and Mendik, X. (eds) (2000) *Unruly Pleasures: The Cult Film and its Critics*, Guilford, FAB Press
Harper, S. (1987) 'Historical Pleasures: Gainsborough Costume Melodrama', in: Gledhill, C. (ed.) *Home is Where the Heart Is: Studies in Melodrama and Women's Film*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1994) *Picturing the Past: The Rise and Fall of the Costume Drama*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Hart, J. (1999) *The Art of the Storyboard: Storyboarding for Film, TV and Animation*, Woburn, MA, Butterworth-Heinemann
Hartley, J. (1982) *Understanding News*, London, Edward Arnold
Haskell, M. (1974) *From Reverence to Rape: The Treatment of Women in the Movies*, Harmondsworth, Penguin Books
Hawthorn, J. (1992) A *Concise Glossary of Contemporary Literary Theory*, London, Edward Arnold
Hayward, S. (1992) 'A History of French Cinema: 1895–1991 – Pioneering Filmmakers (Guy, Dulac, Varda) and Their Heritage', *Paragraph*, Vol. 15, No. 1
—(2004) *French National Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge
Heath, S. (1978) 'Difference', *Screen*, Vol. 19, No. 3
—(1981) *Questions of Cinema*, London, Macmillan
Hebdige, D. (1988) *Hiding in the Light*, London and New York, Routledge
Higson, A. (1993) 'Re-presenting the National Past: Nostalgia and Pastiche in the Heritage Film', in: Friedman, L. (ed.) *British Cinema and Thatcherism*, London, University College London Press
Higson, A. and Maltby, R. (1999) *Film Europe and Film America: Cinema, Commerce and Cultural Exchange 1920–1939*, Exeter, Exeter University Press
Hill, J. (1986) *Sex, Class and Realism: British Cinema 1956–63*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Hillier, J. (2001) *American Independent Cinema: A Sight and Sound Reader*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Ho, S. (ed.) (2002) *Planet Eros: New Japanese Independent Cinema*, Hong Kong: Hong Kong Arts Centre, Hong Kong Arts Development Centre

Hoffer, T. J. (1981) *Animation Reference Guide*, Westport, CN, Greenwood Press
Holmlund, C. and Wyatt, J. (2005) *Contemporary American Independent Films*, London and New York, Routledge
Hooks, B. (1981) *Ain't I a Woman: Black Women and Feminism*, Boston, Long Haul Press
—(1989) 'Choosing the Margin as a Space of Radical Openness', Birmingham Third Space Section of the 1988 Birmingham Film and Television Film Festival, *Framework*, Vol. 36
—(1992) *Black Looks: Race and Representation*, Boston, South End Press
Horne, P. and Lewis, R. (eds) (1996) *Outlooks: Lesbian and Gay Sexualities and Visual Cultures*, London and New York, Routledge
Horton, A. and Magretta, J. (1981) *Modern European Filmmakers and the Art of Adaptation*, New York, Frederick Ungar Publishing Co., Inc.
Hull, G., Scott, P. B. and Smith, B. (eds) (1982) *All the Women Are White, All the Blacks Are Men, But Some of Us Are Brave*, New York, The Feminist Press
Humphries, R. (2002) *The American Horror Film: An Introduction*, Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press
Huyssen, A. (1986) *After the Great Divide: Modernism, Mass Culture and Postmodernism*, London, Macmillan Press
—(1990) 'Mapping the Postmodern', in: Nicholson, L. (ed.) *Feminism/Postmodernism*, New York and London, Routledge
Inglis, I. (ed.) (2003) *Popular Music and Film*, London, Wallflower
Issa, R. and Whitaker, S. (eds) (1999) *Life and Art: The New Iranian Cinema*, London, British Film Institute, National Film Theatre Publishing
Itzin, C. (1992) *Pornography: Women, Violence and Civil Liberties*, Oxford, Oxford University Press
Jackson, C. and Tapp, P. (1997) *The Bent Lens: A World Guide to Gay and Lesbian Film*, St Kilda, Victoria, Australian Catalogue Company
Jakobson, R. (1960) 'Concluding Statement: Linguistics and Poetics', in: Sebeok, T. (ed.) *Style in Language*, Cambridge, MA, MIT Press
Jameson, E. (1983) 'Postmodernism and Consumer Society', in: Foster, H. (ed.), *Postmodern Culture*, London, Pluto Press
Jancovich, M. (1992) *Horror*, London, B. T. Batsford
—(1996) *Rational Fears: American Horror in the 1950s*, Manchester and New York, Manchester University Press
—(2002) *Horror: The Film Reader*, London and New York, Routledge
Johnson, R. and Stain, R. (eds) (1982/1995) *Brazilian Cinema*, Toronto, Associated University Presses
Johnston, C. (1973) *Notes on Women's Cinema*, Screen Pamphlet, London, Society for Education in Film and Television
—(1976) 'Women's Cinema as Countercinema', in: Nicholls, B. (ed.) *Movies and Methods*, Berkeley, University of California Press
Jones, J. (1991) 'The New Ghetto Aesthetic', *Wide Angle*, Vol. 13, No. 3 and 4
Jones, K. (2001) 'Bay Watch: Bigger, Faster, Louder', *Film Comment*, Vol. 37, No. 4, 27–9

Joshri, L. M. (2001) *Bollywood: Popular Indian Cinema*, London, Dakini Books
Julius, M. (1996) *Action! The Action Movie A-Z*, London, B. T. Batsford Ltd
Kabir, N. M. (2001) *Bollywood: The Indian Cinema Story*, Kent, Chatham Press
—(2003) 'A Way of Life: An Introduction to Indian Cinema', in: Torgovnik, J. (ed.) *Bollywood Dreams*, London and New York, Phaidon Press
Kaes, A. (1996) 'The New German Cinema', in: Nowell-Smith, G. (ed.) *The Oxford History of World Cinema*, Oxford and New York, Oxford University Press
Kalinak, K. M. (1992) *Settling the Score: Music and the Classical Hollywood Film*, Madison, Madison University Press
Kaplan, E. A. (ed.) (1980) *Women in Film Noir*, London, British Film Institute, revised edition
—(1983) *Women and Film: Both Sides of the Camera*, New York and London, Methuen
—(ed.) (1990) *Psychoanalysis and Cinema*, New York and London, Routledge
—(1992) *Motherhood and Representation: The Mother in Popular Culture and Melodrama*, London and New York, Routledge
—(1997) *Looking for the Other: Feminism, Film, and the Imperial Gaze*, London and New York, Routledge
Kassabian, A. (2000) *Hearing Film: Tracking Identifications in Contemporary Hollywood Film Music*, London and New York, Routledge
Keesey, D. (2001) 'They Kill for Love: Defining the Erotic Thriller as a Film Genre', *CinéAction*, No. 58, 44–53
Kennedy, L. (1993) 'Is Malcolm X the Right Thing?', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 3, 2
Kermode, M. (2003) 'What a Carve Up!', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 13, No. 12, 12–16
King, B. (1985) 'Articulating Stardom', *Screen*, Vol. 26, No. 5
King, G. (2000) *Spectacular Narratives: Hollywood in the Age of the Blockbuster*, London and New York, I. B. Tauris
King, G. and Krzywinska, T. (2000) *Science Fiction Cinema*, London. Wallflower Press
King, J. (1990) *Magical Reels: A History of Cinema in Latin America*, London, Verso
King, J., Lopez, A. and Alvarado, M. (eds) (1993) *Mediating Two Worlds: Cinematic Encounters in the Americas*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Kirkham, P. and Thumin, J. (eds) (1995) *Me Jane: Masculinity, Movies and Women*, London, Lawrence and Wishart
Kline, T. J. (1992) *Screening the Text: Intertextuality in New Wave French Cinema*, Baltimore and London, Johns Hopkins University Press
Knight, A. (2002) *Disintegrating the Musical: Black Performance and American Musical Film*, Durham N.C and London, Duke University Press
Knight, J. (1992) *Women and the New German Cinema*, London and New York, Verso
Konigsberg, I. (1993) *The Complete Film Dictionary*, London, Bloomsbury

Kracauer, S. (1992) 'From Caligari to Hitler', in: Mast, G., Cohen, M. and Braudy, L. (eds) *Film Theory and Criticism: Introductory Readings*, fourth edition, New York and Oxford, Oxford University Press

Kronish, A. (1996) *World Cinema: Israel*, Flicker Books, Madison, Farleigh Dickinson University Press

Krutnik, E (1991) *In a Lonely Street: Film Noir, Genre, Masculinity*, London and New York, Routledge

Kuhn, A. (1982) *Women's Pictures: Feminism and Cinema*, London and Boston, Routledge and Kegan Paul

—(1985) *The Power of the Image: Essays on Representation and Sexuality*, London and New York, Routledge and Kegan Paul

—(1988) *Cinema, Censorship and Sexuality* 1909–1925, London and New York, Routledge

—(1990) *Alien Zone*, London and New York, Verso

—(ed.) (1999) *Alien Zone II: The Spaces of Science Fiction Cinema*, London, Verso

Kuhn, A. (ed.) with Radstone, S. (1990) *The Women's Companion to International Film*, London, Virago

Kuzniar, A. (2000) *The Queer German Cinema*, Stanford, Stanford University Press

Lacan, J. (1977) *Ecrits: A Selection*, trans. A. Sheridan, London, Tavistock Publications

Lapsley, R. and Westlake, M. (1988, reprinted in 1992) *Film Theory: An Introduction*, Manchester, Manchester University Press

Lassiter, J. and Davy S. (1995) *Toy Story: The Art and Making of the Animated Film*, New York, Hyperion

Lastra, J. (2000) *Sound Technology and the American Cinema: Perception, Representation, Modernity*, New York and Chichester, Columbia University Press

Lebeau, V. (1994) *Lost Angels: Psychoanalysis and the Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge

—(2001) *Psychoanalysis and the Cinema: The Play of Shadows*, London and New York, Wallflower Press

Lesage, J. (1974) 'Feminist Film Criticism: Theory and Practice', *Women and Film*, Vol. 1, Nos 5–6

Lipschutz, R. D. (2001) *Cold War Fantasies: Film, Fiction and Foreign Policy*, Lanham, MD, Boulder, New York and Oxford, Littlefield Publishers

Lord, P. and Sibley, B. (1998) *Creating 3-D Animation: The Aardman Book of Filmmaking*, New York, Harry N. Abrams Inc.

Lovell, A. and Hillier, J. (1972) *Studies in Documentary*, London, Secker and Warburg

Low, G. C.-L. (1996) *White Skins, Black Masks: Representation and Colonialism*, London and New York, Routledge

Luhrmann, B. (2001) 'Strictly Red: Baz Luhrmann Interview by Graham Fuller', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 11, No. 6, 14–6

Lurie, S. (1980) 'Pornography and the Dread of Women', in: Lederer, L. (ed.) *Take Back the Night*, New York, William Morrow

McClintock, A. (1995) *Imperial Leather: Race, Gender and Sexuality in the Colonial Context*, London and New York, Routledge

Macdonell, D. (1986) *Theories of Discourse: An Introduction*, Oxford, Blackwell
McFarlane, B. (1996) *Novel to Film: An Introduction to the Theory of Adaptation*, New York and Oxford, Clarendon Press
McGowan, T. (2004) *Lacan and Contemporary Film*, New York, Other Press
McMahon, B. and Quin, R. (1986) *Reel Images: Film and Television*, South Melbourne, Australia, Macmillan
McNair, B. (1996) *Mediated Sex*, London, Arnold
—(2002) *Striptease Culture: Sex, Media and the Democratisation of Desire*, London and New York, Routledge
Maingard, J. (1998) *Strategies of Representation in South African Anti-Apartheid Documentary Film and Video from 1976–1995*, unpublished PhD thesis, University of the Witwatersrand
Malik, K. (1996) *The Meaning of Race: Race, History and Culture in Western Society*, New York, New York University Press
Malkiewicz, K. (1986) *Film Lighting*, New York, Prentice Hall
Manatu, N. (2003) *African American Women and Sexuality in the Cinema*, Jefferson, North Carolina and London, MacFarland and Co. Publishers
Manuell, R. and Fraenkel, H. (1971) *The German Cinema*, London, J. M. Dent and Sons Ltd
Marcus, F. (ed.) (1971) *Film and Literature: Contrasts in the Media*, New York, Chandler Publishing
Marcus, M. (1993) *Filmmaking by the Book: Italian Cinema and Literary Adaptation*, Baltimore, Johns Hopkins University Press
Marie, M. (2003) *The French New: An Artistic School,* Oxford, Blackwell Publishers
Martin, M. T. (ed.) (1995) *Cinemas in the Black Diaspora: Diversity, Dependence and Oppositionality*, Detroit, Wayne State University Press
Marshall, B. and Stilwell, R. (eds) (2000) *Musicals: Hollywood and Beyond*, Exeter, Portland Oregon, Intellect Books
Mason, F. (2002) *American Gangster Cinema: From Little Caesar to Pulp Fiction*, Basingstoke and New York, Palgrave Macmillan
Masoud, P. (2003) *African American Urban Experiences in Film*, Philadelphia, Temple University Press
Mast, G., Cohen, M. and Braudy, L. (eds) (1992) *Film Theory and Criticism* (fourth edition), Oxford, Oxford University Press
Matthews, T. D. (1994) *Censored*, London, Chatto and Windus
Mayne, J. (1984) 'Women at the Keyhole: Women's Cinema and Feminist Criticism', in: Doane, M. A., Mellencamp, P. and Williams, L. (eds) *Revision: Essays in Feminist Film Criticism*, Frederick, Maryland, The American Film Institute/University Publications of America
—(1993) *Cinema and Spectatorship*, London and New York, Routledge
Medovoi, L. (1998) 'Theorizing Historicity, or the Many Meanings of *Blacula*', *Screen*, Vol. 39, No. 1
Mellen, J. (1974) *Women and Their Sexuality in the New Film*, New York, Dell
Mellencamp, P. (1995) *A Fine Romance: Five Ages of Film Feminism*, Philadelphia, Temple University Press
Mell-Metereau, R. (1993) *Hollywood Androgyny*, New York, Columbia University Press

Mercer, K. (ed.) (1988) *Black Film: British Cinema*, ICA document No. 7, London, British Film Institute/ICA Publishing

—(1990) 'Diaspora Culture and the Dialogic Imagination: the Aesthetics of Black Independent Film in Britain', in: Alvarado, M. and Thompson, J. O. (eds) *The Media Reader*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Merquior, J. G. (1985) *Foucault*, London, Collins

Metz, C. (1971) *Essais sur la signification au cinéma, Tome I*, Paris, Editions Klincksieck

—(1972) *Essais sur la signification au cinéma, Tome II*, Paris, Editions Klincksieck; both volumes translated by M. Taylor (1974) as *Film Language: A Semiotics of the Cinema*, New York, Oxford University Press

—(1975) 'The Imaginary Signifier', *Screen*, Vol. 16, No. 3

Minh-ha, T. T. (1989) 'Outside In Inside Out', in: Pines, J. and Willemen, P. (eds) *Questions of Third Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing.

Mishra, V. (2002) *Bollywood Cinema Temple of Desire*, London and New York, Routledge

Modleski, T. (1982) 'Never To Be Thirty-Six Years Old: *Rebecca* as Female Oedipal Drama', *Wide Angle*, Vol. 5, No. 1

—(1988) *The Women Who Knew Too Much: Hitchcock and Feminist Theory*, New York and London, Methuen

—(1992) 'Time and Desire in the Woman's Film', in: Mast, G., Cohen, M. and Baudry, L. (eds) *Film Theory and Criticism*, fourth edition, Oxford, Oxford University Press

Moi, T. (1985) *Sexual/Textual Politics: Feminist Literary Theory*, London and New York, Routledge

Mongia, P. (ed.) (1996) *Contemporary Postcolonial Theory: A Reader*, London, New York, Sidney and Auckland, Arnold

Monk, C. (1996) 'Review of *Sense and Sensibility*', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 6, Issue 3

Moraga, C. and Anzaldua, G. (eds) (1981) *This Bridge Called My Back*, New York, Persephone Press

Morrissette, B. (1985) *Novel and Film: Essays in Two Genres*, Chicago, Chicago University Press

Mudimbe, Y. V. (1988) *The Invention of Africa: Gnosis, Philosophy and the Order of Knowledge*, London, James Currey

—(1992) *The Surreptitious Speech: Présence Africaine and the Politics of Otherness, 1947–1987*, Chicago, University of Chicago Press

—(1994) *The Idea of Africa*, Bloomington, Indiana University Press

Mulvey, L. (1975) 'Visual Pleasure and Narrative Cinema', *Screen*, Vol. 16, No. 3

—(1977) 'Notes on Sirk and Melodrama', *Movie*, No. 25

Mulvey, L. (1987) 'Notes on Sirk and Melodrama' (updated), in Gledhill, C. (ed.) *Home is Where the Heart Is: Studies in Melodrama and Woman's Film*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

—(1989) *Visual and Other Pleasures*, London, Macmillan

Murray B. (1990) *Film and the German Left in the Weimar Republic: From Caligari to Kuhle Wampe*, Austin, University of Texas Press

Naficy, H. (1979) 'Iranian Feature Films: A Brief Critical History', *Quarterly Review of Film Studies*, Vol. 4
—(1992) 'Islamizing Cinema in Iran', in: Farsoun, S. K. and Mehrdad Mashayeki (eds) *Iran: Political Culture in the Islamic Republic*, London and New York, Routledge
—(1993) *The Making of Exile Cultures: Iranian Television in Los Angeles*, Minneapolis, University of Minnesota
Naficy, H. and Gabriel, T. (eds) (1993) *Otherness and the Media: The Ethnography of the Imagined and the Imaged*, Chur, Switzerland, Harwood Academic Publishers
Neale, S. (1980) *Genre*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1985) *Cinema and Technology: Image, Sound and Colour*, London Macmillan/British Film Institute Publishing
—(1990) 'Questions of Genre', *Screen*, Vol. 31, No. 1
—(2000) *Genre and Hollywood*, London and New York, Routledge
Neale, S. and Smith, M. (1998) *Contemporary Hollywood Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge
Neupert, R. (1995) *The End: Narration and Closure in the Cinema*, Detroit, Wayne State University Press
Nichols, B. (1991) *Representing Reality: Issues and Concepts in Documentary*, Bloomington, Indiana University Press
—(2001) *Introduction to the Documentary*, Bloomington Indiana, Indiana University Press
Nicholson, L. (ed.) (1990) *Feminism/Postmodernism*, New York and London, Routledge
Noble, A. (2004) *Mexican National Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge
Nowell-Smith, A. (1987) 'Minnelli and Melodrama', in Gledhill, C. (ed.) *Home is Where the Heart Is: Studies in Melodrama and Woman's Film*, London, British Film Institute
Orr, J. (1993) *Cinema and Modernity*, Cambridge, Polity Press
Oshana, M. (1985) *Women of Colour: A Filmography of Minority and Third Would Women*, New York and London, Garland Publishing Inc.
O'Sullivan, T., Hartley, J., Saunders, D. and Fiske, J. (1992) *Key Concepts in Communication*, London and New York, Routledge (sixth reprint)
Oudart, J.-P (1977) 'Cinema and Suture', *Screen*, Vol. 18, No. 1
Ozguc, A. (1988) *A Chronological History of the Turkish Cinema: 1914–1988*, Istanbul, Ministry of Tourism
Paul, W. (1994) *Laughing Screaming: Modern Hollywood Horror and Comedy*, New York, Columbia University Press
Penley, C. (1985) 'Feminism, Film Theory and the Bachelor Machines', *m/f*, No. 10
—(1988) *Feminism and Film Theory*, New York, Routledge, and London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1989) *The Future of an Illusion: Film, Feminism and Psychoanalysis*, New York and London, Routledge
Phillips, G. D. (2000) *Creatures of Darkness, Detective Fiction and Film Noir*, Lexington, University Press of Kentucky

Pick, S. (1993) *The New Latin American Cinema: A Continental Project*, Austin, University of Texas Press

Pillig, J. (ed.) (1992) *Women and Animation: A Compendium*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

—(1997) *A Reader in Animation Studies*, London, Paris and Rome, John Libbey

Pines, J. and Willemen, P (eds) *Questions of Third Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Place, J. (1980) 'Women in Film Noir', in: Kaplan, E. A. (ed.) *Women in Film Noir*, London, British Film Institute (revised edition)

Porfirio, R., Silver, A. and Ursini, J. (eds) (2002) *Film Noir Reader 3: Interviews with Filmmakers of the Classic Noir Period*, New York, Limelight Editions

Powrie, P. and Stilwell, R. (eds) (2005) *Changing Tunes: The Use of Pre-existing Music in Films*, Aldershot, Ashgate

Pribham, D. (ed.) (1988) *Female Spectators*, London and New York, Verso

Rajadhyaksha, A. (1996) 'India: Filming the Nation', in: Nowell-Smith, G. (ed.) *The Oxford History of World Cinema*, Oxford, Oxford University Press

Rajadhyaksha, A. and Willemen, P. (1994) *Encyclopedia of Indian Film*, New Delhi and London, British Film Institute Publishing and Oxford University Press

Ramirez-Berg, C. (2002) *Latino Images in Film: Stereotypes, Subversion, Resistance*, Austin Texas, University of Texas Press

Rayns, T. and Meek, S. (eds) (1980) *Electric Shadows: Forty five Years of Chinese Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Reay, P. (2004) *Music in Film: Soundtracks and Synergy*, London and New York, Wallflower Press

Reid, M. A. (1993) *Redefining Black Film*, Berkeley, Los Angeles and Oxford, University of California Press

Renov, M. (ed.) (1993) *Theorizing Documentary*, New York and London, Routledge

Rentschler, E. (1988) *West German Filmmakers on Film: Visions and Voices*, New York and London, Holmes and Meier

Rheudan, J. (1993) 'The Marriage of Maria Braun: History, Melodrama, Ideology', in: Friedan, S., McCormick, R. W, Petersen, V. R. and Vogelsang, L. M. (eds) *Gender and German Cinema, Feminist Interventions*, Oxford, Berg Publishers

Rocchio, V. F. (2000) *Reel racism: Confronting Hollywood's Construction of Afro-American Culture*, Boulder, Colorado and Oxford, Westview Press

Rodgerson, G. and Wilson, E. (eds) (1991) *Pornography and Feminism: The Case Against Censorship*, London, Lawrence and Wishart

Rose, J. (1986) *Sexuality in the Field of Vision*, London, Verso

Rosen, M. (1973) *Popcorn Venus: Women, Movies and the American Dream*, New York, Coward McCann and Geoghegan

Ross, K. (1996) *Black and White Media: Black Images in Popuhu Film and Television*, Cambridge, Polity Press

Rothman, G. (1976) 'Against "The system of the suture"', in: Nicholls, B. (ed.) *Movies and Methods: An Anthology*, Berkeley, University of California Press
Russell, C. (1999) *Experimental Ethnography*, Durham and London, Duke University Press.
Russell, J. (2002) *The Pocket Essential Vietnam War Movie*, Harpenden Herts, Pocket Essentials
Russo, V. (1981) *The Celluloid Closet: Homosexuality in the Movies*, second edition 1987, New York, Harper and Row
Saïd, E. (1978) *Orientalism*, New York, Pantheon
Salt, B. (1977) 'Film Style and Technology in the 1940s', *Film Quarterly*, Fall
—(1983) *Film Style and Technology: History and Analysis*, London, Starword
Sandler, K. S. (1998) (ed.) *Reading The Rabbit: Explorations in Warner Brothers Animation*, Brunswick, New Jersey, Rutgers University Press
Saunders, J. (2001) *The Western Genre: From Lordsburg to Big Whiskey*, London and New York, Wallflower Press
Schaefer, E. (1999) *'Bold! Daring! Shocking! True!': A History of Exploitation Films, 1919–1959*, Durham and London, Duke University Press
Schatz, T. (1981) *Hollywood Genres*, New York, Random House
*Screen* (1984) 'Special Issue on the Soundtrack', Vol. 25, No. 3
—(1988) 'Special Issue on Race', Vol. 29, No. 4
—(1992) *Sexing the Subject: A Screen Reader in Sexuality*, London and New York, Routledge
Segal, L. and McIntosh, M. (eds) (1992) *Sex Exposed: Sexuality and the Pornography Debate*, London, Virago
Shafik, V. (1998) *Arab Cinema: History and Cultural Identity*, Cairo, American University in Cairo Press
Shapiro, J. (2002) *Atomic Bomb Cinema: The Apocalyptic Imagination on Film*, New York and London, Routledge
Shaw, T. (2001) *The British Cinema and the Cold War Film*, London and New York, IB Tauris
Shiri, K. (ed.) (1993) *Africa at the Pictures*, BFI Dossier No. 10, London, National Film Theatre Publication
Shohat, E. (1989) *Israeli Cinema: East/West and the Politics of Representation*, Austin, University of Texas Press
—(2003) *Multiculturalism, Postcoloniality and Transnational Media*, New Brunswick, NJ and London, Rutgers University Press
Shohat, E. and Stam, R. (1994) *Unthinking Eurocentrism: Multiculturalism and the Media*, New York and London, Routledge
Showalter, E. (ed.) (1989) *Speaking of Gender*, New York and London, Routledge
Silberman, K. (1981) 'Masochism and Subjectivity', *Framework*, No. 12
—(1983) *The Subject of Semiotics*, Oxford, Oxford University Press
Silberman, M. (1996) 'What is German in the German Cinema?', *Film History*, Vol. 8
Slaig, L. and Williams, T. (1975) *Italian Western: The Opera of Violence*, London, Lorrimer

Slocum, D. J. (2001) *Violence and American Cinema*, New York and London, Routledge

Snead, J., MacCabe, C. and West, C. (eds) (1994) *White Screen, Black Images: Hollywood from the Dark Side*, New York and London, Routledge

Sobchack, V. (1993) *Screening Space: The American Science Fiction Film*, New York, New York University Press

Soderbergh, S. (1999) 'The Flash-back Kid: Interview with Steven Soderbergh, by Sheila Johnston', *Sight and Sound*, No. 9, Vol. 11, 12–14

Solanas, F and Getino, O. (1983) 'Towards a Third Cinema', in: Chanan, M. (ed.) *Twenty-Five Years of the New Latin American Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

Solomon, C. (ed.) (1987) *The Art of the Animated Image*, Los Angeles, American Film Institute

—(1994) *History of Animation*, New York, Wings Books, Random House

Sonnenschein, D. (2001) *Sound Design: The Expressive Power of Music, Voice and Sound*, Studio City, CA, Michael Wise Productions

Sorlin, E. (1991) *European Cinemas, European Societies 1939–1990*, New York and London, Routledge

Spicer, A. (2002) *Film Noir*, Harlow Essex, Pearson Education.

Spivak, G. C. (1985) 'Can the Subaltern Speak? Speculations on Widow Sacrifice', *Wedge*, Vol. 7, No. 8

—(1987) *In Other Worlds: Essays on Cultural Politics*, New York, Methuen

Stacey, J. (1993) *Star Gazing: Hollywood Cinema and Female Spectatorship*, London and New York, Routledge

Staig, L. and Williams, T. (1975) *The Italian Western: The Opera of Violence*, London, Lorrimer

Stam, R. (2000) *Film Theory: An Introduction*, London and New York, Blackwells

Stam, R., Burgoyne, R. and Flitterman-Lewis, S. (1992) *New Vocabularies in Film Semiotics: Structuralism, Post-Structuralism and Beyond*, New York and London, Routledge

Stanfield, P. (2001) *Hollywood, Westerns and the 1930s: The Lost Trail*, Exeter, Exeter University Press

Stead, P. (1989) *Film and the Working Class*, London and New York, Routledge

Stephens, M. L. (1995) *Film Noir: A Comprehensive Illustrated Reference to Movies, Terms and Persons*, North Carolina and London, McFarland and Co. Inc. Publishers

Stevenson, J. (2000) *Fleshpot: Cinema's Sexual Myth and Taboo Breakers*, Manchester, Head Press

Stollery, M. (2001) 'Masculinities, Generations, and Cultural Transformation in Contemporary Tunisian Cinema', *Screen*, Vol. 42, No. 1, 48–63

Street, S. (2001) *Costume and Cinema: Dress Codes in Popular Film*, London and New York, Wallflower Press

Strong, J. (1999) *Six Novels Adapted for Cinema*, unpublished PhD thesis, Stirling University

Studlar, G. (1985) 'Masochism and the Perverse Pleasures of the Cinema', in: Nicholls, B. (ed.) *Movies and Methods*, Vol. 2, Berkeley, University of California Press

—(ed.) (2001) *John Ford Made Westerns: Filming the Legend in the Sound Era*, Bloomington Indianapolis, Indiana University Press

Suleri, S. (1992) 'Woman Skin Deep: Feminism and the Postcolonial Condition', *Critical Inquiry*, No. 18, Vol. 4

Tapper, R. (ed.) (2002) *The New Iranian Cinema: Politics, Representation and Identity*, London, I. B. Tauris

Tasker, Y. (1993) *Spectacular Bodies: Gender, Genre and the Action Cinema*, Comedia Series, New York and London, Routledge

Taylor, C. (1986) 'The L.A. Rebellion: New Spirit in American Film', *Black Film Review*, Vol. 2, No. 2

—(1996a) *The Encyclopedia of Animation Techniques*, Oxford, Boston, Johannesburg, Melbourne, New Delhi and Singapore, Focal Press

—(1996b) 'The Re-birth of the Aesthetic in Cinema', in: Bernardi, D. (ed.) *The Birth of Whiteness: Race and the Emergence of US Cinema*, New Jersey, Rutgers University Press

Taylor, R. and Christie, I. (eds) (1994a) *The Film Factory: Russian and Soviet Cinema in Documents 1896–1939*, London and New York, Routledge

—(1994b) *Inside the Film Factory: New Approaches to Russian and Soviet Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge

Taylor, R. and Spring, D. (eds) (1993) *Stalinism and Soviet Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge

Telotte, J. P. (1999) *A Distant Technology: Science Fiction and the Machine Age*, New England, Wesleyan University Press of New England

Thomas, D. (2000) *Beyond Genre: Melodrama, Comedy and Romance in Hollywood Films*, Moffat, Dumfrieshire, Cameron and Hollis

Tomaselli, K. (1988) *The Cinema of Apartheid*, New York, Smyrna Press

Tompkin, J. (1992) *West of Everything: The Inner Life of Westerns*, New York, Oxford University Press

Torgovnik, J. (2003) *Bollywood Dreams*, London and New York, Phaidon Press Ltd

Tudor, A. (1989) *Monsters and Mad Scientists: A Cultural History of the Horror Movie*, Oxford, Basil Blackwell

Turim, M. (1989) *Flashbacks in Film: Memory and History*, New York and London, Routledge

Turner, G. (1988) *Film as Social Practice*, London and New York, Routledge

Tuska, J. (1976) *The Films of the West*, New York, Doubleday and Co. Inc.

Ukadike, N. F (1994) *Black African Cinema*, Berkeley, Los Angeles and London, University of California

—(ed.) (1995) *New Discourses of African Cinema*, Special Issue of *Iris*, No. 18

Van Sant, G. (2004) quoted in S. F. Saïd's article 'Shock Corridors', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 14, Issue 2, 16–18

Vasey, R. (1997) *The World According to Hollywood: 1918–1939*, Exeter, Exeter University Press

Verhoeven, D. (1997) 'The Sexual Terrain of the Australian Feature Film: Putting the Outback into the Ocker', in: Jackson, C. and Tapp, P. (eds)

*The Bent Lens: A World Guide to Gay and Lesbian Film*, St Kilda, Victoria, Australian Catalogue Company
Vieler-Portet, C. (1991) *Black and Third World Cinema: Film and Television Bibliography*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Vieyra, P. S. (1975) *Le Cinéma Africain des origines d 1973*, Paris, Présence Africaine
—(1983) *Le Cinéma au Sénégal*, Brussels and Paris, OCIC/L Harmattan
Vincendeau, Ginette (ed.) (1995) *Encyclopedia of European Cinema*, New York, Facts on File
Wagner, G. (1975) *The Novel and the Cinema*, New York, Associated University Presses Inc.
Walker, J. (ed.) (2001) *Westerns: Films through History*, New York and London, Routledge
Washburn, D. (2001) *Word and Image in Japanese Cinema*, Cambridge and New York, Cambridge University Press
Wayne, M. (2001) *Political Film: The Dialectics of Third Cinema*, London and Sterling VA, Pluto Press
Weiss, A. (1990) *Vampires and Violets: Lesbian Representation in the Cinema*, London, Pandora Press
Wells, P. (1998) *Understanding animation*, London, Routledge
Whisman, V. (1995) *Queer by Choice: Lesbians and Gayness and the Politics of Identity*, New York, Routledge
Wilkins, M. (1989) 'I'm Gonna Git You Sucka: A Glance at the Blaxploitation Era', *Black Face*, No. 1
Willemen, P. (1989) 'The Third Cinema Question: Notes and Reflections', in: Pines, J. and Willemen, P. (eds) *Questions of Third Cinema*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
—(1994) *Looks and Frictions: Essays in Cultural Studies and Film Theory*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Williams, C. (ed.) (1980) *Realism in the Cinema*, London and Henley, Routledge and Kegan Paul
Williams, L. (1981) *Figures of Desire: A Theory and Analysis of Surrealist Film*, Urbana, Chicago, London, University of Illinois Press
—(1984) 'When the Woman Looks', in: Doane, M. A., Mellencamp, P and Williams, L. (eds) *Re-vision: Essays in Feminist Film Criticism*, Frederick, Marylands, The American Film Institute/University Publications of America
Wilson, A. (2002) *24 Hour Party People: What the Sleeve Notes never Tell You*, London, Channel 4 Books
Winston, B. (1995) *Claiming the Real: The Documentary Film Revisited*, London, British Film Institute Publishing
Wojcik, P. R. and Knight, A. (eds) (2001) *Soundtrack Available: Essays on Film and Popular Music*, Durham, NC, Duke University Press
Wollen, P. (1972) *Signs and Meaning in the Cinema*, London, Secker and Warburg
—(1982) *Semiotic Counter-Strategies: Readings and Writings*, London, Verso

Wood, R. (1992) 'Ideology, Genre, Auteur', in: Mast, G., Cohen, M. and Baudry, L. (eds) *Film Theory and Criticism*, Oxford, Oxford University Press

—(1979) 'Introduction', in: Wood, R. and Lippe, R. (eds) *The American Nightmare: Essays on the Horror Film*, Toronto, Festivals of Festivals

Woodhead, C. (ed.) (1989) *Turkish Cinema: An Introduction*, London, Centre for Near and Middle-Eastern Studies, Occasional Paper 5

Wrathall, John (2004) 'Excursion to Hell', *Sight and Sound*, Vol. 14, No. 2, 28–30

Wright, W. (1975) *Six Guns and Society: A Structural Study of the Western*, Berkeley, Los Angeles and London, University of California Press

Xavier, I. (1997) 'The Humiliation of the Father: Melodrama and Cinema Nôvo's Critique of Conservative Modernization', *Screen*, 38: 4

Yau, E. (1996) 'China after the Revolution', in: Nowell-Smith, G. (ed.), *The Oxford History of World Cinema*, Oxford and New York, Oxford University Press

Young, L. (1996) *Fear of the Dark: 'Race', Gender and Sexuality in the Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge

Zhang, X. (1998) *Chinese Modernism in the Era of Reform*, Durham, NC, Duke University Press

Zhang, Y. (2004) *Chinese National Cinema*, London and New York, Routledge

Zhang, Y. and Xiao, Z. (eds) (1998) *Encyclopedia of Chinese Film*, London and New York, Routledge

Žižek, S. (1999) *The Fright of Real Tears: The Uses and Misuses of Laçan in Film Theory*, London, British Film Institute Publishing

# INDEX OF FILMS

*A bout de souffle* 95, 166, 229–30
*A hora da estrela (The Hour of the Star)* 462
*A ma soeur* 291, 353
*A nous la liberté* 30
*Abi and Rabi* 472
*Accused, The* 381
*Aces High* 485
*Across the Pacific* 490
*Adieu Bonaparte* 436
*Adventures of Buffalo Bill, The* 499
*Adventures of Priscilla, Queen of the Desert* 72, 274, 332, 336
*Adventures of Robin Hood, The* 8
*African Queen, The* 91
*Afrique 50* 439
*Afrique sur Seine* 428
*Age of Innocence, The* 13, 93
*Aguirre, Wrath of God* 202
*A.I.* 341
*Air Force* 491
*Airport* 385
*Ajantrik (The Unmechanical)* 418
*Al Dhikrayat al Kasibah (al-Djakira al-khisba) (Fertile Memories)* 467
*Alam Ara* 68, 450
*Alexander* 120
*Alexander Nevsky* 368
*Algérie en flammes (Algeria in Flames)* 439
*Algiers/Beyrouth: Pour mémoire (Algiers/Beirut: A Souvenir)* 440
*Ali Baba* 449
*Alibaba and the Forty Thieves* 449
*Alien* series 11; *Alien* 339; *Alien 3* 129, 211, 328, 339; *Alien Resurrection* 339–40
*All Quiet on the Western Front* 397, 479, 484
*All that Heaven Allows* 239, 241–2
*Alphaville* 342
*Amadi* 426
*Amateur* 224
*American in Paris, An* 271, 276
*Amores perros (Love's a Bitch)* 464, 464–5
*Anatomy of Hell* 291
*Andaz* 451
*Annie Hall* 398
*Annie Oakley* 504
*Anokhi Dastan* 455
*Antonio das Mortes* 74, 460
*Antz* 24
*Apocalypse Now* 223, 496
*Arizona Bill* series 497
*Armageddon* 10
*Arroseur arrosé* 90
*Ascenseur pour l'échafaud/Lift to the Scaffold* 265
*At 5 in the Afternoon* 474–5
*Attack!* 492
*Austin Powers* movies 91
*Aviator, The* 190
*Awaara* 451

*Bab El-Oued City* 440
*Babes in Arms* 270
*Babes on Broadway* 270
*Baise-moi* 291, 353

*Baldwin's Nigger* 42
*Ballad of Little Jo, The* 503, 504
*Bande á part* 304
*Bangkok Dangerous* 7
*Barb Wire* 11
*Barkleys of Broadway* 276
*Basic Instinct* 290–1
*Bat, The* 99
*Bataan* 491
*Battle for the Planet of the Apes* 339
*Battle of Britain* 492
*Battle of Midway, The* 488
*Battleground* 491
*Battleship Potemkin* 111, 259, 366, 368
*Beast from 20,000 Fathoms, The* 210
*Beginning and End* 436
*Beginning or the End?, The* 494
*Behind the Green Door* 290
*Behind the Sun* 463
*Beijing Bicycle* 447
*Being John Malkovitch* 333
*Beloved* 13
*Ben Hur* 118
*Bend it Like Beckham* 45
*Bend of the River* 505
*Beneath the Planet of the Apes* 339
*Berlin* 488
*Bezhin Meadow* 368
*Bhaji on the Beach* 44–5
*Bhuvan Shome* 453
*Big Boss, The* 7
*Big Jim McCain* 494
*Big Timers* 48
*Bigger than Life* 241
*Billy the Kid* 502
*Birds, The* 477
*Birth of a Nation, The* 46, 48, 119, 352, 497
*Birth of a Race* 48
*Bismarck* 487
*Black Joy* 277
*Black Narcissus* 267
*Blackboard Jungle, The* 124
*Blackboards* 474–5, 475
*Blacula* 53, 55
*Blade Runner* 342
*Blazing Saddles* 187
*Blob, The* 210
*Blood Feast* 207
*Blood of the Condor, The* 460
*Blue Collar* 223
*Blue Denim* 124
*Blue Velvet* 223
*Body Beautiful, The* 44
*Body of Evidence* 290–1
*Bombay* 454
Bond movies 6, 398
*Bonnie and Clyde* 395, 495, 507
*Boogie Nights* 224, 290
*Born in Flames* 331
*Born on the Fourth of July* 496
*Borom Sarret* 428
*Boss Nigger (The Black Bounty Killer)* 53, 505
*Bound* 332
*Boys Don't Cry* 333
*Boyz'n the Hood* 58, 215
*Bride and Prejudice* 45, 68, 454
*Bride of Frankenstein, The* 397
*Bridge, The* 492
*Bridge over the River Kwai, The* 492
*Bridge Too Far, A* 492
*Bridget Jones* films 91
*Bringing up Baby* 359, 396
*Broadway Melody* 268
*Broken Arrow* 187, 506–7
*Bronco Billy's Redemption* 500
*Brood, The* 210, 266, 341
*Brute, The* 49
*Buck and the Preacher* 505
*Buena vida Delivery* 463
*Buffalo Bill* 503
*Bulbule-Pakistan* 455
*Bully* 126–7
*Burma Victory* 486
*Burmese Harp, The* 491
*Burning an Illusion* 42
*Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid* 71, 189, 507
*Butterfly Kiss* 333

*Cabaret* 278
*Cabin in the Sky* 272, 276
*Cabinet of Dr Caligari, The* 97, 195, 196, 197, 208
*Cairo* 436
*Canticle of the Stones* 468
*Captain Blood* 8
*Carandiru* 464
*Carefree* 270
*Carry On* series 91
*Casablanca* 155, 490
*Casanova* 266
*Cat People* 64, 209
*Central do Brazil (Central Station)* 462, 463
*Charlie Chan* series 400
*Charlie's Angels* 11
*Chicken Run* 25
*Chikin Biznis . . . The Whole Story* 430
*Children of the Atom Bomb* 495
*China Gate* 495
*China, My Sorrow* 447
*Chinatown* 187–8
*Chisum* 507
*Christopher Strong* 242, 246–7
*Chronicle of a Disappearance* 468
*Chronique d'un été* 107
*Chroniques des années de braise (Chronicle of the Years of Embers)* 439
*Cidade de Deus (City of God)* 463–4
*Circle, The* 474, 475
*Citizen, an Inspector and a Thief, A* 437
*Citizen Kane* 98, 99, 156, 250, 396, 459
*City Lights* 398
*City of Hope* 191, 224
*Clean Pastures* 22
*Cleopatra* 61, 118–19, 119–20
*Cleopatra Jones* 54
*Clerks* 224
*Close Encounters of the Third Kind* 338
*Coal Black and De Sebben Dwarves* 22
*Coalface* 106
*Cobweb, The* 241
*Coffy* 54
*Collateral* 6, 7, 10, 62, 63–4
*Collateral Damage* 8–9
*Color of Money, The* 71
*Color Purple, The* 13, 352
*Colossus of New York, The* 210
*Coma* 328
*Come Back Africa* 480
*Come See* 493
*Coming Home* 496
*Compulsion* 330
*Concerto Darb Saada* 437
*Confessions of a Nazi Spy* 489
*Congorilla* 428
*Connection, The* 480
*Conquest of the Planet of the Apes* 339
*Conspiracy of the Doomed* 494
*Conversation, The* 223
*Cool and the Crazy, The* 124
*Cool World, The* 50, 480
*Courage Under Fire* 497
*Covered Wagon, The* 500
*Cow, The* 473
*Crash* 266
*Created Surface of the Earth, The* 365
*Crime in the Streets* 124
*Crimson Gold* 474
*Crouching Tiger, Hidden Dragon* 7
*Crow, The* 9
*Cry Freedom* 431
*Crying Game, The* 182
*Curfew* 468
*Cyrano de Bergerac* 122

*Dam Busters, The* 164, 491
*Dancer in the Dark* 274, 280–1
*Dances with Wolves* 507, 509
*Dancing Darkies* 47
*Dancing Nig, The* 47
*Daughters of the Dust* 52
*Day at War, A* 488
*Day for Night* 97, 233
*Day the Earth Caught Fire, The* 338
*Days, The* 446
*Dead End* 99
*Dead Man* 224

*Dead Ringers* 129, 190, 266, 341, 477
*Death in Venice* 264
*Death Wish* 10
*Deep Throat* 290
*Deer Hunter, The* 496
*Demolition Man* 11
*Demolition of the Russian Monument at St Stephen, The* 470
*Desert Hearts* 331
*Desert Victory* 486
*Desperately Seeking Susan* 92
*Destiny* 198
*Deuses e os Mortos (The Gods and the Dead)* 75
*Deux ou trois choses que je sais d'elle* 168
*Devarin (Things)* 469
*Devdas* 65–6, 68, 451, 454
*Devil's Doorway* 507
*Dharti Ke Lal (Children of the Earth)* 418
*Die Hard* series 6, 11
*Dingjun Mountain* 443
*Dirty Gertie from Harlem USA* 48
*Divine Horsemen, The* 121
*Divine Intervention* 468
*Do Ansoo* 455
*Do the Right Thing* 56
*Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde* 207, 210
*Dr Mabuse, the Gambler* 194, 198
*Dr Strangelove* 338, 495
*Dolly Sisters, The* 271
*Dom* 22
*Doña Herlinda y su hijo (Dona Herlinda and Her Son)* 462
*Double Indemnity* 150, 159–60, 328
*Dracula* (1931) 207, 397
*Dracula* (1992) 208, 212
*Dragnet* 399
*Dragstrip Girl* 124
*Dragstrip Riot* 124
*Dreaming Rivers* 44
*Driller Killer, The* 207
*Drop Zone* 11
*Drugstore Cowboy* 224
*Earth, The* 366
*East Palace, West Palace* 333, 446
*Easy Rider* 86, 223, 278
*Edward II* 330
*El Condor* 504–5
*El crimen de padre Amaro (The Crime of Father Amaro)* 464
*Elegy, The* 471
*Elephant* 126–7, 225
*Empire* 260, 480
*En résidence surveillé (Under House Arrest)* 428
*Enginemen* 164
*England Expects* 483
*Entr'acte* 39, 96, 259
*Equal Wages for Men and Women* 203
*Eraserhead* 223
*E.T.* 338
*Et Dieu créa la femme* 166
*Eternal Jew, The (Der Ewige Jude)* 487
*Even Cowgirls Get the Blues* 330
*Every Day Except Christmas* 164
*Exorcist, The* 211
*Exorcist, The: The Version You've Never Seen* 213
*Expresso Bongo* 272
*Extraordinary Adventures of Mr West in the Land of the Bolsheviks, The* 366–7

*Face/Off* 8
*Fall Guy, The* 48
*Fame* 273
*Fantasmagorie* 20
*Fantômas* 173
*Far from Heaven* 191
*Farewell My Concubine* 333, 446
*Farewell My Lovely* 153
*Fargo* 224
*Fatal Attraction* 129, 290, 374, 381
*Father Son and Holy War* 418
*Fatherland Calls, The (Das Vaterland ruft)* 483
*Fatma 75* 442

*Faust* 196
*Fear Eats the Soul* 201–2, 329
*Felix the Cat* 20
*Fièvre* 259
*Fifth Element, The* 342
*Final Analysis* 290–1
*Finding Forrest* 224
*Fire* 416
*Fires of the Plain* 491
*Fires Were Started* 486
*Fist of Fury* 7
*Fistful of Dollars, A* 508
*Five* 494
*Flaming Creatures* 479
*Flash Gordon* series 337
*Flirt* 224
*Fly, The* 130, 328, 341
*Flying Down to Rio* 268
*Follow the Fleet* 270
*For a Few Dollars More* 507
*For Massa's Sake* 47
*Forrest Gump* 305
*Forty Guns* 504
*Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse, The* 484
*4 little girls* 56
*Fox of Glenarvon, The* 487
*Foxy Brown* 54
*Frankenstein* 207, 208, 210, 333, 397
*Frantz Fanon: Black Skin White Mask* 43–4
*French Connection, The* 187–8
*French Lieutenant's Woman, The* 253
*French Mothers (Méres françaises)* 483
*Frenzy* 477, 478
*Fresh Kill* 331
*Friday the 13th* 213
*Friendly Persuasion* 400
*From Here to Eternity* 249, 493
*Full Contact* 7
*Full Metal Jacket* 496
*Funny Girl* 273
*Funny Lady* 273
*Fuses* 260
*Gabbeh* 474
*Gadar–Ek Prem Katha (Uprising, A Love Story)* 454
*Gallipoli* 485
*Gang of Freedom, The* 465
*Garam Hava (Hot Winds)* 453
*Garden State* 125
*Gaslight* 245
*Gazon maudit (French Twist)* 92
*Genesis* 22
*Gentle Sex, The* 486
*Gentlemen Prefer Blondes* 91
*Germany in Autumn* 201–2
*Gerry* 225
*Gertie the Dinosaur* 20
*Get Carter* 224
*Ghost World* 125
*GI Blues* 124
*Gidget* 125
*Gigi* 275
*Gilda* 151, 329, 399
*Girl Crazy* 270
*Gladiator* 120
*Glass Shield, The* 52
*Glenn Miller Story* 271
*Glory* 497
*Go Fish!* 330, 332
*Godfather, The* 266, 303
*Godfather, Part II, The* 266
*Gods and Monsters* 333
*Godspell* 273
*Godzilla* 210, 495
*Gold Diggers of 1933* 270
*Gold Rush, The* 398
*Gone with the Wind* 82, 87, 93, 395
*Goodwill Hunting* 224
*Gorgo* 210
*Grand Parade, The* 484
*Grease* 273
*Great Gatsby, The* 13
*Great Train Robbery, The* 113, 497, 499
*Green Berets* 495–6
*Green Pastures, The* 47, 277
*Guelwaar* 433

*Gueule d'amour* 171
*Gunfighter* 506

*Haifa* 468
*Hair* 273
*Halfaouine* 441, 442
*Hallelujah* 276–7
*Halloween* 212–13
*Halls of Montezuma* 492
*Hamburger Hill* 496
*Hamsin* 469
*Hand, The (Ruka)* 22
*Handsworth Songs* 43
*Happy Birthday Tüke!* 203
*Happy Together* 333
*Hard Day's Night, A* 272
*Hardcore* 290
*Harder They Come, The* 273
*Harishchandra* 448
*Harlan County USA* 108
*Harry Potter* series 190
*Heart of Britain* 486
*Heaven's Gate* 61
*Heimat* films 200
*Hell and High Water* 494
*Hello Dolly!* 273
*Help!* 272
*Henry V* 488
*Heritage . . . Africa* 417
*Hero* 7
*Hero, The* 454
*Herr Doktor* 484
*High Art* 333
*High Noon* 102, 398, 506
*High School Confidential* 124
*Hijack Stories* 430
*Hiroshima, Hiroshima* 495
*Hiroshima mon amour* 111, 166, 229
*His Girl Friday* 359
*Histoire d'A* 108
*Histoire d'un crime* 153–4
*Histoire d'un retour (Story of a Return)* 465
*Histoire d'une rencontre (Story of an Encounter)* 440
*Hitler's Children* 490
*Homage by Assassination* 468
*Home Away from Home* 44
*Home from the Hill* 241
*Homesteader, The* 49
*Hope, The* 471
*Hors la vie (Out of Life)* 465
*House Behind the Cedars* 49
*Howard's End* 122
*Humayun* 451
*Hunger, The* 208
*Hyenas* 433, 434

*I Am a Fugitive from a Chain Gang* 394
*I Walked with a Zombie* 209
*I Was a Communist for the FBI* 494
*I was a Teenage Werewolf* 125
*Il tetto (The Roof)* 227
*I'll Cry Tomorrow* 271
*I'm Gonna Git You Sucka* 55
*Imitation of Life* 240, 242
*In Casablanca Angels Don't Fly* 441
*In the Cut* 353
*In the Heat of the Night* 50–1
*In the Line of Fire* 249, 383
*In Which We Serve* 486
*Incendiary Blonde* 271
*Inch'allah dimanche (Long Live Sunday)* 353
*Incredibles, The* 24
*India Song* 40
*Industrial Britain* 107
*Insider, The* 63
*Interview with the Vampire* 208, 307
*Intimacy* 353
*Invaders from Mars* 337
*Invasion of the Body Snatchers* 494
*Invisible Man, The* 397
*Iron Horse, The* 500–1
*It Came from Outer Space* 337
*It Conquered the World* 337
*It Happened One Night* 359, 399
*I've Heard the Mermaids Singing* 331

*J'accuse* 484
*Jackie Brown* 54
*Jailhouse Rock* 272
*Jaws* 112, 398
*Jazz Singer, The* 174, 268, 359, 394
*Jeanne Dielman, 23 Quai du Commerce, 1080 Bruxelles* 40
*Jedda* 121
*Jeera Sain* 456
*Jemima and Johnny* 42
*Jesus Christ Superstar* 273
*Johnny Guitar* 3, 332, 400, 502, 504, 506
*Jollies* 331
*Juju* 418
*Jump the Gun* 426
*Junior* 328
*Jurassic Park* 24, 131–2, 185, 307, 341, 398
*Just Another Girl on the IRT* 58

*Kaddu Beykatt (Letter from My Village)* 428
*Kadosh (Sacred)* 469
*Kaiser – The Beast of Berlin, The* 483
*Kameradschaft* 198
*Kandahar* 475
*Kanta of Kebbi* 426
*Kartar Singh* 456
*Kasaba (The Small Town)* 472
*Keep Punching* 48
*Ken Park* 126
*Keystone Cops* 90
*Khilona* 457
*Khush* 331
*Killer of Sheep* 52
*Kind of Loving, A* 70
*King and Country* 485
*King and I, The* 272
*King Arthur* 6, 7, 120
*King Kong* 20, 210, 396
*King Solomon's Mines* (1937) 277, 428
*Kings of the Cannibal Islands* 428
*Kiss Me Deadly* 151, 304, 329
*Kiss of the Spiderwoman, The* 184, 329, 464
*Kitchen* 260
*Klondike Annie* 3, 504
*Komal Gandhar* 418, 453
*Kukurantumi* 418

*La Bataille d'Alger (Battle of Algiers)* 419, 439
*La Bataille du rail* 487
*La Belle équipe* 171
*La Belle et la Bête* 111, 213, 266
*La Chinoise* 40, 167
*LA Confidential* 153
*La Coquille et le clergyman* 31, 39, 260
*La Danse du feu (The Fire Dance)* 442
*La Grande illusion* 162, 484
*La Hora de los Hornos (The Hour of the Furnaces)* 414, 419, 461
*La Ley de Herodes (Herod's Law)* 464
*La Mano en la trampa (The Hand in the Trap)* 459
*La Noivre de . . . (Black Girl)* 428
*La Nouba des femmes du mont Chenoua (The Nouba of the Women of Mount Chenoua)* 440
*La Nuit américaine (Day for Night)* 253
*La Pointe course* 167
*La Pomme (The Apple)* 474, 474–5
*La Régle du jeu* 171
*La Ruelle des fous (The Backstreets of the Madmen)* 436
*La Saison des hommes (The Season of Men)* 353, 441, 442
*La Souriante Mme Beudet* 39
*La terra trema (The Earth Trembles)* 227, 228
*La Vie de Christ* 12
*La Vie est à nous* 171
*La Vie et la passion de Jésus Christ* 12
*La Ville des pirates (The City of Pirates)* 461
*La Violence et la dérision (Violence and Laughter)* 437

*La Zerda ou les chants de l'oubli (The Zerda and the Songs of Forgetfulness)* 440
*Ladri di bicicletti (Bicycle Thieves)* 228
*Lady, The* 471
*Lady in the Dugout* 499
*Lady Sings the Blues* 271
*Ladybird, Ladybird!* 286
*Lakhon Mein Eik* 456
*L'Année derniére à Marienbad* 113, 229
*Lara Croft Tomb Raider* 11, 62
*L'Arlésienne* 285
*L'Assassinat du duc de Guise* 411
*Last Highway* 223
*Last Laugh, The* 196
*Last Movie, The* 223
*Last Tango in Paris* 290
*Last Temptation of Christ, The* 72
*Laura* 267, 283, 328–9
*L'Autre (The Other)* 436
*Lawrence of Arabia* 119, 399
*Layla and the Wolves* 465
*Le Beau Serge* 166
*Le Chagrin et la pitié* 108
*Le Chant d'amour* 329
*Le Ciel est à vous* 487
*Le Corbeau* 487
*Le Cri du Coeur* 433
*Le Crime de M. Lange* 170–1
*Le Destin (Fate)* 436
*Le Jour se lève* 102, 149, 250, 252
*Le Mépris* 27, 76, 361
*Le Moineau (The Sparrow)* 436
*Le Rouge aux lèvres* 208
*Le Sang d'un poète* 329
*Le Vent des Aurès (The Wind from the Aurés)* 439
*Left-Handed Gun, The* 505
*Legend of Nigger Charlie, The* 53
*Les Années folles du twist (Mad Years of the Twist)* 440
*Les Demoiselles de Rochefort* 273
*Les Dupes (The Deceived)* 436
*Les 400 Coups* 166
*Les Parapluies de Cherbourg* 273
*Les Portes fermées (Closed Doors)* 437
*Les Silences du Palais (Silences of the Palace)* 298, 353, 441, 442
*Les Vampires* 207–8
*Lethal Weapon* series 6
*Letter from an Unknown Woman* 244
*Leyla the Bedouin* 435
*Life is all you get* 203
*Life is Beautiful* 493
*Lillian Russell* 271
*Limey, The* 224
*Listen to Britain* 486
*Little Caesar* 150, 173, 174, 394
*Little Chinese Seamstress* 447
*Little United States, The* 484
*Locket, The* 158
*London Can Take It* 486
*Lone Star* 224
*Loneliness of the Long Distance Runner, The* 70
*Lonesome Cowboys* 480
*Long Goodbye, The* 187
*Long Road to Mazatlan* 44
*Longtime Companion* 72
*Look at Britain* series 164
*Look Back in Anger* 70, 165
*Looking for Langston* 43, 332
*Lord of the Rings* series 62
*Los Motivos de Luz (Light Motives)* 464
*Los Olvidados* 459
*Losing Ground* 60
*Lost Girl, The* 472
*Lost in Translation* 225
*Love Brewed in an African Pot* 417
*Love is the Devil (Study for a Portrait of Francis Bacon)* 333
*Love me Tender* 124
*Lucia* 419
*Luna de Avallaneda* 463

*M* 198
*M. Butterfly* 266
*Machorka-Muff* 201
*Magnificent Seven, The* 507
*Magnolia* 224

*Making of Bronco Billy, The* 500
*Malcolm X* 56, 59
*Maltese Falcon, The* 149
*Maly Western* 22
*Mama* 446
*Man of Ashes* 441
*Man with a Movie Camera* 364, 365
*Man Who Fell to Earth, The* 338
*Man Who Shot Liberty Valance, The* 501
*Man Who Wasn't There, The* 191, 224
*Man Who Would be King, The* 400
*Manchurian Candidate, The* 353
*Manon des sources* 122
*María Candelaria* 459
*Marnie* 143, 155, 246, 477
*Marriage of Maria Braun, The* 329
*Marty* 398
*Mary Shelley's Frankenstein* 307, 341
*M*A*S*H* 496
*Matrix* series 339, 340–1
*Maula Jat* 457
*Mayis Sikintisi (Clouds of May)* 472
*Mean Streets* 223
*Meet Me in St Louis* 272, 276
*Meghe Dhaka Tara (The Cloud-Capped Star)* 418, 453
*Memorias del subdesarrollo (Memories of Underdevelopment)* 419
*Men, The* 492
*Menace II Society* 58
*Mendiants et orgueilleux (The Proud and the Beggars)* 437
*Merrie Melodies* 21–2
*Meshes of the Afternoon* 39, 260, 479
*Metropolis* 194, 196, 198, 337, 341, 342
*Mildred Pierce* 102, 118, 152, 155, 158, 240, 246, 328
*Millions Like Us* 486
*Minority Report* 340
*Mirror Image of Dorian Gray in the Yellow Press, The* 203
*Misery* 481–2
*Miss Queencake* 44
*Missing* 509
*Mission Impossible II* 8
*Mission to Moscow* 490
*Mississippi Marsala* 45–6, 60
*Mrs Miniver* 489
*Mr Magoo* 21
*Moana* 106
*Modern Times* 398
*Mol* 428
*Moment of Innocence, A* 474
*Momma Don't Allow* 162–3, 164
*Mommie Dearest* 328
*Monsoon Wedding* 68
*Monster* 127
*Morgenrot (Dawn)* 485
*Mother* 366, 368
*Mother India* 451
*Motorcycle Diaries, The* 463
*Motorcycle Gang* 124
*Moulin Rouge!* 63, 264, 273–4, 279–80
*Mulholland Drive* 191, 223
*Murder My Sweet* 150, 328
*Mutbi Bhar Chawal* 456–7
*Mutiny on the Bounty* 8
*My Darling Clementine* 501
*My Fair Lady* 272, 395
*My Life for Ireland* 487
*My Little Chickadee* 504
*My Own Private Idaho* 224, 330, 382
*My Son John* 494
*Mystery Train* 224

*Nagarik (The Citizen)* 418
*Naked Spur, The* 505
*Nanook of the North* 107, 121
*Napoléon vu par Abel Gance* 156
*Nashville* 278–9
*Naughty Marietta* 269
*Negro Dancers* 47
*Nevada Smith* 507
*New Jack City* 11, 56–7, 215
*New Moon* 269
*Nice Time* 164
*Night and Day* 271

*Night Cries: A Rural Tragedy* 121
*Night Mail* 106
*Night of the Living Dead, The* 210
*Night Shapes* 203
*Nightfall* 304
*Nightjohn* 52
*Nightmare on Elm Street, A* 213
*Nikita* 11
*Niña Santa (The Holy Girl)* 463
*Ninotchka* 276
*North Star, The* 490
*Nosferatu: A Symphony of Terror* 198, 208
*Notorious* 396
*Notting Hill* 91
*Noua* 439
*Now Voyager* 143, 242, 246

*O Dreamland* 162–3
*October* 111, 368
*Oklahoma* 272, 276
*Old and the New, The General Line* 368
*Old Boy* 7
*Olive Harvest, The* 468
*On a Clear day You Can See Forever* 273
*On the Bowery* 480
*On the Town* 271
*On the Waterfront* 249, 285, 399
*One Flew over the Cuckoo's Nest* 398
*One Hundred Men and a Girl* 270
*One Night Stand* 235
*One Potato, Two Potato* 50
*Open Range* 509
*Orphée* 266
*Ossessione (Obsession)* 225, 227
*Out of Africa* 303
*Out of the Inkwell* series 20–1
*Outlaw, The* 502, 503
*Outlaw Josey Wales, The* 508
*Outrage, The* 484
*Ox-bow Incident, The* 502–3

*Pale Rider* 18, 214, 506
*Paradiso Omeros* 44
*Paragraph 218* 203
*Paris is Burning* 330
*Paris, Texas* 86, 336
*Passion of Remembrance, The* 44
*Pat Garrett and Billy the Kid* 507
*Paths of Glory* 485, 492
*Pearl Harbor* 10, 493
*Peeping Tom* 161, 209, 253, 267, 372, 477, 481
*Pépé le Moko* 171
*Peppermint Candy* 7
*Perfect Image?* 44
*Pheray* 455
*Philadelphia* 330–1, 352
*Philadelphia Story* 91
*Photogénies* 259
*Pi* 224
*Pickanninies* 47
*Piel de verano (Summer Skin)* 419
*Pierrot le fou* 76, 261–3, 361
*Pirate, The* 272
*Pixote* 464
*Plainsman* 504
*Planet of the Apes* 129, 338–9, 342
*Platoon* 496
*Player, The* 303, 369, 376
*Polar Express* 21
*Police Story* 7
*Popeye the Sailor* series 21
*Porgy and Bess* 276
*Portrait of a Lady* 13
*Portrait of Jason* 480
*Posse* 11, 505
*Possessed* 158, 246
*Power of Men is the Patience of Women, The* 203
*Pressure* 42
*Pretty Woman* 303
*Pride and Prejudice* 12
*Prime Minister, The* 488
*Princess Monoke* 23
*Prisoner of the Emir* 472
*Private Life of Henry VIII* 398
*Psycho* (1960) 83, 129–30, 140, 209, 212, 222, 264, 267, 320, 376, 476–7, 481

*Psycho* (1998) 225
*Public Enemy, The* 173, 174, 394
*Pull My Daisy* 480
*Pulp Fiction* 304
*Pure Blood* 430
*Purple Heart, The* 490, 491
*Pyaasa* 451

*Quai des brumes* 171
*Quaisar* 473
*Qué viva Mexico!* 367, 459
*Querelle* 329
*Quiet Man, The* 400, 502

*Rabid* 210
*Rachida* 440
*Railroad Porter, The* 48
*Raise the Red Lantern* 446
*Rambo: First Blood, Part II* 496
*Rancho Notorious* 504
*Ranu's Wedding* 468
*Raw Deal* 505
*Rear Window* 481
*Rebecca* 102, 142, 143, 245
*Rebel Without a Cause* 123, 130–1, 241, 380, 395
*Record of a Human Being* 495
*Red Danube, The* 494
*Red Menace, The* 494
*Red Planet Mars* 494
*Red Shoes, The* 267
*Red Sorghum* 446
*Refuge* 465
*Refuge England* 164
*Reggae* 42
*Remember Pearl Harbor* 489
*Repulsion* 477
*Reservoir Dogs* 175, 303–4
*Rhapsody in Blue* 271
*Ricochet* 11
*Ricochets* 468
*Riders of Destiny* 502
*Road Runner* series 22
*Road to Perdition* 191
*Roaring Twenties, The* 394
*Robe, The* 19, 119, 393
*Rock* 6
*Rock Around the Clock* 124
*Rocky* 398
*Roja* 454
*Roma cittá aperta (Rome Open City)* 226, 228
*Roman Scandals* 270
*Romance* 291, 353
*Romeo and Juliet* (1947) 451
*Romeo and Juliet* (1996) *see William Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet*
*Room at the Top* 70
*Room with a View, A* 16, 122
*Rope* 330
*Rose, The* 271
*Rosemary's Baby* 211, 477
*Run Lola Run* 62

*Sachthai* 455
*Saint Valentine's Day Massacre, The* 303
*Saladin* 436
*Salut cousin (Hey Cousin* 440
*Samba Traoré* 433
*San Demetrio, London* 486
*San Francisco* 395
*Sanders of the River* 277
*Sands of Iwo Jima, The* 491
*Sankofa* 433
*Sans toit ni loi* 40
*Sassi* 456
*Saturday Night and Sunday Morning* 70, 165
*Saturday Night Fever* 273
*Satyricon* 266
*Saving Private Ryan* 61, 492–3, 493
*Scarface* 173
*Schindler's List* 493
*School of Rock, The* 125
*Scorpio Rising* 480
*Scream* 213
*Searchers, The* 46–7, 501, 506
*Secret Mission* 494
*Sense and Sensibility* 15

*Sergeant York* 394
*Seven Brides for Seven Brothers* 276
*Seven Songs for Malcolm* 43
*Seven Year Itch, The* 91
*Seventh Victim, The* 209
*Shadows* 223
*Shaft* 51–2, 52, 53, 55, 278
*Shaheed* 456
*Shane* 506
*Shanghai Triad* 446
*She's Gotta Have It* 56
*Shining, The* 481
*Shivers* 210
*Sholay/Flames* 67, 453
*Shoulder Arms* 484
*Show Boat* 277
*Shrek* films 24
*Silence between Two Thoughts* 474
*Silence of the Lambs, The* 213
*Silk Stockings* 275–6
*Silverado* 505
*Singin' in the Rain* 268, 303, 360
*Sinking of the Lusitania, The* 484
*Sleepless Nights* 437–8
*Smoker* 290
*Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs* 20, 22
*So Close to Paradise* 447
*So Near Yet So far* 466
*Solaris* (1972) 338
*Soldier's Story, A* 352
*Some Like it Hot* 91, 183
*Sonatine* 7
*Song* 52–3
*Song of Russia* 490
*Sophie's Choice* 385–6
*Sorrow, The* 471
*Soul of Nigger Charlie, The* 53
*Sound of Music, The* 273
*South Pacific* 272
*Spare Time* 106
*Spartacus* 120
*Speak Like a Child* 43
*Spellbound* 242
*Spirited Away* 23
*Stagecoach* 502
*Star is Born, A* (1937) 87
*Star is Born, A* (1954) 271, 380, 395
*Star Wars* 61, 339
*Stars Look Down, The* 358
*Staying Alive* 273
*Steamboat Willie* 20
*Steel Helmet, Fixed Bayonets* 494
*Stella Dallas* 240, 328
*Still a Brother: Inside the Negro Middle Class* 50
*Sting, The* 71
*Story of GI Joe, The* 491
*Story of Qui Ju, The* 446
*Straight Out of Brooklyn* 58
*Strangers on a Train* 252
*Straw Dogs* 507
*Streetcar Named Desire, A* 249
*Strictly Ballroom* 273, 279
*Strike* 111, 259, 367, 368
*Strike up the Band* 270
*Strongman Ferdinand* 201–2
*Subarnareka* 418, 453
*Summer Holiday* 272
*Summer Place, A* 124
*Summer of Sam* 56
*Sunset Boulevard* 155, 303
*Sunshine State* 224
*Superfly* 51–2, 52, 53, 278
*Sweet Charity* 278
*Sweet Sweetback's Baadassss Song* 51–2
*Swoon* 330
*Symbol of the Unconquered, The* 49

*T-Men* 505
*Take a Hard Ride* 504
*Tale of the Three Jewels* 468
*Talented Mr Ripley, The* 333
*Target for Tonight* 486
*Taste of Cherry, A* 474
*Taste of Honey, A* 70
*Taxi Driver* 223, 303, 496
*Tempest of Life, The* 472
*Ten Bob in Winter* 42
*Ten Commandments, The* 118, 393

*Ten Minutes to Live* 50
*Teri Yaad* 455
*Terminator* series 341
*Terra em Transe (Land in Anguish)* 74, 419
*Terra Incognita* 466
*Tess of the D'Urbervilles* 93
*Texas Chainsaw Massacre, The* 207, 208, 213
*Thank God it's Friday* 277
*That Hamilton Woman!* 488, 488–9
*Thelma and Louise* 72, 284, 336
*Them* 210
*They Drive By Night* 394
*They Were Expendable* 491
*Thief* 63
*Thin Red Line, The* 492–3
*Thing, The* 211
*Things to Come* 337
*Thirteen* 126
*Thirty Seconds over Tokyo* 490
*This Land is Mine* 489–90
*This Sporting Life* 70, 165
*Three Kings* 497
*Thriller* 94
*Through the Olive Trees* 474
*Tilaï* 433
*Till Clouds Roll By* 271, 272
*To Die Another Day* 7
*To Have and Have Not* 394
*To Sleep with Anger* 52
*Together* 162–3, 164
*Tom and Jerry* series 22
*Tom Jones* 70–1
*Toni* 227, 358
*Tootsie* 183, 184
*Top Hat* 270, 396
*Touki-Bouki (The Hyena's Journey)* 433
*Towering Inferno* 385
*Toy Story* 24
*Train to Pakistan* 453
*Trainspotting* 12, 16
*Tramp, The* 400
*Triumph of the Will* 487
*Trouble I've Seen* 60
*Trouble with Love* 203
*Troy* 6, 7, 120
*Trust* 224
*Tumbleweeds* 500
*Tumbling Tumbleweeds* 502
*Tunisian Victory* 486
*25th Hour* 56
*Two Strangers* 471
*2001: A Space Odyssey* 190, 338, 342

*Un chien andalou* 39, 112–13, 480
*Un été á La Goulette* 442
*Uncle Kruger* 487
*Unforgiven* 18, 214, 383, 506
*Uno de dos (One or the Other)* 463
*Urs fil Jalil (Marriage in Galilee)* 298, 468
*Usi Roti (Our Daily Bread)* 418
*Uzak (Distant)* 472

*Vagabondia* 44
*Vampire in Brooklyn* 55
*Vampire Lovers* 208
*Vampyres* 208
*Velvet Goldmine* 224
*Vent du sud (Wind from the South)* 439
*Vertigo* 209, 251, 265
*Very Narrow Bridge, A* 469
*Vidas Secas (Barren Lives)* 74
*Virgin Suicides* 225
*Visage des femmes (Faces of Women)* 431
*Voodoo Vengeance* 428
*Voyage á la lune* 20

*Waati* 433
*Wake Island* 490
*Wallace and Grommit* 25
*War at Sea from Hawaii to Malaya, The* 488
*War Bride* 483
*War Game, The* 495
*War of the Worlds* 337
*Warrior* 45

*Way to the Stars, The* 486
*Way We Were, The* 273
*Wayne's World* series 91, 125
*We are the Lambeth Boys* 164
*We Make History* 418
*Weekend* 40, 167
*West Beirut* 466
*West Side Story* 273, 281
*Westerner, The* 502
*Westfront 1918* 484
*Westward Women* 504
*What Price Glory* 484
*What We Have Against It* 203
*Whatever Happened to Baby Jane?* 477
*When Night is Falling* 331
*Where is the Friend's House?* 475
*White Balloon, The* 474, 475
*White Heat* 494
*Who Framed Roger Rabbit* 20
*Why We Fight* 488
*Wild Angels, The* 125
*Wild Bunch, The* 495, 505
*Wild Wild West* 505
*William Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet* 279
*Winchester '73* 505
*Wings* 484
*Wizard of Oz, The* 270, 395
*Woman in the Window, The* 151, 329
*Women's Wiles* 441
*Woodstock* 273
*Wooing and Wedding of a Coon, The* 428
*Words and Music* 271
*World, the Flesh and the Devil, The* 494
*Written on the Wind* 242

*Xala* 433
*Xiu Xiu: The Sent Down Girl* 447

*Y tu mama también (And your Mother too)* 464
*Yaaba* 433
*Yank in the RAF, A* 489
*Yankee Doodle Dandy* 270–1, 489
*Years of Hunger* 203
*Yellow Earth* 446
*Yesterday Girl* 201
*Yol (The Way)* 471
*Yom Yom (Day after Day)* 469
*Young Mr Lincoln* 217–18
*Young Soul Rebels* 43
*Young Törless* 201

*Zulu Love Letter* 431

# NAME INDEX


Abbas, K.A. 418
Abbott and Costello 397
Abel, Richard 20
Abou-Seif, Salah 436
Abu-Assad, Hany 468
Adam, Ken 6, 10
Ahmad, A. 298
Akerman, Chantal 27, 40, 105, 329
Akomfrah, John 43, 44, 421
Aldrich, Robert 151, 304, 477, 492
Alea, Tomás Guttiérez 419, 461
Allégret, Yves 170
Allen, Woody 377, 385, 398
Allouache, Merzak 440
Almodovar, Pedro 333
Althusser, Louis 136–7, 347, 386; on class 77, 78–9; on ideology 35, 36–7, 215, 350, 432
Altman, R. 270, 274, 275, 277–8
Altman, Robert 187, 278–9, 303, 369, 376, 496
Alton, John 232
Alvarez, Santiago 461
Alvidson, John 398
Amaral, Suzana 462
Ampaw, King 417, 418
Anand, Dev 66, 451
Anand, J.C. 456
Anderson, Gilbert M. 499–500
Anderson, Lindsay 69, 70, 106, 162–3, 163–5
Anderson, Michael 164, 491
Anderson, Pamela 11
Anderson, Paul Thomas 224, 290
Andreotti, Giulio 228
Andrew, Dudley 13–14, 39
Anger, Kenneth 329, 479, 480
Ansah, Kwaw Painstil 417, 431
Antoine, André 284–5
Antonioni, Michaelangelo 229
Appiah, Kwame 294, 424
Araki, Gregg 330
Arbuckle, Fatty 73, 90, 393
Armes, Roy 442
Armstrong, Louis 22
Arnaz, Desi 392
Arnold, Jack 53, 124, 505
Aronofsky, Darren 224
Artaud, Antonin 31
Arthur, Jean 504
Arzner, Dorothy 242, 243, 247, 393
Ashby, Hal 496
Ashcroft, B. 293
Asli, Mohamed 441
Asquith, Anthony 486
Assaf, Layla 465
Astaire, Fred 268–9, 269–70, 272, 276, 278, 376, 396
Astruc, Alexandre 30–1, 412
Attenborough, Richard 70, 492
Attile, Martine 44
Auric, Georges 266
Austen, Jane 15
Autant-Lara, Claude 19
Autry, Gene 400, 459, 498, 502
Avery, Tex 21

Babenco, Hector 184, 329, 464
Bacall, Lauren 242, 376, 395
Baccar, Selma 442
Bachchan, Amitabh 67
Bachir-Chouikh, Yasmina 440
Badham, John 11
Baghdadi, Maroun 465
Bakari, I. 442
Baker, Roy Ward 208
Balasko, Josiane 92
Ball, Lucille 392
Balogun, Ola 426, 429, 431
Bardot, Brigitte 27, 166, 376, 378, 380
Barka, Ben 442
Barry, John 267
Barthes, Roland 34, 100, 326–7, 386; on myth and meaning 281–2, 282; semiotics 344, 345, 350
Bates, Alan 69, 70
Bates, Kathy 481–2
Baudrillard, Jean 306
Baudry, Jean-Louis 3, 25–6, 324, 369–70, 370–1
Baudry, Leo 187
Bay, Michael 6, 10, 493
Bazin, André 12, 32, 75, 185, 334; discussion on deep focus 18, 99–100, 111, 356
Beatles, The 272
Beaumont, Harry 268
Becker, Jacques 486
Becker, Wolfgang 203
Beckett, Samuel 254, 302
Beer, Robert 25
Begum, Fatima 455
Belafonte, Harry 53
Bellour, Raymond 3, 177, 177–8, 324, 369–70, 370
Belmondo, Jean-Paul 229
Belmont, Charles 108
Bendazzi, G. 22
Benguigui, Yasmin 353
Benigni, Roberto 493
Benlyazid, Farida 441
Benning, Sadie 331
Bentham, Jeremy 254
Benveniste, Emile 114–15, 116, 117
Berg, Alban 265
Bergman, Ingmar 27
Bergman, Ingrid 395
Bergstrom, J. 344
Berkeley, Busby 270, 277
Berlin, Irving 269, 270, 276–7
Bernardi, Daniel 46
Bernhardt, Curtis 158, 246
Berri, Claude 122
Berry, Chris 443
Bertolucci, Bernardo 290
Besson, Luc 11, 103, 342
Bhabha, Homi 294, 298, 421, 424
Bhowmik, Someswar 450
Bhutto, Zulfikar Ali 456, 457
Bielinsky, Fabian 463
Bigelow, Kathryn 225
Björk 281
Blackwood, Maureen 44
Blair, Les 426
Bogart, Humphrey 376, 394
Bonham-Carter, Helena 12
Borden, Lizzie 331
Bordwell, David 82, 83, 84, 92, 233, 263
Borowczyk, Walerian 22
Boughedir, Férid 441, 442
Boumédienne, Houari 439
Bouzid, Nouri 441
Bowser, P. 49
Boyle, Danny 15
Bradley, David 124
Braff, Zach 125
Brahms, John 158
Braine, John 70
Brakhage, Stan 479, 480
Brambilla, Marco 11
Branagh, Kenneth 307, 341
Branch, William 50
Brando, Marlon 3, 190, 249, 285, 380, 393, 492
Brandt, Joseph 399

Braque, Georges 256
Brecht, Bertolt 39, 105, 278, 366
Breillat, Catherine 291, 353
Bresson, Robert 105, 486
Broccoli, Albert 'Cubby' and Barbara 6
Bronson, Charles 10, 508
Brooks, Mel 187
Brooks, Peter 236, 237, 238
Brooks, Richard 124
Brown, Jim 54
Browning, Tod 207
Bruckner, Jutta 202–3, 203
Buffalo Bill (William Frederick Cody) 498–9
Buñuel, Luis 39, 112–13, 459, 480
Burch, Noël 97, 113
Burnett, Charles 52, 59
Burton, Richard 69, 120, 376, 378
Bush, George 497
Bush, George W. 340
Butros, Raymond 465

Cagney, James 394
Cahn, Edward 124
Cain, James M. 227
Caine, Michael 69
Calloway, Cab 22
Campanella, Juan José 463
Campion, Jane 13, 353
Canudo, Ricciotto 411
Capra, Frank 359, 399, 488
Carlyle, Robert 12
Carné, Marcel 102, 149, 165, 170, 171, 172, 250
Carpenter, John 211, 212–13
Carrera, Carlos 464
Carvani, Liliani 27
Cassavetes, John 223, 224
Castro, Fidel 416
Catmull, Ed 24
Caughie, J. 36, 37, 388
Cavano, Liliani 27
Césaire, Aimé 295
Cesare, Leonardo di 463
Ceylan, Nuri Bilge 472
Chabrol, Claude 166, 169
Chadha, Gurinder 44–5, 68, 454
Chahine, Youssef 436, 437
Cham, M. 442
Chamoun, Jean 467
Chan, Jackie 7
Chanan, Michael 421–2
Chand, Daud 455
Chandler, Raymond 401
Chaney, Lon 397
Chaplin, Charlie 90, 359, 366, 375, 393, 398, 400, 484
Charisse, Cyd 272, 276
Chauvel, Charles 121
Chen Kaige 333, 446
Chéreau, Patrice 353
Cholodenko, Lisa 333
Chow Yun-Fat 7
Chrétien, Henri 18
Churchill, Winston 487
Cimino, Michael 61, 496
Cissé, Souleymane 417, 422, 429, 433
Cixous, Hélène 405
Clair, René 30, 39, 96, 259
Clampett, Bob 21, 22
Clark, Larry 52, 126–7
Clarke, Shirley 50, 480
Clayton, Jack 13, 70
Clein, John 48
Clément, René 487
Clift, Montgomery 249, 380
Close, Glenn 373
Clouzot, Henri-Georges 149, 486, 487
Cocteau, Jean 111, 165, 213, 266, 329
Codis, Jean-Claude 465
Coen Brothers 191, 224
Cohen, Eli 468
Cohl, Émile 20, 21
Cohn, Harry and Jack 399
Colbert, Claudette 359, 381
Collins, Kathleen 60

Comoli, J.-L. 218
Condon, Bill 333
Connelly, Marc 277
Connery, Sean 10, 246
Constable, John 256
Cook, Pam 136–7, 213
Cooper, Gary 102, 502, 505
Cooper-Hewitt, Peter 230
Copland, Aaron 267
Coppola, Francis Ford 81, 208, 212, 223, 224, 266, 303, 496
Coppola, Sofia 224, 225
Corman, Roger 125, 303
Cosmatos, George Pan 496
Costa-Gavras, Constantin 169
Costner, Kevin 507, 509
Cowie, E. 374
Crain, William 53
Craven, Wes 55, 213
Crawford, Broderick 399
Crawford, Joan 3, 246, 328, 332, 378, 395, 401, 504
Crichton, Michael 328
Cripps, Thomas 47
Cronenberg, David 129, 190, 210–11, 211, 266, 328, 341, 477–8
Crosby, Bing 272, 393, 489
Crosland, Alan 174, 268, 359, 394
Cruise, Tom 10–11, 63–4, 71, 383
Cruze, James 500
Cuarón, Alfonso 464
Cukor, George 87, 91, 241, 245, 380
Cunningham, John W. 506
Cunningham, Sean S. 213
Curtis, Bernhardt 246
Curtis, Tony 183
Curtiz, Michael 8, 102, 118, 152, 155, 240, 328, 490
Cushing, Peter 208

Dai Sijie 447
Das Gupta, Chidananda 425
Dash, Julie 52, 59
Daube, Alejo 463
Daves, Delmer 124, 187, 506–7
Davis, Andrew 8–9
Davis, Bette 127, 377, 378–9, 379, 381, 383, 395, 489
Davis, Miles 265
Dawson, Anthony 504
Day, Doris 80, 89, 377, 381
Dayan, Daniel 408, 409, 410
Dayan, Nissim 469
De Bont, Jan 62
De Gaulle, Charles *see* Gaulle, Charles de
De Kooning, Willem 308
De Lauretis, Teresa 141–3, 143, 144, 145, 146–8
De Mille, Cecil B. 393
De Niro, Robert 127–8, 190, 379
De Sica, Vittorio *see* Sica, Vittorio de
Dean, James 3, 73, 123, 130–1, 190, 240, 249, 378, 379, 380, 395
Dee, Sandra 125
Dehlavi, Jamil 457
Deitch, Donna 331
Delaney, Shelagh. 70
Delluc, Louis 38–9, 259
Demme, Jonathan 13, 213, 330–1, 352
Demy, Jacques 273
Deneuve, Catherine 281, 377
Deren, Maya 39, 98, 121, 260, 479–80
Derrida, Jacques 97, 402, 413
Despentes, Virginie 353
Diawara, M. 417
Dietrich, Marlene 377, 378, 393, 397, 482, 489, 504
Disney, Walt 20, 21, 23, 87
Dixit, Madhuri 67
Djebar, Assia 439–40
Dmytryk, Edward 150, 328
Doane, Mary Ann 134, 141, 145, 237, 243, 244, 245, 246, 343–4, 373
Dobson, Tamara 54
Donen, Stanley 268, 360
Dörrie, Doris 202–3, 203

Dors, Diana 376
Dos Santos, Nelson Pereira 74
Doueiri, Ziad 466
Douglas, Gordon 210
Dovnikonvi, Birovoi 25
Dovzhenko, Alexander 365, 366, 367
Dresen, Andreas 203
Driessen, Paul 25
Dulac, Germaine 31, 38–9, 39, 98, 259–60
Dunne, Philip 124
Dupont, E.A. 279
Duras, Marguerite 40, 305
Durbin, Deanna 270, 397
Dutt, Guru 66, 451
Duvivier, Julien 149, 170, 171
Dyer, Richard 212, 234–5, 269, 274, 278, 377, 379

Easdale, Brian 267
Eastwood, Clint: as actor 10, 18, 86, 111, 214, 249, 377, 378, 383, 501, 506, 508
Ecaré, Désiré 431
Eckhard, Sabine 203
Eddy, Nelson 269, 270
Edel, Uli 290–1
Edeson, Arthur 99
Edison, Thomas 29, 47, 86, 358, 467
Eisenstein, Sergei 364, 365, 366, 459; montage 39, 100, 109, 111–12, 112, 259, 367–8
Eisner, L. 193
El-Bakri, Asma 437
Elias, Hanna 468
Eliot, Stephen 336
Ellington, Duke 271
Elliott, Stephan 72, 274, 332
Ellis, J. 381–2
Elsaesser, Thomas 28, 120, 128, 193, 194, 195, 202, 237, 242
Epstein, Jean 38–9, 259
Ergun, Mahinur 472
Ertugrul, Mushim 470
Espinosa, Julio García 461
Eustache, Jean 77
Everett, Francine 47–8

Fairbanks, Douglas (Snr) 366, 393, 398
Fairbanks, Douglas (Jnr) 8
Fanon, Frantz 293–4, 432–3
Fassbinder, Rainer Werner 33, 199, 200, 201–2, 329, 495
Fay, Alice 393
Faye, Safi 428, 429
Fellini, Federico 229, 266, 278
Fernandez, Emilio 459
Ferncase, Richard 232, 233
Ferrara, Abel 207
Fetchitt, Stepin 22
Feuillade, Louis 173, 207–8, 411, 484
Field, Shirley Ann 376
Fields, W.C. 90, 359, 397
Figgis, Mike 235
Figueroa, Gabriel 459
Fincher, David 328
Finney, Albert 69, 70
Firth, Colin 12, 91
Fischer, Lucy 244
Fischinger, Oskar 25
Fiske, J. 347
Fitzgerald, Scott 13
Flaherty, Robert 106, 107, 121, 165
Fleeting, Victor 270
Fleischer, Dave and Max 20–1
Fleischer, Richard 330
Fleming, Victor 82, 87, 93, 395
Flitterman-Lewis, Sandy 143
Flower, Gene 125
Flynn, Errol 8, 377, 395
Fonda, Henry 393, 508
Fonda, Jane 496
Fonda, Peter 125
Forbes, Bryan 70
Ford, Harrison 10–11
Ford, John 32, 33, 165, 217, 393, 488, 491; Westerns 46–7, 401, 500–1, 502, 506, 507, 509
Foreman, Carl 506

Forman, Milos 398
Forster, E.M. 15, 16, 93
Fosse, Bob 278
Foster, Bill 47, 48
Foster, Jodie 381
Foucault, Michel 144–6, 146, 333, 402
Fox, William 392
Foxworth, Heather 60
Foxx, Jamie 64
Fraenkel, H. 193, 194, 195, 197
Franju, Georges 107
Frank, Robert 480
Frears, Stephen 305
Freed, Arthur 268, 270, 271, 272
Freleng, Fritz 22
Frend, Charles 486
Freud, Sigmund 157, 192–3, 240, 243, 257, 404; on Oedipal complex 286–7, 314–15; on storytelling and fantasies 131; theory of libido drives 3–4, 176, 324, 343, 370; theory of subjectivity 218–22, 312–16, 321, 322
Frieden, S. 202
Friedkin, William 187–8, 211, 213
Fuller, Samuel 32, 33, 261, 263, 494–5, 504
Fuqua, Antoine 6, 120
Furuzan 472
Fusco, Coco 421

Gabin, Jean 171, 240
Gable, Clark 8, 359, 395, 489
Gabriel, Teshome 416, 419, 420, 421
Gaines, Jane 352
Gance, Abel 156, 484
Gandhi, Indira 67, 453
Garbo, Greta 376, 377, 378, 395
Gardin, Vladimir 362, 364
Gardner, Ava 376
Garland, Judy 73, 123, 270, 271, 272, 380, 395
Garnett, Tay 491
Garson, Greer 395
Gaulle, Charles de 35, 169, 386
Gazdar, Mushtaq 455
Genet, Jean 329
Genette, Gérard 283
Gerede, Canan 472
Gerima, Hailé 52, 433–4
Gershwin, George 269, 271, 276
Gershwin, Ira 269
Getino, Octavio 75, 414, 415, 419, 420, 461
Ghanian, Avanes 472
Ghatak, Ritwik 418, 425, 452, 453
Gibson, Hoot 500
Gibson, Mel 10, 11
Gidal, Peter 77
Giersz, Witold 22
Gilliat, Sidney 486
Ginsberg, Alan 480
Giritlioglu, Tomris 472
Giroud, Françoise 165
Gitai, Amos 469
Gledhill, C. 151–2, 188, 237, 238, 377, 380
Godard, Jean-Luc 94, 304, 342, 361, 495; art cinema 27; and auteurism 33; and *cinéma-vérité* 77; extra-diegetic devices 101, 105; and French New Wave 166, 168; jump cuts 95, 229–30; political cinema 40, 260–1; use of cinemascope 76
Goddard, Paulette 393
Goebbels, Josef 487
Gold, Jack 485
Gonzales, Felipe 464
Gopalan, Lalitha 67
Gören, Serif 471
Goretta, Claude 164
Gounejjar, Nour Eddine 442
Grable, Betty 393
Gramsci, Antonio 77, 78, 204, 296, 298, 347
Grant, Cary 3, 271, 359
Grant, Hugh 91
Greaves, William 50
Greenaway, Peter 265

Greenwald, Maggie 503
Grémillon, Jean 165, 170, 171, 487
Grier, Pam 54
Grierson, John 106, 107, 163, 357–8, 486
Griffith, D.W. 46, 48, 119, 352, 393, 398, 497
Grimm, Brothers 197
Grisby, Michael 164
Guérin, François 77
Guerra, Rui 74, 75
Guerrero, Ed 47, 57
Guest, Val 338
Guillerman, John 504–5
Guillotine, Dr 255
Gul, Agha 455, 456
Güney, Yilmaz 470–1
Guy, Alice 12

Habshi, Samir 465
Hafiz, Bahiga 435
Hake, Sabine 202
Haley, Bill 124
Halilu, Adamu 426
Hall, Stuart 294
Hamilton, Guy 492
Hammerstein, Oscar 269
Hammond, Joë 497
Hampton, Howard 290
Hanks, Tom 21
Hanson, Curtis 153
Hardwicke, Catherine 126
Harlow, Jean 395
Harper, S. 246
Harris, Julie 249
Harris, Leslie 58
Hart, John 19–20
Hart, Lorenz 269
Hart, William S. 393, 500
Hartley, Hal 224
Hartley, J. 346, 347
Haskell, Molly 135–6, 137, 139
Hathaway, Henry 507
Hawks, Howard 32, 33, 91, 173, 359, 394, 396, 491, 501, 507
Hawthorn, J. 283
Hayao, Miyazaki 23
Hayes, Isaac 53
Haynes, Todd 191, 224, 330
Hays, William H. 72–3, 203
Hayworth, Rita 89, 489
He Qun 446
Heath, Stephen 142, 408, 409–10
Hebdige, Dick 281
Henie, Sonja 393
Hepburn, Katherine 91, 246–7, 359, 381
Hepworth, Cecil 484
Hermosillo, Jaime Humberto 462
Herrmann, Bernard 265, 267
Herzog, Werner 200, 202
Heston, Charlton 342
Hetata, Alef 437
Higson, A. 14
Hill, George Roy 71, 189, 507
Hill, Jack 54
Hindemith, Paul 265
Hippler, Franz 487
Hitchcock, Alfred 32, 33, 264, 267, 330, 376, 396; classic narrative 83–4; flashbacks 155; foregrounding 161; melodrama in 240, 242, 245; metonymy 251, 252; Oedipal trajectory 142, 143; psychological horror 209, 212; psychological thrillers 476–7, 478; sexual identity in *Psycho* 129–30, 140, 222; use of intra-diegetic sound 102; voyeurism 481
Hitler, Adolf 490
Hodkinson, W.W. 393
Hogan, David 11
Holden, William 399
Holiday, Amanda 44
Holliday, Judy 399
Honda, Inoshiro 210
Honda, Ishiro 495
Hondo, Med 417, 429, 431
Honegger, Arthur 266
hooks, bell 49–50

Hooper, Tobe 207, 209
Hope, Bob 393, 489
Hopper, Dennis 86, 223, 278, 336
Hopper, Edward 304
Howard, Leslie 486
Howard, Ron 509
Hudlin, Reginald and Warrington 59
Hudson, Rock 242, 378
Hughes, Allen and Albert 58
Hughes, Howard 396, 502, 503
Hughes, Langston 43
Huillet, Daniéle 200, 201
Hunter, Holly 12
Huston, John 149, 279

Ichikawa, Kon 491
Ilhan, Biket 472
Inárritu, González 464
Ince, Thomas H. 389, 499, 500
Ipekçi, Hanan 472
Irani, Ardeshir 472
Irigaray, Luce 405
Irons, Jeremy 127–8
Irvin, John 496
Isao, Takahata 23
Issartel, Marielle 108
Ivens, Joris 77
Ivory, James 16, 93, 122

Jackson, Michael 380
Jackson, Peter 62
Jakobson, Roman 250
James, Henry 13
Jameson, Fredric 301, 306
Janni, Joseph 70
Jannings, Emil 193
Janowitz, Hans 197
Jarman, Derek 330
Jarmusch, Jim 224
Jaubert, Maurice 266
Jenkins, Patty 127
Jennings, Al 499
Jennings, Humphrey 106–7, 163, 164, 165, 486
Jeunet, Jean-Pierre 339–40
Jewison, Norman 50–1, 352
Jimbo, Matsue 23
Joan Chen 447
Joanou, Phil 290–1
Jobs, Steve 24
Johnson, George and Noble 47
Johnston, Claire 136–7, 137–8, 146, 177, 350, 375
Jolson, Al 359
Jones, Buck 500
Jones, Chuck 21, 22
Jones, Jacqui 56–7
Jones, Kent 10
Jonze, Spike 333
Jordan, Neil 182, 208, 305, 307
Joshri, Lalit M. 66
Julien, Isaac 43–4, 44, 330, 331
Julius, Marshall 5

Kabir, Nasreen M. 65–6, 68, 451, 453
Kaes, A. 200–1
Kajol 69
Kalin, Tom 330
Kalmus, Natalie 87, 88
Kan Shen 445
Kandinsky, Wassily 192
Kapadia, Asif 45
Kaplan, E. Ann 129, 143, 178, 178–9, 243, 246, 247, 326, 408
Kaplan, Jonathan 381
Kaplan, Kenneth 430
Kaplan, Nelly 27
Kapoor, Kareena 69
Kapoor, Karisma 69
Kapoor, Raj 66, 451
Kasdan, Lawrence 505
Kasper, Barbara 203
Kaul, Mani 418
Kazan, Elia 249, 285, 393, 399
Keaton, Buster 90, 359
Keesey, Douglas 291
Keighley, William 277
Kellogg, Ray 496
Kelly, Gene 271, 272, 274, 275, 303, 376

Kennedy, John F. 120, 249, 507
Kennedy, Robert 507
Kerensky, Alexander 368
Kerkorian, Kirk 396
Kermode, Mark 212
Kern, Jerome 269, 270, 277
Kerouac, Jack 480
Kerr, Deborah 3, 89
Khan, Mehboob 451
Khan, Sharukh 68–9, 454
Khatifa, Hanif 437–8
Khleifi, Michel 298, 467–8
Kiarostami, Abbas 474
Kidman, Nicole 12, 280
Kimai, Mas'ud 473
Kimmich, M.W. 487
King, Geoff 6, 7, 62–3
King, George 506
King, Henry 489
King, Martin Luther 50, 51, 507
Kinski, Klaus 200
Kitano, Takeshi 7
Klein, Melanie 131
Kliegl, brothers 231
Klimov, Elem 493
Klimt, Gustav 192
Kluge, Alexander 200, 201, 201–2
Knight, Julia 202, 203
Kohl, Helmut 199
Kopple, Barbara 108
Korda, Alexander 277, 488
Kosma, Joseph 172
Koster, Henry 19, 119
Kracauer, S. 193, 197
Krauss, Werner 193
Kristeva, Julia 89–90, 405
Kubrick, Stanley 120, 190, 338, 342, 481, 485, 492, 495, 496
Kuhn, Annette 108, 116, 117, 128, 134, 135, 136–7, 179, 183–4, 217, 350
Kuhn, Bruce 206–7
Kuleshov, Lev 111, 362, 364, 364–5, 365–6, 368
Kumar, Dilip 66, 451
Kureshi, Hanif 353
Kurosawa, Akira 495
Kushan, Esma'il 472

Lacan, Jacques 312, 313–14; concept of Imaginary/Symbolic 218–22, 404–5, 405–6; concept of subject 115, 117, 143, 321, 322–3; structuralism 35, 386; on subjectivity in language 180–1, 306–7, 316; theory of mirror stage 3–4, 176, 286, 316, 324, 343, 370
Ladd, Alan 506
Laemmle, Carl 397
Lakhdar-Hamina, Mohammed 439
Lam, Ringo 7
Lamarr, Hedy 393
Lamour, Dorothy 393
Lane, Charles 59
Lanfield, Sidney 279
Lang, Fritz 150, 151, 194, 196, 198, 337, 342, 504
Lapsley, R. 117, 144
Lassally, Walter 165
Laughton, Charles 8, 490
Launder, Frank 486
Lauste, Eugène 358
Lawrence, Florence 375
Le Corbusier 257
Le Fanu, Sheridan 208
Lean, David 119, 399, 486, 492
Lee Chang-Dong 7
Lee, Ang 15
Lee, Brandon 9
Lee, Bruce 7
Lee, Christopher 208
Lee, Spike 55, 56, 59, 60
Leigh, Janet 397
Leigh, Mike 286
Leigh, Vivien 376, 381
Lemmon, Jack 183
Leni, Paul 198
Lenica, Jan 22
Lenin, V.I. 362, 363
Leone, Sergio 266–7, 508

LeRoy, Melvyn 173, 491
Leslie, Alfred 480
Lévi-Strauss, Claude 34, 282, 283, 386
Lewis, H.G. 207
Lewton, Val 64, 209
Lincoln, Abraham 501
Linklater, Richard 125
Litvak, Anatole 489
Livingstone, Jennie 330
Lloyd, Frank 8
Lo Wei 7
Lollobrigida, Gina 376
Lord, Peter 24–5
Loren, Sophia 376
Losey, Joseph 485
Lourie, Eugene 210
Lubitsch, Ernst 198
Lucas, George 24, 61, 339
Luhrmann, Baz 12, 63, 264, 273–4, 279–80
Lumière brothers 12, 90, 105, 107, 425, 434, 448, 458, 467
Lund, Katia 463–4
Lurie, Susan 142
Luruli, Ntshaveni Wa 430
Lye, Len 25
Lynch, David 33, 191, 223
Lynd, Laurie 330
Lyne, Adrian 129, 290, 374, 381
Lyotard, Jean-François 402

McCambridge, Mercedes 504
McCarthy, Joseph R. 119, 206
McCay, Winsor 20
McCoy, Tim 500
MacDonald, Jeannette 269, 270
Macdonell, D. 104
McGregor, Ewan 12, 280
McLagen, Andrew 507
McNair, Brian 292
Magnani, Anna 228
Mahfouz, Naguib 436
Mahler, Gustav 264
Maingard, Jacqueline 419
Makhmalbaf, Mohsen 474, 475
Makhmalbaf, Samirah 474, 474–5, 475
Malick, Terrence 492–3
Malik, Yunus 456, 457
Malkovich, John 249, 333
Malle, Louis 169, 265
Malone, Dorothy 242
Mambéty, Djibril Diop 417, 422, 429, 431, 432, 433
Mamoulian, Rouben 276
Mankiewicz, Joseph 393
Mann, Anthony 505, 507
Mann, Delbert 398
Mann, Michael 6, 10, 62, 63, 63–4
Mansfield, Jayne 376
Manuell, R. 193, 194, 195, 197
Mao Zedong 443, 444, 445
Mao, Madame 445
Marcus, M. 13–14
Marcuse, Herbert 77, 78–9
Marglova, Jana 22
Marinetti, Filippo Tommasso 172
Marker, Chris 77
Martal, Lucrecia 463
Marx brothers 90, 359, 393
Marx, Karl 77–9, 215, 365
Mashrawi, Rachid 468
Mason, James 271
Masri, May 467
Maybury, John 333
Mayer, Carl 197
Mayer, Louis B. 268
Maynard, Ken 500
Mazzetti, Lorenza 162–3
Medovoi, Leerom 54, 58
Medvedkin, Alexander 107
Meerson, Lazare 29
Mehrju'i, Dariush 473
Meirelles, Fernando 463–4
Méliès, Georges 20, 86, 337
Mellen, Joan 136, 137
Mendes, Sam 191
Menzies, William 337
Merchant, Ismail 93, 122

Messmer, Otto 20
Metha, Deepa 416, 454
Metz, Christian 188, 324, 325, 386; semiotics 35–6, 387–8, 412; theory of the spectator 3, 26, 176–7, 343, 369–70, 371, 372
Micheaux, Oscar 47, 48–9, 58
Milestone, Lewis 397, 479, 484, 490, 492
Milhaud, Darius 266
Miller, Glenn 271
Mineo, Sal 131
Minghella, Anthony 333
Minnelli, Vincente 241, 272, 275, 276
Mir, Raza 456
Miranda, Carmen 393
Mishra, Vijay 68
Mix, Tom 500
Modleski, T. 134, 141–2, 243, 344, 373
Moffatt, Tracey 121
Moi, Toril 316–17
Mongia, Padmini 293, 294
Monk, C. 14
Monroe, Marilyn 3, 73, 91, 190, 346–7, 375, 384, 393, 482
Morin, Edgar 107
Morricone, Ennio 266, 267
Morrison, Toni 13
Mozzhukhin, Ivan (Mosjoukine) 365
Mudimbe, V.Y. 294
Mulcahy, Russell 11
Mulvey, Laura 136–7, 137–8; on melodrama 28, 140–1, 237, 238–9; on screen-spectator dynamic 3, 138–9, 177, 178, 325, 343, 370, 372–3
Munch, Edvard 192
Muni, Paul 394
Münsterberg, Hugo 411
Murdoch, Rupert 393
Murnau, F.W. 196, 198, 208
Murphy, Eddie 55, 352
Musidora, 207–8
Mussolini, Benito 226
Myles, Linda 137–8

Nair, Mira 45–6, 60, 68, 454
Narboni, J. 218
Nargis 66, 451
Nasser, Gamal Abdel 436
Nazir 455
Neale, Steve 88–9, 89, 183, 185, 185–6, 189–90, 207
Nehru, Jawaharlal 453
Newman, Paul 71, 378
Ngakane, Lionel 41–2
Nicholson, Jack 128, 383
Nicholson, L. 310
Nilsson, Leopoldo Torre 419, 459
Ning Dai 446
Nispel, Marcus 213
Nixon, Richard 262
Nkrumah, Kwame 430
Noiret, Philippe 167
Notcutt, L.A. 429
Noury, Hakim 442
Nowell-Smith, Geoffrey 28, 237, 243
Nyman, Michael 265

Oberon, Merle 232
Ogundipe 431
Olivier, Lawrence 488
Olmi, Emmanuel 229
O'Neal, Ron 54
Onwurah, Ngozi 44
Ophuls, Marcel 108
Ophuls, Max 150, 241, 244
Orr, John 258, 305
O'Russell, Davod 497
Osborne, John 69, 162, 165
Ottinger, Ulrike 203, 329
Oudart, Jean-Pierre 404, 407, 408
Ouedraogo, Idrissa 417, 433
Ové, Horavem 41–2
Özgentürk, Isil 472

Pabst, Georg 198, 484
Pagnol, Marcel 15

Pakula, Alan 385–6
Palke, Dhundiraj Govind 448
Panahi, Jafar 474, 475
Pancholi, Dalsukh 455
Panijel, Jacques 77
Paretsky, Sara 176
Paretti, Giancarlo 396
Park Chan-Wook 7
Park, Nick 24–5
Parks, Gordon (Snr) 51–2
Parks, Gordon (Jnr) 51–2
Parmar, Pratibha 329, 331
Pasha, Anwar Kamal 455
Patwardhan, Anand 418
Payami, Babak 473
Peck, Gregory 393, 506, 507
Peckinpah, Sam 495, 505
Peerce, Larry 50
Peirce, C.S. 344
Peirce, Kimberly 333
Penn, Arthur 395, 495, 505, 507
Perincioli, Cristina 203
Perkins, Anthony 376
Peron, Juan 414
Perry, Frank 328
Persia, Shah of 472
Petersen, Wolfgang 6, 120, 383
Philipe, Gérard 166
Phoenix, River 73, 382
Picasso, Pablo 256
Pickford, Mary 366, 375, 379, 393, 398, 484
Pietrangeli, Antonio 226
Pincher, David 129
Pines, J. 420
Pitt, Brad 190
Place, Janey 151, 152
Poitier, Sydney 50–1, 53, 352, 505
Polanski, Roman 93, 187–8, 211, 477, 478
Polidori, Dr 207
Pollack, Sydney 183
Pollard, Bud 48
Pollock, Jackson 256
Pommer, Erich 195, 198
Pontecorvo, Gillo 419, 439
Porter, Cole 269, 271
Porter, Edwin S. 114, 497
Post, Ted 339
Potter, Dennis 305
Potter, Sally 94
Powell, Michael 161, 209, 253, 267, 372, 477, 481
Power, Tyrone 393
Preminger, Otto 150, 267, 276, 328–9
Presley, Elvis 124, 272
Prévert, Jacques 172
Propp, Vladimir 188–9, 283
Proust, Marcel 461
Proyas, Alex 9
Pudovkin, Vsevolod 365, 366, 367
Puri, Om 453

Qaiser, Khahil 456
Quay brothers 25

Raheb, Eliane 466
Rai, Aishwarya 69
Rajadhyaksha, Ashish 452
Raksin, David 267
Rappeneau, Jean-Paul 122
Rapper, Irving 143, 242
Rathman, Mani 453–4
Ray, Aldo 304
Ray, Nicholas 3, 123, 130–1, 241, 332, 380, 401, 502, 504, 506
Ray, Satyajit 66, 229, 418, 425, 452
Reagan, Ronald 339
Reckford, Lloyd 41–2
Redford, Robert 71
Reed, Carol 358
Refig, Halit 471
Reichenbach, François 77
Reiman, Walter 197
Reiner, Carl 481–2
Reinhardt, Max 193
Reisz, Karel 69, 70, 162–3, 163–5, 253
Reitman, Ivan 328

Reitz, Edgar 200
René, Norman 72
Renoir, Jean 162, 165, 358; auteurism 33; films about war 484, 489–90; poetic realism 149, 170–1; socio-realism 335; use of deep focus 98–9; and Visconti 227
Resnais, Alain 28, 105, 107, 166, 167, 224; editing techniques 111, 113, 229, 305; metanarratives 249
Riad, Mohamed Slim 439
Rich, B. Ruby 330, 504
Rich, Matty 58
Richard, Cliff 272
Richards, Dick 153
Richardson, Tony 69, 70, 70–1, 162–3, 164–5
Riefenstahl, Leni 487
Rigosin, Lionel 4 480
Rivette, Jacques 166
Robbe-Grillet, Alain 305
Roberts, Julia 91
Roberts, Rachel 69–70
Robertson, John 210
Robeson, Paul 277
Robinson, Bill 'Bojangles' 22
Robinson, Edward G. 150, 376, 394–5
Robson, Mark 209
Rocha, Glauber 74, 419, 460
Rocket, Veronica 290
Rodgers, Richard 269
Rodgers, Will 393
Roeg, Nicholas 338
Rogers, Ginger 268–9, 270, 376, 396
Rogers, Roy 400, 459, 498, 500, 502
Rohmer, Eric 166
Röhrig, Walter 197
Romero, George 210, 211
Rooks, Pamela 453
Rooney, Mickey 123, 270, 395
Roosevelt, Franklin D. 36, 174, 218, 488, 489
Rosen, Marjorie 136, 137
Ross, Karen 41, 49
Rossellini, Roberto 226, 228
Rota, Nino 266
Rothman, G. 408, 409
Rouch, Jean 75–6, 107, 121, 335
Rowntree, Richard 54
Roy, Bhimal 451
Rozema, Patricia 331
Ruiz, Raúl 461
Ruspoli, Mario 77
Russell, Jane 381, 393, 503
Russell, Ken 107
Russell, Rosalind 381
Russell, Theresa 482

Saab, Joceline 466
Sabita 457
Sadat, Anwa 437
Sade, Marquis de 255
Said, Edward 293, 294, 295
Saif, Saifudin 456
Saint-Saëns, Camille 265, 411
Salah, Tewfik 436
Salhab, Ghasan 466
Salles, Walter 462, 463
Salt, B. 408
Sander, Helke 202–3, 203
Sanders-Brahms, Helma 202–3
Sangeeta, 456–7, 457
Sarkar, Kobita 425
Sarris, Andrew 34, 36, 135
Sathyu, M.S. 453
Saussure, Ferdinand de 34, 100, 344–5, 346, 386
Sayed, Daoud Abdel 437
Sayles, John 224
Schaffner, Franklin 129, 338–9
Schary, Dore 491
Schenk, Joseph M. 392
Schiele, Egon 192
Schiller, Friedrich 197
Schlesinger, John 70
Schlöndorff, Volker 200, 201
Schmitz, Oliver 430
Schneeman, Carolee 260
Schoedask, Ernest B. 20, 396

Schoenberg, Arnold 265
Schrader, Paul 223, 290
Schwarzenegger, Arnold 8–9, 10, 328
Schygulla, Hanna 200
Scorsese, Martin 71, 72, 81, 93, 103, 190, 223, 224, 495, 496
Scott, Emmett J. 47, 48
Scott, Ridley 72, 120, 211, 336, 339, 342
Scott, Tony 208
Sears, Fred 124
Seberg, Jean 230
Seidleman, Susan 92
Sekigawa, Heideo 495
Selznick, David O. 396
Sembene, Ousmane 417, 422, 428, 429, 433
Sen, Hiralal 449
Sen, Mrinal 66, 418, 453
Senghor, Léopold Sédar 295
Sennett, Mack 90, 393
Sestier, Maurice 448
Shabazz, Menelik 42
Shafik, Viola 442
Shakespeare, William 12
Sharma, Anil 454
Shearer, Moira 395
Shelley, Mary 129, 207
Shindo, Kaneto 495
Shiva 457
Shohat, Ella 419, 424, 425, 462, 467, 468, 469
Shore, Howard 266, 267
Shu Lea Cheang 331
Shub, Esfir 364, 367
Sica, Vittorio de 165, 226, 228
Siegel, Don 124
Siffredi, Rocco 291
Signoret, Simone 378
Silberman, Marc 195, 196, 373, 408, 409
Sillitoe, Alan 70
Sinatra, Frank 272
Sinatra, Nancy 125
Singleton, John 58, 60, 215
Siodmark, Richard 150
Sippy, Ramesh 67, 453
Sirk, Douglas 150, 239, 241, 242
Smith, Jack 479
Smith, Kevin 224
Snipes, Wesley 11
Soderbergh, Steven 224
Solanas, Fernando 75, 413, 415, 419, 420, 461
Solás, Humberto 419
Sonnenfeld, Barry 505
Sorlin, E. 82
Soutine, Chaïm 192
Spence, L. 49
Spheeris, Penelope 125
Spielberg, Steven 13, 61, 103, 112, 352, 398, 492–3; *Jurassic Park* 24, 131–2, 185; science fiction films 338, 340, 341
Spivak, Gayatri 294, 296
Sproxton, David 24–5
Srour, Heiny 465, 466
Stack, Robert 242
Stahl, John 240
Stalin, Josef 362, 363, 366, 368, 490
Stallone, Sylvester 10, 384, 496
Stam, Robert 74, 419, 424, 425, 462, 467, 469
Stanislavsky, Konstantin 249
Stanwyck, Barbara 393, 395, 504
Starrett, Jack 54
Steiger, Rod 249, 508
Sternberg, Josef von 150, 482
Stevens, George 506
Stevenson, Robert 277
Stewart, James 384, 397, 489, 505
Stoker, Bram 208
Stokowski, Leopold 270
Stollery, Martin 441
Stone, Oliver 120, 496
Storey, David 70
Straub, Jean-Marie 200, 201
Streep, Meryl 127–8, 379, 383
Street, Sarah 29
Streisand, Barbara 273, 379, 383

Stroheim, Erich von 393
Strong, J. 14–15, 16–17
Studlar, G. 344, 373
Sturges, John 507
Sucksdorff, Arne 165
Suleiman, Elia 468
Suleman, Ramedan 430–1
Surjik, Stephen 125
Svankmajer, Jan 25
Swanson, Gloria 393
Swaranlata 455
Syberg, Hans Jürgen 200

Tamahori, Lee 7
Tan Xinpei 443
Tanner, Alain 164
Taranatino, Quentin 175, 224, 303–4
Tarkovsky, Andrei 338
Tarr, Belá 225
Taurog, Norman 124
Taylor, Clyde 46
Taylor, Elizabeth 120, 379–80
Tazi, Mohamed 442
Temple, Shirley 393
Thalberg, Irving 395, 397
Thompson, Emma 12, 15
Thompson, J. Lee 339
Thompson, K. 92, 233
Thorpe, Richard 124
Tlati, Moufida 298, 353, 441, 442
Tobi, Abdelaziz 439
Toland, Gregg 99, 111, 459
Toulouse-Lautrec, Henri 280
Touraine, Alain 79
Tourneur, Jacques 209, 304
Tracey, Spencer 91, 395
Trauner, Alexander 29, 172
Travolta, John 273, 274
Trier, Lars von 274, 280–1
Trinh Thi, Coralie 291, 353
Trnka, Jiri 22
Troche, Rose 330
Trotsky, Leon 368
Trotta, Margarethe von 33, 202–3, 261
Truffaut, François 32, 33, 97, 166, 233, 253, 319
Tsaki, Ibrahim 440
Turim, Maureen 117, 118, 154, 158–9
Turner, Kathleen 482
Tushingham, Rita 69–70
Tykwer, Tom 62

Uciciky, Gustav 485
Ukadike, N.F. 426, 434
Ustaoglu, Yesim 472

Vadim, Roger 166
Valentino, Rudolph 397
Van Dyke, Woody 269, 395
Van Gogh, Vincent 192
Van Peebles, Mario 11, 51–2, 52–3, 56–7, 60, 215, 505
Van Sant, Gus 126–7, 224, 224–5, 330, 382
VanDerBeek, Stan 479
Varda, Agnés 27, 33, 40, 94, 107, 166, 167, 261
Vas, Robert 164
Vautier, René 439
Veidt, Conrad 193, 197, 490
Verhoeven, Paul 290–1, 331
Verne, Jules 336, 337
Vertov, Dziga 75, 107, 121, 362, 364, 365, 367
Vidor, Charles 151
Vidor, King 240, 276, 328
Vieyra, Paulin Soumano 428
Vigo, Jean 33, 165
Visconti, Luchino 226, 227, 228
Voigt, Jon 496

Wachowski, Andy 331, 340–1
Wachowski, Larry 340–1
Wachsman, Daniel 469
Walker, Alice 13
Walkhévitch, Georges 29
Waller, Fats 22
Walsh, Raoul 3, 394

Wang Xiaoshuai 446, 447
Wang, Wayne 45–6
Warhol, Andy 110, 260, 329, 479, 480
Warm, Hermann 197
Washington, Denzel 11, 352
Watkins, Peter 495
Watt, Harry 486
Wayans, Keenan Ivory 55
Wayne, John 3, 383, 400, 488, 491, 495–6; Westerns 86, 111, 235, 459, 501, 501–2, 502, 506, 507
Weaver, Sigourney 11
Wegener, Paul 194, 197
Weir, Peter 485
Welland, William 491
Welles, Orson 3, 81, 98, 99, 156, 250, 396, 459
Wellman, William A. 173, 484, 491, 502–3
Wells, H.G. 336
Welsh, Irvine 16
Wenders, Wim 33, 86, 200, 336, 495
Wendkos, Paul 125
West, Mae 3, 393, 504
West, Simon 11
Westlake, M. 117, 144
Whale, James 207, 277, 333, 397
Wharton, Edith 13, 93
Wicki, Bernhard 492
Wiene, Robert 97, 197, 208
Wilder, Billy 91, 150, 155, 159–60, 183, 328
Willemen, P. 420–1
Williams, Alan 186
Williams, Linda 142, 178
Williams, Raymond 308
Williams, Robbie 331
Williams, Spencer D. 48
Williamson, Fred 53
Willis, Bruce 10
Winterbottom, Michael 333
Wise, Robert 273
Witney, William 124
Wollen, Peter 39
Wong Kar-War 333
Woo, John 7, 8
Wood, Natalie 131
Wood, Robin 186–7, 213
Woolf, Virginia 256
Wright, W. 188–9
Wyler, William 400, 489

Xavier, Ismail 75

Yamamoto, Kajiro 488
Yasar, Seçkin 472
Yeaworth, Irwin S. (Jr) 210
Young, Lola 42

Zanuck, Darryl F. 392–3, 394
Zecca, Ferdinand 153–4
Zellweger, Renée 91
Zemeckis, Robert 20
Zemmouri, Mahmoud 440
Zhang Yimou 7, 446
Zhang Yuan 333, 446
Zia-ul-Haq, General Mohammed 456
Zinneman, Fred 102, 249, 398, 492, 493, 506
Zola, Emile 357
Zukor, Adolph 390
Zwick, Edward 497
Zwigoff, Terry 125

# SUBJECT INDEX


A-movies 64, 502
Aardman Animation group 24–5
ABC 164
absence/presence 3–5, 334, 371, 377, 381–2, 406
abstract expressionism 308
Accra: Ghanian Film school 429, 430
action movies 5–11; blockbusters 61, 62–3; Hindi 67
Actors Studio 249
adaptation 12–17; female fiction 243–4
aesthetics: art cinema 26–7; early film theory 411; and postmodernism 307; realism 334–5
Africa: debates on postcolonialism 294; film industry 415
African cinema 46, 416, 417, 426; Anglophone 428, 429–31; Francophone 77, 427, 428, 429; North African 353, 426, 434–42; political film-makers 417–18; Sub-Saharan 426, 427–34
Afrocult Foundation Limited 431
agency 17, 30, 40, 413; in Freud's theory of the subject 314; and melodrama 245; and scopophilia 343; thrillers 477; and women in films 94, 343, 481
agit-trains 362, 363
AIDS 208, 330
Algeria: crisis and liberation struggle 262, 386, 438, 439–40; decolonization 169, 438; Fanon's writings on 293; film industry 417, 438–40
alienation 366
Allied Artists Picture Corporation 400
ambiguity 17–18; and classical narrative cinema 84; in colour 89; in film noir 150; in gangster movies 175–6
American dream 173–4
American International Pictures 124
anamorphic lens 18–19, 509–10
angry young men films 70
Animal Logic 280
animation 19–25, 61
anthropology *see* ethnographic film/gaze
apparatus 25–6, 116, 258; and deconstruction 97–8; and fantasy 131; feminist theory on female spectatorship 139; and genre 189; and German expressionism 196; and ideology 183, 216–17, 310; and motivation of New German Cinema 200; in musicals 277; relation with spectator 79, 312, 369–70, 403; and subjectivity 310
Arab States, Eastern: film industry 465–6
ARC (Association of Revolutionary Cinematography) 364
architecture: modernist 257
Argentina: film industry 415; national cultures 458

Argentinian cinema 459, 460–1, 463; revolutionary avant-garde 419; Third Cinema manifesto 75, 414–15, 460–1
art: cinema as 411; Enlightenment 255; German expressionist movement 192, 197; postmodernist 308; Soviet constructivists 362
art cinema 26–8, 86; ambiguity in 18; and classical narrative cinema 84; and counter-cinema 93; editing 109; European 122; France 170; montage cuts 96; Satyajit Ray 452; subjectivity and enunciation 116
art direction 28–9
Asia 415, 416; queer cinema 333
Asian-American cinema 45–6, 60
aspect ratio 19, 29–30
asynchronization/asynchronous sound 18, 30
audience 30–1, 35–6, 374; for adaptations 14; in Antoine's theory of naturalism 285; and aspect ratio 29; and cinemascope 76; consumption of Bollywood musicals 66; diegetic 101–2, 131; distanciation 105; feminist theory 145; gangster films 215; and genres 185; and indigenous film industry 122; influence of Hollywood 205; and intertextuality 226; melodrama 128, 237; and modernism 259; response to Astaire–Rogers musicals 268; and science fiction 337; and stars 375, 378–9, 382–3; threats to 119, 392; thrillers 476; Westerns 214–15, 499; *see also* spectator
Australia: second-wave feminism 134
auteurism/auteur theory 27, 28–9, 31–8, 38, 166, 312, 411, 412, 422, 423; and Black male roles 352–3; discourses 104; and feminist film theory 135; and genre debate 185, 188, 189; and post-structuralism 388–9; and role of director 103; and semiotics 345; Soviet Union 364; Third Cinema 422
Authors' Film Publishers (Germany) 201
*Autorenfilm* 31, 196, 199
avant-garde 27, 32, 38–40; American 39, 260; Argentinian revolutionary cinema 419; and Black African-American cinema 59; and classical narrative cinema 84; counter-cinema 93; Deren's ethnographic film 121; distanciation in 105; editing techniques 109, 480; as genre 186; Indian counter-cinema 452; and modernism 256, 258–9; montage 96, 107; and psychoanalysis/subjectivity 311–12; subjectivity and enunciation 116, 118, 221; Vertov's documentaries 107

B-movies 16, 64, 303, 391–2, 494; film noir 149, 396; Westerns 400–1, 501–2
Babelsberg 200
backstage musicals 174, 394
Bandung Conference 419
Bantu Film Projects 429
BBC (British Broadcasting Corporation) 12
Beat generation 479
Beaver Films 70
Beijing Film Academy 445–6
Berlin 193, 194
Berlin Golden Bear 446
Berlin Wall 199–200
Beur film-makers 170
Bioskop 195
Birmingham: conference on Third Cinema 420, 421
BJP (Bahratiya Janata Party), India 67, 453, 454
Black Africans: film-makers 432; in underground documentaries 480; Western representations 428, 431
Black Audio Film Collective 41, 422

Black cinema 27
Black cinema (UK) 40–5, 45, 419–20, 420
Black cinema (USA) 420; Blaxploitation movies 11, 52, 52–5, 55, 123, 191, 278, 504–5; countering of myths 353; early days 47–51; gangster movies 215; independent film-makers 225; movies of 1970s 51–2; musicals 276–7, 278; new aesthetic/post-Blaxploitation 55–8; speaking subject of 59–60; Westerns 504–5
Black consciousness movement, USA 294, 350
Black film-makers 170, 309; queer cinema 332
Black Power Movement 55, 57, 216
Black sexuality 351
Blau Reiter 192
Blaxploitation movies *see* under Black cinema (USA)
blockbusters 60–4, 508; Bollywood 67; war films 492
(the) body: fetishism 481, 482; in German expressionist films 196
body horror films 209, 209–11
Boer war 487
Bolivia 460
Bollywood 64–9, 415, 448, 450, 452, 454
Bombay musicals/talkies 449–50
Bond movies 6, 7
Bourekas genre, Israel 469
Brazil: cinema nôvo 73–5, 419, 460; film industry 415, 463, 463–4; national cultures 458–9
bricolage: postmodern aesthetic 302, 304–5
Britain: auteurism 36; Black cinema 40–5, 419–20, 420; censorship 72; colour movies 86–7; comedy 164; documentaries on war 485–6; feminist film theory 136–7, 143–4; film industry 70–1; Gainsborough costume melodramas 247–8; Grierson documentaries 106–7; Hammer Horror films 207; heritage films 122; historical reconstructions as propaganda 487–8; musicals 272; science fiction films 338; Second World War films 488–9, 491, 492; theory of the gaze 176; US share of film market in 122; *see also* Free British Cinema
British Film Institute (BFI): archival collection 22; and Black film-making 41, 42; Colonial Office 429; Experimental Film Fund 164
British Lion 70, 71, 165
British New Wave 16, 16–17, 69–71, 165, 200, 225, 228, 335, 358
Broadway musicals 268, 269
Brücke group 192
Bryanston Films 70, 165
buddy films 71–2, 332
Burkina Faso 428

*Cahiers du cinéma*: on auteurism 32–3, 36, 253, 345; on cinemascope 75–6; and French New Wave 165, 166; Young Mr Lincoln debate 36–7, 218
*Camera Obscura* 139
cameraman 76
Cameroon 428
Cannes Film Festival 43, 433, 440, 446, 459
capitalism: critique in *Citizen Kane* 156; and film genres 187; and multinational corporations 308
cartoons 19, 87
censorship 72–3, 90, 204, 392; abolition of in Berlin 194; gangster movies 175; Iran 473–4; lifting of in France 123; lifting of in West 289–90, 507; and melodrama 128, 242; Pakistan 457; Turkey 470–1; United States 72, 479; war films 484; and Westerns 503; *see also* Hays code

Central Organisation of Egyptian Cinema 436
Centre Algérien pour l'Art et l'Industrie Cinématographiques (CAAIC) 438
Centre Cinématographique (CMM) 441–2
Channel Four 41
*chiaroscuro* 193, 196, 232
China: film industry 415, 442–7; Third World Cinema 419
Cinecittá studios 226
cinema nôvo 73–5, 225, 331, 415, 419, 460, 461
cinéma-vérité 76–7, 107, 121, 168, 335, 358, 367, 480
Cinemascope 19, 29, 75–6, 392, 393, 509; and blockbusters 61, 258; colour in 75, 76, 88, 119; and Westerns 190, 505
cinematographer 76, 311
Civil Rights Movement 46, 51, 57, 506
civil unrest: context of American horror movies 210; UK riots of early 1980s 41; Watts riots (Los Angeles, 1965) 51, 58
class 77–81, 135, 486; and feminism 141; and gangster movies 191; and gender relations 180, 181; and hegemony 204; issues in Third Cinema 416; in Italian film after fall of fascism 227; Marxian definition 77–9; and melodrama 236–7; and modernism 258; naturalizing 286; and nineteenth-century vampirism 212; and psychoanalysis 326; in social realism 357, 394; spectator positioning 326; and stars 380; stereotypes 385; and viewer-reception studies 374; and war films 492
classic canons 85–6
classic literary adaptations 13, 15, 16
classical narrative cinema 82–5, 128; agency 17; art cinema's rupture with 28; asynchronization 30; and Black cinema of 1980s 56; closure in 217; denotation/connotation 100–1; editing in 112, 116; feminist theory on female spectatorship 139; and film noir 151; flashbacks and enunciation 118; Hollywood 82–5, 110, 284; lighting 233; and modernist cinema 259; myth in 282; Oedipal trajectory 315; sexuality 351; and spectator 372–3; subject/object 401; and suture 407, 409
close-up (CU) 355
codes and conventions 85–6, 97; action movies 9; and ambiguity 17, 18; and art cinema 28; and avant-garde 40; and colour 89; and counter-cinema 93; in dominant/mainstream cinema 109; feminist theory on female spectatorship 139, 343–4; flashbacks 154–5; French poetic realism 149; genres 186, 187, 264, 310; impact of auteur theory 34; melodrama 239–43; musicals 278; referred to by narrative 282; road movies 335–6; role of mainstream and oppositional postmodernism 302; ruptured by French New Wave 167–8; and scopophilia 343; sexuality in Hollywood films 350; shots 357; and spectator 372; stereotypes 385; and subjectivity 402; Third Cinema 416
Cold War 157, 206, 241, 423, 491; and film noir 149; films about 494–5, 506; ideology of epics 119; and paranoid science fiction films 338; and 'unnatural' horror movies 209–10
collectives/workshops 108; Black film-makers 41; feminist film-makers 137; Third Cinema 422; underground cinema 479–80; Young German Cinema 200–1

Colonial Film Units 425, 429–30
colonialism: addressed in Third Cinema 416, 431–2, 433; and African cinemas 427, 428, 438; and early film-making 425; Fanon's writings on 293, 294; issues in Black cinema 52; issues in Herzog's films 202; perspective on the Black male 352; Said's writing on 295
colour 86–90; blockbusters 61; in British cinema 70; and cinemascope 75, 76, 88, 119; Disney animations 20; in dominant/mainstream cinema 109; and fetishism 481; and gender difference 183; historical films 205; history of 86–8; and lighting 231–2; musicals 272; and realism 334; theory 88–90; in Westerns 503
Columbia 224, 390, 391, 399–400
Comédie Française 27
comedy 90–2; British films in 1950s 164; and class 79; cross-dressing 184; early French 375; effect of sound 359; female Oedipal trajectory 288
communism: America's fear of 206, 337, 385, 473, 506; China 443; Hollywood movies against 494
compilation shots 96
Computer Graphic Imaging (CGI) 190
computer-aided graphics: in animation 23–4; in blockbusters 62; in postmodern cinema 305
connotation *see* denotation/connotation
consumption: and genre 185; and stars 380; technology for 424
continuity editing 92, 110, 409, 480; asynchronization 30; classical narrative cinema 84, 109, 116; continuity cuts 95; eyeline matching 127
costume: and art direction 28, 29; in British wartime melodramas 248
costume dramas 87, 92–3; in pre-war Germany 195
counter-cinema/oppositional cinema 86, 93–4, 110, 259; and avant-garde 38; and deconstruction 97; distanciation in 105; extra-diegetic sounds 101; feminist theory 89, 137–8; foregrounding 160; French New Wave 167, 169; Indian 452; Latin American 460; lesbian filmmakers 331; subjectivity and enunciation 116, 118; Third Cinema 414
crime thrillers 61, 383
critical studies/theory: literary adaptations 13–14; modernism 258
cross-cutting 94, 96, 113; classical narrative cinema 84–5; editing 109, 110–11; and structuralism 387
cross-dressing 183–4, 332, 504
Crown Film Unit 486
Cuba: film industry 416, 434; political cinema 419
Cuban Institute of Cinematographic Art and Industry 416, 460, 461
cultural aesthetics: Marxian theory 79; and postmodernism 308–9
cultural nationalism: hip-hop-rap films 56
cultural practices: and gender ideology 181–2
cultural studies 34, 143–4, 144, 148, 350
cut 95–7, 105, 129; eyeline matching 127; marking closing of sequence 348
cutaways 96–7
cyborg movies 129
Czech School of animation 22

dance: musicals 273, 277–8, 280
day for night 97, 233
Decla-Bioskop 195, 197–8
deconstruction 37, 97–8, 388, 413; extra-diegetic sounds 101; and

feminist film theory 138, 326; and flashback 156; in French New Wave films 168, 361; Fuller's editing style 495; of gender ideology 182; and mise-en-abîme 252; in modernist cinema 259; and psychoanalysis 326; Vertov's documentaries 107; of Western genre 508
deep focus/depth of field 18, 98–100, 109; Bond movies 6; cinemascope 75–6; editing 111; and montage 112–13; and realism 335, 356
DEFA (East German film industry) 200
denotation/connotation 100–1; feminist film theory 138; myth 282; in semiological system 346
Depression (early 1930s) 64, 173, 270, 391, 394, 397
Desilu 392
desire: absence/presence 5; cinema as embodiment of 325; and fantasy 130–1; female 138; in French avant-garde cinema 259
detective thrillers 176, 476
diasporic cinema 45–6, 421; and Black African-American cinema 45; Black cinema in UK 40, 44; Latin American exiles 461; Palestinian Arabs 467
diegesis/diegetic continuity 101–2; and ambiguity 18; audience 101–2, 131; avant-garde films 39; character subjectivity 117; and cross-dressing 184; distanciation 105; and emblematic shot 113; film noir 151, 152; French poetic realism 171; and the gaze 177; and jump cut 229; and motivation 263; and narrative 283; and naturalism 285; and psychoanalytic concepts 221; and sound 360; and stars 382–3; voyeurism 477; in Westerns 504
digital technology/effects 9, 24, 108, 190; impact on blockbusters 61, 62
direct cinema (USA) 107
director 102–3, 390–1
director of photography 76
discourse 103–4; absence/presence 3; and avant-garde 38; colour 88; and deconstruction 97; denotation and connotation 346; and enunciation 114–15, 117; feminist film theory 139; film noir 151–2; forming generic structures 185; French New Wave film-makers 167; gangster genre 173; of ideology 215; metalanguage 248; post-structuralism 37, 388; and power relations 144; and psychoanalysis 241; and realism 334–5; Third World Cinemas 424
Disney Productions 20–1, 23
dissolve/lap-dissolve 104–5, 113, 154
distanciation 39, 105, 167, 366
documentary 105–8, 282; Algerian 439; and avant-garde 38; Black cinema in UK 41, 43; cinema nôvo 73; cinéma-vérité 76–7; Cuban 416; early documentaries in UK 86–7; ethnographic films 121; Free Cinema 162–3, 163–4, 164–5; genre of 186; Grierson group in Britain 106–7, 485–6; Ray's *Rebel Without a Cause* 130–1; Renoir's *Toni* 227; social realism 357–8; Soviet films 362, 363, 367, 488; style of Free British Cinema 69–70; Young German Cinema 201
Documentary Film School of Santa Fe, Argentina 460
Dogme manifesto 280–1
dollying shot 478
dominant/mainstream cinema 27, 108–9, 116, 129; and cinema nôvo 74; and classical narrative cinema 82; and counter-cinema 94; discourse 103, 117; and emblematic

shots 114; and feminist theory 89, 135, 137; the gaze in 177; genres adopted by queer cinema 330; mediation of hegemony 204; myth in 282; production of ideology 216–17, 370; racial difference and sexuality 351; and underground cinema 479
DreamWorks 21, 24, 25
Dreamz Unlimited 68–9
Dziga-Vertov group. 77

Ealing comedies 91
East Germany 199–200
Eastern European Schools of Animation 22
Eastern Trust 205
Eastman-Kodak 87–8
Éclair 389
Edinburgh: conference on Third Cinema 420; Film Festival 137
editing 109–10, 411; adaptations 14; avant-garde theories 38; chronological 110; classical narrative cinema 84, 84–5, 408; cut 95–7; deep focus 6; distanciation 105; dominant/mainstream cinema 109; early colour films 86; French New Wave films 168; in Golden Age of Indian cinema 451; and Hollywood studio system 389; later German expressionist films 196; modernist principles 259; montage 112; and realism 334; Soviet montage 109, 111–12; style of Antoine's films 285; suture 408, 409; Varda 167; *see also* continuity editing; cross-cutting; parallel editing
Egypt: film industry 415, 434, 434–8
ellipsis 113
emblematic shot 113
Empire Marketing Board 106
Enlightenment 254–5, 258, 295
enunciation 103, 114–15, 320, 406, 413; auteur theory 37–8; in classical narrative cinema 83; fantasy films 129; and genres 190; and narrative 283; and post-structuralist theory 389; postcolonial subject 297; relevance to film theory/cinematic address 116–18
epics 118–20, 187; action spectaculars 7; blockbusters 61; and cinemascope 76; colour in 88; excess 128; Westerns 500–1
eroticism: art cinema 27; Busby Berkeley movies 270; in colour film 89–90; in women's films 244
Essanay studios 400, 499–500
ethnographic film/gaze 120–1; colonial practices in Africa 428
Eurocentricism 296, 298, 424; ethnographic film 121; and Orientalism 295
European cinema 121–3, 422; arthouse 224; avant-garde 259; comedy 91; documentaries 107; heritage of adaptations 13; independent 225; pornograp[hic films 290; sexploitation movies 123; war films 483
excess 127–9; in action movies 9; and film stars 120, 378, 380; in melodrama 238; queer cinema 330; and sexuality 351
exploitation movies 123–7
extreme close-up (ECU) 355
extreme long shot (ELS) 356
eyeline matching 84, 96, 127, 407

fade 113, 128–9, 154, 438–9
Famous Players-Lasky Corporation 390
fantastic films: in pre-war Germany 194–5, 197
fantasy/fantasy films 129–32, 387, 403, 404; colour 88; and desire 130–1, 138; in female melodramas

239, 244; feminist film theory 138; in horror 397; and pornography 292; and psychoanalysis 312; and science fiction 336, 337; and the spectator 374; underground cinema 479; women in erotic thrillers 291
Farabi Cinema Foundation 473
fascism: and Italian neo-realism 226
Fédération Panafricaine des Cinéastes (FEPAC) 417, 432
FEK (Factory of the Eccentric Actor) group 365–6
female masquerade 132–4
feminism 37, 134, 134–5; and *Alien* series 339, 340; and concept of hybridity 298; documentary films 108; and epics 120; German women's cinema 202–3; in Moroccan cinema 441; and postmodernism 309–10; and queer theory 331; theory of sexuality 349, 350; view of pornography 292
feminist film theory 134–48, 413; avant-garde cinema 40; and Black American cinema 56; colour movies 88–90; and concept of Imaginary/Symbolic 222; on counter-cinema 94; and deconstruction 98; on the female spectator 177, 405; on female subjectivity 402; Foucauldian 144–6; on the gaze 178–9; gender relations 179–82; and melodrama 135–6, 139, 140–1, 218, 237; and postmodernism 310; and psychoanalysis 325–6, 389; sexuality 219; on suture 405, 410; view of classical narrative cinema 85
femme fatale 132, 150–1, 153, 222, 319
Festival Panafricaine du cinéma de Ouagadougou (FESPACO) 417, 432
fetishism 319–20, 325, 410, 481, 482; and female masquerade 132–3; and Imaginary/Symbolic 222; male gaze 343; nature of film technology 190; and Oedipal trajectory 287; and scopophilia 343; and sexuality of Black male 352; stars as object of 381, 382; treatment of women 94
Film and Television School (HFF), Munich 201
*film d'art* 375
Film Finance Corporation (FFC) 451, 452
film industry: and auteurism 36; creation of star image 378–9; and desire 130; dominant/mainstream cinema 108–9; effect of television on 29; and genres 187; Hollywood's dominance of 375–6; power relations and class 77, 80–1; *see also* Hollywood; studio system
film noir 148–53, 191, 240, 396; ambiguity in 17; female masquerade 132; feminist film theory 139–40, 140, 310; flashbacks in 157, 158–9, 401; and gangster movies 174; iconography 214; influence of German expressionist cinema 198; lighting 214, 233, 310; male protagonist 287; and melodrama 149; music 267; narrative 128, 283; Oedipal trajectory 326, 329; and psychoanalysis 319, 505; realism 335; settings 349; stars 376; voyeurism and fetishism 481
film studies 103; and Black cinema 46; impact of feminist film theory 134; and issue of sexuality 350–1; relevance of class to 79–81
film theory *see* theory
First National 390, 394
First World War *see* Great War
flashbacks 92, 102, 105, 110, 153–5; and enunciation 117, 118; film

noir 152; and history 154, 155–6; melodrama 242; and metonymy 252; in postmodern cinema 303; and the psyche 156–60; and subjectivity 401
Ford of Dagenham 164
foregrounding 160–2; in feminist film theory 138; mise-en-abîme 253; modernist cinema 259; Third Cinema 416; voyeurism 477, 481
*fort da* game 315–16, 317
Foster Phonoplay Company 48
Fourth World Cinema 424–5, 447, 467
Fox Film Corporation/20th Century Fox 390, 392–3, 395, 501
Fox Studios 19
framing 162
France: art cinema 27, 170; auteur theory 31–7; avant-garde 38–9, 259–60, 311–12; censorship 72; cinéma vérité 77, 107; colour movies 86; comedy 91; costume dramas 93; counter-cinema 94; Demy musicals 273; development of soundtrack 358; distinction between fantasy, horror and science fiction 336; documentary traditions 107–8; film industry 261, 375; film noir 149; film-making in Maghreb countries 442; genesis of film theory 411; and the Great War 484; lifting of censorship 123, 148; limit on US film imports 122; nationalism of *Napoléon vu par Abel Gance* 156; political realist films 335; pornographic films 290; postmodernism 301; Second World War films 487; sexploitation movies 123; structuralism 386–7; studio system 389; theory of the gaze 176; Westerns 497; *see also* French New Wave; French poetic realism
*Frauen und Film (Women and Film)* 202
Free British Cinema 69–70, 106, 162–5, 198, 358
French New Wave (*Nouvelle Vague*) 165–70, 198, 200, 225, 335; art cinema 27; influence of neo-realism 228; use of cinemascope 76
French poetic realism 29, 149, 170–2, 227, 266
French Revolution 236, 255
futurism 38, 172, 362

Gainsborough Studios: costume melodramas 247–8
Gakken (animation studio) 23
gangster films 173–6, 204; cross-cutting editing 96, 111; film noir 149; iconography 214, 215; male melodramas 240; stars 376; stereotyped characters 384; thrillers 476; Warner Brothers 394
garbage cinema 331
GATT agreements 122
Gaumont 170, 359, 389
gay film-makers 330–1; documentaries 108
gay sexuality 351; in buddy films 72; queer cinema 330–1
gaze/look 5, 176–9, 413; in avant-garde films 39; in Busby Berkeley movies 270; in classical narrative cinema 84, 85, 401; in dominant/mainstream cinema 94; and female masquerade 134; in film noir 139–40; and gender differentiation 183; in Hitchcock's thrillers 476; and melodrama 245; and naturalizing gender inequalities 286; and Oedipal trajectory 287; in panopticon 254; and postmodernism 310; in queer cinema/theory 332; and sexuality 351; of spectator 177–8, 178, 289, 371; and stars 382; and suture 409
gender 77, 179–84, 413–14; absence/presence 3; addressed in British

Black cinema 42; coded by film genre 3, 350; feminist film theory 134, 135, 143, 146–8; in Israeli nationalist films 469; issues in melodrama 243; in musicals 274; naturalizing 286; and nature of flashbacks 118, 157–8; in *Pierrot le fou* 261; and postcolonial theory 296; and postmodernism 300, 308–9; queer theory 331; in road movies 336; role of epics in defining roles 119; spectator positioning 326, 343; stereotypes 91, 385; and viewer-reception studies 374
genre 185–92, 413–14; and ambiguity 17–18; and auteurism 36; avant-grade experimentation 38; buddy films 71; and class 79–80; classical narrative cinema 83; codes and conventions 85–6, 310; difficulty of allocating 173; dominant/mainstream cinema 109; and emblematic shot 113; and excess 127; and feminist film theory 135; gender-identified 3, 350; genre 507; iconography of 214; ideological inflections within genre 186, 216; impact of Hollywood studios system 391; Indian cinema 448; mimicked in mainstream postmodern cinema 305; and motivation 263–4; pastiche 302–3; stars associated with 376; stereotyped characters 384, 385; structuralist theory 387; and sub-genre 186, 336; subgenres in Black American cinema 51–2; Westerns 507, 508
German expressionism 192–8, 490; association with film noir 149–50; and avant-garde 27, 39; influence on French poetic realism 171; influence on horror films 198, 207, 208; lighting effects 232; and montage 99; settings 349
German Film and Television Academy (DFFB), West Berlin 201
Germany: art cinema 27; *Autorenfilm* 31; censorship 72; development of soundtrack 358; division of by Berlin Wall 121, 199–200; and the Great War 484–5; indigenous film industry 122; and Second World War 487, 488, 491–2; *see also* New German Cinema
gesturality 284; film stars 377; and gender differentiation 183
Ghana: film industry 417; Film School, Accra 429, 430; political film-makers 417–18
ghettocentric cinema 56–8
Ghibli (animation studio) 23, 24
globalization 424
Gothic novel 207
GPO Film Unit 106, 485–6
Great War: archival film 302; effect of reparations on Germany 193–4; films about 479, 483–5; pessimism generated by 256, 257
Gulf war (1991) 497

Hamburg 199
Hammer Productions 207, 208
Harlem Renaissance Movement 43, 48, 295
Hays code 27, 72–3, 175, 203–4
hegemony 146, 204; Black cinema 59; and censorship 72; and cinéma-vérité 77; and discourse 103; feminist theory 146; and sexuality 351; and suture 408; Western domination 426; and women's counter-cinema 94
heterosexuality 349–50; in Hollywood cinema 177, 216–7
high art: postmodernist aesthetic 301, 307
Hindi popular film 415, 448–9, 450, 452
hip-hop-rap films 55–6

Hiroshima 337, 485, 494, 495
*histoire* (story) 116
historical films/reconstructions 205; difference with costume dramas 92–3; and ideology 217–18; realistic motivation 263; role of flashbacks 154, 155–6; wartime propaganda films 487–8
historical materialism 137, 143–4
history: African tradition 432–3; in Black British cinema 44; in classical Hollywood 82–3; epics 119; genres inscribed in 191; and stereotypes 385
Hollywood 205–6, 226, 366, 422, 423; action movies 6, 8; and art cinema 27–8; and auteur theory 34, 253; B-movies 64; and Black cinema 46, 55, 56–7, 59; blacklist 206, 392, 506; and British cinema 70–1; censorship 73; challenge of spaghetti Westerns 508; and cinemascope 76; classical narrative cinema 82–5, 110, 284; colour films 86, 87; competing with porn film industry 290; director 102–3; dominance of 170, 375–6; editing in 110, 111; effect of *Cleopatra* on 119, 120; enunciation and narrative 116; European emigré filmmakers 149–50, 198, 486; excess in movies 128; and feminist film theory 135; and gaze 177, 178; and intertextual motivation 264; match cuts 96; melodrama 141, 240–1; musicals 268, 269, 272, 359; myth of glamour 346–7; narratives of Imaginary/Symbolic 221; parodies 187–8; personifying stars 383–4; post-classical era 223; producers 311; production of ideology 216–17; referred to in *Pierrot le fou* 261–2; science fiction films 337, 338; sequencing 348; sex scandals 73, 204; spectacle in blockbuster movies 62; star system 375–6; studio system 109, 195, 389; suture 408; Third Cinema as countering 414, 415; three-point lighting system 231; vertical integration 109, 195, 480; view of European cinema 121–2; war films 484, 489, 496; Warhol's parodying of 480
Holocaust 256, 302, 386, 493
Hong Kong: martial arts films 7
hood movies 57, 58
horror movies 104, 129, 161, 206–14, 396, 397, 404; on effects of atomic bomb 495; feminist theory 140, 142; influence of German expressionist cinema 198, 207, 208; lighting 207, 233; and science fiction 336; and spectator-subject 403
House of Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) 119, 206, 392, 491
hybridity: postcolonial theory 296–8

iconography 214–15, 310; and class in cinema 81; in early silent cinema 350; feminist film theory 137–8; French New Wave films 168; gangster movies 175; and gender differentiation 183; genre 190; musicals 277; road movie 335; stars of silent films 375; war movies 492
ideology 215–18, 386, 413, 413–14; and apparatus 25–6, 79; and auteur theory 35, 36–7; and avant-garde 40; and Black politics 51; Bollywood musicals 65–7, 68; cinéma-vérité 77; and class 78–9; in classical narrative cinema 82, 83, 109; and colour 87; deconstruction of 98; and denotation/connotation 101; and discourse 103; and distanciation 105; and documentary 106, 485; dominant 168, 350; and editing techniques 92, 111; and

European cinema 121; and fantasy films 129; and feminist film theory 135–6, 140–1; and flashbacks 155–6, 156; and French New Wave 168; gangster genre 175; and gender 179, 413–14; and genre 186; and historical films 205; independents 225; intersubjectivity 347; and language 345; and mediation 235; in melodrama 238; and modernism 258; and musicals 269, 276; myths denoting 152; and naturalizing 286; and postmodernism condition 300, 307; and psychoanalytic concepts 221; and realism 334; and sound 361; Soviet cinema 362–3, 364; and subjectivity 402; and suture 408; Third Cinema manifesto 415; Westerns 498
illusion 3, 25
image 103, 218; audience expectation of Westerns 499; cinemascope 258; dissolve/lap-dissolve 104–5; fade 128; fantasy 130; feminist film theory 137–8; fetishism within 325; flashback 154; and gender differentiation 183; in German expressionist films 196; iconography of 214; ideological inflections within genre 186; and metaphor 252; mise-en-abîme 252; naturalism 285; naturalizing gender inequalities 286; preferred reading 310; and reverse-angle shot 354; semiotic and structuralist readings 350; in Soviet montage 366; and spectator's gaze 176, 371; and suture 407–8; in women's films 244
Imaginary/Symbolic 218–23, 315, 317; absence/presence 4–5; desire and fantasy 129; in film noir 152, 159; and the gaze 177; and gender 180–1; and subjectivity 307, 402; and suture 405–7; in women's films 246
Imperial Film Company 450
INCAA 463
independent American cinema 223–5, 225
India: film industry 68, 415, 416, 447–8, 451–2; film theory 424
Indian cinema 46, 415, 416, 418, 434, 447–55; neo-realism 229; *see also* Bollywood
Indian People's Theatre Association 418
indigenous film-making: Fourth World 425–6; Nigeria 426
Industrial Light and Magic (ILM) 24, 339
Industrial Revolution 236; Jennings's documentaries 106–7
industrialization: and modernism 254, 255
International Pictures 397–8
Internet 307–8, 424
intersubjectivity 347
intertextuality 37–8, 226, 413; Blaxploitation parodies 55; genres 186, 191; Luhrmann's *Moulin Rouge* 279; and motivation 263, 264; music scores 264; and post-structuralism 388–9; postmodern aesthetic 302, 304; and spectatorship 374; star-iamges 379
Iranian cinema 472–5
Iraq 465
Ireland: films attacking British policy 487
Islamic fundamentalism 440
Israel 467
Israeli cinema 468–9
Italian Film School 226
Italian neo-realism 27, 73, 226–9, 335, 349, 358, 438, 475
Italy: fall of fascism 227; film industry 226; French co-productions with 261; futurism 172; and spaghetti Westerns 497, 507–8

*Jane Eyre* 209
Japan: films about atomic bombings 495; Second World War films 488, 491; use of atomic bomb against 337, 485, 494
Japanese animation 23
Jews: in Israeli Bourekas genre 469; Nazi representation of 487; representation in Western cinemas 385–6
*jouissance* 317, 321, 322, 324–5, 326–8, 405
Journées cinématographiques de Carthage (JCC) 431, 432, 442
*Jump Cut* (journal) 202
jump cuts 18, 95, 105, 110, 113, 168, 229–30, 348, 476

*Kino-Pravda* 107, 363
Klieg lights 231, 235
Kohinoor Film Company 450
Korean War: films about 494–5, 496

Lahore 450, 455, 456
language: approach of Russian futurists 362; structuralist theory 345
lap-dissolve *see* dissolve/lap-dissolve
Latin America 46, 416, 418–19, 458–64; film industry 415; impact of cinema nôvo 75, 419; movement for cultural identity 295; Third Cinema 224, 421
Law of the Father 316–19, 405–6
Lebanese cinema 465, 465–6
lesbian film-makers 309, 330–1; documentaries 108
lesbian sexuality: identity 351; in vampire movies 208
*L'Express* 165
lighting 76, 230–5, 310; ambiguity in 17; avant-garde 39; British New Wave 69; chronological editing 110; in classical narrative cinema 84, 85, 409; and denotation/connotation 100; feminist film theory on mainstream cinema 138; film noir 214; French poetic realism 171; and gender difference 183; in German expressionist films 149, 193, 195–6; horror films 207; ideology 234–5; and motivation 263; practice 232–3; and realism 334; referred to by narrative 282; and stars 382; technology 230–2; Universal Pictures 397
*Listener, The* 163
literature *see* adaptation; Gothic novel; modernist novel
location shooting: Antoine's films 285; Italian neo-realism 228
London Women's Film Group 137
long shot (LS) 356
look *see* gaze/look

Maghreb countries 434, 438–42
mainstream cinema *see* dominant/mainstream cinema
Mali 417, 428
Manga 23
martial arts films 7, 61
Marxism: cultural aesthetics 79; materialism 180, 181; theory of class 77–9; theory of ideology 215; and Third Cinema 432
masala films 67, 450
masculinity 179–80; gangster movies 175; male dominance in vampire movies 208
mass communication 307–8
mass culture: and genre 185–6; and modernism 255
Mass Observation Unit 107
massacre movies 209, 211–12
match cuts 84, 95–6
Mauritania 417, 428
May 1968 events 169
mediation 235, 320, 335; language 345
medium close-up (MCU) 355
medium long shot (MLS) 356

medium shot (MS) 355–6
melodrama 236–48, 398; and avant-garde 38; class analysis 79–80; and classical narrative cinema 82; codes, conventions and structures 239–43; Egyptian 436; excess in 128–9; in fascist Italy 226; female masquerade 132; and feminist film theory 135–6, 139, 140–1, 218, 310; film noir 149; flashbacks in 157–8; gender in 413; issue of female Oedipal trajectory 288, 326; mise-en-scène 28, 128–9; patriotic films on Great War 483; and spectator-subject 403; stereotyped characters 384; and Westerns 503
merchandising products: blockbusters 61
Merchant-Ivory adaptations 93
metalanguage 248–9
metaphor 251–2; in science fiction films 342
method acting 249, 285
metonymy 250–1; and emblematic shot 113; in fantasy films 129; in melodrama 238; and the spectator susbject 403; stars 380
Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer (MGM) 21, 22, 268–9, 269, 272, 390, 395–6, 399, 491
Mexico: film industry 459, 463, 464–5; national cultures 458–9; Revolution 458
Mezhrabpom-Film 363
Middle Eastern cinema 465–75
Miramax 224
mise-en-abîme 14, 161, 252–3, 279, 303
mise-en-scène 76, 77, 253, 349; adaptations 14; ambiguity in 17; and auteur theory 32, 166; and cinemascope 75; classical narrative cinema 84; costume 29; and counter-cinema 93; deep focus 98; in dominant/mainstream cinema 109; and enunciation 118; excess in 128; fantasy and desire 130, 131, 374, 410; film noir 329; French poetic realism 171; and gender differentiation 183; German expressionist films 193, 196; horror films 142, 207, 208; iconography of 214; influence of psychoanalysis 221, 222; male blackness 352; melodrama 28, 237, 243; naturalism 285; referred to by narrative 282; and stars 382
misogyny: slasher movies 212
modernism 253–63, 308; and futurism 172, 362; and German expressionism 192, 194, 196; and melodrama 236, 237–8, 242; and postcolonialist theory 296; and postmodernism 299–300, 300–1, 308; and technological progress 342
modernist novel 256, 257, 308
Monogram Picture Corporation 64, 391, 400, 501
monster horror movies 208–9, 209–10
montage 18, 38, 75, 196; action spectaculars 6; and avante-garde 39, 259; cuts 96; and deep focus debate 99–100, 112–13; editing 112–13; in French New Wave films 305; Soviet 11–12, 96, 99, 109, 364–6
Morocco: film industry 417, 441–2
Mosfilm 363
Motion Picture Association of America (MPAA) 73, 203–4
Motion Picture Export Association of America (MPEAA) 452
Motion Picture Producers and Distributors of America (MPPDA) 72–3, 203–4
motivation 263–4; in adaptation 14; in classical narrative cinema 82;

Italian neo-realism 228; in melodrama 243–4; in musicals 275; and narrative 283; in war films 492; in Westerns 505
*Movie* (Journal) 34, 36, 269, 278
Munich 199, 202
music 264–8; before soundtrack 358; in Golden Age of Indian cinema 451
Music Corporation of America (MCA) 393, 398
musicals 186, 240, 268–81; Bollywood 65–6; bombardment of senses 63; Bombay 68, 449–50; colour 87; cross-dressing 184; female masquerade 132; Fox studio 392–3; history of 268–74; Hollywood 128, 359; and motivation 264; role of diegetic audiences 101–2; sexuality in 350; stars 376; structures and strategies 274–81; textual references to 304; *see also* backstage musicals
myth 17, 152, 281–2, 479; and Black American cinema 57, 215; and Black British cinema 44; and Chinese propaganda cinema 445; in cinema nôvo 74; in classical narrative cinema 83, 85; and denotation/connotation 100; and fantasy films 129; films as 261; of the frontier 62–3, 287, 498; and ideology 186, 215; and language 345; in musicals 269; *Nouvelle Vague* 166; and realism 334; in Westerns 498–9

Nagasaki 337, 485, 494, 495
narrative 282–4; in adaptation 14; agency 17; ambiguity 17; art cinema 26, 28; and avant-garde 38; in blockbusters 63–4; buddy films 71; class issues 80; closure in dominant/mainstream cinema 109; continuity cuts 95; counter-cinema 93; deconstruction of 98; diegesis 101, 102; and distanciation 105; in dominant Hollywood cinema 178; ellipsis 113; excess in 128; exterior temporality 109–10; feminist film theory 138; film noir 151–2; flashbacks 153; French poetic realism 171; function of asynchronization 30; gangster movies 174; German expressionist films 193; historical films 205; Hitchcock's thrillers 476; impact of art direction 28; impact of cinemascope 75; impact of sound 359–60; jump cut in 229; and lighting 230; melodrama 239; as metalanguage 248–9; metonymy 251; mise-en-abîme 253; musicals 269; and national culture 376–7; Oedipal trajectory 287; in *Pulp Fiction* 304; queer cinema 332; realism 256, 334; and realistic motivation 263; road movies 336; role of emblematic shot 114; role of stereotyped characters 384; ruptured by French New Wave 168; sequencing/sequence 348; social realism 358; structuralism 34, 386; and subjective camera 404; and suture 408; teen pics of 1950s 123–4; temporal illusion of film 3; and 30-degree rule 476; *see also* classical narrative cinema
narrative film (genre) 186
National Film Development Corporation (NFDC) 452, 456
National Film Theatre, London 162, 430
national identity/nationhood: and Fanon's writings 294; and film stars 376–7; and genre 240; and hegemony 204; Latin American cinemas 462–3; and need for myth 217–18; and structuralism in France 35; in Westerns 500–1, 502

naturalism 271, 284–5, 411
naturalizing 154, 215, 216–17, 285, 285–6; in classical narrative cinema 82; and diegesis 101; and documentary 106; and the gaze 178; and gender 179; and metonyms 252; and motivation 263; musicals 271; and myth 282; narrative 283; role of semiotics in film theory 347; and seamless realism 334
Nazi film industry 200, 487
neo-realism *see* Italian neo-realism
New American Cinema Group 479
New Deal 174
New German Cinema 198–203, 225, 335, 495
New Queer Cinema 332
New Scottish Cinema 16, 16–17
New Wave *see* British New Wave; French New Wave
New York: and abstract expressionist art 308; September 11 2001 events 120
newsreel film: Soviet propaganda 363
Niger 428
Nigeria 426, 429, 430
non-diegetic elements 101
North African cinema 353, 417, 434–42
*Nouvelle Vague see* French New Wave

Oberhausen Manifesto 198–9
Oedipal trajectory 4, 177–8, 286–9, 314–15, 405–6; in classical narrative cinema 83, 109, 284, 372–3; female 321–4, 326–7; feminist film theory on 138, 139, 142–3; in film noir 159; in *Jurassic Park* 132; in melodramas 240; mise-en-abîme 253; and the spectator 370; and Westerns 503
180-degree rule 19, 92, 289, 349
oppositional cinema *see* counter-cinema/oppositional cinema
Orientalism 295
Osram (Germany) 232
otherness 309, 349

pacifist films 483, 484
Pakistan cinema and film industry 455–7
Palestine 465, 466; addressed in Israeli cinema 468–9; film industry 466–8
Pancholi Art Pictures 455
parallel editing 94, 109, 110–11, 113
Paramount 20–1, 390, 393–4, 500, 502
parody: challenging genres 187–8; of gangster genre 175; oppositional postmodernism 302; in Warhol's films 480
Pars Film Studio, Iran 472
pastiche 212–13, 302–3, 304, 305
Pathé Frères 86, 170, 289, 449
patriarchy 136, 141, 441
patriotism: melodramas about Great War 483; Second World War films 489–90; Warner Brothers films 394
Pearl Harbor 486, 493
performance: excess in 127–8; Kuleshov's model of acting 366; national traditions 376–7
Phonofilm 358–9
Pixar Studio 24
Polish animation 22
political cinema: African countries 433–4, 441; American independent films 223; Brazilian 463–4; China 443–4; Godard 260–1; Third Cinema 415–16, 417–18
politics: and American abstract expressionism 308; censorship of 72; and Cold War films 505–6; context of stereotypes 384–5; French New Wave cinema 169; in Indian cinema of 1990s 453–4; New German Cinema 201–2, 203; in science fiction films 342
*politique des auteurs* 32, 33–4

popular culture: in cinema nôvo 74; and genre 186; postmodernist aesthetic 301
Popular Front, France 170–1
pornography 123, 289–92, 332
postcolonial theory 293–9, 421, 424, 432–3
postmodernism 299–310; horror pastiche 212–13; Luhrmann's *Moulin Rouge* 280; mainstream and oppositional 300–5; negative versus positive readings 305–10; overlap with modernism 253–4; queer theory 331
post-structuralism 13, 37, 255, 312, 388–9; and deconstruction 97; and feminism 135; and notion of hybridity 297–8; and postmodernism 300; theories of class 77
power relations: and class 77, 78–9; feminist film theory 143; Foucault's theory 144–6; gender 180; and sexuality 351–2; in teen nasties 126
Prabhat studios, Poona 450
*Pravda* 76
preferred reading 18, 150, 183, 189–90, 235, 310, 325, 335, 357, 372
presence *see* absence/presence
producer 103, 311
production values: literary classics 15
propaganda: British documentary 485; Chinese 445; melodramas about Great War 482; Nazi films 487; Soviet 362, 363; US Second World War films 489
psychoanalysis 311–29, 411; and auteur theory 35, 37; and avant-garde 39; discourses 104; and female subject 321–4, 406; in feminist film theory 137, 138–9, 139, 143, 325–6, 389; and film theory/studies 324–9, 350–1; and flashbacks 154, 156–60; Freud's theory of the subject 312–15; and German expressionism 192–3; identity loss of stars 379–80; Imaginary/Symbolic 218–19; impact of psychoanalysis 386; influence on modernism 257; and issue of spectatorship 369; Lacan's theory of the subject 315–21, 343; and masquerade 132–3; and melodrama 241–2, 244; and popularity of horror genre 213; screen-spectator dynamic 3–5; and semiotics 347; subjectivity 402–3; theory of the gaze 176–9; in Westerns 505
psychological horror 209, 211–12
psychological realism: art cinema 27, 28; Westerns 502–3, 505
psychological thriller 476–8; and horror genre 212, 213
punk movement 216
puppets: Czech animations 22

queer cinema 27, 224, 329–33
queer theory 331–2

race/racism: addressed in American war films 496; in Black African-American cinema 46–7; context of American horror movies 210; Fanon's writings on 293, 294; and gender ideology 181; Griffith's *Birth of a Nation* 497; issues in British Black cinema 41–2, 43, 44; and lighting 235; race films 47–8; and sexuality 351–2
Ramallah International Film Festival 468
Ranjit Movietone studio 450
Rank Organisation 164
rap culture 55–6, 57–8, 59
realism 334–5; in animations 20, 24; Black American cinema 59–60; British theatre in 1960s 69; chronological editing 110; classical narrative cinema 84; and colour 88; and comedy 91; depth of field/

deep focus 18, 75, 99, 111, 356; effect of early sound recording 360; Egyptian 436; Enlightenment 255; film theory 411; Free British Cinema 69–70; and intertextual motivation 264; lighting 231, 234; and melodrama 243; and modernism 255; sixties musicals 273; in Westerns 500; Young German Cinema 201; *see also* Italian neo-realism; psychological realism; urban realism
reception theory 30
Red Seal Studio 20
Republic Pictures 64, 391, 400–1, 501, 502
resistances: Foucault's theory 144–5
reverse angle shot 127, 161, 229, 354, 401, 407
revolutionary cinema: Algeria 439; cinema nôvo 74; Latin America 460
RK Films 66
RKO (Radio Pictures Incorporated) 64, 209, 268, 392, 396–7
road movie 85–6, 186, 335–6, 462; musicals 273, 278
rock musicals 272, 278
Royal Bioscope Company, Calcutta 449
RTA (Radio Télévision Arabe) 440
Russian constructivists 172
Russian Revolution 362, 368

Sankofa 41, 43, 44, 422
SATPEC (Société Anonyme Tunisienne de Production et d'Expansion Cinématographique) 442
science-fiction films 104, 129, 336–42; action movies 8; blockbusters 61; codes and conventions 86; and the Cold War 209; excess 128; and horror 206–7; Japanese animations 23; narrative 282–3
science-fiction literature 336
scopophilia/scopic drive/visual pleasure 178, 343–4, 350; in *Peeping Tom* 161; role of colour 88, 89; spectacle in blockbusters 63; and suture 410
*Screen* (journal) 36
seamlessness: and art cinema 28; asynchronization 30; chronological editing 110; continuity editing 92, 95, 96; and counter-cinema 93; counter-effect of deep-focus editing 111; in dominant/mainstream cinema 109, 408; effect of 30-degree rule 476
Second World War 32, 149, 157, 485; and Anglophone Africa 429–30; British melodramas 247–8; documentaries made during 106–7; films about 83, 485–94; history in *Casablanca* 155; pessimism generated by 256, 257; use of atomic bomb 337, 485, 495
self-reflexivity: camera 258; and modernism 256, 257
semiology/semiotics/sign and signification 35–6, 37, 38, 79, 344–8, 350, 388, 412; in British feminist film theory 136–7; concept of myth 281–2; and issue of spectatorship 369; *see also* denotation/connotation
Senegal: film industry 417, 427, 428
September 11 2001 disaster 120
sequencing/sequence 104–5, 348–9
set design: art direction 28; German expressionist films 193, 197
setting 349; costume dramas 93; deconstructed by counter-cinema 93; French poetic realism 171; gangster movies 175; German expressionist films 149, 195; historical films 205; literary adaptations 15; melodrama 140–1; and motivation 263; musicals 277; naturalism 285

Seven Arts 395
sex: in art cinema 27; in Busby Berkeley movies 270; censorship of 72; in melodrama 236; technology of 144; in Westerns 503
sex scandals: Hollywood 73, 204
sexploitation movies 123
sexuality 349–54, 410; addressed in *Alien* series 339, 340; in Black American cinema 50, 50–1, 53, 54, 60; in Black musicals 277; and connotation 346; discourses 104; in fantasy films 129–30; and female subject 32; feminist theory on difference 143, 179; in film noir 151; film stars 377, 380; in French New Wave films 168; Freud's theory of mirror phase 219; and gender 179, 181, 286; and German expressionism 192; in Hitchcock films 140, 476; in Hollywood classic narrative 284; and horror films 212, 213; ideological inflections within genre 186; in Imaginary/Symbolic Order 180–1; in Israeli nationalist films 469; issues in Black British cinema 43–4; and liberal view of pornography 292; in melodrama 238–9, 243; in modernist cinema 259; and postcolonial theory 296; and queer cinema 330, 331, 333; and racial difference 352–3; stereotypes 385; in teen nasties 126; themes in documentaries 108; in thrillers 476, 477; and viewer-reception studies 374; in Westerns 509
Shakespeare adaptations 12
Shorey Studios 455
shots 355–7; ambiguity 17; and auteur theory 33; avant-garde films 39; cinéma-vérité 77; classical narrative cinema 84; deep focus editing 99; denotation/connotation 100; diegesis 101, 117; in dominant/mainstream cinema 109; editing 109; foregrounding 160; intertextuality 226; and jump cuts 95, 229; in match cuts 95–6; and metonymy 251; in montage cinema 364–5; and 180-degree rule 289; realist 335; road movie 335; sequencing 348; and subjectivity 401; using subjective camera 404; *see also* reverse-angle shot; tracking shot/travelling shot; unmatched shots
signs/signification: in classical narrative cinema 82; colour and eroticization 90; films as 261, 411; in montage cinema 364–5; in Soviet montage 111–12; stars as 380–2; *see also* semiology/semiotics
silent cinema 350; comedies 359; Indian mythologicals 448–9; musical accompaniment 358; Soviet propaganda 362; stars 375, 376; Westerns 497–8
slasher movies 211–12, 212–13
social realism 357–8; art cinema 27, 28; Chinese 444; and class 79; Indian 451; Iran 473; and Italian neo-realism 228, 335; Pakistani 456–7; Warner Brothers films 174, 394, 397
socialism: Cuban Institute of Film Art 461
socialist realism: Soviet 363
sound/soundtrack 97, 103, 118, 174, 357, 358–61, 390, 411; chronological editing 110; classical narrative cinema 84; and comedy 90; in early Hollywood horror movies 207; effect on spectator 373; multi-track 18; non-diegetic 101; and realism 334, 357; Renoir's *Toni* 227; war films 484; Westerns 500, 501
South Africa: film industry 427, 429, 430–1
South Asian Studies 296

Soviet school 38, 96, 105
Soviet Union 361–8, 411; anti-American films 494; and avant-garde 39; distanciation 105; documentaries 107, 488; film industry 362–34; futurism 172; influence on Chinese 44; Klimov 493; modernist principles 259; montage 96, 99, 109, 111–12, 364–6
Sovkino 363
space and time/spatial and temporal contiguity 369; and ambiguity 17, 18; asynchronization 30; classical narrative cinema 84; deconstructed by counter-cinema 93; editing 109–10; in French New Wave films 168; incoherence of action movies 9–10
spaghetti Westerns 264–5, 497, 507–8
Spain 72, 122
special effects 62, 76, 190
spectator 36, 221, 369–75, 411; absence/presence 3–5; agency 17; and ambiguity 18; Antoine's concern with 285; appeal of melodrama 239; art cinema on 28; and asynchronization 30; attraction to horror film 213; avant-garde theories 38; of classical narrative cinema 82; and construct of stars 377; and continuity editing 92; counter-cinema 93–4; discourses 104; enthralling nature of thrillers 476–7; and extra-diegetic sounds 101; eyeline matching 127; fantasy perceived by 130; female 139, 177, 343–4, 405, 504; and flashbacks 154; function of 180-degree rule 289; gaze of 177–8, 178, 289; and gender 183; and genre 185, 189; ideological effects of cinema on 25–6, 37–8, 79, 216; and jump cuts 95, 113, 229; and metalanguage 249; and mise-en-abîme 253; and montage 99, 112, 365; Mulvey's text 138–9; and post-structuralist theory 389; and preferred reading 310; queer theory 331; reading of shots 356; relation with apparatus 312; relations with text 283–4, 401, 413; and representation of class 81; and reverse-angle shot 354; role of emblematic shot 114; role of foregrounding 160; role of narrative 282–3; scopophilia 343; self-reflexivity 258; and semiotics 347–8; and sequencing 348; and sexuality 350; and sound cinema 359; strategy of the musical 274; as subject 25–6, 30, 116, 216, 326; and subjective camera 404; *see also* audience
spectator identification 102, 167, 173, 492
stars 232, 375–84, 412; absence/presence 3, 377, 381–2; and auteur theory 36, 103; in Blaxploitation parodies 55; Bollywood 66; British New Wave 69–70; excess in performance 127–8; exchange value 81; and genre 190; of German expressionist films 197; in Golden Age of Indian cinema 451; and Hays code 73, 204; Hollywood myth of glamour 346–7; and intertextual motivation 264; and intertextuality 226; lacking in French New Wave films 167; linked with Young German Cinema 200; in mise-en-abîme 253; musicals 268; role of diegesis 101; Soviet favourites 366; and spectator subject 403; stereotyped characters 384; studio system 391; in Westerns 500; women in colour films 89
stereotypes 384–6; after introduction of sound 375; and Black American cinema of 1970s 52; in comedy

films 91; and counter-cinema 94; in early silent cinema 350; film noir 150; queerness 332; in war films 490; women in Westerns 503
structuralism 350, 386–9, 412; and auteur theory 34–6; and class 79; concept of myth 282; and feminism 135; impact on genre theory 188–9; and literary adaptation 13; and modernism 258; and post-structuralism 312; and semiotics 344–5; and subjectivity 401, 402
Studio Misr 435
studio system 36, 52, 109, 190, 195, 359, 389–401; demise of 205, 502, 505; stars 379
sub-genre *see* genre
Sub-Saharan film industry 427–34
subject/object 401, 413; and auteur theory 36–7; in classical narrative cinema 85, 401; and enunciation 114–15, 283–4; female 321–4, 349; in feminist film theory 89, 94, 136–7; Freud's theory 312–15, 321; and the gaze 176, 177; and ideology 216; and industrial and post-industrial machines 306–7; and intra-diegetic sound 102; Lacan's theory 315–21, 321; and modernism 237; and narrative 283; Oedipal trajectory 287; and scopophilia 343; spectator as 25–6, 30, 116, 216, 326, 370; stars 381–2; and Symbolic Order 4; and voyeurism 481; in women's films 245
subjective camera 404
subjectivity 401–4, 411, 413; art cinema 28; avant-garde 38, 39, 259; construction through cinematic apparatus 310; and enunciation 114–15; and feminist deconstructive films 98; feminist film theory 134, 138, 177; in film noir 151, 158; and flashbacks 153, 154–5; and gender divide 401; and intra-diegetic sound 102; Lacan's theory 180–1, 315; and sexuality 351; spectator 189; women in counter-cinema 94; in women's films 245–6
surrealism 38, 106, 259, 404, 480; avant-garde 39; Czech animations 22; feminist films 98
suture 101, 221, 324, 325, 403, 404–10; and class in cinema 81; and classical narrative 85, 217, 256; and emblematic shots 114; and reverse-angle shot 401, 407
Symbolic *see* Imaginary/Symbolic
Syria 436, 465

Taplin-Perry-Scorsese Productions 223
Tebessan Film Unit 438, 439
Technicolor Motion Pictures Corporation 87
technologies: and consumption of images 424; and German expressionism 194; and modernism 258; modernist and postmodernist views 302, 307–8; in science fiction films 337, 339
teen exploitation movies 123–4, 125–6
television 29, 119, 199, 205; advent of colour 86, 88; cable and satellite 108; news 107; in Third World countries 456, 462
theatre: British realism 69, 162; Gothic horror productions 207; Indian tradition 424; Max Reinhardt 193
theory 410–14; and auteur theory 31, 34, 35; and concept of Imaginary/Symbolic 221–2; debates around class 77, 78–9; deconstruction 97–8; Eisenstein 367–8; and female Oedipal trajectory 288; and issue of spectatorship 369; as metalanguage 248; postmodern pluralism 309; and psychoanalysis 311–12,

324–9; semiotics 347–8; suture 404–5; view of cinemascope 75–6; *see also* feminist film theory
Third Cinema 41, 75, 224, 225, 414–22, 431, 432, 452, 460–1; distinction with First and Second Cinemas 422–3; distinction with Third World Cinema 423
Third World Cinema 46, 75, 297, 420, 422–75
30-degree rule 95, 229, 349, 475–6
thrillers 161, 186, 240, 387, 398, 476–8; action 5–6, 8, 62–3; B-movies 64; cross-cutting editing 96, 111; erotic 290–1; female Oedipal trajectory 288; film noir 148, 149; lighting 233; and spectator-subject 403; voyeurism and fetishism 481
time and space *see* diegesis/diegetic continuity; space and time/spatial and temporal contiguity
Time-Warner 395
Tobis-Klangfilm 359, 360
Toei (animation company) 23
Toronto Festival of Festivals 330
tracking shot/travelling shot 478
transparency/transparence 204, 345, 411, 478–9, 482
Tunisia: film industry 417, 438, 441–2
Turkish cinema 469–72

UCLA (University of California at Los Angeles) film school 50, 52
UFA (Universum-Film Aktiengesellschaft) 195, 197–8
underground cinema 27, 259, 260, 479–80; Algeria 438
United Artists Corporation 70–1, 390, 391, 396, 398–9, 450
United Kingdom *see* Britain
United Players 455
United Productions of America 21
United States: abstract expressionist art 308; auteurism 32–3; avant-garde 39, 260; Black cinema 45–60, 420; censorship 72, 479; comedy films 91–2; development of soundtrack 358; direct cinema 107; dominance of Hollywood 205; emigration of New German Cinema film-makers to 203, 486; feminist film theory 136, 137, 139, 144; film market share in UK and France 122; film noir 149; gangster genre 173–4; horror films 207, 210–11; impact of Fanon's writing 294; and Iran 473; lifting of censorship 289–90, 507; melodramas 243–4; method acting 249; mood after Second World War 149, 157, 241, 338; and musicals 268, 274; pornographic films 290; queer cinema 330; science fiction films 337–8; Second World War films 488–9, 491; significance of Westerns 207, 214–15; theory of the gaze 176; and Vietnam War 71; view of European cinema 121–2; women's liberation movement 134–5
Universal Pictures 208, 225, 269, 390, 397–8, 501
unmatched shots 39, 105, 110, 168, 348, 480
urban realism: Black American cinema 51–2, 56–7; gangster films 173; Micheaux's films 50

vampire movies 207–8
Venice Golden Lion 446
vertical integration 109, 195, 389, 480
Vic Films 70
video games 62
video technology 108
Vietnam War 71, 338; films 83, 262, 495, 495–6
violence: action movies 7–8, 10; Blaxploitaion movies 54; censorship 72; Fuller's films 494; gangster

films 173, 174, 204; in Pakistani films 456; *Reservoir Dogs* 303–4; teen exploitation movies 124, 125–6; in Westerns 503, 505, 507
visual pleasure *see* scopophilia/scopic drive/visual pleasure
Vitaphone 358–9
voyeurism 140, 325, 410, 480–2; avant-garde films 39; and female masquerade 132; in Hitchcock's thrillers 476, 477; Imaginary/Symbolic 222; nature of film technology 190; and Oedipal trajectory 287; spectator 26, 178, 343; stars as object of 381–2

war films 8, 397, 482–97; blockbusters 61, 62; British 1950s 164; classical narrative 83; genre and sub-genres 186, 189; transparence 479, 482
Warner Brothers 359, 390, 391, 394–5, 489; animation 21–2, 24; B-Westerns 501–2; Busby Berkeley movies 270; gangster films 191; social realism 174, 394, 397; and Spike Lee 59
weepies: female 244; male 240–1
West Berlin 199, 202
Western Electric 359, 360
Westerns 497–509; B-movies 64, 400; Blacks in 504–5; blockbusters 61; character ambiguity in 18; and cinemascope 76; codes and conventions 86, 187; cross-cutting editing 96, 111; Essany studios 400; feminist film theory 139; film noir 149; and gangster movies 174; gender in 3, 237, 413; genre 185, 188–9, 189, 387, 507, 508; iconography of 214–15, 492; male gaze 383; male protagonist 287; mediation 235; race/racism in 46–7; role of diegetic audiences 102; sexuality in 350; stereotyped characters 384; studios 393, 398; and US history 207, 214–15, 268; *see also* spaghetti Westerns
widescreen 507, 509–10
wipe 113, 348–9, 510
women: absence/presence 5; action heroes 11; ageing stars 378; agency and gaze 383; in *Alien* series 339; art cinema producers 27; in Black African-American cinema 52, 53, 55, 58, 60; Black film-makers 44; changes during Second World War 241; in colour films 89; construction and deconstruction of 152–3; counter-cinema 94; in epics 119–20; in erotic thrillers 290–1; and fetishism 481; in film noir 158–9; in psychological melodrama 157–8, 241–2; representations in mainstream cinema 353–4; sexuality and the male gaze 351; stereotypes in Westerns 503–4; in vampire movies 208; in war films 486; *see also* female masquerade; feminism; feminist film theory
*Women and Film* collective 137, 139
women film-makers: Chinese 447; Egyptian 435; French 170; German 202–3; independent 225; Indian 455; Maghreb countries 439–40, 442; Turkey 472
women's films 139, 140, 141, 218, 244–6, 331
Woodfall Films 70, 165
workshops *see* collectives/workshops

Yesilçam, Turkey 470, 471, 472
Yoruba traditions 431
Young German Cinema (1960s) 199
Yugloslavia *see* Zagreb School of animation

Zagreb School of animation 22–3
Zoetrope 223
zoom 510

eBooks

eBooks – at www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk

## A library at your fingertips!

eBooks are electronic versions of printed books. You can store them on your PC/laptop or browse them online.

They have advantages for anyone needing rapid access to a wide variety of published, copyright information.

eBooks can help your research by enabling you to bookmark chapters, annotate text and use instant searches to find specific words or phrases. Several eBook files would fit on even a small laptop or PDA.

**NEW:** Save money by eSubscribing: cheap, online access to any eBook for as long as you need it.

### Annual subscription packages

We now offer special low-cost bulk subscriptions to packages of eBooks in certain subject areas. These are available to libraries or to individuals.

For more information please contact webmaster.ebooks@tandf.co.uk

We're continually developing the eBook concept, so keep up to date by visiting the website.

**www.eBookstore.tandf.co.uk**